

466 Pages

Albrecht Giddings



KILL 'SWIT'CH

Complete And Unabridged

KILL SWITCH

Téodoro Rampalé



KERSON PUBLISHING COMPANY

KILL SWITCH

Copyright 2017 by William Kern
dba Kerson Publishing Company

All rights reserved. No part of these manuscripts may be copied or reproduced by any mechanical or digital methods and no excerpts or quotes may be used in any other book or manuscript without permission in writing by the Publisher, Kerson Publishing Company, except by a reviewer who may quote brief passages in a review.

Published in the United States of America By
Kerson Publishing Company
6460-65 Convoy Court · San Diego, California 92117

KILL SWITCH

The Brotherhood Of The Bell

The majority of people worldwide do not know what the terms *Black Operations* and *Black Sciences* mean or how they are used.

Black Operations were developed after World War I, but really flourished after World War II during the Cold War. Congress allocated money to the Pentagon, the C.I.A. and other Defense Department sectors to make the United States military as strong as possible, but certain projects became more secretive than others. The more secret projects were funded by the civilian sector at first, such as pet peeve, with defense contractors already in the loop.

As time went on, the “privy“ developed into a real clique of not only specially screened corporations, but also choice individuals found by federal talent hunts. A new subculture was born with a new personality and belief system, completely cut off from mainstream Americans.

Cutting-edge technology such as the stealth aircraft, invisible hovercraft, extremely low frequency mind control (ELF) and weather control, in addition to the cloning or reproduction of identical species, became “Secret Sciences”.

The new knowledge wasn’t, and still is not, available to the regular Army, to Congress, or to any University. The most secret of the secret was in the hands of a power hungry few that tied itself to the World Bank for the future funding of its projects. They developed “think-tanks” like Stanford Research Institute and Tavistock to *keep the masses fooled about virtually everything*.

The deception grew like a cancer into every area of industrialized society. They moved into everything - from the Mafia, to Harvard University, to International Banking. They learned how to control the media, and thus, they controlled television, Hollywood, every newspaper, every educational institution and every person’s mind... at least to a certain point.

Accusations of abuse and inhuman acts by the C.I.A. and F.B.I. were investigated by Congress in 1977. These agencies used the excuse of “national security” for every crime they committed. Under the guise of “national security” there has not been an investigation of their highly illegal activities since 1977. Your Congress, your President and your Supreme Court are actually afraid of them. A mountain of evidence points to the fact that they have killed thousands, including corporate executives and politicians - perhaps JFK.

Thus, they are considered the “Invisible Government!”

The “Invisible Government“ needs a name at this point, so let us call it, *The Brother-*

KILL SWITCH

hood Of The Bell. This was a 1960s movie. By the way, *Bell Corporation* made the first flying saucer called "The Bell" - for the *Invisible Government* - because it was *shaped like a bell*.

Therefore, I shall call it *The Brotherhood Of The Bell*.

The Brotherhood Of The Bell became an internationally funded and operated organization that developed its totalitarian tactics for worldwide economic, political and military control. The Brotherhood Of The Bell led us to believe that half of the earth was religious—capitalism, defended by the CIA and the other half of the world was atheist—communist, defended by the KGB.

But, in actuality, the International Bankers and ancient esoteric secret societies - with an octopus of intelligence agencies - controlled the entire earth, even through World Wars I and II. Whenever a few cliques decided to go into business for themselves and break away from the monopoly system, we would have a world war. The same is true today, so be forewarned; do not mess with the super bankers!

The Cold War ended because of a worldwide cry for "peace". The old industrialist/banker game of churning up yet another war for the military/industrial complex was becoming more and more difficult. Their "think tanks" had to come up with a new strategy to subdue this "New Left" ideology.

Time also changed technology, thus the bankers and industrialists no longer needed large populations to do the farming, work in the factories or even fight in their war-machine game. Advanced computers, robots and artificial intelligence, bioelectronics and cloning eliminated the need of all of these "useless eaters". Top secret meetings were held and a strategy initiated (as early as 1960).

One such example is found in "The Report from Iron Mountain".

The "New Left," with all of its altruistic and humanitarian concepts, would be the "Trojan Horse" that would bring in the largest shadow of death to fall on mankind in the written history of the earth. "Globalist" books reveal the hidden agenda behind the United Nations, the covert meanings of their statues and art at the new Masonic airports, and their shrines like the Georgia Guide Stones.

All of these items call for a massive depopulation of the earth!

They also propose the elimination of democracy and culture, under the guise of a new positive program devised by one of their "think-tanks". The Proposed Agenda - A one-world religion, a one-world government - In other words, a New World Order. How many times have we had that repetitive phrase thrust into our faces?

On the other hand, certain racist "New Right" organizations have been, and are currently, *manipulated by the Black Ops agent provocateurs*. Their motivation is to make these groups appear hostile to the masses through their "Song Bird" media.

The truth is that these groups are very aware of certain concepts of the *New World Order*, but, they cannot see that they being used as "scapegoats and patsies" for *Black Operations*' sabotage. The invisible government always uses some sort of instigated chaos to steer public demand for social change. Gun control is a perfect example of this!

Their hoodwinking games are from the old Masonic term, "Ordo Abo Chao." They covertly create the problem, but their politicians come forward publicly with the perfect solution: *Order Out of Chaos*.

The Brotherhood Of The Bell's old mantra was *national security*, its excuse for cruelty

KILL SWITCH

to mankind.

Now, there are a whole string of pacifications like:

“To save the children“ or “To save nature!“ or “global warming!”

The truth is that *The Brotherhood Of The Bell* is destroying more nature with its top secret projects like the nuclear bomb, chemical and biological warfare and HAARP (*High-Frequency Active Auroral Research Program*), than we, the “useless eaters,‘ could ever imagine doing.

When the Berlin wall came down, the *Black Operations of the East* merged with the *Black Operations of the West*. The “think tanks‘ now include the Soviets and Red Chinese. They have mixed their ideas for a *One World Order* with military Special Forces; this combination in scheming collusion in order to execute their “cleansing or killing field” immoral programs.

What these Brave New World types do not know is that, once again, they are being used to satisfy the greedy appetites of the Super Power Elite. Those in *the Cabal* know that an *inter-dimensional society, an etheric civilization more invisible than they are, control their minds and souls*.

They honor these *Ascended Masters* or *Gods* with blood and sacrifice, as they always have, through their history of the Dark Nobility and Black Arts Occultism.

They know the *Lord* of this earth is *Lucifer* or the *Dark Forces*, and that he must be appeased.

The “Black Budget” then started to be used for the “Black Arts” and became known as the *Black Sciences*. The earliest projects actually started prior to World War I, while the more popular ones started around World War II. The U.S. Army’s Manhattan Project was in charge of making the A-bomb, while U.S. Navy dealt with Stealth equipment and invisibility, as evidenced in the Philadelphia Experiment (Written about in both these volumes).

After the war, the scientists of both projects were joined with *Nazi scientists* from Germany and NASA.

From this merging, the *National Security Agency* was officially inaugurated. Previous experiments like “Babylon-Working” and the “Montauk Project” were started using Nazi occultists and scientists to communicate with and materialize inter-dimensional beings. They were the “unofficial‘ pioneers of projects working on inter-dimensional time travel and eugenics/cloning.

Thus, with these projects, *The Black Sciences* were officially, yet covertly born.

The *Black Sciences* are the “Most Secret of all Secrets” and are seriously guarded by special, screened soldiers, trained and born out of covert, Black Operations groups.

It is this elitist group’s steadfast hope to merge the seen world with the unseen world. Their prioritized goal is currently designed to ensure that the world has a “oneness-of-mind” (the *hive concept*), in addition to being *spiritually harmonized to a designated frequency* that will bring their plan into full activation. The “*Ascended Masters*” have commanded them to eliminate the Old World, with its old ideas, old way of thinking and all of its old people.

A new generation with a “New World View” is the agenda of the day.

That is why many conservatives, Christians, Jews, Muslims, Buddhists, etc. are on the surveillance and extermination lists. That is why more anti-Constitutional laws are becoming the “New Law.”

KILL SWITCH

That is why those - in the know - from all religions and political ideologies are getting extremely concerned and very nervous.

The "Black Operations" work for the "Black Sciences" who worship "Black Occult Religions" of The Brotherhood Of The Bell.

SECRETS OF THE NAZI BELL

Dr. Joseph P. Farrell is an internationally-known author and researcher in Tesla studies and esoteric technology.

He is the author of several books on topics from Egypt to WW-II, and is a retired University Professor specializing in the study of Patristics (the study of pre 8th-century Christianity).

The *Nazi-Bell* is the dead relic of a bygone era - an unfinished icon of a war come and gone...or is it? Once again cast in the spotlight with the release of **Joseph Farrell's** "SS Brotherhood of the Bell", the story this time takes on a more ominous tone as new details emerge—including rumors that the remote test site has been unexpectedly purchased and scheduled for demolition.

We join Farrell on a journey to uncover the war's most compelling mystery, over 60 years in the making...

Q: I'd like to begin with a bit of background information. Can you tell me about yourself, some of the books that you've written in the past? I'd like to learn about what drives you as an author, and what first inspired you to take on the challenging subject of the Nazi-Bell?

A: Well, by academic training and background I've always dealt with ancient texts, and been trained to notice things. But when I was younger I quickly developed an interest in physics.

I read Einstein's and Infeld's *Evolution of Physics* when I was in the 7th grade, and that started a lifelong interest in the subject, which I try to stay abreast of, reading papers and books in both the mainstream and "alternative" areas of physics as much as I can.

Most of my books deal with physics in some way shape or form, and with the peculiar interface between history and physics, seeking to answer mysteries of history with physics speculation.

I've written five books in this alternative physics-and-history area thus far, plus have a new one coming out sometime in the next two or three months I'd imagine.

Q: Now culturally speaking, books on Nazi secret-weapons may seem a little dated, and yet some of the biggest Hollywood blockbusters in the last few years have been WW-II movies, such as "Flags of our Fathers" and "Saving Private Ryan".

What is it about the Second World War that continues to captivate us, and why doesn't Vietnam, the Gulf War, or even World War I provoke the same reaction?

A: That's a great question, and one, I think, that a lot of people ask, and my own intuition is that it has something to do with the clear-cut moral and spiritual aspect of that war; it was a war between real good and real evil; the Kaiser's Germany was not, after all, ultimately out to "conquer the world" and exterminate whole peoples or to turn them into slaves; Nazi Germany was.

And I think, too, that World War Two fascinates us because it was the first truly modern war. From the technological standpoint, most of our modern weapons - smart bombs, missiles, radar stealth technology, television guided bombs, even computers and directed

KILL SWITCH

energy weapons - have some prototypical antecedent that dates from that war, and much of it traceable to Nazi and Allied secret weapons projects.

Even from the standpoint of military doctrine I think there is a fascination, because the Germans really invented modern mobile combined arms maneuver warfare and the basic concept of firepower attrition. So I think there's any number of ways or reasons that we find the war so fascinating.

Q: In terms of research for the book, I understand that you consulted extensively with defense journalist Igor Witkowski, who is also a primary source for Nick Cook's coverage of this topic in "The Hunt for Zero Point". Can you tell us about working with Witkowski, and what came out of that collaboration?

A: Yes I did. Igor and I exchanged some letters and emails as I was writing the book, and swapping information and brainstorming ideas, many of which did not actually make it into the book at all. Like you, I have a tremendous respect for Witkowski's work in his book *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*.

And we both share the opinion that it was certainly worth the \$80 we paid to get it. Igor is very easy to work with, and considers his sources and evidences very rationally and carefully. One thing I think that he and I would both be agreed upon, and that is that there is certainly more work that can and should be done on *the Nazi Bell story*, as your own articles on that subject also indicate.

I think he and I now are both sort of regrouping and considering where to go from here: Do we pursue the historical line and aspect of the story, or the technological and physics one?

I think in a story like this it's difficult to disentangle the two and that any further work on the subject will be along the lines that Igor and I pursued in our books.

Q: Now "SS Brotherhood of the Bell" covers more than just the Bell - what are some of the other secret weapons that you describe in the book, and are there any revelations about new devices that might surprise us?

A: Well, actually I don't speak a great deal about other German secret weapons in *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell* other than to reference some of the intercontinental rockets that they were developing, plus some discussion on their over-the-horizon phased array radars that they also developed as guidance systems for them.

That in itself is a revelation, because the standard Allied Legend about German radars was that it wasn't as sophisticated as Allied radar and so on. In some respects that is true but in others - such as these over-the-horizon radars - it is not. I also mention these radars because it's my belief that they played a role in their late-war RAM experiments, where I believe they discovered aspects of wave-mixing and phase conjugation by multi-beam interferometry on some of their RAM material.

Of course, your readers will recognize those same elements in the presentations of scalar physics that Lt. Col. Tom Bearden has been making over the years.

This fact, plus certain things about the Bell itself, indicate to me that the Nazis may have been deliberately seeking or doing research into various aspects of scalar physics and the related ideas of vortex mechanics and torsion fields and so on.

Q: Now in terms of breakthrough propulsion, there seems to be a lot of confusion about,

KILL SWITCH

- Victor Schauberger's research
- the Vril
- the Coanda-Effect Saucers at Peenemunde
- the Nazi Bell

Can you help us better understand the delineation between these separate projects, and perhaps help us to understand why the Nazi's would run so many overlapping secret-projects concurrently?

A: This is really an excellent question. The short and simple answer is that the Bell is not in any way similar to Schauberger's research, the purported research of the prewar Vril Gesellschaft, or even the Coanda Effect saucer research associated with various names and the Peenemuende rocket research center.

There is some resemblance between Schauberger's research and the Bell in that both projects - in my presentation of the physics of the Bell - involved a well-developed vortex mechanics and vorticular theory of the medium. And in that respect, I suspect that there was some liaison between the projects. Though I don't go into this at all in the book, I'd like to speculate a bit here on what I think that liaison may have been.

Both Schauberger's project and the Bell fell under the aegis and jurisdiction of the Waffen SS, and there are strong indicators that both projects were part of SS Obergruppenfuehrer Hans Kammler's supersecret black projects empire, headquartered out of the Skoda Munitions Works' engineering project at Pilsen, Czechoslovakia. Bohemian Czechoslovakia was, of course, at that time, a "Reich Protectorate" and was under the direct jurisdiction of the SS, which made it the perfect place to headquarter and coordinate such black projects.

Most people don't know it, but one aspect of Kammler's black projects empire was its coordination via a "think tank" of scientists that he recruited for these projects.

This department actually published and circulated its own Top Secret "journal" of their scientific papers to each other. In other words, these scientists were expected to brainstorm and think outside the box, and to map out the technologies trees necessary to bring various technologies to fruition. I believe that this is precisely what we see with the various Nazi saucer projects. What we're seeing is not "absence" of coordination or an "inefficient duplication of effort," but rather the steps in a technology tree that had been worked out towards the acquisition of field propulsion machines. We see the Coanda Effect saucers, which we may interpret in this speculative context as a kind of "Mark I" or first step.

Then there are Schauberger's devices, which are based on his understanding of what he called "implosion", which on examination are devices relying on the creation of vortices, feedback loops and so on, which would be a "Mark II", a step along the way toward the Bell. At the top of this tree is the Bell itself, a project overseen by Dr. Walther Gerlach of Nobel Prize winning fame.

Gerlach's specialty was, of course, gravitation, magnetic spin and resonance, and so on. So one sees here the theoretical brains that can make sense of it all. The projects "overlap" in other words, because they were meant to overlap, with each stage designed to research certain aspects of a problem. In this light - again speculating here in this interview for the first time on this question - I believe the real purpose of the Coanda Effect saucer research was not so much to create a craft based upon it, but to research the lift and drag

KILL SWITCH

problems associated with such a craft for use in later projects.

If they could be made practical devices in their own right along the way, then so much the better. The Schauberger research would then have been to research aspects of vortex creation as a motive power for such devices. In fact, I think in this regard that it is interesting that the Schauberger project was started around 1943, after the “Mark I” research was well under way. This research would have been the ideal experimental context in which to research and test certain concepts of vortex mechanics.

Then of course, there is the last step, the Bell itself. I should also stress that I speak more about the Kammlerstab and its “method of operation” in the prequel to *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, a book called *Reich of the Black Sun*.

Again, at the risk of being redundant, I don’t view these as “separated” projects but as interrelated projects, since they bear the signature of the Kammlerstab’s modus operandi of mapping out technology trees and putting into place the practical projects necessary to bring their ideas to fruition.

Anyone approaching the subject of Nazi secret weapons has to bear this in mind, that while the various projects - sound cannon, wind and tornado cannon, disintegration rays and death rays, and lasers, grasers, EMP devices, endothermic bombs and fuel-air bombs - all of it, is not a messy or inefficient squandering of resources or duplication of effort, since these projects were coordinated at an extremely high level by the SS, which oversaw all patents applications in the Reich.

Q: Dr. Eric Davis speculated that the Nazi Bell was a centrifuge for refining nuclear materials mined in the nearby mountains and not any type of propulsion system or advanced physics project.

Does his speculation answer all of the unresolved questions associated with the Bell project?

A: That is an interesting observation, because it is an observation I myself made in my book *Reich of the Black Sun*.

Nazi uranium enrichment centrifuge technology is one of the little known aspects of their secret weapons research, but in point of fact, the Nazis brought this technology to such a state of perfection that one may safely say that this method of uranium enrichment is a uniquely “German” one.

It is my belief that the Nazis used this technology - and Von Ardenne’s modifications of cyclotrons with mass spectrometer separation tanks (much like Lawrence’s *beta calutrons* in the United States) - in a large uranium enrichment plant at Auschwitz. I get into this story in *Reich of the Black Sun*, but it is an essential story for the Bell, since German success with centrifuges would have given them the necessary experience in dealing with high rpm rotation machinery and the close precision tolerances that were necessary in such devices.

This, of course, was an essential component in the Bell as well, which consisted of *high rpm counter-rotating cylinders* in a modified “plasma focus” device. So yes, I believe that there is a connection between the Bell and their centrifuge technology and their atom bomb program. That being said, there are two other connections to their atom bomb project as well. The first is the Bell’s scientific project head, Dr. Walther Gerlach himself, who is by 1944 also in charge of the Reich’s nuclear research. But the Bell is Gerlach’s “special baby” as it were.

KILL SWITCH

I present a certain amount of evidence in the book from the Farm Hall Transcripts plus Igor Witkowski's research that indicate clearly that Gerlach was investigating some very esoteric areas of physics indeed, areas that could only have been associated with the Bell. And it is significant that only Gerlach was subsequently interred and interrogated by the USA after the British were through with him at Farm Hall.

The rest of the scientists, including Hahn, Diebner, Korsching, Hartek and Heisenberg were allowed to return to Germany. Only Gerlach was thought to be valuable enough to question further.

In itself, this is significant, because Gerlach's area of expertise, once again, was not related to nuclear or quantum physics at all, but to areas associated with magnetic resonance, particle spin, gravitation and so on.

The other connection is with the Bell's "fuel" itself, the mysterious liquid compound called "IRR Xerum 525" itself. I devote a whole chapter just to this aspect of the problem in the book.

In a nutshell, though, I believe this Serum 525 to have been an isotope of mercury which also contained other elements, most likely themselves radioactive isotopes, in solution or chemical composition with this mercury isotope, and even speculate that these substances might have been isomers, though it should be noted that if isomers were present in the compound, it would have been in extremely minute amounts given the technological difficulty of isolating them at that time.

But even if this extremely speculative notion is not actually the case, there is a certain bit of coincidental evidence that at least one element possibly also present in this compound may have been thorium, for it is a little known fact that one the Nazis literally scoured Europe and denuded it of almost all of its thorium.

This fact led to a postwar Allied inquiry into this, which came to a dead end: no real answers were ever found as to what happened to this thorium nor what the Nazis were really doing with it. So it's my suspicion that it may have been a needed element in this Serum 525 compound. Here is where I believe Witkowski's analysis breaks down a bit, though it is true as far as it goes. The mercury component of the compound would, of course, be ideal for plasma research, which self-evidently the Bell was designed to do.

But how does one explain the possible presence of other isotopes?

My speculation is - and again it is very speculative - that the Nazis may have also been trying to access certain other effects with these materials via the stress that the Bell created in them.

These effects might be analogous to something like the Mossbauer Effect which is used in part in the cohering of gamma ray emissions and so on, and thus the strange effects that the Bell had on "jellifying" various organic materials and its initial and quite deadly effects on humans and animals might be explained by some such mechanism.

And I believe, and present a certain amount of speculative reasoning in the book, that these effects may be related to the torsion field effects or longitudinal electric waves in the medium itself that I believe the Nazis were really after.

Put this way, then, the Bell was early on recognized by the Nazis as having not only a potential for "field" propulsion, but also a weapons potential that would have made the hydrogen bomb look like a kitchen match. And all of this, incidentally, was right up Gerlach's

KILL SWITCH

alley, for as I also present in the book, Gerlach had actually written a short article in a pre-war German newspaper, many years before the Nazis came to power in fact, what sorts of amazing things might be done with mercury when subjected to high electrical and magnetic stress.

Q: One of those biggest unresolved questions is what happened to Hans Kammler after the war. If he managed to get away - and get away with the Bell, then why haven't we seen any hints of this technology or Kammler himself in last half a century?

A: Well that is - allowing for inflation - the sixty-four trillion dollar question! Nick Cook, Witkowski, and I all present evidences in our books that would seem to indicate that General Kammler disappeared, along with the Bell and most of its project documentation, into the bowels of some postwar American project.

But there is also a certain body of evidence uncovered by British researcher Geoffrey Brooks that indicates that Kammler and the Bell wound up in Argentina at the plasma physics laboratory that General Peron built for fleeing Nazi physicists in Bariloche province in Argentina. While initially I followed Witkowski and Cook's idea that it disappeared into the USA, lately I lean more toward the idea that the Bell remained in independent Nazi hands. Now, as for the question about why haven't we seen or heard more about this technology since the war, in fact, I think we have heard about it, and I present this evidence in a chapter in Reich of the Black Sun and also repeated it, in slightly condensed form, in *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell*. And that episode is: the Kecksburg UFO crash in December of 1965 in Pennsylvania.

On any number of data points the Bell and the Kecksburg "acorn" are similar, from their shape, to the dimensions recorded by eyewitnesses for both objects, to the peculiar sound both objects made and so on. But for me the clincher is this: the Kecksburg "Acorn" was supposedly seen by an eyewitness at Wright-Patterson airbase.

According to research done by Kecksburg researcher Stan Gordon, this eyewitness worked for a local construction company in Dayton, where one day shortly after the incident an order was placed for thousands of ceramic bricks. Now this is interesting, because Witkowski's research made it clear that the Bell was housed and tested in an underground chamber that was constructed from ceramic bricks! So in other words, we have not only the same dimensions and shapes recorded for the two objects, but also the same physical environment is reported for both.

I think this is highly significant and suggestive, since the Kecksburg accounts pre-date the descriptions of the Bell uncovered by Witkowski.

In other words, the possibilities of collusion between the two stories is almost nil.

It is also intriguing to me that by any account, the American military showed up in Kecksburg so quickly after the object there had crash-landed.

The military, in other words, was ready to go, and, it would seem, merely waiting to find out exactly where the object came down in order to recover it. To my mind then, the parallels between the two objects is significant and a possible connection - or even identity - between the two should not be too readily dismissed.

If this is so, then it puts a new spin - not to coin a pun - on the question of what happened to Kammler and the Bell, for if the Bell was not in American hands at the end of the war, then by the time of Kecksburg, it or a similar device was recovered by them!

KILL SWITCH

Q: Is this a dead story, or is somebody actively trying to keep this technology a secret? A friend of mine visited the Bell test-site in 2006, and was told by the local villagers that a business conglomerate had bought the test site, and would be demolishing it to build a factory on the site. In my friend's case, he decided to quit asking questions and move on to another project.

Do you think that was simple paranoia, or do the proverbial walls have eyes?

A: No, I don't think it's paranoia at all, and I do think there is evidence - and I go into this extensively in the book - that someone, somewhere, is using "active measures" including so-called "wet operations" to maintain the secrecy surrounding the technology.

Even on the view that the Bell is "merely" a field propulsion device relying on torsion fields or electro-longitudinal waves in a kind of hyper-relativity, that would be a technology well worth protecting, for it implies the engineerability of local space-time curvature.

Once we have said that, we open the Pandora's box to the use of the same type of technology to engineer or stress local space-time for weaponization purposes, i.e., for destructive purposes. And that, of course, would - to be repetitive here again - make a hydrogen bomb look like a kitchen match. So yes, anyone having access to such technology would seek to suppress it for two reasons: to maintain their monopoly, and to prevent a proliferation nightmare beyond the wildest nightmares of cold war think-tank wargamers from occurring. In a certain sense I guess what I am saying is that, given mankind's propensity for warfare and destruction, such a technology would have to be suppressed.

But however one looks at it, I don't think suppression can ever be a successful strategy, simply because the type of physics the Bell represents will inevitably get out.

After all, your own website has numerous references to various physicists and engineers - people like Bearden, Dering, and so on - whose theories I believe play directly into the theoretical development that I believe lies behind the Bell.

Q: Now in terms of conspiracies, the part that bothers me is that neither the USA nor the Russians seem to have this technology. So if something is still going on, where is it, who has it, and why hasn't it ever gone public?

Maybe this leads back to the question of where Hans Kammler fled to after the war?

A: Well, to some extent I have answered this already.

If my Kecksburg speculations are true, then something like the Bell clearly ends up in American hands by 1965, if it was not already in American hands at the end of the war. But as I mentioned previously, I am increasingly inclined to the view that the Bell simply disappeared into the labyrinth of postwar independent Nazi research conducted in places like South America and under the nominal oversight of Nazi-friendly governments like Peron's Argentina or, later, Pinochet's Chile.

Nazi connections and influence in the vast Latin American drug cartels and their criminal activities would have provided a nearly inexhaustible supply of funds, plus accomplish at the same time a strategic goal of weakening a former enemy, namely the USA.

The reason I incline increasingly to this "independent and continuing Nazi" development for the Bell is simply, as you say, the fact that the technology and science simply seems to have disappeared entirely.

Q: In addition to Kammler, you've raised a number of questions about German sci-

KILL SWITCH

entists such as Von Braun and Debus. They came to the USA as Operation Paperclip scientists, and what made them valuable was their knowledge of these Nazi secret-weapons programs. Can you tell us which of them were prominent in your research, and what you found about their activities during and after the war?

A: Oh wow, another excellent and provocative question! Well, to me, beyond Gerlach himself, the most interesting of these characters has always been Dr. Kurt Debus.

Debus is intriguing for the speculative possibilities that he represents, because he ends up, of course, as a senior administrator in NASA of the Kennedy Space Flight Center during the Apollo program. As an administrator, then, this means that he has his fingers in almost every pie there is inside NASA, and thus he has a very clear picture of what's really going on. This is intriguing, then, for yet other reasons, for as I make clear in *SS Brotherhood*, Debus was an ardent Nazi, and nearly created chaos in the Bell project by denouncing a fellow engineer to the Gestapo. One of the firms involved with the Bell, the *Allgemeine Elektrizitäts Gesellschaft*, A.E.G., had to intervene to free the man whom Debus had denounced to allow the project to continue.

It is due to this intervention that we know that the Bell was given its own unique classification, the highest classification, in fact, in the Third Reich, a classification that made the Bell not only a Geheime Reichsache but Kriegsscheidend, or "War Decisive", a classification found in absolutely no other secret project in all of Nazi Germany, including its successful fuel-air, and its atom bomb, projects. But beyond this, Debus is interested for what his specialty in science was, and for his connection both to Von Braun's Peenemünde rocket team and to the Bell project, connections which were, in each case, direct. With Debus, then, we have one of those "overlaps" that is so characteristic of the Kammlerstab.

Debus was the man who designed the powerplant for the Bell! Now this is very intriguing to me, because his specialty was the measurement of extremely high voltage direct current discharges! Shades of Nikola Tesla.

I find this very suggestive, for I present evidence in the book, based on Witkowski's observations, that the Bell may have also been a pulsed device utilizing HV DC pulses, a fact made the more interesting in that the Nazis apparently built an entire power plant very near the Bell's test sites in lower Silesia, a fact that would possibly indicate another connection to the use of DC electricity in the device, since close proximity to such a power source would have been required if DC were used, much like Edison's DC power plants would have had to have been placed every few miles or so for practical electrification along DC lines. But whatever one makes of these speculations, Debus is interesting of course because he ends up as a senior administrator in a space flight center in NASA during the Apollo program, and his specialty is not even rockets at all! I suggest in the book that this is because there may have been a hidden or alternative technology involved in the *Lunar Excursion Module* (LEM) that got us OFF the Moon.

Please don't get me wrong here. I'm not one of those "Apollo was hoaxed" people at all. I am not even remotely sympathetic to such views. But I do share the concern that I don't really see the signatures of a rocket taking off from the Moon in those films of the LEMs taking off.

It doesn't look like an acceleration that is geometric enough to be a rocket; it just sort of "pops up" and off it goes at more or less - it looks to me - like uniform velocity, though I must admit I haven't actually done any measurements or not to see if this is the case. I am

KILL SWITCH

merely reporting what my eyes see and my mind tells me based upon those perceptions. So, lacking this “geometric enough” signature of a rocket’s acceleration, we might be dealing with an alternative technology, a field propulsion technology, in getting us OFF the Moon, and the presence of Debus in NASA in his position would be the perfect place both to place someone who was once involved in such a project, and as well the perfect place to put someone in order to keep that technology quiet.

In short, the *Paperclip Nazis in NASA* reconstructed as much of that technology as they could, and used it to get us off of a Moon which they possibly knew to be more massive than popularly reported, which, if the case, would have made a return vehicle based merely on rockets impractical.

Q: As I understand things, in “SS Brotherhood of the Bell” you challenge the notion that the Majestic 12 was founded in response to a UFO crash in Roswell, and instead speculate that they were somehow a product of American worries about these Nazi technologies, right? Can you elaborate a bit of this notion?

A: Well, it’s an idea I elaborate both in *Reich of the Black Sun* and in *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell*. Basically I do not question the Roswell crash or the MJ-12 Cooper-Cantwheel documents. I accept them as “givens” in order to make an academic argument, i.e., to present an alternative explanation of the crash and the documents’ own contents.

As such, many people do not really understand what I’m trying to do and misinterpret it. In short, my method is to examine the internal evidence of the documents themselves by way of a comparison to known Nazi secret weapons projects such as the Coanda effect saucers, and so on, and to compare these known technologies with the technological descriptions found in the documents themselves.

The long and short of it is, that the documents do not describe a technology exotic enough to be extraterrestrial, though they do describe a technology exotic enough to be Nazi.

Thus, the documents themselves also allude time and again to the involvement of the “paperclip” people in the assessment of the crashed vehicle. So in my view, what really would have set the alarm bells ringing in the American military was if something Nazi had crashed there, for it would mean that the former “defeated” enemy was alive, well, and continuing its projects somewhere out there.

On this view, then, the “ET” line, at least as far as Roswell is concerned, would merely have been a final deeply embedded *layer of disinformation*, a final “deep cover” story to cover up the exotic, though still terrestrial, and Nazi nature of what was recovered there.

Q: You know, I think “Dr. Strangelove” effectively made the point that ex-Nazi scientists had their own agendas, and letting them work in our government after the war might have some unintended consequences.

In Kubrick’s film, Strangelove mistakenly calls our President “Mein Führer” on two occasions... suggesting that these scientists had their own agendas, regardless of which government they worked for.

Any thoughts on this?

A: I believe I’ve answered this in some respects with my *Kecksburg* and *Roswell* speculations. But to expand on it a bit, *Paperclip* was but the tip of the iceberg in postwar Nazi penetration of various departments of the American government.

KILL SWITCH

We must remember that long before President Truman had even signed the National Security Act of 1947, which created the CIA and NSA, their civilian character and charter was already severely compromised by the fact that the CIA's predecessor, the OSS, had taken over, lock stock and barrel, General Reinhard Gehlen's *Fremde Heere Ost*, or "Foreign Armies East", the Wehrmacht's military intelligence on the Eastern front, inside of the Soviet Union and Eastern Europe.

From a certain standpoint, then, the entire "Soviet Operations and Analysis" desk of the CIA was staffed almost entirely by Nazis, who remained under Gehlen's direct control.

And the American who did this wonderful "service" for our country was none other than OSS Zurich station chief Allen Dulles. And I'll let your readers work out the connections and implications from there, because it's horrifying...

Q: Before this interview, we had a few interesting conversations on topics relating to WW-II secret weapons, and it seems that references to W.A. Harbison's *Projekt Saucer* series keep coming up - especially in reference to his fictional novel "Genesis", which speculates that the worldwide wave of UFO sightings that started in 1947 might actually have been from Nazi technology developed near the end of the war. How do you think this fits with your speculation about the origin of Majestic 12?

A: Well it fits quite well with it. In fact, one thing that I find rather unusual is that so many novelists seemed to be ahead of the curve of more factually based researchers on this question. For example, years before Witkowski's research was published, in fact, before even the German reunification itself, the famous novelist Dean Koontz wrote a novel called *Lightning*.

It is about a German secret weapon which is a "time travel" machine. While that sounds rather extraordinary and fanciful, it is Koontz's descriptions of his fictional time machine that give one pause, for he describes a rotating cylinder using tremendous electrical power, which gives off some extreme electrostatic displays and effects! Now, I find that a little too coincidental to be coincidental...

How did Koontz know this or come up with this? Harbison's *Projekt Saucer* novels are another case in point, as you observe. But what I find very interesting with his novels is that there is no real parallel with the Bell, while there are plenty of parallels with the *Coanda Effect* and *Schuaberger devices*. But Harbison is interesting precisely because his novels present the view that this type of research was continued by some independent group of Nazis after the war.

Then there's Martin Caidin's novel *The Mendelov Conspiracy*, in which, again, an independent group of somewhat cranky scientists pursues their independent technological development of saucers.

Now here's the decisive point: the only hard evidence that exists tends to point to the line of continued Nazi postwar research and development, and not to any other group.

This evidence, once again, consists of,

1. the disappearance of the Bell, its documentation, and General Kammler
2. the establishment of a plasma physics research lab in Bariloche province in Argentina by General Peron, a facility established for his Nazi scientists; such a laboratory would be congruent with the type of physics and engineering involved with the Bell

KILL SWITCH

3. General Kammler and the Bell disappear, apparently, in a massive six-engined Junkers 390 heavy-lift airplane, a plane capable of flying nonstop from Europe to Argentina

4. Geoffrey Brooks' evidence, based allegedly on examination of classified Argentine government documents, that Kammler and the Bell did indeed fly into Argentina; and finally, and no less important

5. the probable disappearance of the Nazi financial mastermind Martin Bormann, de facto and most probable chief of any postwar "Nazi International", into South America, as the research of Ladislav Farago (Aftermath) and others indicated, and Bormann's and the postwar "Nazi International's" deep financial penetration into various corporations and also into criminal syndicates.

There's your money supply. My belief, then, is that if there was a continued and independently coordinated and controlled Nazi development of their wartime black projects, that this was probably done not only in totally independent projects, but also "inside" of the black projects of other nations, using those nations' own compartmentalized security features against them, and to cloak their own covertly coordinated activities.

When one thinks about it, it would not be all that difficult to do, and it also supplies another source of funding.

Q: Interestingly, in Harbinson's later novel, "Inception", he speculates that secret-weapons and advanced propulsion technology have been around for decades before the war, and that Germany's involvement during the war came only from being fertile ground in which to develop existing technological concepts.

Do you think there's any merit to that notion?

A: Yes I definitely do think there's merit to it, and in fact, present evidence that the Bell project may have been the legacy of secret research actually begun under the Weimar Republic, and again, under the aegis of Walther Gerlach.

As Lt. Col. Tom Bearden has never tired of pointing out, one of the seminal papers for "scalar" physics was the paper "On the partial differential equations of mathematical physics," by renowned Physicist E.T. Whittaker, a paper which I have and have read repeatedly.

It is as breathtaking as Bearden makes it out to be, but what I think he misses, to a certain extent, is the significance of where it was published: it was published in *Mathematische Annalen*, in Germany.

So we have a very fertile conceptual and socio-scientific climate inside Germany with figures like Gerlach, Thirring (who was actually Austrian), Einstein, Hilgenberg, Krafft, and so on, who can look at certain experiments, or, for that matter, certain tensor expressions in Einstein's late 20s and early 30s versions of his unified field theory, and conclude that locally engineerable stresses in space-time - a kind of "hyper-relativity" - was possible via certain types of plasma and electromagnetic phenomena.

With Hilgenberg, particularly, we have an entirely worked out vorticular theory of the medium that is an alternative to relativistic physics, and therefore would have been of interest to the Nazis.

And Gerlach, of course, would certainly have had the mental prowess capable of dressing up Einstein's UFT, or even of extending it, and making it presentable to the Nazis.

KILL SWITCH

Q: What does strike me about this “prewar secret weapons” notion is that Unified Field Theory research became well-known with Kaluza-Klein Theory in 1921, which was one of Einstein’s own inspirations in trying to unify gravitation with the other forces.

Does it seem difficult to imagine military-scientists attempting applied physics projects during the war that might produce effects like those described in the Bell experiment?

A: Oh no, not at all. In fact, not just Kaluza-Klein but there is also Vaclav Hlavaty’s six dimensional extension of it - if I recall correctly it was six dimensions. Someone like Gerlach could certainly have extended these theories and additionally would have been able to appreciate the longitudinal wave work of Tesla, or for that matter, would have understood the enormous significance of Whittaker’s paper.

And his student, of course, was Hilgenberg.

Q: I understand that you’re a deeply spiritual man, with a PhD in Patristics - the study of early (pre 8th-century) Christianity. As someone with a deep and abiding spiritual faith, is it difficult to write about topics involving the type of evil that the Nazi’s seem to have embodied?

A: No, quite the reverse, actually. In a way, it’s almost a moral imperative to write about it, and to warn people of the nastier and destructive implications of these types of technologies. By the same token, I’m not a Luddite, and don’t believe technologies like this can or should be suppressed.

Similarly, though, it gives me a perspective from which to appreciate the possible ethically sound reasons why various elites would wish to suppress such technologies, for they are, as I have already averred, capable of spawning a proliferation nightmare of weapons far more dangerous than hydrogen bombs, and, from a certain standpoint, weapons much easier to design, engineer, and assemble.

Any physics based on these types of stresses in the medium, or in local space-time curvature, whether one calls it torsion physics or scalar physics or quantum potential physics or whatever, has the potential for weaponization of just horrendously destructive capabilities. I’m trying to let people know, in addition to the many good benefits that such a physics would have - benefits many others have written about - that this physics also has some very disturbing negative potentials as well, and that to handle them we should have some spiritual enlightenment or maturity.

It is, in a way, similar to Einstein’s activism in his later life, for he also had his religious and philosophical foundations and these, in turn, gave him some unique insights into the ethical problems posed by modern physics.

Q: Is it possible that the public’s fascination with Nazi secret-weapons might be a type of coping mechanism to let us avoid having to emotionally deal with the evils of that War? Certainly WW-II embodied depravity on an entirely new level, and I wonder if perhaps some of the mythology surrounding secret-weapons might not be a means of avoiding the cold, hard reality of the atrocities that occurred during that period.

Is it more comfortable for us to think of scientists in white coats building UFO’s than to think of groups of starving prisoners huddled in war camps, and being slaughtered in numbers too large to count?

A: Well, it might be possible to imagine that, and perhaps that forms some of the

KILL SWITCH

motivations for some people, but if so, they are massively misinformed, for as I point out in both books, but particularly in *Reich of the Black Sun*, the Nazis were able to fulfill the massive labor requirements of their atom bomb program and other secret weapons projects with concentration camp slave labor, which was, of course, unfortunately expendable.

What we must absolutely recognize is that all Nazi secret weapons, including the Bell, were purchased at an enormous and incalculable cost in human suffering and misery, and not just their rockets.

This is why their atom bomb project was so easy to portray as an inept, bungling, miserly-funded effort, when in fact it was none of those things.

Q: I'd like to close by asking where people can buy a copy of "SS Brotherhood of the Bell," as well as learning about any plans or ideas for future books that you might working on. What's next from Joseph A, and when do you expect we'll see it?

A: I just finished a new book called *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts*, which should be out by the fall of 2007, and am scratching some notes down for a couple of ideas for two different books, one a kind of sequel to *Brotherhood* and another having to do more with hidden political histories of the Second World War.

The *Cosmic War* more or less extends the method I've used in my other books of taking modern conceptions in alternative physics and using them to examine some ideas in ancient texts.

The Mystery Deepens: Will the truth about the Bell's fate ever be revealed...?

THE CONTROLLERS

Dr. Robert Becker comments that "Such a device has obvious applications in covert operations designed to drive a target crazy with 'voices' or deliver undetectable instructions to a programmed assassin."

A new hypothesis of Alien Abduction

- * Section I. Introduction
- * Section II. The Technology
- * Section III. Applications
- * Section IV. Abductions

I. Introduction

One wag has dubbed the problem "Terra and the Pirates."

The pirates, ostensibly, are marauders from another solar system; their victims include a growing number of troubled human beings who insist that they've been shanghaied by these otherworldly visitors. An outlandish scenario - yet through the works of such authors as Budd Hopkins¹ and Whitley Strieber,² the "alien abduction" syndrome has seized the public imagination. Indeed, tales of UFO contact threaten to lapse into fashionability, even though, as I have elsewhere noted,³ they may still inflict a formidable social price upon the claimant.

Some time ago, I began to research these claims, concentrating my studies on the social and political environment surrounding these events. As I studied, the project grew and its scope widened. Indeed, I began to feel as though I'd gone digging through familiar terrain only to unearth Gomorrah.

KILL SWITCH

These excavations may have disgorged a solution.

The Problem

Among ufologists, the term “abduction” has come to refer to an infinitely confounding experience, or matrix of experiences, shared by a dizzying number of individuals, who claim that travellers from the stars have scooped them out of their beds, or snatched them from their cars, and subjected them to interrogations, quasi-medical examinations, and “instruction” periods.

Usually, these sessions are said to occur within alien spacecraft; frequently, the stories include terrifying details reminiscent of the tortures inflicted in Germany’s death camps. The abductees often (though not always) lose all memory of these events; they find themselves back in their cars or beds, unable to account for hours of “missing time.” Hypnosis, or some other trigger, can bring back these haunted hours in an explosion of recollection - and as the smoke clears, an abductee will often spot a trail of similar experiences, stretching all the way back to childhood.

Perhaps the oddest fact of these odd tales: Many abductees, for all their vividly-remembered agonies, claim to love their alien tormentors. That’s the word I’ve heard repeatedly: love.

Within the community of “scientific ufologists” - those lonely, all too little-heard advocates of reasonable and open-minded debate on matters saucerological - these claims have elicited cautious interest and a commendable restraint from conclusion-hopping. Outside the higher realms of scientific ufology, the situation is, alas, quite different. In the popular press, in both the “straight” and sensationalist media, within that journalistic realm where issues are defined and public opinion solidified (despite a frequently superficial approach to matters of evidence and investigation) abduction scenarios have elicited two basic reactions: that of the Believer and the Skeptic.

The Believers - and here we should note that “Believers” and “abductees” are two groups whose memberships overlap but are in no way congruent - accept such stories at face value. They accept, despite the seeming absurdity of these tales, the internal contradictions, the askew logic of narrative construction, the severe discontinuity of emotional response to the actions described. The Believers believe, despite reports that their beloved “space brothers” use vile and inhuman tactics of medical examination - senseless procedures most of us (and certainly the vanguard of an advanced race) would be ashamed to inflict on an animal. The Believers believe, despite the difficulty of reconciling these unsettling tales with their own deliriums of benevolent off-worlders.

Occasionally, the rough notes of a rationalization are offered: “The aliens don’t know what they are doing,” we hear; or “Some aliens are bad.” Yet the Believers confound their own reasoning when they insist on ascribing the wisdom of the ages and the beneficence of the angels to their beloved visitors. The aliens allegedly know enough about our society to go about their business undetected by the local authorities and the general public; they communicate with the abductees in human tongue; they concern themselves with details of the percipients’ innermost lives - yet they remain so ignorant of our culture as to be unaware of the basic moral precepts concerning the dignity of the individual and the right to self-determination. Such dichotomies don’t bother the Believers; they are the faithful, and faith is assumed to have its mysteries.

KILL SWITCH

Sancta Simplicitas

Conversely, the Skeptics dismiss these stories out of hand. They dismiss, despite the intriguing confirmatory details: the multiple witness events, the physical traces left by the ufonauts, the scars and implants left on the abductees. The skeptics scoff, though the abductees tell stories similar in detail - even certain tiny details, not known to the general public.

Philip Klass is a debunker who, through his appearances on such television programs as NOVA and NIGHTLINE, has been in a position to affect much of the public debate on UFOs. In his interesting but poorly-documented work on abductions,⁴ Klass claims that "abduction" is a psychological disease, spread by those who write about it. This argument exactly resembles the professional press-basher's frequent assertion that terrorism metastasizes through media exposure. Yet for all the millions of words expectorated by newsfolk on the subject of terrorism, terrorist actions remain quite rare, as any statistician (though few politicians) will admit, and verifiable linkage between crimes and their coverage remains to be found. For that matter, there have been books - bestsellers, even - on unicorns and gnomes. People who claim to see those creatures are few. Abductees are plentiful.

Both Believer and Skeptic, in my opinion, miss the real story. Both make the same mistake: They connect the abduction phenomenon to the forty-year history of UFO sightings, and they apply their prejudices about the latter to the controversy about the former.

At first sight, the link seems natural. Shouldn't our thoughts about UFOs color our thoughts about UFO abductions?

No.

They may well be separate issues. Or, rather, they are connected only in this: The myth of the UFO has provided an effective cover story for an entirely different sort of mystery. Remove yourself from the Believer/Skeptic dialectic, and you will see the third alternative.

As we examine this alternative, we will, of necessity, stray far from the saucers. We must turn our face from the paranormal and concentrate on the occult - if, by "occult," we mean secret.

I posit that the abductees have been abducted. Yet they are also spewing fantasy - or, more precisely, they have been given a set of lies to repeat and believe. If my hypothesis proves true, then we must accept the following: The kidnapping is real. The fear is real. The pain is real. The instruction is real. But the little grey men from Zeti Reticuli are not real; they are constructs, Halloween masks meant to disguise the real faces of the controllers. The abductors may not be visitors from Beyond; rather, they may be a symptom of the carcinoma which blackens our body politic.

The fault lies not in our stars, but in ourselves.

The Hypothesis

Substantial evidence exists linking members of this country's intelligence community (including the Central Intelligence Agency, the Defense Advanced Research Projects Agency, and the Office of Naval Intelligence) with the esoteric technology of mind control. For decades, "spy-chiatrists" working behind the scenes - on college campuses, in CIA-sponsored institutes, and (most heinously) in prisons - have experimented with the erasure of memory, hypnotic resistance to torture, truth serums, post-hypnotic suggestion, rapid

KILL SWITCH

induction of hypnosis, electronic stimulation of the brain, non-ionizing radiation, microwave induction of intracerebral “voices,” and a host of even more disturbing technologies. Some of the projects exploring these areas were ARTICHOKE, BLUEBIRD, PANDORA, MKDELTA, MKSEARCH and the infamous MKULTRA.

I have read nearly every available book on these projects, as well as the relevant congressional testimony⁵. I have also spent much time in university libraries researching relevant articles, contacting other researchers (who have graciously allowed me access to their files), and conducting interviews. Moreover, I traveled to Washington, DC to review the files John Marks compiled when he wrote *THE SEARCH FOR “THE MANCHURIAN CANDIDATE.”*⁶ These files include some 20,000 pages of CIA and Defense Department documents, interviews, scientific articles, letters, etc. The views presented here are the result of extensive and ongoing research.

As a result of this research, I have come to the following conclusions:

1. Although misleading (and occasionally perjured) testimony before Congress indicated that the CIA's “brainwashing” efforts met with little success,⁷ striking advances were, in fact, made in this field. As CIA veteran Miles Copeland once admitted to a reporter, “The congressional subcommittee which went into this sort of thing got only the barest glimpse.”⁸

2. Clandestine research into thought manipulation has NOT stopped, despite CIA protestations that it no longer sponsors such studies. Victor Marchetti, 14-year veteran of the CIA and author of the renown expose, *THE CIA AND THE CULT OF INTELLIGENCE*, confirmed in a 1977 interview that the mind control research continues, and that CIA claims to the contrary are a “cover story.”⁹

3. The Central Intelligence Agency was not the only government agency involved in this research.¹⁰ Indeed, many branches of our government took part in these studies - including NASA, the Atomic Energy Commission, as well as all branches of the Defense Department.

To these conclusions I would append the following - not as firmly established historical fact, but as a working hypothesis and grounds for investigation:

4. The “UFO abduction” phenomenon might be a continuation of clandestine mind control operations.

I recognize the difficulties this thesis might present to those readers emotionally wedded to the extraterrestrial hypothesis, or to those whose political WELTANSCHAUUNG disallows any such suspicions. Still, the openminded student of abductions should consider the possibilities. Certainly, we are not being narrow-minded if we ask researchers to exhaust ALL terrestrial explanations before looking heavenward.

Granted, this particular explanation may, at first, seem as bizarre as the phenomenon itself. But I invite the skeptical reader to examine the work of George Estabrooks, a seminal theorist on the use of hypnosis in warfare, and a veteran of Project MKULTRA. Estabrooks once amused himself during a party by covertly hypnotizing two friends, who were led to believe that the Prime Minister of England had just arrived; Estabrooks' victims spent an hour conversing with, and even serving drinks to, the esteemed visitor.¹¹ For ufologists, this incident raises an inescapable question: If the Mesmeric arts can successfully evoke a non-existent Prime Minister, why can't a representative from the Pleiades be similarly induced?

KILL SWITCH

But there is much more to the present day technology of mind control than mere hypnosis - and many good reasons to suspect that UFO abduction accounts are an artifact of continuing brainwashing/behavior modification experiments. Moreover, I intend to demonstrate that, by using UFO mythology as a cover story, the experimenters may have solved the major problem with the work conducted in the 1950s - "the disposal problem," i.e., the question of "What do we do with the victims?"

If, in these pages, I seem to stray from the subject of the saucers, I plead for patience. Before I attempt to link UFO abductions with mind control experiments, I must first show that this technology exists. Much of the forthcoming is an introduction to the topic of mind control - what it is, and how it works.

II. The Technology: A Brief Overview

In the early days of World War II, George Estabrooks, of Colgate University, wrote to the Department of War, describing in breathless terms the possible uses of hypnosis in warfare.¹² The Army was intrigued; Estabrooks had a job. The true history of Estabrooks' wartime collaboration with the CID, FBI.¹³ and other agencies may never be told: After the war, he burned his diary pages covering the years 1940-45, and thereafter avoided discussing his continuing government work with anyone, even close members of the family.¹⁴ Occasionally, he strongly intimated that his work involved the creation of hypno-programmed couriers and hypnotically-induced split personalities, but whether he succeeded in these areas remains a controversial point. Nevertheless, the eccentric and flamboyant Estabrooks remains a pivotal figure in the early history of clandestine behavioral research.

Which is not to say that he worked alone. World War II was the first conflict in which the human brain became a field of battle, where invading forces were led by the most notable names in psychology and pharmacology. On both sides, the war spurred furious efforts to create a "truth drug" for use in interrogating prisoners. General William "Wild Bill" Donovan, director of the OSS, tasked his crack team - including Dr. Winifred Overhulser, Dr. Edward Strecker, Harry J. Anslinger and George White - to modify human perception and behavior through chemical means; their "medicine cabinet" included scopolamine, peyote, barbiturates, mescaline, and marijuana. (This research had its amusing side: Donovan's "psychic warriors" conducted many extensive and expensive trials before deciding that the best method of administering tetrahydrocannabinol, the active ingredient in marijuana, was via the cigarette. Any jazz musician could have told them as much.¹⁵)

Simultaneously, the notorious Nazi doctors at Dachau experimented with mescaline as a means of eliminating the victim's will to resist. Jews, slaves, gypsies, and other "Untermenschen" in the camp were surreptitiously slipped the drug; later, mescaline was combined with hypnosis.¹⁶ The results of these tests were made available to the United States after the War.

In 1947, the Navy conducted the first known post-war mind control program, Project CHAPTER, which continued the drug experiments. Decades later, journalists and investigators still haven't uncovered much information about this project - or, indeed, about any of the military's other excursions into this field. We know that the Army eventually founded operations THIRD CHANCE and DERBY HAT; other project names remain mysterious, though the existence of these programs is unquestionable.

The newly-formed CIA plunged into this cesspool in 1950, with Project BLUEBIRD, rechristened ARTICHOKE in 1951. To establish a "cover story" for this research, the CIA

KILL SWITCH

funded a propaganda effort designed to convince the world that the Communist Bloc had devised insidious new methods of re-shaping the human will; the CIA's own efforts could therefore, if exposed, be explained as an attempt to "catch up" with Soviet and Chinese work. The primary promoter of this "line" was one Edward Hunter, a CIA contract employee operating undercover as a journalist, and, later, a prominent member of the John Birch society. (Hunter was an OSS veteran of the China theatre - the same spawning grounds which produced Richard Helms, Howard Hunt, Mitch WerBell, Fred Chrisman, Paul Helliwell and a host of other noteworthies who came to dominate that strange land where the worlds of intelligence and right-wing extremism meet.¹⁷)

Hunter offered "brainwashing" as the explanation for the numerous confessions signed by American prisoners of war during the Korean War and (generally) UN-recanted upon the prisoners' repatriation. These confessions alleged that the United States used germ warfare in the Korean conflict, a claim which the American public of the time found impossible to accept. Many years later, however, investigative reporters discovered that Japan's germ warfare specialists (who had wreaked incalculable terror on the conquered Chinese during WWII) had been mustered into the American national security apparatus - and that the knowledge gleaned from Japan's horrifying germ warfare experiments probably WAS used in Korea, just as the "brainwashed" soldiers had indicated.¹⁸ Thus, we now know that the entire brainwashing scare of the 1950s constituted a CIA hoax perpetrated upon the American public: CIA deputy director Richard Helms admitted as much when, in 1963, he told the Warren Commission that Soviet mind control research consistently lagged years behind American efforts.¹⁹

When the CIA's mind control program was transferred from the Office of Security to the Technical Services Staff (TSS) in 1953, the name changed again - to MKULTRA.²⁰ Many consider this wide-ranging "octopus" project - whose tentacles twined through the corridors of numerous universities and around the necks of an army of scientists - the most ominous operation in CIA's catalogue of atrocity. Through MKULTRA, the Agency created an umbrella program of a positively Joycean scope, designed to ferret out all possible means of invading what George Orwell once called "the space between our ears" (Later still, in 1962, mind control research was transferred to the Office of Research and Development; project cryptonyms remain unrevealed.²¹)

What was studied? Everything - including hypnosis, conditioning, sensory deprivation, drugs, religious cults, microwaves, psychosurgery, brain implants, and even ESP. When MKULTRA "leaked" to the public during the great CIA investigations of the 1970s, public attention focused most heavily on drug experimentation and the work with ESP.²² Mystery still shrouds another area of study, the area which seems to have most interested ORD: psychoelectronics. This research may prove key to our understanding of the UFO abduction phenomenon.

Implants

Perhaps the most interesting pieces of evidence surrounding the abduction phenomenon are the intracerebral implants allegedly visible in the X-rays and MRI scans of many abductees.²³

Indeed, abductees often describe operations in which needles are inserted into the brain; more frequently still, they report implantation of foreign objects through the sinus cavities. Many abduction specialists assume that these intracranial incursions must be the

KILL SWITCH

handiwork of scientists from the stars. Unfortunately, these researchers have failed to familiarize themselves with certain little-heralded advances in terrestrial technology.

The abductees' implants strongly suggest a technological lineage which can be traced to a device known as a "stimoceiver," invented in the late '50s-early '60s by a neuroscientist named Jose Delgado. The stimoceiver is a miniature depth electrode which can receive and transmit electronic signals over FM radio waves. By stimulating a correctly-positioned stimoceiver, an outside operator can wield a surprising degree of control over the subject's responses.

The most famous example of the stimoceiver in action occurred in a Madrid bull ring. Delgado "wired" the bull before stepping into the ring, entirely unprotected. Furious for gore, the bull charged toward the doctor - then stopped, just before reaching him. The technician-turned-toreador had halted the animal by simply pushing a button on a black box, held in the hand.²⁴

Delgado's PHYSICAL CONTROL OF THE MIND: TOWARD A PSYCHO-CIVILISED SOCIETY²⁵ remains the sole, full-length, popularly-written work on intracerebral implants and electronic stimulation of the brain (ESB). (The book's ominous title and unconvincing philosophical rationales for mass mind control prompted an unfavorable public reaction - which may have deterred other researchers from publishing on this theme for a general audience.) While subsequent work has long since superceded the techniques described in this book, Delgado's achievements were seminal. His animal and human experiments clearly demonstrate that the experimenter can electronically induce emotions and behavior: Under certain conditions, the extremes of temperament - rage, lust, fatigue, etc. - can be elicited by an outside operator as easily as an organist might call forth a C-major chord.

Delgado writes: "Radio stimulation of different points in the amygdala and hippocampus in the four patients produced a variety of effects, including pleasant sensations, elation, deep, thoughtful concentration, odd feelings, super relaxation, colored visions, and other responses."²⁶ The evocative phrase "colored vision" clearly indicates remotely-induced hallucination; we will detail later how these hallucinations may be "controlled" by an outside operator.

Speaking in 1966 - and reflecting research undertaken years previous - Delgado asserted that his experiments "support the distasteful conclusion that motion, emotion, and behavior can be directed by electrical forces and that humans can be controlled like robots by push buttons."²⁷ He even prophesied a day when brain control could be turned over to non-human operators, by establishing two-way radio communication between the implanted brain and a computer.²⁸

Of one experimental subject, Delgado notes that "the patient expressed the successive sensations of fainting, fright and floating around. These 'floating' feelings were repeatedly evoked on different days by stimulation of the same point..."²⁹ Ufologists may recognize the similarity of this sequence of events to abductee reports of the opening minutes of their experiences.³⁰ Under subsequent hypnosis, the abductee could be instructed to misremember the cause of this floating sensation.

In a fascinating series of experiments, Delgado attached the stimoceiver to the tympanic membrane, thereby transforming the ear into a sort of microphone. An assistant would whisper "How are you?" into the ear of a suitably "fixed" cat, and Delgado could hear the words over a loudspeaker in the next room. The application of this technology to the spy

KILL SWITCH

trade should be readily apparent. According to Victor Marchetti, The Agency once attempted a highly-sophisticated extension of this basic idea, in which radio implants were attached to a cat's cochlea, to facilitate the pinpointing of specific conversations, freed from extraneous surrounding noises.³¹ Such "advances" exacerbate the already-imposing level of Twentieth-Century paranoia: Not only can our phones be tapped and mail checked, but even tabby may be spying on us!

Yet the ramifications of this technology may go even deeper than Marchetti indicates. I presume that if a suitably-wired subject's inner ear can be made into a microphone, it can also be made into a loudspeaker - one possible explanation for the "voices" heard by abductees.³² Indeed, I have personally viewed a strange, opalescent implant within the ear canal of an abductee. I see no reason to ascribe this device to alien intrusion - more than likely, the "intruders" in this case were the technological inheritors of the Delgado legacy. Indeed, not many years after Delgado's experiments with the cat, Ralph Schwitzgebel devised a "bug-in-the-ear" via which the therapist - odd term, under the circumstances - can communicate with his subject.³³

Other researchers have made notable contributions to this field.

Robert G. Heath, of Tulane University, who has implanted as many as 125 electrodes in his subjects, achieved his greatest notoriety by attempting to "cure" homosexuality through ESB. In his experiments, he discovered that he could control his patients' memory, (a feat which, applied in the ufological context, may account for the phenomenon of "missing time"); he could also induce sexual arousal, fear, pleasure, and hallucinations.³⁴

Heath and another researcher, James Olds,³⁵ have independently illustrated that areas of the brain in and near the hypothalamus have, when electronically stimulated, what has been described as "rewarding" and "aversive" effects. Both animals and men, when given the means to induce their own ESB of the brain's pleasure centers, will stimulate themselves at a tremendous rate, ignoring such basic drives as hunger and thirst.³⁶ (Using fixed electrodes of his own invention, John C. Lilly had accomplished similar effects in the early 1950s.³⁷) Anyone who has studied the abduction phenomenon will find himself on familiar territory here, for the abductee accounts are replete with stories of bewildering and inappropriate sexual response countered by extremely painful stimuli - operant conditioning, at its most extreme, and most insidious, for here we see a form of conditioning in which the manipulator renders himself invisible. Indeed, B.F. Skinner-esque aversive therapy, remotely applied, was Heath's prescription for "healing" homosexuality.³⁸

Ralph Schwitzgebel and his brother Robert have produced a panoply of devices for tracking individuals over long ranges; they may be considered the creators of the "electronic house arrest" devices recently approved by the courts.³⁹ Schwitzgebel devices could be used for tracking all the physical and neurological signs of a "patient" within a quarter of a mile,⁴⁰ thereby lifting the distance limitations which restricted Delgado.

In Ralph Schwitzgebel's initial work, application of this technology to ESB seems to have been limited to cumbersome brain implants with protruding wires. But the technology was soon miniaturized, and a scheme was proposed whereby radio receivers would be mounted on utility poles throughout a given city, thereby providing 24-hour-a-day monitoring capability[41]. Like Heath, Schwitzgebel was much exercised about homosexuality and the use of intracranial devices to combat sexual deviation. But he has also spoken ominously about applying his devices to "socially troublesome persons"... which, of course, could mean

KILL SWITCH

anyone.⁴²

Bryan Robinson, of the Yerkes primate laboratory has conducted fascinating simian research on the use of remote ESB in a social context. He could cause mothers to ignore their offspring, despite the babies' cries. He could turn submission into dominance, and vice-versa.⁴³

Perhaps the most disturbing wanderer into this mind-field is Joseph A. Meyer, of the National Security Agency, the most formidable and secretive component of America's national security complex. Meyer has proposed implanting roughly half of all Americans arrested - not necessarily convicted - of any crime; the numbers of "subscribers" (his euphemism) would run into the tens of millions. "Subscribers" could be monitored continually by computer wherever they went. Meyer, who has carefully worked out the economics of his mass-implantation system, asserts that taxpayer liability should be reduced by forcing subscribers to "rent" the implant from the State. Implants are cheaper and more efficient than police, Meyer suggests, since the call to crime is relentless for the poor "urban dweller" - who, this spook-scientist admits in a surprisingly candid aside, is fundamentally unnecessary to a post-industrial economy. "Urban dweller" may be another of Meyer's euphemisms: He uses New York's Harlem as his model community in working out the details of his mind-management system.⁴⁴

Abductee Implants

If we are to take seriously abductee accounts of brain implants, we must consider the possibility that the implanters, properly perceived, DON'T look much like the "greys" pictured on Strieber's dustjackets. Instead, the visitors may resemble Dr. Meyer and his brethren. We would thus have an explanation for both the reports of abductee brain implants and, as we shall see, the "scoop marks" and other scars visible on other parts of the abductees' bodies. We would also have an explanation for the reports of individuals suffering personality change after contact with the UFO phenomenon.

Skeptics might counter that the time factor of UFO abductions disallows this possibility. If estimates of "missing time" are correct, the abductions rarely take longer than one-to-three hours. Wouldn't a brain surgeon, operating under less-than-ideal conditions (perhaps in a mobile unit) need more time?

No - not if we accept the claims of a Florida doctor named Daniel Man. He recently proposed a draconian solution to the overblown "missing children problem," by suggesting a program wherein America's youngsters would be implanted with tiny transmitters in order to track the children continuously. Man brags that the operation can be done right in the office - and would take less than 20 minutes.⁴⁵

Conceivably, it might take a tad longer in the field.

A Question of Timing

The history of brain implantation, as gleaned from the open literature, is certainly disquieting. Yet this history has almost certainly been censored, and the dates manipulated in a high-Orwellian fashion. When dealing with research funded by the engines of national security, one can never know the true origin date of any individual scientific advance. However, if we listen carefully to the scientists who have pioneered this research, we may hear whispers, faint but unmistakable, hinting that remotely-applied ESB originated earlier than published studies would indicate.

In his autobiography THE SCIENTIST John C. Lilly (who would later achieve a cultish

KILL SWITCH

reknown for his work with dolphins, drugs and sensory deprivation) records a conversation he had with the director of the National Institute of Mental Health - in 1953. The director asked Lilly to brief the CIA, FBI, NSA and the various military intelligence services on his work using electrodes to stimulate directly the pleasure and pain centers of the brain. Lilly refused, noting, in his reply:

Dr. Antoine Remond, using our techniques in Paris, has demonstrated that this method of stimulation of the brain can be applied to the human without the help of the neurosurgeon; he is doing it in his office in Paris without neurosurgical supervision.

This means that anybody with the proper apparatus can carry this out on a person covertly, with no external signs that electrodes have been used on that person. I feel that if this technique got into the hands of a secret agency, they would have total control over a human being and be able to change his beliefs extremely quickly, leaving little evidence of what they had done.⁴⁶

Lilly's assertion of the moral high ground here is interesting. Despite his avowed phobia against secrecy, a careful reading of *THE SCIENTIST* reveals that he continued to do work useful to this country's national security apparatus. His sensory deprivation experiments expanded upon the work of *ARTICHOKE*'s Maitland Baldwin, and even his dolphin research has - perhaps inadvertently proved useful in naval warfare.⁴⁷ One should note that Lilly's work on monkeys carried a "secret" classification, and that NIMH was a common CIA funding conduit.⁴⁸

But the most important aspect of Lilly's statement is its date. 1953? How far back does radio-controlled ESB go? Alas, I have not yet seen Remond's work - if it is available in the open literature. In the documents made available to Marks, the earliest reference to remotely-applied ESB is a 1959 financial document pertaining to *MKULTRA* subproject 94. The general subproject descriptions sent to the CIA's financial department rarely contain much information, and rarely change from year to year, leaving us little idea as to when this subproject began.

Unfortunately, even the Freedom of Information Act couldn't pry loose much information on electronic mind control techniques, though we know a great deal of study was done in these areas. We have, for example, only four pages on subproject 94 - by comparison, a veritable flood of documents were released on the use of drugs in mind control. (Whenever an author tells us that *MKULTRA* met with little success, the reference is to drug testing.) On this point, I must criticize John Marks: His book never mentions that roughly 20-25 percent of the subprojects are "dark" - i.e., little or no information was ever made available, despite lawyers and FOIA requests. Marks seems to feel that the only information worth having is the information he received. We know, however, that research into psychoelectronics was extensive indeed, statements of project goals dating from *ARTICHOKE* and *BLUEBIRD* days clearly identify this area as a high priority. Marks' anonymous informant, jocularly named "Deep Trance," even told a previous interviewer that, beginning in 1963, CIA and the military's mind control efforts strongly emphasized electronics.⁴⁹ I therefore assume - not rashly, I hope - that the "dark" *MKULTRA* subprojects concerned matters such as brain implants, microwaves, ESB, and related technologies.

I make an issue of the timing and secrecy involved in this research to underscore three points:

1. We can never know with certainty the true origin dates of the various brainwash-

KILL SWITCH

ing methods - often, we discover that techniques which seem impossibly futuristic actually originated in the 19th century. (Pioneering ESB research was conducted in 1898, by J.R. Ewald, professor of physiology at Strausbourg.⁵⁰)

2. The open literature almost certainly gives a bowdlerized view of the actual research.

3. Lavishly-funded clandestine researchers - unrestrained by peer review or the need for strict controls - can achieve far more rapid progress than scientists "on the outside."

Potential critics should keep these points in mind should they attempt to invalidate the "mind control" thesis of UFO abductions by citing an abduction account which antedates Delgado.

The Quandary

We have amply demonstrated, then, that as far back as the 1960s - and possibly earlier still - scientists have had the capability to create implants similar to those now purportedly visible in abductee MRI scans. Indeed, we have no notion just how advanced this technology has become, since the popular press stopped reporting on brain implantation in the 1970s. The research has no doubt continued, albeit in a less public fashion. In fact, scientists such as Delgado have cast their eye far beyond the implants; ESB effects can now be elicited with microwaves and other forms of electromagnetic radiation, used with and without electrodes.

So why - if we take UFO abduction accounts at face value - are the "advanced aliens" using an old technology, Earth technology, a technology which may soon be rendered obsolescent, if it hasn't been so rendered already? I am reminded of the charming anachronisms in the old Flash Gordon serials, where swords and spaceships clashed continually.

Do they also watch black-and-white television on Zeta Reticuli?

Remote Hypnosis

Hypnosis provides the (highly controversial) key which opens the door to many abduction accounts.⁵¹ And obviously, if my thesis is correct, hypnosis plays a large part in the abduction itself. One thing we know with certainty: Since the earliest days of project BLUE-BIRD, the CIA's spy-chiatrists spent enormous sums mastering Mesmer's art.

I cannot here give even a brief summary of hypnosis, nor even of the CIA's studies in this area. (Fortunately, FOIA requests were rather more successful in shaking loose information on this topic than in the area of psycho-electronics.) Here, we will concentrate on a particularly intriguing allegation - one heard faintly, but persistently, for the past twenty years by those who would investigate the shadow side of politics.

If this allegation proves true, hypnosis is not necessarily a person-to-person affair.

The abductee - or the mind control victim - need not have physical contact with a hypnotist for hypnotic suggestion to take effect; trance could be induced, and suggestions made, via the intracerebral transmitters described above. The concept sounds like something out of Huxley's or Orwell's most masochistic fantasies. Yet remote hypnosis was first reported - using allegedly parapsychological means - in the early 1930s, by L.L. Vasilev, Professor of Physiology in the University of Leningrad.⁵² Later, other scientists attempted to accomplish the same goal, using less mystic means.

Over the years, certain journalists have asserted that the CIA has mastered a technology call RHIC-EDOM. RHIC means "Radio Hypnotic Intracerebral Control." EDOM stands

KILL SWITCH

for “Electronic Dissolution of Memory.” Together, these techniques can - allegedly - remotely induce hypnotic trance, deliver suggestions to the subject, and erase all memory for both the instruction period and the act which the subject is asked to perform.

RHIC uses the stimoceiver, or a microminiaturized offspring of that technology to induce a hypnotic state. Interestingly, this technique is also reputed to involve the use of intramuscular implants, a detail strikingly reminiscent of the “scars” mentioned in Budd Hopkins’ MISSING TIME. Apparently, these implants are stimulated to induce a post-hypnotic suggestion.

EDOM is nothing more than missing time itself - the erasure of memory from consciousness through the blockage of synaptic transmission in certain areas of the brain. By jamming the brain’s synapses through a surfeit of acetylcholine, neural transmission along selected pathways can be effectively stilled. According to the proponents of RHIC-EDOM, acetylcholine production can be affected by electromagnetic means. (Modern research in the psycho-physiological effects of microwaves confirm this proposition.)

Does RHIC-EDOM exist? In our discussion of Delgado’s work, I have already cited a strange little book (published in 1969) titled WERE WE CONTROLLED?, written by one Lincoln Lawrence, a former FBI agent turned journalist. (The name is a pseudonym; I know his real identity.) This work deals at length with RHIC-EDOM; a careful comparison of Lawrence’s work with MKULTRA files declassified ten years later indicates a strong possibility that the writer did indeed have “inside” sources.

Here is how Lawrence describes RHIC in action:

It is the ultra-sophisticated application of post-hypnotic suggestion triggered at will [italics in original] by radio transmission. It is a recurring hypnotic state, re-induced automatically at intervals by the same radio control. An individual is brought under hypnosis. This can be done either with his knowledge - or without it by use of narco-hypnosis, which can be brought into play under many guises. He is then programmed to perform certain actions and maintain certain attitudes upon radio signal.⁵³

Other authors have mentioned this technique - specifically Walter Bowart (in his book OPERATION MIND CONTROL) and journalist James Moore, who, in a 1975 issue of a periodical called MODERN PEOPLE, claimed to have secured a 350-page manual, prepared in 1963, on RHIC-EDOM.⁵⁴ He received the manual from CIA sources, although - interestingly - the technique is said to have originated in the military.

The following quote by Moore on RHIC should prove especially intriguing to abduction researchers who have confronted odd “personality shifts” in abductees:

Medically, these radio signals are directed to certain parts of the brain. When a part of your brain receives a tiny electrical impulse from outside sources, such as vision, hearing, etc., an emotion is produced - anger at the sight of a gang of boys beating an old woman, for example. The same emotion of anger can be created by artificial radio signals sent to your brain by a controller. You could instantly feel the same white-hot anger without any apparent reason.⁵⁵

Lawrence’s sources imparted an even more tantalizing - and frightening-revelation: ...there is already in use a small EDOM generator-transmitter which can be concealed on the body of a person. Contact with this person - a casual handshake or even just a touch - transmits a tiny electronic charge plus an ultra-sonic signal tone which for a short while will disturb the time orientation of the person affected.⁵⁶

KILL SWITCH

If RHIC-EDOM exists, it goes a long way toward providing an earthbound rationale for alien abductions - or, at least, certain aspects of them. The phenomenon of "missing time" is no longer mysterious. Abductee implants, both intracerebral and otherwise, are explained. And note the reference to "recurring hypnotic state, reinduced automatically by the same radio command." This situation may account for "repeater" abductees who, after their initial encounter, have regular sessions of "missing time" and abduction - even while a bed-mate sleeps undisturbed.

At present, I cannot claim conclusively that RHIC-EDOM is real. To my knowledge, the only official questioning of a CIA representative concerning these techniques occurred in 1977, during Senate hearings on CIA drug testing. Senator Richard Schweicker had the following interchange with Dr. Sidney Gottlieb, an important MKULTRA administrator:

SCHWEICKER: Some of the projects under MKULTRA involved hypnosis, is that correct?

GOTTLIEB: Yes.

SCHWEICKER: Did any of these projects involve something called radio hypnotic intracerebral control, which is a combination, as I understand it, in layman's terms, of radio transmissions and hypnosis.

GOTTLIEB: My answer is "No."

SCHWEICKER: None whatsoever?

GOTTLIEB: Well, I am trying to be responsive to the terms you used. As I remember it, there was a current interest, running interest, all the time in what effects people's standing in the field of radio energy have, and it could easily have been that somewhere in many projects, someone was trying to see if you could hypnotize someone easier if he was standing in a radio beam. That would seem like a reasonable piece of research to do.

Schweicker went on to mention that he had heard testimony that radar (i.e., micro-waves) had been used to wipe out memory in animals; Gottlieb responded, "I can believe that, Senator."⁵⁷

Gottlieb's blandishments do not comfort much. For one thing, the good doctor did not always provide thoroughly candid testimony. (During the same hearing he averred that 99 percent on the CIA's research had been openly published; if so, why are so many MKULTRA subprojects still "dark," and why does the Agency still go to great lengths to protect the identities of its scientists?⁵⁸)

We should also recognize that the CIA's operations are compartmentalized on a "need-to-know" basis; Gottlieb may not have had access to the information requested by Schweicker. Note that the MKULTRA rubric circumscribed Gottlieb's statement: RHIC-EDOM might have been the focus of another program. (There were several others: MKNAOMI, MKACTION, MKSEARCH, etc.) Also keep in mind the revelation by "Deep Trance" that the CIA concentrated on psychoelectronics after the termination of MKULTRA in 1963. Most significantly: RHIC-EDOM is described by both Lawrence and Moore as a product of MILITARY research; Gottlieb spoke only of matters pertaining to CIA. He may thus have spoken truthfully - at least in a strictly technical sense - while still misleading the Congressional interlocutors.

Personally, I believe that the RHIC-EDOM story deserves a great deal of further research. I find it significant that when Dr. Petter Lindstrom examined X-rays of Robert

KILL SWITCH

Naesland, a Swedish victim of brain-implantation, the doctor authoritatively cited WERE WE CONTROLLED? in his letter of response.⁵⁹ This is the same Dr. Lindstrom noted for his pioneering use of ultrasonics in neurosurgery.⁶⁰ Lincoln Lawrence's book has received a strong endorsement indeed.

Bowart's OPERATION MIND CONTROL contains a significant interview with an intelligence agent knowledgeable in these areas. Granted, the reader has every right to adopt a skeptical attitude toward information culled from anonymous sources; still, one should note that this operative's statements confirm, in pertinent part, Lawrence's thesis.⁶¹

Most importantly: The open literature on brain-wave entrainment and the behavioral effects of electromagnetic radiation substantiates much of the RHIC-EDOM story - as we shall see.

That's Entrainment

Robert Anton Wilson, an author with a devoted cult following, recently has taken to promoting a new generation of "mind machines" designed to promote creativity, stimulate learning, and alter consciousness - i.e., provide a drug-less high. Interestingly, these machines can also induce "Out-of-Body Experiences," in which the percipient mentally "travels" to another location while his body remains at rest.⁶² This rapidly-developing technology has spawned a technological equivalent to the drug culture; indeed, the aficionados of the electronic buzz even have their own magazine, REALITY HACKERS. I strongly suspect that we will hear much of these machines in the future.

One such device is called the "hemi-synch." This headphone-like invention produces slightly different frequencies in each ear; the brain calculates the difference between these frequencies, resulting in a rhythm known as the "binaural beat." The brain "entrains" itself to this beat - that is, the subject's EEG slows down or speeds up to keep pace with its electronic running partner.⁶³

The brain has a "beat" of its own.

This rhythm was first discovered in 1924 by the German psychiatrist Hans Berger, who recorded cerebral voltages as part of a telepathy study.⁶⁴ He noted two distinct frequencies: alpha (8-13 cycles per second), associated with a relaxed, alert state, and beta (14-30 cycles per second), produced during states of agitation and intense mental concentration. Later, other rhythms were noted, which are particularly important for our present purposes: theta (4-7 cycles per second), a hypnogogic state, and delta (.5 to 3.5 cycles per second), generally found in sleeping subjects.⁶⁵

The hemi-synch - and related mind-machines - can produce alpha or theta waves, on demand, according to the operator's wishes. A suitably-entrained brain is much more responsive to suggestion, and is even likely to experience vivid hallucinations.

I have spoken to several UFO abductees who describe a "stereophonic sound" effect - exactly similar to that produced by the hemi-synch - preceding many "encounters." Of course, one usually administers the hemi-synch via headphones, but I see no reason why the effect cannot be transmitted via the above described stimoceiver. Again, I remind the reader of the abductee with an implant just inside her ear canal.

There's more than one way to entrain a brain. Michael Hutchison's excellent book MEGA BRAIN details the author's personal experiences with many such devices - the Alpha-stim, TENS, the Synchro-energizer, Tranquilite, etc. He recounts dazzling, Dali-esque hallucinations, as a result of using this mind-expanding technology; moreover, he offers a

KILL SWITCH

seductive argument that these devices may represent a true breakthrough in consciousness-control, thereby fulfilling the dashed dream of the hallucinogenic '60s.

I wish to avoid a knee-jerk Luddite response to these fascinating wonderboxes. At the same time, I recognize the dangers involved. What about the possibility of an outside operator literally "changing our minds" by altering our brainwaves without our knowledge or permission? If these machines can induce a hypnotic state, what's to stop a skilled hypnotist from making use of this state?

Granted, most of these devices require some physical interaction with the subject. But a tool called the Bio-Pacer can, according to its manufacturer, produce a number of mood altering frequencies - WITHOUT attachment to the subject. Indeed, the Bio-Pacer III (a high-powered version) can affect an entire room. This device costs \$275, according to the most recent price sheet available.⁶⁶ What sort of machine might \$27,500 buy? Or \$275,000? What effects, what ranges might a million-dollar machine be capable of?

The military certainly has that sort of money.

And they're certainly interested in this sort of technology, according to Michael Hutchison. His interview with an informant named Joseph Light elicited some particularly provocative revelations. According to Light:

There are important elements in the scientific community, powerful people, who are very much interested in these areas... but they have to keep most of their work secret. Because as soon as they start to publish some of these sensitive things, they have problems in their lives. You see, they work on research grants, and if you follow the research being done, you find that as soon as these scientists publish something about this, their research funds are cut off. There are areas in bioelectric research where very simple techniques and devices can have mind-boggling effects. Conceivably, if you have a crazed person with a bit of a technical background, he can do a lot of damage.⁶⁷

This last statement is particularly evocative. In 1984, a violent neo-Nazi group called The Order (responsible for the murder of talk-show host Alan Berg) established contact with two government scientists engaged in clandestine research to project chemical imbalances and render targeted individuals docile via certain frequencies of electronic waves. For \$100,000 the scientists were willing to deliver this information.⁶⁸

Thus, at least one group of crazed individuals almost got the goods.

Wave Your Brain Goodbye

Every Senator and Congressional representative has a "wavie" file. So do many state representatives. Wavies have even pled their case to private institutions such as the Christic Institute.⁶⁹

And who are the wavies?

They claim to be victims of clandestine bombardment with non-ionizing radiation - or microwaves. They report sudden changes in psychological states, alteration of sleep patterns, intracerebral voices and other sounds, and physiological effects. Most people never realize how many wavies there are in this country. I've spoken to a number of wavies myself.

Are these troubled individuals seeking an exterior rationale for their mental problems? Maybe. Indeed, I'm sure that such is the case in many instances. But the fact is that the literature on the behavioral effects of microwaves, extra-low-frequencies (ELF) and ultra-

KILL SWITCH

sonics is such that we cannot blithely dismiss all such claims.

For decades, American science and industry tried to convince the population that microwaves could have no adverse effects on human beings at sub-thermal levels - in other words, the attitude was, "If it can't burn you, it can't hurt you." This approach became increasingly difficult to defend as reports mounted of microwave-induced physiological effects. Technicians described "hearing" certain radar installations; users of radar telescopes began developing cataracts at an appallingly high rate.⁷⁰ The Soviets had long recognized the strange and sometimes subtle effects of these radio frequencies, which is why their exposure standards have always been much stricter.

Soviet microwave bombardment of the U.S. Embassy in Moscow prompted the Defense Advanced Research Projects Agency's Project PANDORA (later renamed), whose ostensible goal was to determine whether these pulsations (reportedly 10 cycles per second, which puts them in the alpha range) could be used for the purposes of mind control. I suspect that the "war on Tchaikovsky Street," as I call it,⁷¹ was used, at least in part, as a cover story for DARPA mind control research, and that the stories floated in the news (via, for example, Jack Anderson's column) about Soviet remote brainwashing served the same propaganda purposes as did the bleatings of Edward Hunter during the 1950s.⁷²

What can low-level microwaves do to the mind?

According to a DIA report released under the Freedom of Information Act,⁷³ microwaves can induce metabolic changes, alter brain functions, and disrupt behavior patterns. PANDORA discovered that pulsed microwaves can create leaks in the blood/brain barrier, induce heart seizures, and create behavioral disorganization.⁷⁴ In 1970, a RAND Corporation scientist reported that microwaves could be used to promote insomnia, fatigue, irritability, memory loss, and hallucinations.⁷⁵

Perhaps the most significant work in this area has been produced by Dr. W. Ross Adey at the University of Southern California. He determined that behavior and emotional states can be altered without electrodes - simply by placing the subject in an electromagnetic field. By directing a carrier frequency to stimulate the brain and using amplitude modulation to "shape" the wave into a mimicry of a desired EEG frequency, he was able to impose a 4.5 cps theta rhythm on his subjects - a frequency which he previously measured in the hippocampus during avoidance learning. Thus, he could externally condition the mind towards an aversive reaction.⁷⁶ (Adey has also done extensive work on the use of electrodes in animals.⁷⁷)

According to another prominent microwave scientist, Allen Frey, other frequencies could - in animal studies - induce docility.⁷⁸ The controversial researcher Andrijah Puharich asserts that "a weak (1mW) 4 Hz magnetic sine wave will modify human brain waves in 6 to 10 seconds. The psychological effects of a 4 Hz sine magnetic wave are negative - causing dizziness, nausea, headache, and can lead to vomiting." Conversely, an 8 Hz magnetic sine wave has beneficial effects.⁷⁹ Though some writers question Puharich's integrity (perhaps correctly, considering his involvement in the confused tale of Uri Geller), his claims here seem in line with the findings of less-flamboyant experimenters.

As investigative journalist Anne Keeler writes:

Specific frequencies at low intensities can predictably influence sensory processes... pleasantness-unpleasantness, strain-relaxation, and excitement-quiescence can be created with the fields. Negative feelings and avoidance are strong biological phenomena and re-

KILL SWITCH

late to survival. Feelings are the true basis of much “decision-making” and often occur as subthreshold impressions.... Ideas including names [my italics] can be synchronized with the feelings that the fields induce.⁸⁰

Adey and compatriots have compiled an entire library of frequencies and pulsation rates which can affect the mind and nervous system. Some of these effects can be extremely bizarre. For example, engineer Tom Jarski, in an attempt to replicate the seminal work of F. Cazzamali, found that a particular frequency caused a ringing sensation in the ears of his subjects - who felt strangely compelled to BITE the experimenters!⁸¹ On the other hand, the diet-conscious may be intrigued by the finding that rats exposed to ELF waves failed to gain weight normally.⁸²

For our present purposes, the most significant electromagnetic research findings concern microwave signals modulated by hypnoidal EEG frequencies. Microwaves can act much like the “hemi-synch” device previously described - that is, they can entrain the brain to theta rhythms.⁸³ I need not emphasize the implications of remotely synchronizing the brain to resonate at a frequency conducive to sleep, or to hypnosis.

Trance may be remotely induced - but can it be directed? Yes. Recall the intracerebral voices mentioned earlier in our discussion of Delgado. The same effect can be produced by “the wave.” Frey demonstrated in the early 1960s that microwaves could produce booming, hissing, buzzing, and other intra-cerebral static (this phenomenon is now called “the Frey effect”); in 1973, Dr. Joseph Sharp, of the Walter Reed Army Institute of Research, expanded on Frey’s work in an experiment where the subject - in this case, Sharp himself - “heard” and understood spoken words delivered via a pulsed-microwave analog of the speaker’s sound vibrations.⁸⁴

Dr. Robert Becker comments that “Such a device has obvious applications in covert operations designed to drive a target crazy with ‘voices’ or deliver undetectable instructions to a programmed assassin.”⁸⁵ In other words, we now have, at the push of a button, the technology either to inflict an electronic gaslight - or to create a true Manchurian Candidate. Indeed, the former capability could effectively disguise the latter. Who will listen to the victims, when electronically-induced hallucinations they recount exactly parallel the classical signals of paranoid schizophrenia and/or temporal lobe epilepsy?

Perhaps the most ominous revelations, however, concern the mysterious work of J.F. Schapitz, who in 1974 filed a plan to explore the interaction of radio frequencies and hypnosis. He proposed the following:

In this investigation it will be shown that the spoken word of the hypnotist may be conveyed by modulated electro-magnetic energy directly *into the subconscious parts of the human brain* [my italics] - i.e., without employing any technical devices for receiving or transcoding the messages and without the person exposed to such influence having a chance to control the information input consciously.

He outlined an experiment, innocent in its immediate effects yet chilling in its implications, whereby subjects would be implanted with the subconscious suggestion to leave the lab and buy a particular item; this action would be triggered by a certain cue word or action. Schapitz felt certain that the subjects would rationalize the behavior - in other words, the subject would seize upon any excuse, however thin, to chalk up his actions to the working of free will.⁸⁶ His instincts on this latter point coalesce perfectly with findings of professional hypnotists.⁸⁷

KILL SWITCH

Schapitz's work was funded by the Department of Defense. Despite FOIA requests, the results have never been publicly revealed.⁸⁸

Final Thoughts on "The Wave"

I must again offer a caveat about possible disparities between the "official" record of electromagnetism's psychological effects and the hidden history. Once more, we face a question of timing. How long ago did this research REALLY begin?

In the early years of this century, Nikola Tesla seems to have stumbled upon certain of the behavioral effects of electromagnetic exposure.⁸⁹ Cazamalli, mentioned earlier, conducted his studies in the 1930s. In 1934, E.L. Chaffe and R.U. Light published a paper on "A Method for the Remote Control of Electrical Stimulation of the Nervous System."⁹⁰ From the very beginning of their work with microwaves, the Soviets explored the more subtle physiological effects of electromagnetism - and despite the bleatings of certain right-wing alarmists⁹¹ that an "electromagnetic gap" separates us from Soviet advances, East European literature in this area has been closely monitored for decades by the West. ARTICHOKE/BLUE-BIRD project outlines, dating from the early 1950s, prominently mention the need to explore all possible uses of the electromagnetic spectrum.

Another point worth mentioning concerns the combination of EMR and miniature brain electrodes. The father of the stimoceiver, Dr. J.M.R. Delgado, has recently conducted experiments in which monkeys are exposed to electromagnetic fields, thereby eliciting a wide range of behavioral effects - one monkey might fly into a volcanic rage while, just a few feet away, his simian partner begins to nod off. Fascinatingly, when monkeys with brain implants felt "the wave," the effects were greatly intensified. Apparently, these tiny electrodes can act as amplifiers of the electromagnetic effect.⁹²

This last point is important to our "alien abduction" thesis. Critics might counter that any burst of microwave energy powerful enough to have truly remote effects would probably also create a thermal reaction. That is, if a clandestine operator propagated a "wave" from outside an abductee's bedroom (say, from a low-flying helicopter, or from a truck travelling alongside the subject's car), the power necessary to do the job might be such that the microwave would cook the target before it got a chance to launder his thoughts. Our abductee would end up like the victim of the microwave "hit" in the finale of Jerzy Kozinsky's COCKPIT.

It's a fair criticism. But Delgado's work may give us our solution. Once an abductee has been implanted - and if we are to trust hypnotic regression accounts of abductees at all, the first implanting session may occur in childhood - the chip-in-the-brain would act as an intensifier of the signal. Such an individual could have any number of "UFO" experiences while his or her bed partner dozes comfortably.

Furthermore, recent reports indicate that a "waver" can achieve pinpoint accuracy without the use of Delgado-style implants. In 1985, volunteers at the Midwest Research Institute in Kansas City, Missouri, were exposed to microwave beams as part of an experiment sponsored by the Department of Energy and the New York State Department of Health. As THE ARIZONA REPUBLIC⁹³ described the experiment, "A matched control group sat in the same room without being bombarded by non-ionizing radiation." [My italics.] Apparently, one can focus "the wave" quite narrowly - a fact which has wide implications for abductees.

KILL SWITCH

III. Applications

So we now have some idea of the tools available to the “spy-chiatrists.” How have these tools been used?

This question necessarily involves some detective work. The Central Intelligence Agency, under duress, provided some, though not enough, documentation of its efforts to commandeer “the space between our ears.” We know that these efforts were extensive, long-term, and at least partially successful. We know also that these experiments used human subjects. But who? When?

One paradox of this line of inquiry is that, for many readers, the victims elicit sympathy only insofar as they remain anonymous. Intellectually, we realize that MKULTRA and its allied projects must have affected hundreds, probably thousands, of individuals. Yet we react with deep suspicion whenever one of these individuals steps forward and identifies himself, or whenever an independent investigator argues that mind control has directed some newsworthy person’s otherwise inexplicable actions. Where, the skeptic may rightfully ask, is the documentation supporting such accusations? Most of the MKULTRA “paper trail” was (allegedly) burnt at Richard Helms’ order; what’s left has been censored, leaving black ink smudges wherever the names originally appeared. Claimed mind control victims can, for the most part, only give us testimony - and how reliable can such testimony be, especially in light of the fact that one purpose of MKULTRA was to induce insanity? Anyone asserting that he was victimized by the program might well be seeking an extrinsic excuse for his own psychopathology. If you say that you are a manufactured madman, you were probably mad to begin with: Catch 22.

When John Marks wrote THE SEARCH FOR “THE MANCHURIAN CANDIDATE.” he received numerous letters from people insisting that they had been drugged, “waved,” or otherwise abused by the CIA or the military. Most of these communications went directly into his crank file. Perhaps many deserved that destination; I know of at least one that did not.⁹⁴

Marks did, however, devote much attention to Val Orlikov, a former “patient” of perhaps the most notorious figure in the annals of American medical crime: Dr. Ewen Cameron, a CIA-funded scientist heading the Allan Memorial Institute at McGill University, Montreal, Canada. Cameron, a highly-respected mental health researcher,⁹⁵ experimented with a technique he called “psychic driving,” a brainwashing program which involved inflicting upon a subject an endless tape loop blaring selected messages, 16-to-24 hours a day, combined with massive electroshock and LSD. The project’s “guinea pigs” were patients who had come to Allan Memorial with relatively minor psychological complaints. Cameron’s experiments failed and his theories were discredited, which may explain why the CIA and its apologists now feel relatively comfortable discussing the Frankensteinian efforts at Allan Memorial, as opposed to more successful work elsewhere.

Orlikov’s testimony has received much respectful attention from those writers who have examined MKULTRA, and correctly so. When I studied the files at the National Security Archives, I was particularly keen to read her original letters to John Marks, for these pages had led to the unmasking of an especially heinous CIA project. The letters, interestingly enough, proved just as vague, disjointed, and bizarre as similar correspondence which researchers routinely dismiss. Orlikov can’t be blamed for the hazy nature of her recollections; a certain amount of fog is to be expected, given the nature of the crime perpetrated

KILL SWITCH

against her. The important point is that her story, ultimately, was found to be true. All of which leads me to wonder: Why did HER claims prompt investigation when those of others prompt only dismissal? Perhaps the answer lies in the fact that Orlikov's husband became a Canadian Member of Parliament. Any victims of CIA experimentation who wish to be taken seriously ought, perhaps, first make sure to marry well.

Of course, we can easily forgive previous writers and readers whose researches into MKULTRA have been biased in favor of complacency.⁹⁶ But we can't let this natural prejudice cripple our present investigation. Let us examine, then, a few of the "horror stories" from the mind control literature and highlight possible correlations to abductee testimony.

Palle Hardrup's "Guardian Angel"

As mentioned previously, I have not delved much into the subject of hypnosis in this paper - primarily because of space and time limitations, but also because discussions of the possibilities of hypnosis per se tend to cloud the issue of its use in conjunction with the above-mentioned electronic techniques. Obviously, however, hypnosis is a major weapon in the mind controller's armament; in a forthcoming full-length work, I intend to deal with this subject at much greater length.

Needless to say, one of the primary objectives of MKULTRA and related projects was to determine whether one could hypnotically induce someone to commit an anti-social act. This possibility remains one of the most hotly debated issues in hypnosis, for conventional wisdom asserts that no individual can be hypnotized to commit an action which violates his interior moral code. Martin Orne, editor of the prestigious INTERNATIONAL JOURNAL OF CLINICAL AND EXPERIMENTAL HYPNOSIS agrees with this axiom,⁹⁷ and he is in a position to codify much of the established view on this topic. Orne, however, is a veteran of MKULTRA, and furthermore seems to have lied - at least in his original communications - to author John Marks about his witting involvement in subproject 94.⁹⁸ While I respect much of Orne's ground-breaking work, his pronouncements do not hold, for this layman, an Olympian unassailability.

To be sure, many other hypnosis experts, untainted by Company connections, also discount the possibility that anti-social actions can be induced. But a number of highly-experienced professionals - including Milton Kline, William Kroger, George Estabrooks, John Watkins, and Herbert Spiegel - have argued that such actions can, at least to some degree, be elicited by an outside manipulator.

Occasionally, claims of hypnotically-induced anti-social behavior find their way into the courtroom; one such case, which led to the incarceration of the hypnotist, was the Palle Hardrup affair. This incident occurred in Denmark in 1951.⁹⁹ Palle Hardrup robbed a bank, killing a guard in the process, and later claimed that he had been instructed to do so by the hypnotist Bjorn Nielsen. Nielsen eventually confessed to having engineered the crime as a test of his hypnotic abilities.

The most significant aspect of this incident concerns the "pose" Nielsen adopted to work his malicious designs. During the hypnosis sessions, Nielsen hypnotically suggested that he was Hardrup's "guardian angel," represented by the letter X. Hardrup testified that "There is another room next door where Nielsen and I go and talk on our own. It is there that my guardian spirit usually comes and talks to me. Nielsen says that X has a task for me."

One of these tasks was arranging for Hardrup's girlfriend to have sex with the hyp-

KILL SWITCH

notist. The other tasks, he mentioned, included robbery and murder. Nielsen convinced his victim that "X" wanted the robbery funds to be used for worthwhile political goals. The end, Hardrup was told, justified the means.

Compare this scenario to that encountered in the typical contactee case, in which alien "guardians" convince their victims/subjects that the encounter will eventually serve some unspecified "higher purpose." Indeed, in my interviews with abductees who have established a "long-term" relationship with their visitors, I have found that some of them originally believed themselves in contact with Hardrup-like angelic guardians. Only in recent years was the "angel" pose discarded and the true "alien" form revealed.

Thus we have one possible means of overcoming the proposition that hypnosis cannot induce anti-social behavior. If a hypnotist lacks scruples, and has access to a particularly susceptible subject, he can induce a misperceived reality. Actions which we would abhor in an everyday context become acceptable in specialized circumstances: A citizen who could never commit murder on a suburban street might, if drafted into an army, kill on the field of battle. In hypnosis, the mind becomes that battlefield. In the words of Dr. John Watkins:

We behave on the basis of our perceptions. If our perceptions of a situation can be altered so as to cause us to misconstrue it, or to develop a false belief, then our behavior in relation to it will be drastically altered. It is precisely in the area of changing perceptions that the hypnotic modality demonstrates its most powerful effects. Hallucinations both under hypnosis, and posthypnotic, can easily be induced in the suggestible subject. He can be made to ignore painful stimuli, be apparently unable to hear loud sounds, and "see" individuals who are not present [my italics]. Moreover, attitudes and beliefs can be initiated in him which are quite abnormal and often contrary to those which he previously held.¹⁰⁰

If traditional hypnosis, unaided, can achieve such changes in perception, one can only imagine the possibilities inherent in the combination of hypnotic techniques with the psychoelectronic research previously described.

Scientists such as Orne and Milton Erickson¹⁰¹ have taken issue with Watkins' assertions. But the Hardrup case would appear to bear Watkins out. If someone can be convinced that he, like Jeanne D'Arc, acts under the influence of a supernatural higher power, then previously unthinkable capabilities may be evinced and "impossible" actions carried forth. Indeed, when we consider the extreme personality changes - and occasionally, the heinous actions, elicited by leaders of certain cults, and occult groups,¹⁰² we understand the desirability of installing a hypnotic "cover story" within a supernatural matrix. People will do for God - or the Devil, or the Space Brothers - what they would not do otherwise.

The date of the Hardrup affair corresponds to the institution of BLUEBIRD/ARTICHOKE; it doesn't require much imagination to see how this case could have served as a model to the scientists researching those and subsequent projects.

Screen Memory

According to declassified documents in the Marks files, a major difficulty faced by the MKULTRA researchers concerned the "disposal problem." What to do with the victims of CIA-sponsored electroshock, hypnosis, and drug experimentation? The Company resorted to distressing, but characteristic, tactics: They disposed of their human guinea pigs by incarcerating them in insane asylums, by performing icepick lobotomies, and by order-

KILL SWITCH

ing “executive actions.”¹⁰³

A more sophisticated solution had to be found. One of the goals of the CIA’s mind control efforts was the erasure of memory via hypnosis (and drugs, electronics, lobotomies, etc.); not only would this hide what occurred during the experimental indoctrination/programming sessions, it would prove useful in the field. “Amnesia was a big goal,” confirms Victor Marchetti, who points out its usefulness in dealing with contract agents: “After you’ve done it, the agent doesn’t even know what he’s done... you send him in, he does the job. When he comes out, you clean his head out.”¹⁰⁴

The big problem: Despite hypnotically-induced amnesia, there would be memory leaks - snippets of the repressed material would arise spontaneously, in dreams, as flashbacks, etc. A proposed solution: Give the subject a “screen memory,” a false story; thus, even if he starts to recall the material, he will recall it incorrectly.

Even the conservative Dr. Orne notes that:

A S [subject] who is able to develop good posthypnotic amnesia will also respond to suggestions to remember events which did not actually occur. On awakening, he will fail to recall the real events of the trance and will instead recall the suggested events. If anything, this phenomenon is easier to produce than total amnesia, perhaps because it eliminates the subjective feeling of an empty space in memory.¹⁰⁵

Not only would the screen memories fill in the uncomfortable blanks in the subjects’ recollection, they would protect against revelation. One fear of the MKULTRA scientists was that a hypno-programmed individual used as, say, a courier, could be un-programmed by another hypnotist, perhaps working for the enemy. Thus, the MKULTRA scientists decided to instill multiple personalities - multiple cover stories, if you will - to confuse any “unauthorized” hypnotist.¹⁰⁶

One case using this technique centered on an assassin named Luis Castillo, who, after his capture in the Philippines, was extensively de-briefed and studied by experts in the employ of the National Bureau of Investigation, that country’s equivalent to our FBI. Castillo was discovered to have had at least four separate personalities hypnotically instilled; each personality could be triggered by a specific cue. In one state, he claimed to be Sgt. Manuel Angel Ramirez, of the Strategic Air Tactical Command in South Vietnam; supposedly, “Ramirez” was the illegitimate son of a certain pipe-smoking, highly-placed CIA official whose initials were A.D.¹⁰⁷ Another personality claimed to be one of John F. Kennedy’s assassins.

The main hypnotist involved with this case labelled these hypnotic alter-egos “Zombie states.” The report on the case stated that “The Zombie phenomenon referred to here is a somnambulistic behavior displayed by the subject in a conditioned response to a series of words, phrases, and statements, apparently unknown to the subject during his normal waking state.”

Upon Castillo’s repatriation to the United States, the FBI claimed that he had fabricated the story. In his book *OPERATION MIND CONTROL*, Walter Bowart makes a convincing case against the FBI’s claims. Certainly, many aspects of the Castillo affair argue for his sincerity - including his hypnotically-induced insensitivity to pain,¹⁰⁸ his maintenance of the story (or stories) even when severely inebriated, and his apparently programmed suicide attempts.

If Castillo told the truth, as I believe he did, then he manifested both hypnotically-

KILL SWITCH

induced multiple personality and pseudomemory. The former remains controversial; the latter has been repeatedly replicated in experimental situations.¹⁰⁹

This point is vitally important for students of the abduction phenomenon. We CAN-NOT assume the accuracy of abduction descriptions given during subsequent hypnotic regression. Moreover, we cannot even assume the accuracy of spontaneously-arising recollections (i.e., abduction memories not elicited through hypnotic regression). Indeed, responsible skeptics have argued that hypnotic regression may prove inadvertently harmful, in that it may lock in place a false remembrance. (Note, however, that other psychiatric professionals consider hypnotic regression the best technique, however flawed, in unlocking amnesia.¹¹⁰ For my part, I maintain an ambivalent and cautious attitude toward the use of hypnosis in abductee work.)

Granted, it is all too easy for the debunkers to cry “confabulation” to dismiss hypnotic testimony which does not conform to our preconceptions about the possible; I do not intend to make this same error. Whenever skeptics offer the phenomenon of pseudomemory to rationalize abduction claims, they cite experimental situations in which pseudomemory was originally created by a hypnotist ¹¹¹ These experiments can not be cited as proof that an individual abductee spontaneously conjured up a fantasy (which just happens to correspond to the details of hundreds of similar “fantasies”). Rather, laboratory studies of pseudomemory creation prove my point: Pseudomemory can be induced by previous hypnosis.¹¹²

In other words, an abductee may talk of aliens - when the reality was something else entirely.

In correspondence with me, a noted abduction researcher wrote of an instance in which an abductee recounted seeing a helicopter during his experience; as the abductee testimony progressed, the helicopter turned into a UFO. During one of the (quite few) regression sessions I attended, I heard an exactly similar narrative. Hopkins would argue that the helicopter was a “screen memory” hiding the awful reality of the UFO encounter. But does Occam’s razor really cut that way? Shouldn’t we also consider the possibility that the object in question really WAS a helicopter - which the abductee was instructed to recall as a UFO?

The Super Spy

Among the released BLUEBIRD/ARTICHOKE/MKULTRA papers was the following handwritten memorandum, unsigned and undated:

I have developed a technic which is safe and secure (free from international censorship). It has to do with the conditioning of our own people. I can accomplish this as a one-man job.

The method is the production of hypnosis by means of simple oral medication. Then (with NO further medication) the hypnosis is re-enforced daily during the following three or four days.

Each individual is conditioned against revealing any information to an enemy, even though subjected to hypnosis or drugging. If preferable, he may be conditioned to give FALSE information rather than NO information.

In the margin of this document, one of Marks’ assistants wrote, “Is this Wendt?” The reference here is to G. Richard Wendt, a professor employed by Project CHATTER who, in 1951, led both his Naval employers and the CIA on a mind control merry goose chase, when

KILL SWITCH

an experiment similar to that described above failed to produce results.¹¹³ Even if the above memorandum does describe an operational failure (and the tactics described in this memo do not seem very feasible to me), we should not rest complacent. We now know that, in at least ONE case, more sophisticated techniques made the above scenario a reality.

I refer to the case of Candy Jones.

Her story has filled at least one book¹¹⁴ and ought, one day, to give rise to another. Obviously, I cannot here give all the details of this fascinating and frightening narrative. But a precis is mandatory.

Ms. Jones (born Jessica Wilcox) achieved star status as a model during World War II, and later established her own modelling agency. An FBI man requested her to allow her place of business to be used as a “mail drop” for the Bureau and “another government agency” (presumably, the CIA); Candy, deeply patriotic, accepted the proposition gladly. Toiling on the fringes of the clandestine world, Candy eventually came into contact with a “Dr. Gilbert Jensen,” who worked, in turn, with a “Dr. Marshall Burger.” (Both names are pseudonyms.) Unknown to her, these doctors had been employed as “spy-chiatrists” by the CIA. Using a job interview as a cover, Jensen induced hypnosis, found Candy to be a particularly responsive subject - and proceeded to use her as other scientists would use a rhesus monkey. She became a test subject for the CIA’s mind control program.

Her job - insofar as it is known - was to provide a clandestine courier service.¹¹⁵ Estabrooks had outlined the basic idea years earlier: Induce hypnosis via a disguised technique, give the messenger information to memorize, hypnotically “erase” the message from conscious memory, and install a post-hypnotic suggestion that the message (now buried within the sub-conscious) will be brought forth only upon a specific cue. If the hypnotist can create such a courier, ultra-security can be guaranteed; even torture won’t cause the messenger to tell what he knows - because he doesn’t know that he knows it.¹¹⁶ According to the highly respected Dr. Milton Kline, “Evidence really does exist that has not been published” proving that Estabrooks’ perfect secret agent could be successfully evoked.¹¹⁷

Candy was one such success story. Success, in this context, means that she could be - and was - brutally tortured and abused while running assignments for the CIA. All the MKULTRA toys were brought into play: hypnosis, drugs, conditioning - and electronics. Using these devices, Jensen and Burger managed to:

- * install a “duplicate personality,”
- * create amnesia of both the programming sessions and the field assignments,
- * turn Candy into a vicious, hate-mongering bigot, the better to isolate her from the rest of humanity (previously, her associates considered her noteworthy for her racial tolerance; her modelling agency was one of the first to break the color barrier), and
- * program her to commit suicide at the end of her usefulness to the Agency.

The programming techniques used on her were flawed. She breached security when she married famed New York radio personality John Nebel,¹¹⁸ who, using hypnotic regression, elicited the long-repressed truth. Eventually, the “Other Candy” was bade farewell, and the programming broken.

Skeptics might find Candy’s story as incredible as the abduction accounts - after all, an amateur had conducted her hypnotic regression, and the possibility of confabulation always lurks. Nevertheless, I feel that the veracity of her narrative has been established

KILL SWITCH

beyond reasonable doubt. In her hypnotic regression sessions, she recalled being programmed at a government-connected institute in northern California - which, as John Marks' investigators later proved, was indeed heavily involved with government-funded brainwashing research.¹¹⁹ Marks himself believes Candy's story - not least, because the details of the programming methods used on her were substantiated by documents released AFTER her book was published.¹²⁰ Interviews with Milton Kline, Dr. Frances Jakes, John Watkins and others provided the testimony that the programming of Candy Jones was feasible - and Deep Trance substantiated the story.¹²¹

Recently, the case has received important "indirect" confirmation: Investigators interested in follow-up research have filed FOIA requests with the CIA for all papers relating to Candy Jones. The agency admits that it has a substantial file on her, but refuses to release any part of it. If her tale is false, then why would the CIA be so reluctant to deliver the information? Indeed, why would they have a file in the first place?¹²²

The final confirmation of Candy's tale requires a revelation - one which I make with some trepidation, even though the individual named is dead.

"Marshall Burger" was really Dr. William Kroger.¹²³

Kroger, long associated with the espionage establishment, had written the following in 1963:

...a good subject can be hypnotized to deliver secret information. The memory of this message could be covered by an artificially induced amnesia. In the event that he should be captured, he naturally could not remember that he had ever been given the message... however, since he had been given a post-hypnotic suggestion, the message would be subject to recall through a specific cue.¹²⁴

If Candy confabulated her story, why did she name this particular scientist, who, writing theoretically in 1963, predicted the subsequent events in her life?[¹²⁵]

After l'affair Jones, Kroger transferred his base of operations to UCLA - specifically, to the Neuropsychiatric Institute run by Dr. Louis Jolyon West, an MKULTRA veteran. There he wrote HYPNOSIS AND BEHAVIOR MODIFICATION,¹²⁶ with a preface by Martin Orne (another MKULTRA veteran) and H.J. Eysenck (still another MKULTRA veteran). The finale of this opus contains chilling hints of the possibilities inherent in combining hypnosis with ESB, implants, and conditioning - though Kroger is careful to point out that "we are not concerned that man might be conditioned by rewards and punishments through electronic brain stimulation to be controlled like robots."¹²⁷ HE may not be concerned - but perhaps WE ought to be.

The control of Candy Jones gives us much information useful to our "alien abduction" hypothesis.

1. Her torture sessions - inflicted during her programming by her CIA masters, and on missions by as-yet mysterious persons - seem strikingly like the otherwise senselessly painful "examinations" allegedly conducted aboard alien spacecraft.

2. Her personality shifts roughly parallel those experienced by certain UFO abductees.

3. Despite her brutalization, she remained "loyal" to Drs. Jensen and Burger. This bewildering behavior reminds me of my first abductee interviews, during which I heard ghastly descriptions of UFO torture sessions - followed by protestations of limitless love for

KILL SWITCH

the alien pain-mongers.

4. Like many abductees, Candy had to attend regular “conditioning” sessions. Repeated exposure to the programming is necessary to effect continuous control.

5. To maintain their hammerlock on her mind, Candy’s handlers programmed her to remain isolated. Specifically, they instilled a deep paranoia toward other human beings; “outsiders” were probable enemies, out to use or abuse her. I have seen this pattern consistently in my own work with abductees.¹²⁸ Skeptics would argue that unreasonable abductee fears probably indicate paranoid schizophrenia - one symptom of which can, indeed, be hallucinatory experiences. But most abductees are easily hypnotized, while paranoid schizophrenics are extremely difficult to “put under,” according to Dr. Edward Simpson-Kallas, a psychiatrist with wide experience in the area of forensic hypnosis.¹²⁹ If, however, those unreasonable fears had been hypnotically induced, the contradiction is resolved.

6. Candy was the product of an unhappy childhood, hence her propensity toward multiple personality.¹³⁰ Many of the “repeater” abductees I have interviewed had similarly depressing family histories.¹³¹

7. The story of Candy Jones also has what we might call a “negative relevance” to the abduction accounts. Because the Controllers did not establish a hypnotic cover story, or pseudomemory, the true facts of the case managed to percolate into her conscious mind. No matter how thorough the posthypnotic amnesia, leaks will occur - hence the need for a false memory, to fill the gap of recollection. The CIA learns from its mistakes. Candy’s hypno-programming broke down in early 1973 - the year the “alien disguise” became (if my hypothesis proves correct) standard operating procedure.¹³² (Milton Kline accepted the Candy Jones story, but considered the job amateurish and inconsistent with the best work done at that time.¹³³ Perhaps the major fault was the lack of a pseudomemory cover story?)

Bases of Suspicion

“Underground base” rumors are as hot as jalapenos in the UFO field right now, and several of these stories involve abductions.

For example, a sideshow of the famous Bentwaters UFO case involves the abduction of an airman named Larry Warren to an underground cavity beneath the military base. There, while in what he later described as “a bit of a drugged state,” he saw aliens and human beings - military figures - working side-by-side.¹³⁴

I have spoken to another abductee, Nancy Wright, who was allegedly taken to an underground chamber ten miles north of Edwards AFB, California. As this was a multiple-witness event, and Ms. Wright has not attempted to capitalize on the story for financial gain, I tend to credit her story.¹³⁵

According to abduction researcher Miranda Parks, an elderly couple living in the vicinity was also abducted in an exactly similar fashion.¹³⁶

In 1979, Paul Bennewitz and Leo Sprinkle researched a particularly controversial abduction involving a young woman (name unrevealed) who was apparently taken to a facility where aliens processed fluids and body parts from a cattle mutilation. This investigation seems to have led to the government harassment of Bennewitz, in which some form of mind control (or, as I have previously referred to it, “electronic GASLIGHT”) may have played a part.¹³⁷

How do we account for these tales of alleged alien skullduggery carried out in con-

KILL SWITCH

junction with the military? I, for one, cannot credit the generally unsubstantiated tales of “cosmic conspiracy” now promulgated by ex-intelligence agents such as John Lear and William Cooper. While I cannot assert insincerity on the part of these men, I often wonder if they have been used as conduits - witting or unwitting - in a sophisticated disinformation scheme.

A simpler, though no less chilling, explanation for the “base” abductions may be found in the story of Dr. Louis Jolyon West, now notorious for his participation in MKULTRA experiments with LSD.¹³⁸ Inspired by *VIOLENCE AND THE BRAIN* (a book by Drs. Frank Ervin and Vernon H. Mark which ascribed inner city turmoil to a “genetic defect” within rebellious blacks), West proposed, in 1973, a Center for the Study and Reduction of Violence, where potentially violent individuals could be dealt with prophylactically.

And who were these individuals? According to West’s proposal, the noteworthy factors indicating a violent predisposition were “sex (male), age (youthful), ethnicity (black) and urbanicity.” How to deal with them? “...by implanting tiny electrodes deep within the brain, electrical activity can be followed in areas that cannot be measured from the surface of the scalp... it is even possible to record bioelectrical changes in the brains of freely-moving subjects, through the use of remote monitoring techniques...” By monitoring the subjects’ EEGs remotely, potentially violent episodes could be identified.

For our purposes, the most significant aspect of this proposal had to do with location. In a secret communication to Dr. J.M. Stubblebine, director of the California State Department of Health (fortunately, this missive was “leaked” to the public), West disclosed that he intended to house his Center in an abandoned Nike missile base, whose location was accessible yet relatively remote. “The site is securely fenced,” West wrote. “Comparative studies could be carried out there, in an isolated but convenient location, of experimental model programs, for the alteration of undesirable behavior.”¹³⁹

Public outcry stopped these plans. But was this scheme truly eliminated? Or was it merely modified, stripped (temporarily) of its overtly racial overtones and relocated to some less-accessible spot?

One thing is certain: A CIA “spy-chiatrist” favored secret behavior control experimentation in a remote military installation. Perhaps someone within the espionage establishment’s mind-modification divisions still thinks highly of the idea. If so, the disposal problem would once again rear its ugly head, should “visitors” to these installations ever reappear in outside society. Again, a hypno-programmed cover story - the less believable, the better - would prove invaluable.

The Scandinavian Connection

Many books have been written about abductees, yet few exist about the victims of mind control. I cannot understand this situation; the reality of UFOs is still controversial, yet the existence of mind control was verified in two (heavily compromised) congressional investigations and in thousands of FOIA documents. Nevertheless, the abductees find many a sympathetic ear, while those few who dare to proclaim themselves the victims of known government programs rarely find anyone to hear them out. Our prejudices on this score are regrettable, for if we listened to the “controllees” we would hear many details strikingly similar to those mentioned by UFO abductees.

Two cases in point: Martti Koski and Robert Naeslund.

Koski, a Finnish citizen, claims to have been a victim of mind control experimenta-

KILL SWITCH

tion while visiting Canada. Shortly after his experience began, he attempted to broadcast his situation to the world and draw attention to his plight. Few listened. Many of his details were bizarre, and not being a native speaker of English, he could not express himself convincingly to those he approached for help. Yet many aspects of his story correspond closely to known details of MKULTRA and related programs.

Naeslund, a Swedish citizen, tells a similar story. Moreover, his claims were backed by special evidence: X-rays revealed an implant in his brain. Naeslund actually went to the extreme of having his implant tested by electronic technicians employed by Hewlett-Packard. A Greek surgeon performed the necessary trepanation to remove the device.

Many aspects of the Koski and Naeslund stories correspond to my hypothesis. Koski, for example, was at one point told that the doctors afflicting him were actually "aliens from Sirius." At another point, he was led to believe that he was under direction of "the Lord." (As I previously indicated, manipulation of religious imagery could help induce anti-social behavior; the subject's super-ego can be nullified if he believes that he follows commands from on high. Such manipulation may explain the more bizarre aspects of Betty Andreasson Luca's abduction.¹⁴⁰)

Naeslund's implant was originally placed through his nasal cavity. He first realized that something terrible had happened to him after an experience of missing time, followed by an inexplicable nosebleed.

This detail will be instantly familiar to anyone who has studied abductions; I have encountered it in my own conversations with abductees. For an excellent example in the UFO literature, I refer the reader to the case of Susan Ransted, as detailed in Kevin D. Randle's *THE UFO CASEBOOK*; ¹⁴¹ the background of alleged contactee Diane Tessman is also noteworthy in this regard.¹⁴² Intriguingly, I have located a reference in the open literature to the use, in animal study, of nasally-implanted electrodes for the measurement of electromagnetic radiation effects.¹⁴³

There are other claimed mind control victims bearing evidence of implants; note, especially, the fascinating case of James Petit, a CIA-connected pilot and alleged brainwashing alumnus; X-rays of his cranium have revealed abductee-style implants - fitting, perhaps, since his body bears abductee-style scars.¹⁴⁴ Conversely, certain abductees will, if allowed a thorough and sympathetic hearing, deliver testimony strongly agreeing with Koski's narrative.

Helicopters and Disks

The bizarre story of Rex Niles and his sister (not named in news accounts) may shed interesting light on a variety of abductee cases, particularly that of Betty and Barney Hill.¹⁴⁵ Niles, the high-rolling owner of a Woodland Hills defense subcontracting firm (Rex Rep) was fingered by authorities investigating defense industry kickbacks. He became an extraordinarily cooperative witness in the investigation - until he was targeted by his enemies, who allegedly used psychoelectronics as harassment.

The following excerpt from the LOS ANGELES TIMES article on Niles is particularly compelling:

He [Niles] produced testimony from his sister, a Simi Valley woman who swears that helicopters have repeatedly circled her home. An engineer measured 250 watts of microwaves in the atmosphere outside Niles' house and found a radioactive disk underneath the dash of his car. [my italics]

KILL SWITCH

A former high school friend, Lyn Silverman, claimed that her home computer went haywire when Niles stepped close to it.

No aliens in this story - yet how similar it is to tales of alien abduction! The low-flying helicopters, of course, are frequently reported by abduction victims - the Betty Andreasson Luca case provides the best known example.¹⁴⁶ The haywire electronics equipment is also frequently encountered in putative abduction cases; I have spoken (independently) to three women who claimed to have been able to disturb or shut off televisions and stereos simply by walking past the devices; one woman even claimed she had switched off her TV simply by pointing at it.

But the radioactive disk is especially intriguing. As former FBI agent Ted Gunderson recently explained to my associate Alexander Constantine, magnetic radioactive disks have long been used by the clandestine services as cancer-inducing "silent killers" - i.e., as tools of assassination. Not only that. The disc calls to mind one little-remembered detail of the Hill case - the dozen-or-so circular "shiny spots," each the size of a silver dollar, found on the trunk of her car directly after the abduction. A compass needle reacted wildly when placed near these spots. Could they have marked the location where an electromagnetic or radioactive device, similar to that found by Niles, was placed on the car? (Such a device might have been held to the spot magnetically, hence the circular impressions.) If so, then the disorienting EMR could have helped induce the Hills' "UFO sighting."

The Military and Mind Control

Some time ago, I attended hypnotic regression sessions in which the subject - a claimed UFO abductee - recalled undergoing a mysterious "brain operation" at a veteran's hospital in California. The operation was performed by human beings, not aliens. Interestingly, this same hospital was mentioned in two other cases I encountered. These other claims were not made by abductees, but by people alleged to have been victims of mind control experimentation.

One of these claimants, a former Navy SEAL who undertook numerous dangerous missions in Vietnam, favorably impressed me with the wealth of detail in his story.¹⁴⁷ This individual - I've taken to calling him "the trained SEAL"- had received specialized combat training at a military base in California; he claims that at one point during this training he was drugged, hypnotized, possibly placed under some form of electronic control, and subjected to the extremes of pain/pleasure operant conditioning. One peculiar detail of his story concerns the "reward" aspect of the conditioning: When properly acquiescent, he was given unlimited sexual access to a woman who, the SEAL avers, was herself the victim of brainwashing.

Unbelievable as this last claim may seem, I found it oddly resonant when I later interviewed a prominent abductee in the Southern California area, who bravely offered me details on a puzzling, albeit quite delicate, incident in her past. Still an attractive woman, she recalled for me - indeed, seemed strangely compelled to describe - an early love affair with a young soldier training at a military base near her home. She cannot recall the soldier's name. All she remembers is that one day he started living at her family's house; she has no memory of how the arrangement began, and her parents have never felt comfortable discussing the matter. Although unattracted to this soldier, she felt compelled to become intimate with him, adopting a pliant, obeisant attitude that was quite out of character for her. Later, the soldier went on to covert missions in Vietnam.

KILL SWITCH

Of course, a young person's psycho-sexual development is never smooth, and the incident related above may merely have represented one peculiarly upsetting bump in that notoriously rough road. Still, some of the details of this story - particularly the parents' attitude, the woman's personality shift, and her subsequent memory lapses - are striking, and I treat with respect the abductee's intuition that this minor enigma in her personal history could, if properly understood, shed light on her later "missing time" experiences.

Could the "trained SEAL" have been right? Was there, is there, a coterie of hypno-programmed soldiers conducting particularly hazardous missions? And do the programmers have at their disposal a "ladies' auxiliary," so to speak, of hypnotized camp followers?

If the SEAL's story stood alone, skeptics could easily dismiss it (provided they did not sit, as I did, face-to-face with the story's teller, listening to all the grisly and unsettling details). But other veterans have added their voices to this grim tale. Daniel Sheehan, of the Christic Institute, claims that his organization has spoken to half-a-dozen individuals with narratives similar to my SEAL informant. All had received "processing," so to speak, within the context of standard military training; after programming and specialized combat instruction by mercenaries, the recruits were placed "on hold," to be used as situations arose - and some of those situations occurred within the United States.¹⁴⁸

Walter Bowart began his own researches into mind control by placing an ad in SOLDIER-OF-FORTUNE-style publications, asking for correspondence from veterans who experienced inexplicable lapses in memory or strange behavior modification techniques while serving in Vietnam; he received over 100 replies. Bowart devoted an entire chapter to one of these respondents - an Air Force veteran named David, who ended his four-year tour of duty recalling only that he had spent the time, "having fun, skin diving, laying on the beach, collecting shells.... It never dawned on me until later that I must have DONE something while I was in the service." (An obvious example of screen memory.) He was also "assigned" a girlfriend whose name he cannot now recall, despite the length and deep intimacy of the affair.¹⁴⁹ The parallels to the SEAL's story and the abductee's account should be obvious.

We even have a confession, of sorts, from a scientist who specialized in one aspect of this sort of training. Lt. Commander Thomas Narut, of the U.S. Naval Hospital at the NATO headquarters in Naples, Florida, [Ed: ???] admitted during a lecture in Oslo that recruits in Naples underwent CLOCKWORK ORANGE-style behavior modification sessions. Trainees would be strapped into chairs with their eyelids clamped open while watching films of industrial accidents and African circumcision ceremonies - films frequently used by psychologists as a means of inducing stress in experimental situations. Unlike the protagonist in A CLOCKWORK ORANGE, who learned revulsion at the sight of violence, Narut's soldiers were taught to accept and enjoy bloodshed, to view it with equanimity. Similar techniques were used to dehumanize potential enemies. Graduates of this program became, in Narut's words, "hit men and assassins," to be placed in American embassies throughout the world.

When questioned by reporters about these claims, the American government denied the story; Narut - after a long incommunicado period and apparent coercion - later explained to journalists that he had merely spoken theoretically. If so, why did he originally describe the behavior modification procedure as an ongoing program?¹⁵⁰

And while it may seem frivolous to return to the subject of abductions after examining such grim data, I should remind the reader of the many abduction accounts in which abductees recall being forced to watch certain stress inducing motion pictures. The aliens,

KILL SWITCH

it seems, have learned a few lessons from Dr. Narut.

Narut, of course, concentrated on selective programming of individual American soldiers; on the other side of the mind control spectrum, Defense Department specialists have also concentrated on methods to render entire enemy battalions “combat ineffective.” Electromagnetic weaponry, intended to wipe out the aggression of the enemy, is the province of DARPA, under the direction of Dr. Jack Verona. These projects remain fairly mysterious; we do know, however, that one operation, SLEEPING BEAUTY, employed the services of Dr. Michael Persinger, a scientist who has expressed interesting views regarding UFOs.

Persinger discovered a method of using ELF waves to induce the brain’s MAST cells to release histamine; should a battlefield commander wish to subject his enemy to mass bouts of vomiting, Persinger’s trick could do the job even faster than a Tobe Hooper movie. The method works on animals. “The question,” writes mind control researcher Larry Collins, “is how to get from point A to point B without violating one of the most rigorous commandments of Government ethics - thou shalt not conduct experiments like that on human beings.”¹⁵¹

If Collins had studied the record a little more carefully, he might realize that the government hasn’t always regarded this commandment as something graven in stone. As Milton Kline put it:

Ethical factors involved in most research would preclude having positive results. Those ethical factors don’t always hold with government research. The research which has given really positive results *has not been limited by ethical constraints*.¹⁵² [my italics]

The Ultimate Motive for Mind Control

Hypnosis hard-liners of the Orne school would almost certainly dismiss the foregoing veterans’ accounts of the use of hypnosis, drugs and behavioral conditioning on American fighting men. Why, the skeptics would ask, would anyone attempt to create a “Manchurian Candidate” when the military services, using entirely conventional means, can create a “Rambo”? There have always been recruits for even the most hazardous duties; what need of hypnosis?

The need, in fact, is absolute.

The modern battlefield has little place for the traditional soldier. Advanced weaponry requires an increasing level of technical sophistication, which in turn requires a cool-headed operator. But the all-too-human combatant - though capable of extraordinary acts of courage under the most stressful conditions imaginable - does not possess inexhaustible reserves of *sang-froid*. Eventually, breakdowns will occur. Per-capita psychiatric casualties have increased dramatically in each successive American conflict. As Richard Gabriel, the excellent historian of the role of psychiatry in warfare, writes:

Modern warfare has become so lethal and so intense that only the already insane can endure it... Modern war requiring continuous combat will increase the degree of fatigue on the soldier to heretofore unknown levels. Physical fatigue - especially the lack of sleep - will increase the rate of psychiatric casualties enormously. Other factors - high rates of indirect fire, night fighting, lack of food, constant stress, large numbers of casualties - will ensure that the number of psychiatric casualties will reach disastrous proportions. And the number of casualties will overburden the medical structure to the point of collapse.

The ability to treat psychiatric casualties will all but disappear. There will be no safe forward areas in which to treat soldiers debilitated by mental collapse. The technology of

KILL SWITCH

modern war has made such locations functionally obsolete...153

According to Gabriel, the military intends to meet this challenge by creating “the chemical soldier,” a designer-drugged zombie in fighting man’s uniform:

On the battlefields of the future we will witness a true clash of ignorant armies, armies ignorant of their own emotions and even of the reasons for which they fight. Soldiers on all sides will be reduced to fearless chemical automatons who fight simply because they can do nothing else.... Once the chemical genie is out of the bottle, the full range of human mental and physical actions become targets for chemical control.... Today it is already possible by chemical or electrical stimulation to increase the aggression levels of the human being by stimulating the amygdala, a section of the brain known to control aggression and rage. Such “human potential engineering” is already a partial reality and the necessary technical knowledge increases every day.¹⁵⁴

While this passage speaks of drugs and electronics, we can safely assume that the planners of battle would not refrain from using any other promising technique.

Gabriel writes primarily of large-scale battle scenarios, but based on his information, we can fairly deduce that the mind-controlled soldier will also play a role in the surgical strike, the covert operation, the infiltration behind enemy lines by units of the Special Forces. On such missions, United States personnel have increasingly relied on torture as a means of interrogation and intimidation,¹⁵⁵ and as such barbarism becomes standard procedure the American fighting man of the future will need to find within himself unprecedented reserves of brutality. Will the average recruit, culled from the nation’s suburbs and reared on traditional ideals, possess such reserves?

Vietnam proved that the soldier, despite a barrage of propaganda intended to cloud his discernment, will sense the difference between fighting for legitimate defense interests and fighting to protect political hegemony. To forestall this realization, or to render it irrelevant, military planners must withdraw the human combatant and replace him with a new species of warrior. The soldier of the future will not discern; he will merely do. He will not be a butcher; he will be the butcher’s knife - a tool among tools, thoughtless and effective.

And it is my contention that to create this soldier of the future, the controllers will need a continuing program, one designed to test each new method and combination of methods for conquering the human mind.

One primary goal of this program must include expanding the human capacity for stress and violence. Subjects enrolled in such experimental procedures will experience pain, and will learn to accept the pain. Eventually, they will learn to inflict it, without remorse or even remembrance. The nation who first creates this new soldier will possess a decisive advantage on the “conventional” battlefield - as will the nation which first develops a means of using mass mind control techniques to disable entire enemy platoons. This paramount military necessity is the reason why I will never believe any unconvincing reassurances that our nation’s clandestine scientists have foregone or will forego research into behavior modification. This research will never be mere history. What’s past is present, and today’s covert experimentation will become tomorrow’s basic training.

A prototype of the future warrior may already be with us. The Navy SEAL I interviewed spoke in horrifying detail of dismemberment without emotion, of rape as routine, of killing without affect. And then forgetting that he has killed. Even years later, he could not recall the stories behind many of the wounds on his own body. He claims that whenever he

KILL SWITCH

would need the services of the veteran's hospital, doctors would re-hypnotize him shortly after his admission, while a physician specifically cleared for such work would examine his medical history, which was highly classified and kept under lock and key.

According to the SEAL's testimony, his memory block cracked little by little, as a result of events too complex to recount here. Finally, years after Vietnam, he was able to remember what he did.

Amnesia was a blessing.

IV. Abductions

Press and public now regard abductees as tony curiosities, yet science, for the most part, still banishes their tales to the domain of the damned, as Charles Fort defined damnation. So too with claimed victims of mind control. The Voice of Authority tells us that MKULTRA belongs to history; like Hasdrubal and Hitler, it threatened once, but no more. Anyone insisting otherwise must be silenced by glib rationalization and selective inattention.

Yet these two topics - UFO abductions and mind control - have more in common than their mutual ostracization. The data overlap. If we could chart these phenomena on a Venn diagram, we would see a surprisingly large intersection between the two circles of information. It is this overlap I seek to address.

Note, however, that I can NOT address all the other interesting and important issues raised by the UFO abduction experience. For example, I have written, admittedly rather vaguely, of nasal implants reported by abductees - the sort of detail which might place an account in the "high strangeness" category, and of course, a detail central to my thesis. But what percentage of the percipients speak of such implants? A truly scientific analysis would provide a figure. Unfortunately, I haven't the resources to compile a sufficiently large abductee sample from which one could draw statistics. Nor can I make an over-arching qualitative analysis, measuring the value of "high strangeness" reports against other abductee claims. All I can do is note the available literature, and leave the reader to wonder, as I do, whether the compilers of that literature concentrated on exceptional cases or were biased in favor of the less fantastic abductee accounts. I have supplemented readings of the abduction literature with my own interviews with percipients - which, since abductees tend to know other abductees, can give a surprisingly wide view of the phenomenon. This view has been broadened still further by my talks and correspondence with other members of the UFO community.

Of course, we must recognize the difference between testimony and proof. No one can state definitively that abduction reports have a basis in objective reality (however misperceived). Ultimately, all we have are stories. Some of these stories may be of questionable veracity; others may be contaminated by investigator bias; many are insufficiently detailed. No one research paper can resolve all abduction controversies, and many necessary battles must be fought on other fields.

Still, the testimony won't go away - and we certainly have enough to allow for comparisons. I maintain that an unprejudiced overview of abduction reports in the popular press and the less-familiar material on mind control will demonstrate a striking correlation. Once other abduction researchers have been educated in the ways of MKULTRA (and this paper is intended as an introductory text) they may note a similar pattern. If so, we can then begin to write a revisionist history of the phenomenon.

The abduction enigma contains within it sub-mysteries that slide into the mind con-

KILL SWITCH

trol scenario with surprising ease, even elegance - mysteries which fit the E.T. hypothesis as uncomfortably as a size 10 foot fits into a size 8 shoe. As we have seen, the MKULTRA thesis explains the reports of abductee intracerebral implants (particularly reports involving nosebleeds), unusual scars, “telepathic” communication (i.e., externally induced intracerebral voices) concurrent with or following the abduction encounter, allegations that some abductees hear unusual sound effects (similar to those created by the hemi-synch and cognate devices), haywire electronic devices in abductee homes, personality shifts, “training films,” manipulation of religious imagery, and missing time. Needless to say, the thesis of clandestine government experimentation readily accounts for abductee claims of human beings “working” with the aliens, and for the government harassment that plays so prominent a role in certain abductee reports.

Let’s look at some more correlations.

The Hill Case and the “Advanced” Aliens

Earlier, I asked, “Do the aliens also watch black-and-white television?” in reference to their alleged use of old-fashioned, Terra-style brain implantation devices. Abduction accounts abound in other examples of alien “retro-technology.” The most striking example can be found in the Betty and Barney Hill incident, the details of which are too well-known to recount here.¹⁵⁶ As we have already glimpsed during our discussion of the Rex Niles affair, the Hills’ “interrupted journey” abounds in data which, taken together, permits the construction of an alternative explanation.

At one point during the alleged UFO abduction, the “examiners” inserted a needle in Betty Hill’s navel, telling her that this practice constituted a test for pregnancy.¹⁵⁷ Some ufologists¹⁵⁸ rashly assume that Betty Hill’s “pregnancy test” is evidence of advanced extraterrestrial technology, since her 1961 account pre-dates the official announcement of amniocentesis, which does indeed make use of a needle inserted into the navel. But we now have much less invasive means of testing for pregnancy than amniocentesis. True, amniocentesis is still sometimes used to gather information about the fetus, but the wielders of a highly evolved technology would certainly use other methods of determining the existence of pregnancy in the first place.

Betty Hill’s testimony reminds us of certain other abduction accounts, which contain descriptions of “healings” surprisingly similar to the procedures associated with still-experimental electromagnetic therapy techniques, such as those described in Robert O. Becker’s *THE BODY ELECTRIC*. For example, abductee Deanna Dube described for me an abduction-related “regeneration” of her long-damaged heart; had she been familiar with Becker’s work,¹⁵⁹ she might have been a bit less rapid to ascribe her healing to otherworldly influences.

Medical breakthroughs often undergo years of testing before their official “discovery.” For some of these tests, finding volunteers present a major obstacle. If we accept the proposition that the Hill incident originated in an external and objective stimulus, we must then ask ourselves which scenario is more likely: Did Betty Hill encounter human beings using a technique ten years ahead of its time? Or did she encounter aliens (reputedly a “billion years ahead of us”) using science from eons before their time?

One must also ask why Betty Hill’s aliens seemed to have no grasp of basic human concepts (such as how we measure time) - yet they knew enough about us to speak English fluently and had even mastered our slang. Were these real aliens, or humans engaging in

KILL SWITCH

theatricals (and occasionally muffing their lines)? For that matter, why did Betty Hill originally recall her abductors as humanoid, only later describing them as aliens?

The Hill case provided a particularly controversial piece of evidence - the celebrated "star map" recalled by Betty Hill under hypnosis. In later years, an Ohio schoolteacher named Marjorie Fish made an ingenious and laudable attempt to discover a match for this map by constructing an elaborate three-dimensional model of nearby star systems; whether she succeeded remains a matter for keen debate.¹⁶⁰ For now, I prefer to avoid taking sides in this dispute and will confine myself to insisting that pro-ET ufologists answer (without resorting to glib ripostes) a point first raised by Jacques Vallee: the map makes no sense as a navigational aid. Vallee notes that, even if we grant the Fish interpretation, the stars are not drawn to scale - and at any rate, alien spaceships would surely be navigated the same way we guide our own spacecraft: via computers and telemetry¹⁶¹ The validity of the Fish interpretation is irrelevant; the point is that any such chart would have no value to an interstellar star-farer.

Fish's work raises other controversies: Allegedly, the map points to Zeta Reticuli as the aliens' home system and pictures Zeta Reticuli as a single star, a view consistent with scientific opinion of the 1960s. Yet in later years scientists discovered that Zeta Reticuli is binary.¹⁶² Moreover, how did our abductee manage to remember so accurately a complex chart glimpsed in passing? Even allowing for the possibility of increased accuracy of recollection under hypnotic regression, the memory feat here seems remarkable. Consider the circumstances of the abduction: Kafka on hallucinogens couldn't have conceived of the nightmare vision confronting Betty Hill that night - yet for some reason this particular arrangement of stars emerged as her most intensely-detailed recollection of the experience.

This memory (if not confabulated during regression, a possibility we should always weigh) is comprehensible only as an example of artificially-induced hypermnesia. In other words, Betty Hill was directed to store that chart within her subconscious. The celebrated star map ought to be recognized for what it was: a prop, a seemingly confirmatory circumstantial detail meant to convince her - and perhaps us - of the reality of her abduction.

The question of motive arises. Why - if my thesis is correct - were these two fairly innocuous individuals chosen for this new variation on the old MKULTRA tricks?

The selection might, of course, have been arbitrary. Or perhaps circumstances now irretrievably lost to history rendered the couple a convenient target. Interestingly, Barney Hill had become acquainted (through church functions) with the head of Air Force intelligence at Pease Air Force Base; perhaps this relationship first brought the Hills to the attention of members of the intelligence community. Arguably, the Hills could have been fingered for a wide variety of reasons; as a general rule, the clandestine services prefer to satisfy a number of itches with one scratch.

In fact, the espionage establishment had one particularly compelling reason to focus on the Hills. Barney Hill (a black man) and his wife held important positions in several civil rights organizations, including the NAACP.¹⁶³ The abduction took place during the 1960s, when the NAACP and allied groups fell victim to an increasingly paranoid series of attacks from the FBI and other governmental agencies (under operations COINTELPRO, CHAOS, GARDEN PLOT, etc.).¹⁶⁴ At that time, infiltration of civil rights groups proved a difficult chore; while most left-leaning groups provided easy targets for FBI stooges, the average undercover operative would have had an exceptionally difficult time posing as a black ac-

KILL SWITCH

tivist. (In 1961, the only black people on the FBI's payroll were the servants in J. Edgar Hoover's home.)

In light of these facts, we should recall Victor Marchetti's anecdote about the cat that the CIA had "wired for sound." Perhaps an ambitious covert scientist proposed a similar experiment, in which a human being would play the role that had once been assigned to the unfortunate feline? As Estabrooks noted, the ultimate espionage agent would be the spy who doesn't KNOW he is a spy. Barney Hill, a well-regarded figure with a near-genius-level IQ, was a safe bet to obtain a leadership role in any group he joined; he would have been remarkably well-positioned, had any outsiders wished to use his ears to over-hear prominent black organizers in confidential discussion.

Of course, many intelligence professionals would counter this suggestion by reminding us that eavesdroppers on the civil rights movement had plenty of less-flamboyant methods: Bugging, "black bag" jobs, paying for information, etc. The point is valid. But if the technology to create a "human bug" was developed circa 1961 - and there is documentation suggesting that such is indeed the case¹⁶⁵ - the intelligence agencies would surely have wanted to test the possibilities in the field. And considering the expense of such a test, why not conduct the experiment in such a way as to reap the maximum benefits? Why NOT choose a Barney Hill?

Arms and the Abductee

Budd Hopkins told the following story during his lecture at the Los Angeles "Whole Life Expo."¹⁶⁶ He considers the case "very good... lots of corroborating witnesses for parts of it." Though not, presumably, for this part.

Hopkins' informant, after the by-now familiar UFO abduction, was given a gun by the aliens. Not a Buck Rogers laser weapon - this was something Dirty Harry might have packed.

The abductee was also given someone to shoot. Not a little grey alien, another human being, tied to a chair. The "visitors" told their armed abductee that this captive had done "evil on earth, and he's a bad person. You have to kill him." If the abductee didn't do as asked, he would never leave the ship.

The captive proclaimed his innocence, and pleaded for his life. The abductee, caught in the middle of all this, became quite upset. (Worth noting: he seems to have at least considered the aliens' request to shoot someone he had never met.) Ultimately, the abductee turned the gun on the aliens and said, "Nobody's going to get shot here."

According to Hopkins, "The aliens said 'Fine. Very good.' They took the gun from him; the man [presumably, the captive] got up, walked away, disappeared, and they went on to the next thing." Obviously, this little drama had been staged - a test of some sort.

I submit that this surreal incident is incomprehensible as either an example of alien incursion or of "Klass-ical" confabulation. The scenario described here EXACTLY parallels numerous experiments in the hypnotic induction of anti-social action as revealed both in the standard hypnosis literature and in declassified ARTICHOKE/MKULTRA documents. For example, compare Hopkins' account to the following, in which Ludwig Mayer, a prominent German hypnosis researcher, describes a classic experiment in the hypnotic induction of criminal action:

I gave a revolver to an elderly and readily suggestible man whom I had just hypnotized. The revolver had just been loaded by Mr. H. with a percussion cap. I explained to [the subject], while pointing to Mr. H., that Mr. H. was a very wicked man whom he should shoot to kill. With

KILL SWITCH

great determination he took the revolver and fired a shot directly at Mr. H. Mr. H. fell down pretending to be wounded. I then explained to my subject that the fellow was not yet quite dead, and that he should give him another bullet, which he did without further ado. 167

Of course, if a conservative hypnosis specialist were asked to comment on the above account, he would quickly point out that hypnotic suggestions which work in an experimental situation would not easily succeed outside the laboratory; on some level, the subject will probably sense whether or not he's playing the game for real.¹⁶⁸ Similarly, a conservative abduction researcher would, in reviewing Hopkins' material, emphasize the problems inherent in using testimony derived during regression, where the threat of confabulation lurks. I'll concede both arguments - for the moment - only to insist that they are beside the point. The matter of primary importance, the sticking point which neither Klass nor Hopkins can comfortably confront, is the convergence of detail between Mayer's hypnosis experiment and the testing event related by Hopkins' abductee. Why are these two stories so similar? Did the good Dr. Mayer take pupils from Sirius?¹⁶⁹

Hopkins says he knows of other instances in which abductees found themselves in similar crucibles. So do I.

One person I spoke to can remember (sans hypnosis) being handed a gun inside a ziplock baggy and receiving instructions that she will have to use this weapon "on a job." Early in my interviews with her (and with no prompting from me) she recited an apparent cue drilled into her consciousness by the "entities" (as she calls them): "When you see the light, do it tonight," followed by the command, "Execute." (One can only speculate as to how such commands would be used in the field; we will discuss later the use of photovoltaic hypnotic induction.) Though her personal feelings toward firearms are decidedly negative, she vividly describes periods in her "everyday" life when she feels an uncharacteristic, yet overpowering urge to be near a gun - a quasi-sexual desire to pick one up and touch the metal.¹⁷⁰

She is not alone. Another has been so affected by gun fever that he became a security guard, just to be near the things.¹⁷¹ The abductees I have spoken to connect this sudden surge of Ramboism to the UFO experience. But I suggest that the UFO experience may be merely a cover story for another type of training entirely.

One of the primary goals of BLUEBIRD, ARTICHOKE, and MKULTRA was to determine whether mind control could be used to facilitate "executive action" - i.e., assassination.¹⁷²

It isn't difficult to imagine the media's reaction if a public figure were murdered by someone acting at the behest of the "space brothers." Who would dare to speak of conspiracy under such circumstances? The hidden controllers could choose a myth structure that conform's to the abductee's personality, then pose as higher beings, who would whisper violence into the ear of the percipient. Using this ruse, the trick that scientists such as Ludwig Mayer could perform in the lab might now be accomplished in the field. As Estabrooks' associate Jack Tracktir (professor of hypnotherapy at Baylor University) explained to John Marks, anti-social acts can be induced with "no conscience involved" once the proper pretext has been created.¹⁷³

They Will Think It's Flying Saucers

Jenny Randles contributes an anecdote from Great Britain which dovetails nicely with this hypothesis.

KILL SWITCH

In 1965, "Margary" (a pseudonym) lived in Birmingham with her husband, who one night told her to prepare for a "shock and a test." As Randles describes what she calls a "rogue case":

They got into his car and drove off, although her memory of the trip became hazy and confused and she does not know where they went. Then she was in a room that was dimly lit and there were people standing around a long table or flat bed. She was out on it and seemed "drugged" and unable to resist. The most memorable of the men was tall and thin with a long nose and white beard. He had thick eyebrows and supposedly said to Margary, "Remember the eyebrows, honey." A strange medical examination, using odd equipment, was performed on her.

Both the husband and the scientists, using (apparently) hypnotic techniques, flooded her mind with images that, she was told, would be understood only in the future. According to Randles, "At one point one of the 'examiners' in the room said to Margary in a tone that made it seem as if he were amused, "They will think it's flying saucers." The husband also revealed that he had a second identity. After the abduction, this husband (am I going too far to assume his employment with MI6 or some cognate agency?) left, never to be seen again.¹⁷⁴ Margary did not recall the abduction until 1978.

This affair can only baffle a researcher who insists on fitting all abduction accounts into the ET hypothesis; once we free ourselves from that set of assumptions, explanations come easily. I interpret this incident as a case in which the controllers applied the flying saucer cover story sloppily, or to an insufficiently receptive subject. If my thesis is correct, the UFO "hypnotic hoax" technique would still have been fairly new in 1965, particularly outside the United States; perhaps the manipulators hadn't yet got the hang of it. The odd comment about the scientist's eyebrows may refer to an item of disguise donned for the occasion. The unscrupulous hypnotist, unsure about his ability to induce an impenetrable amnesia - and mindful of the price paid by his forerunners in mesmeric criminality¹⁷⁵ - would understandably want to hedge his bets; by indulging in the British penchant for theatrics, he could further protect his anonymity.

A similar incident was brought to my attention by researcher Robert Durant.

The relevant excerpt of his letter follows:

Now I want to turn to a case that I have been investigating for several months. The subject is an abductee. Standard abduction scenario. Twice regressed under hypnosis, the first time by a well-known abduction researcher, the second time by a psychologist with parapsychology connections.

In the course of many hours of listening to the subject, I discovered that she has had close personal contact over a long period of time with several individuals who have federal intelligence connections. She was hypnotized many years ago as part of a TV program devoted to hypnosis. Her abductions began shortly after she attended several long sessions at a laboratory where, ostensibly, she was being tested for ESP abilities. Two other people who were "tested" at this same laboratory have also had abductions. All three were told by the lab to join a local UFO group. During her abductions, the principal alien spoke to the subject in the English language in a normal manner, not via telepathy. She recognized the voice, which was at one time that of her very close friend of yesteryear who was then and is now employed by the CIA. The other voice was that of an individual who works in Washington, has what I will call very strong federal connections as well as a finger in every ufological pie, and who just hap-

KILL SWITCH

pened to bump into her at the aforementioned laboratory.

He also anticipated, in the course of telephone conversations, her abductions. When the subject confronted him about this and the voice, he claimed to be psychic. (!)176

The “ESP” connection is suggestive; the MKULTRA documents betray an astonishing interest on the part of the intelligence agencies in matters parapsychological.

Some researchers would object that examples such as this are rare; most abductions contain no such overt indications of intelligence involvement. But have investigators looked for them? As mentioned in the introduction, a false dichotomy limits much ufological thought; as long as the abduction argument swings between the ET hypothesis and purely psychological theories, researchers will not recognize the relevance of certain key items of background data.

Glimpses Of The Controllers

In an interview with me, a northern-California abductee - call him “Peter” - reported an experience which was conducted NOT by a small grey alien, but by a human being. The percipient called this man a “doctor.” He gave a description of this individual, and even provided a drawing.

Some time after I gathered this information, a southern-California abductee told me her story - which included a description of this very same “doctor.” The physical details were so strikingly similar as to erase coincidence. This woman is a leading member of a Los Angeles-based UFO group; three other women in this group report abduction encounters with the same individual.¹⁷⁷

Perhaps those three women were fantasists, attaching themselves to another’s narrative. But my northern informant never met these people. Why did he describe the same “doctor”?

One of the abductees I have dealt with insisted, under hypnosis, that her abduction experience brought her to a certain house in the Los Angeles area. She was able to provide directions to the house, even though she had no conscious memory of ever being there. I later learned that this house is indeed occupied by a scientist who formerly (and perhaps currently) conducted clandestine research on mind control technology.

This same abductee described a clandestine brain operation of some sort she underwent in childhood. The neurosurgeon was a human being, not an alien. She even recalled the name. (Note: This is not the same individual referred to above.) When I heard the name, it meant nothing to me - but later I learned that there really was a scientist of that name who specialized in electrode implant research.

Licia Davidson is a thoughtful and articulate abductee, whose fascinating story closely parallels many found in the abductee literature - except for one unusual detail. In an interview with me, described an unsettling recollection of a human being, dressed normally, holding a black box with a protruding antenna. This odd snippet of memory did NOT coincide with the general thrust of her abduction narrative. Could this remembrance represent an all-too-brief segment of accurately-perceived reality interrupting her hypnotically-induced “screen memory”? Peter clearly recalls seeing a similar box during his abduction.

Interestingly, Licia resides in the Los Angeles suburb of Tujunga Canyon, a prominent spot on the abduction map; Many of the abductees I have spoken to first had unusual experiences while living in this area. Near Tujunga Canyon, in Mt. Pacifico, is a hidden

KILL SWITCH

former Nike missile base; more than one abductee has described odd, seemingly inexplicable military activity around this location.¹⁷⁸ The reader will recall the connection of Nike missile bases to the disturbing story of Dr. L. Jolyon West, a veteran of MKULTRA.

Cults

Some abductees I have spoken to have been directed to join certain religious/philosophical sects. These cults often bear close examination.

The leaders of these groups tend to be “ex”-CIA operatives, or Special Forces veterans. They are often linked through personal relations, even though they espouse widely varying traditions. I have heard unsettling reports that the leaders of some of these groups have used hypnosis, drugs, or “mind machines” on their charges. Members of these cults have reported periods of missing time during ceremonies or “study periods.”

I strongly urge abduction researchers to examine closely any small “occult” groups an abductee might join. For example, one familiar leader of the UFO fringe - a man well-known for his espousal of the doctrine of “love and light” - is Virgil Armstrong, a close personal friend of General John Singlaub, the notorious Iran-Contra player, who recently headed the neo-fascist World Anti-Communist League. Armstrong, who also happens to be an ex-Green Beret and former CIA operative, figured into my inquiry in an interesting fashion: An abductee of my acquaintance was told - by her “entities,” naturally - to seek out this UFO spokesman and join his “sky-watch” activities, which, my source alleges, included a mass channelling session intended to send debilitating “negative” vibrations to Constantine Chernenko, then the leader of the Soviet Union. Of course, intracerebral voices may have a purely psychological origin, so Armstrong can hardly be held to task for the abductee’s original “directive.”¹⁷⁹ Still, his past associations with military intelligence inevitably bring disturbing possibilities to mind.

Even more ominous than possible ties between UFO cults and the intelligence community are the cults’ links with the shadowy I AM group, founded by Guy Ballard in the 1930s.¹⁸⁰ According to researcher David Stuppel, “If you look at the contactee groups today, you’ll see that most of the stable, larger ones are actually neo-I AM groups, with some sort of tie to Ballard’s organization.”¹⁸¹ This cult, therefore, bears investigation.

Guy Ballard’s “Mighty I AM Religious Activity,” grew, in large part, out of William Dudley Pelley’s Silver Shirts, an American Nazi organization.¹⁸² Although Ballard himself never openly proclaimed Nazi affiliation, his movement was tinged with an extremely right-wing political philosophy, and in secret meetings he “decreed” the death of President Franklin Roosevelt.¹⁸³ The I AM philosophy derived from Theosophy, and in this author’s estimation bears a more-than-cursory resemblance to the Theosophically-based teachings that informed the proto-Nazi German occult lodges.¹⁸⁴

After the war, Pelley (who had been imprisoned for sedition during the hostilities) headed an occult-oriented organization call Soulcraft, based in Noblesville, Indiana. Another Soulcraft employee was the controversial contactee George Hunt Williamson (real name: Michel d’Obrenovic), who co-authored UFOs CONFIDENTIAL with John McCoy, a proponent of the theory that a Jewish banking conspiracy was preventing disclosure of the solution to the UFO mystery.¹⁸⁵ Later, Williamson founded the I AM-oriented Brotherhood of the Seven Rays in Peru.¹⁸⁶ Another famed contactee, George Van Tassel, was associated with Pelley and with the notoriously anti-Semitic Reverend Wesley Swift (founder of the group which metamorphosed into the Aryan Nations).¹⁸⁷

KILL SWITCH

The most visible offspring of I AM is Elizabeth Clare Prophet's Church Universal and Triumphant, a group best-known for its massive arms caches in underground bunkers. CUT was recently exposed in COVERT ACTION INFORMATION BULLETIN as a conduit of CIA funds,¹⁸⁸ and according to researcher John Judge, has ties to organizations allied to the World Anti-Communist League.¹⁸⁹ Prophet is becoming involved in abduction research and has sponsored presentations by Budd Hopkins and other prominent investigators. In his book THE ARMSTRONG REPORT: ETs AND UFOs: THEY NEED US, WE DON'T NEED THEM [sic],¹⁹⁰ Virgil Armstrong directs troubled abductees toward Prophet's group. (Perhaps not insignificantly, he also suggests that abductees plagued by implants alleviate their problem by turning to "the I AM force" within.¹⁹¹)

Another UFO channeller, Frederick Von Mierers, has promulgated both a cult with a strong I AM orientation¹⁹² and an apparent con-game involving over-appraised gemstones. Mierers is an anti-Semite who contends that the Holocaust never happened and that the Jews control the world's wealth.

UFORUM is a flying saucer organization popular with Los Angeles-area abductees; its founder is Penny Harper, a member of a radical Scientology breakaway group which connects the teachings of L. Ron Hubbard with pronouncements against "The Illuminati" (a mythical secret society) and other betes noir familiar from right-wing conspiracy literature. Harper directs members of her group to read THE SPOTLIGHT, an extremist tabloid (published by Willis Carto's Liberty Lobby) which denies the reality of the Holocaust and posits a "Zionist" scheme to control the world.¹⁹³

More than one unwary abductee has fallen in with groups such as those listed above. It isn't difficult to imagine how some of these questionable groups might mold an abductee's recollection of his experience - and perhaps help direct his future actions.

Some modern abductees, with otherwise-strong claims, claim encounters with blond, "Nordic" aliens reminiscent of the early contactee era. Surely, the "Nordic" appearance of these aliens sprang from the dubious spiritual tradition of Van Tassell, Ballard, Pelley, McCoy, etc. Why, then, are some modern abductees seeing these very same other-worldly Uebermenschen?

One abductee of my acquaintance claims to have had beneficial experiences with these "blond" aliens - who, he believes, came originally from the Pleiades. Interestingly, in the late 1960s, the psychopathically anti-Semitic Rev. Wesley Swift predicted this odd twist in the abduction tale. In a broadcast "sermon," he spoke at length about UFOs, claiming that there were "good" aliens and "bad" aliens. The good ones, he insisted, were tall, blond Aryans - who hailed from the Pleiades. He made this pronouncement long before the current trends in abduction lore.

Could some of the abductions be conducted by an extreme right-wing element within the national security establishment? Disagreeable as the possibility seems, we should note that the "lunatic right" is represented in all other walks of life; certainly hard-rightists have taken positions within the military-intelligence complex as well.

Grounds For Further Research

John Keel's ground-breaking OPERATION TROJAN HORSE, written in an era when abductees still came under the category of "contactees," includes the following intriguing data, gleaned from Keel's extensive field work:

Contactees often find themselves suddenly miles from home without knowing how they

KILL SWITCH

got there. They either have induced amnesia, wiping out all memory of the trip, or they were taken over by some means and made the trip in a blacked-out state. Should they encounter a friend on the way, the friend would probably note that their eyes seemed glassy and their behavior seemed peculiar. But if the friend spoke to them, he might receive a curt reply.

In the language of the contactees this process is called being used...I have known silent contactees to disappear from their homes for long periods, and when they returned, they had little or no recollection of where they had been. One girl sent me a postcard from the Bahama Islands - which surprised me because I knew she was very poor. When she returned, she told me that she had only one memory of the trip. She said she remembered getting off a jet at an airport - she couldn't recall getting on the jet or making the trip - and there "Indians" met her and took her baggage.... The next thing she knew she was back home again. 194

Puzzling indeed - unless one has read *THE CONTROL OF CANDY JONES*, which speaks of Candy's "blacked out" periods, during which she travelled to Taiwan as a CIA courier, adopting her second personality. The mind control explanation perfectly solves all the mysteries in the above excerpt - save, perhaps, the odd remark about "Indians."

Hickson and Mendez' *UFO CONTACT AT PASCAGOULA* contains the interesting information that Charles Hickson awakes at night feeling that he is on the verge of re-awakening some terribly important memory connected with his encounter - yet ostensibly he can account for every moment of his adventure.

Hickson also received a letter from an apparent abductee who claims that the grey aliens are actually automatons of some sort - perhaps an unconscious recognition of the unreality of the hypnotically-induced "cover story." 195 In this light, the film version of *COMMUNION* - whose screenplay was written by Whitley Strieber - takes on a new interest: The abduction sequences contain inexplicable images indicating that the "greys" are really props, or masks.

COMMUNION and *TRANSFORMATION* contain passages detailing what seems to be a hazily-recalled Candy-Jones-style espionage adventure, in which Strieber was shanghaied by a "coach" and a "nurse" (both human beings) who apparently drugged him. 196 Recall the example of Keel's informants. Moreover, *TRANSFORMATION* contains lengthy descriptions of alien beings working in apparent collusion with human beings.

Abductee Christa Tilton also recalls both human beings and aliens playing a part in her experience. Ever since her abduction, she claims, she has been "shadowed" by a mysterious federal agent she calls John Wallis. 197 Christa's husband, Tom Adams, has confirmed Wallis' existence. 198

In his *REPORT ON COMMUNION*, Ed Conroy - who seems to have become a participant in, and not merely an observer of, the phenomenon - describes harassment by helicopters, which as we have already noted, seems to be quite a common occurrence in abductee situations. 199 Researchers blithely assume that these incidents represent governmental attempts to spy on UFO percipients. But this assertion is ridiculous. Helicopters are extremely expensive to operate, and the engines of espionage have perfected numerous alternative methods to gather information. After all, we now have a fairly extensive bibliography of FBI, CIA, and military efforts to spy on numerous movements favoring domestic social change. Why have no veterans of *CHAOS* or *COINTELPRO* (either victim or victimizer) spoken of helicopters? Obviously the choppers serve some other purpose beyond mere surveillance. One possibility might be the propagation of electromagnetic waves

KILL SWITCH

which might affect the perceptions/behaviors of an implanted individual. (Indeed, I have heard rumors of helicopters being used in electronic “crowd control” operations in Vietnam and elsewhere; alas, the information is far from hard.)

Contactee Eldon Kerfoot has written of his suspicions that human manipulators, not aliens, may be the ultimate puppeteers engineering his experiences. He describes a sudden compulsion to kill a fellow veteran of the Korean conflict - a man Kerfoot had no logical reason to distrust or dislike, yet whom he “sensed” to have been a traitor to his country. Fortunately, the assassination never materialized.²⁰⁰ But the situation exactly parallels incidents described in released ARTICHOKE documents concerning the remote hypnotic induction of anti-social behavior.

One last speculation

Renato Vesco's INTERCEPT BUT DON'T SHOOT²⁰¹ outlines a fascinating scenario for the “secret weapon” hypothesis of UFOs. Vesco points out that if these devices are one day to be used in a superpower conflict, the attacking power would be well-served by the myth of the UFO as an extraterrestrial craft, for the besieged nation would not know the true nature of its opponent. Perhaps, then, one purpose of the UFO abductions is to engender and maintain the legend of the little grey aliens. For the hidden manipulators, the abductions could be, in and of themselves, a propaganda coup.

Final Thoughts

I do not insist dogmatically on the scenario that I have outlined. I do not wish to dissuade abduction researchers from exploring other avenues - indeed, I strongly encourage such work to continue. Nor can I easily account for some aspects of the abduction narratives - for example, any suggestions I could offer concerning the reports of genetic experimentation would be extremely speculative.

But I do insist on a fair hearing of this hypothesis. Criticism is encouraged; that which does not destroy my thesis will make it stronger. I ask only that my critics refrain from intellectual laziness; mere differences in world-view do not constitute a valid attack. God is found in the details.

I recognize the dangers inherent in making this thesis public. New and distressing abductee confabulations may result. I would prefer that the audience for this paper be restricted to abduction researchers, not victims, who might be unduly influenced. However, in a society that prides itself on ostensibly free press, such restrictions are unthinkable. Therefore, I can only beg any abduction victims who might read this paper to attempt a superhuman objectivity. The thesis I have outlined is promising, and (should trepanation ever provide us with an example of an actual abductee implant) susceptible of proof. But mine is not the only hypothesis. The abductee's unrewarding task is to report what he or she has experienced as truthfully as possible, untainted by outside speculation.

Whether or not future investigation proves UFO abductions to be a product of mind control experimentation, I feel that this paper has, at least, provided evidence of a serious danger facing those who hold fast to the ideals of individual freedom. We cannot long ignore this menace.

A spectre haunts the democratic nations - the spectre of technofascism. All the powers of the espionage empire and the scientific establishment have entered into an unholy alliance to evoke this spectre: Psychiatrist and spy, Dulles and Delgado, microwave specialists and clandestine operators.

KILL SWITCH

A mind is a terrible thing to waste - and a worse thing to commandeer.

Endnotes

1. Budd Hopkins, *MISSING TIME* (New York: Richard Marek Publishers, 1981) and *INTRUDERS* (New York: Random House, 1987).
2. Whitley Strieber, *COMMUNION* (New York: Beech Tree Books, 1987).
3. Cannon, "Psychiatric Abuse of UFO Witness," *UFO magazine*, vol. 3, no. 5 (December, 1988)
4. Philip Klass, *UFO ABDUCTIONS: A DANGEROUS GAME* (Buffalo: Prometheus Books, 1988). Klass makes some sharp observations, which are undercut by his refusal to interview abductees directly. The work has no footnotes and depends heavily on the work of Dr. Martin Orne - of whom more anon.
5. See bibliography.
6. New York: Bantam Books, 1979.
7. See generally *PROJECT MKULTRA, THE CIA'S PROGRAM OF RESEARCH IN BEHAVIOR MODIFICATION*, joint hearing before the Select Committee on Health and Scientific Research of the Committee on Human Resources, United States Senate (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1977).
8. Robert Eringer, "Secret Agent Man," *ROLLING STONE*, 1985.
9. John Marks interview with Victor Marchetti (Marks files, available at the National Security Archives, Washington, D.C.).
10. In an interview with John Marks, hypnosis expert Milton Kline, a veteran of clandestine experimentation in this field, averred that his work for the government continued. Since the interview took place in 1977, years after the CIA allegedly halted mind control research, we must conclude either that the CIA lied, or that another agency continued the work. In another interview with Marks, former Air Force-CIA liaison L. Fletcher Prouty confirmed that the Department of Defense ran studies either in conjunction with or parallel to those operated by the CIA. (Marks files.)
11. Estabrooks, *HYPNOSIS* (New York: E.P. Dutton & Co., Inc., 1957 [revised edition]), 13-14.
12. A copy of this letter can be found in the Marks files.
13. Estabrooks attracted an eclectic group of friends, including J. Edgar Hoover and Alan Watts.
14. Interview with daughter Doreen Estabrooks, Marks files, Washington, D.C.
15. Martin A. Lee and Bruce Shlain, *ACID DREAMS* (New York: Grove Press, 1985) 3-4; Marks, *THE SEARCH FOR "THE MANCHURIAN CANDIDATE"*, 6-8
16. Marks, *ibid.* 4-6.
17. Edward Hunter, *BRAINWASHING IN RED CHINA* (New York: Vanguard Press, 1951.). Hunter invented the term "brainwashing" in a September 24, 1950 Miami *NEWS* article.
18. "Japan's Germ Warfare Experiments," *THE GLOBE AND MAIL* (Toronto), May 19, 1982.
19. Walter Bowart, *OPERATION MIND CONTROL* (New York: Dell, 1978), 191-2, quoting Warren Commission documents. We cannot fairly derive from this statement a sanguine

KILL SWITCH

attitude about PRESENT Soviet capabilities; in this field, even outdated technology suffices for mischief.

20. Marks, *THE SEARCH FOR "THE MANCHURIAN CANDIDATE"*, 60-61. A folk etymology has it that the "MK" of MKULTRA stands for "Mind Kontrol." According to Marks, TSS prefixed the cryptonyms of all its projects with these initials. Note, though, that MKULTRA was preceded by a still-mysterious TSS program called QKHILLTOP.

21. *Ibid.*, 224-229. Seven MKULTRA subprojects were continued, under TSS supervision, as MKSEARCH. This project ended in 1972. CIA apologists often proclaim that "brain-washing" research ceased in either 1962 or 1972; these blandishments refer to the TSS projects, not to the ORD work, which remains *TERRA INCOGNITA* for independent researchers. Marks discovered that the ORD research was so voluminous that retrieving documents via FOIA would have proven unthinkably expensive.

22. For a description of the research into parapsychology, see Ronald M. McRae's *MIND WARS* (New York: St. Martin's Press, 1984). The best book available on a subject which awaits a truly authoritative text.

23. Abduction researcher and hypnotherapist Miranda Park, of Lancaster, California, reports that she has viewed such anomalies in abductee MRI scans. See also Whitley Strieber, *TRANSFORMATION* (New York: Beech Tree Books, 1988) 246-247. At this writing, both Strieber and Hopkins report initially promising results in their efforts to document the presence of these "extras" in abductees.

24. Allegedly, the experiment took place in 1964. However, in *WERE WE CONTROLLED?* (New Hyde Park, NY: University Books, 1967), the pseudonymous "Lincoln Lawrence" makes an interesting argument (on page 36) that the demonstration took place some years earlier.

25. New York: Harper and Row, 1969. Much of Delgado's work was funded by the Office of Naval Intelligence, a common conduit for CIA funds during the 1950s and '60s. (Gordon Thomas' *JOURNEY INTO MADNESS* (New York: Bantam, 1989) misleadingly implies that CIA interest in Delgado's work began in 1972.)

26. J.M.R. Delgado. "Intracerebral Radio Stimulation and Recording in Completely Free Patients," *PSYCHOTECHNOLOGY* (Robert L. Schwitzgebel and Ralph K. Schwitzgebel, editors; New York: Holt, Rinehart and Winston, 1973): 195.

27. David Krech, "Controlling the Mind Controllers," *THINK* 32 (July-August), 1966.

28. Delgado, *PHYSICAL CONTROL OF THE MIND*

29. Delgado, "Intracerebral Radio Stimulation and Recording in Completely Free Patients," 195.

30. Note, for example, Charles Hickson's account of the Pascagoula Incident. Charles Hickson and William Mendez, *UFO CONTACT AT PASCOGOULA* (Tuscon: Wendelle C. Stevens, 1983).

31. John Ranleigh, *THE AGENCY* (New York: Simon and Shuster, 1986): 208. Marchetti casts this story in the form of an amusing anecdote: After much time and expense, a cat was suitably trained and prepared - only, on its first assignment, to be run over by a taxi. Marchetti neglects to point out that nothing stopped the Agency from getting another cat. Or from using a human being.

32. Of course, this suggestion raises the knotty question of whether the abductees

KILL SWITCH

suffer from a form of schizophrenia, which may also be characterized by “voices.” I refer the reader to the work of Hopkins, Strieber, Thomas Bullard, and others who have described the difficulties of ascribing all abductions to psychotic states.

33. Alan W. Scheflin and Edward M. Opton, Jr., *THE MIND MANIPULATORS* (London: Paddington Press, 1978), 347.

34. Thomas, *JOURNEY INTO MADNESS*, 276.

35. James Olds, “Hypothalamic Substrates of Reward,” *PHYSIOLOGICAL REVIEWS*, 1962, 42:554; “Emotional Centers in the Brain,” *SCIENCE JOURNAL*, 1967, 3 (5).

36. Vernon Mark and Frank Ervin, *VIOLENCE AND THE BRAIN* (New York: Harper and Row, 1970), chapter 12, excerpted in *INDIVIDUAL RIGHTS AND THE FEDERAL ROLE IN BEHAVIOR MODIFICATION*, prepared by the Staff of the Subcommittee on Constitutional Rights of the Committee of the Judiciary, United States Senate (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1974).

37. John Lilly, *THE SCIENTIST* (Berkeley, Ronin Publishing, 1988 [revised edition]), 90. Monkeys allowed to stimulate themselves continually via ESB brought themselves to orgasm once every three minutes, sixteen hours a day. Scientific gatherings throughout the world saw motion pictures of these experiments, which surely made spectacular cinema.

38. Scheflin and Opton, *THE MIND MANIPULATORS*, 336-337. Heath even monitored his patient’s brain responses during the subject’s first heterosexual encounter. Such is the nature of the brave new world before us.

39. Robert L. Schwitzgebel and Richard M. Bird, “Sociotechnical Design Factors in Remote Instrumentation with Humans in Natural Environments,”

40. Thomas, *JOURNEY INTO MADNESS*, 277. In the *BEHAVIOR RESEARCH METHODS AND INSTRUMENTATION* article referenced above, Schwitzgebel details how the radio signals may be fed into a telephone via a modem and thus analyzed by a computer anywhere in the world.

41. Scheflin and Opton, *THE MIND MANIPULATORS*, 347-349.

42. Louis Tackwood and the Citizen’s Research and Investigation Committee, *THE GLASS HOUSE TAPES* (New York: Avon, 1973), 226.

43. Perry London, *BEHAVIOR CONTROL* (New York: Harper and Row, 1969), 145

44. Scheflin and Opton, *THE MIND MANIPULATORS*, 351-353; Tackwood, *THE GLASS HOUSE TAPES*, 228.

45. “Beepers in kids’ heads could stop abductors,” Las Vegas *SUN*, Oct. 27, 1987.

46. Lilly, *THE SCIENTIST*, 91.

47. Marks, *THE SEARCH FOR “THE MANCHURIAN CANDIDATE”*, 151-154.

48. Interestingly, Lilly has come out of the closet as a sort of proto-Strieber; *THE SCIENTIST* recounts his close interaction with alien (though not necessarily extraterrestrial) forces which he labels “solid state entities.”

49. The story of Deep Trance, an MKULTRA “insider” who provided invaluable information, is somewhat involved. I do not know who Trance is/was and Marks may not know either. He contacted Trance via the writer of an article published shortly before research on *THE SEARCH FOR “THE MANCHURIAN CANDIDATE”* began, addressing his informant “Dear Source whose anonymity I respect.” I respect it too - hence my reticence to name the afore-

KILL SWITCH

mentioned article, which may mark a trail to Trance. The fact that I have not followed this trail would not prevent others from doing so.

50. London, BEHAVIOR CONTROL, 139.

51. See generally, UFO magazine, Vol. 4, No. 2; especially the interesting contribution by Whitley Strieber.

52. Lawrence, WERE WE CONTROLLED?, 36-37; Anita Gregory, "Introduction to Leonid L. Vasilev's EXPERIMENTS IN DISTANT INFLUENCE," PSYCHIC WARFARE: FACT OR FICTION (editor: John White) (Nottinghamshire: Aquarian, 1988) 34-57.

53. Lawrence, WERE WE CONTROLLED?, 38.

54. Bowart, OPERATION MIND CONTROL, 261-264.

55. Ibid., 263.

56. Lawrence, WERE WE CONTROLLED?, 52.

57. HUMAN DRUG TESTING BY THE CIA, 202.

58. Note especially the Supreme Court's decision in CENTRAL INTELLIGENCE AGENCY ET AL. V. SIMS, ET AL. (No. 83-1075; decided April 16, 1986). The egregious and dangerous majority opinion in this case held that disclosure of the names of scientists and institutions involved in MKULTRA posed an "unacceptable risk of revealing 'intelligence sources.' The decisions of the [CIA] Director, who must of course be familiar with 'the whole picture,' as judges are not, are worthy of great deference...it is conceivable that the mere explanation of why information must be withheld can convey valuable information to a foreign intelligence agency." How do we square this continuing need for secrecy with the CIA's protestations that MKULTRA achieved little success, that the studies were conducted within the Nuremberg statutes governing medical experiments, and that the research was made available in the open literature?

59. Letter, P.A. Lindstrom to Robert Naeslund, July 27, 1983; copy available from Martti Koski, Kiilinpellontie 2, 21290 Rusko, Finland. Lindstrom writes that he fully agrees with Lincoln Lawrence, author of WERE WE CONTROLLED?

60. Bowart, OPERATION MIND CONTROL, 265. I have attempted without success to contact Dr. Lindstrom.

61. Ibid., 233-249. This interview was repinted without attribution in a bizarre compendium of UFO rumors called THE MATRIX, compiled by "Valdamar Valerian" (actually John Grace, allegedly a Captain working for Air Force intelligence).

62. Robert Anton Wilson, "Adventures with Head Hardware," MAGICAL BLEND, 23 [of course], July 1989.

63. Michael Hutchison, MEGA BRAIN (New York: Ballantine, 1986); Gerald Oster, "Auditory Beats in the Brain," SCIENTIFIC AMERICAN, September, 1973.

64. Marilyn Ferguson, THE BRAIN REVOLUTION (New York: Taplinger, 1973), 90.

65. Ibid., 91-92. The presence of delta in a waking subject can indicate pathology.

66. Bio-Pacer promotional and price sheet, available from Lindemann Laboratories, 3463 State Street, #264, Santa Barbara, CA 93105.

67. Hutchison, MEGA BRAIN, 117-118. Compare Light's observations about "the grant game" to Sid Gottlieb's protestations that nearly all "mind control" research was openly published.

KILL SWITCH

68. Thomas Martinez and John Gunther, **THE BROTHERHOOD OF MURDER** (New York: McGraw-Hill, 1988), 230.

69. Interview, Sandy Monroe of the Los Angeles office of the Christic Institute.

70. See generally Paul Brodeur, **THE ZAPPING OF AMERICA** (Toronto, George J. MacLeod, 1977).

71. Until recently, the American Embassy was on a street named after the composer.

72. It was finally determined that the microwaves were used to receive transmissions from bugs planted within the embassy. DARPA director George H. Heimeier went on record stating that PANDORA was never designed to study "microwaves as a surveillance tool." See Anne Keeler, "Remote Mind Control Technology," **FULL DISCLOSURE #15**. I would note that the Soviet embassy was "bugged and waved" in Canada during the 1950s, and according to the Los Angeles **TIMES** (June 5, 1989), the Soviet embassy in Britain had been similarly affected.

73. Ronald I. Adams R.A. Williams, **BIOLOGICAL EFFECTS OF ELECTROMAGNETIC RADIATION (RADIOWAVES AND MICROWAVES) EURASIAN COMMUNIST COUNTRIES**, (Defense Intelligence Agency, March 1976.) Brodeur notes that much of the work ascribed to the Soviets in this report was actually first accomplished by scientists in the United States. Keeler argues that this report constitutes an example of "mirror imaging" - i.e., parading domestic advances as a foreign threat, the better to pry funding from a suitably-fearful Congress.

74. Keeler, "Remote Mind Control Technology."

75. R.J. MacGregor, "A Brief Survey of Literature Relating to Influence of Low Intensity Microwaves on Nervous Function" (Santa Monica: RAND Corporation, 1970).

76. Keeler, "Remote Mind Control Technology."

77. Larry Collins, "Mind Control," **PLAYBOY**, January 1990.

78. Allan H. Frey, "Behavioral Effects of Electromagnetic Energy," **SYMPOSIUM ON BIOLOGICAL EFFECTS AND MEASUREMENTS OF RADIO FREQUENCIES/MICRO- WAVES**, DeWitt G. Hazzard, editor (U.S. Department of Health, Education and Welfare, 1977).

79. Quoted in **THE APPLICATION OF TESLA'S TECHNOLOGY IN TODAY'S WORLD** (Montreal: Lafferty, Hardwood & Partners, Ltd., 1978).

80. Keeler, "Remote Mind Control Technology."

81. L. George Lawrence, "Electronics and Brain Control," **POPULAR ELECTRONICS**, July 1973.

82. Susan Schiefelbein, "The Invisible Threat," **SATURDAY REVIEW**, September 15, 1979.

83. E. Preston, "Studies on the Nervous System, Cardiovascular Function and Thermoregulation," **BIOLOGICAL EFFECTS OF RADIO FREQUENCY AND MICROWAVE RADIATION**, edited by H.M. Assenheim (Ottawa, Canada: National Research Council of Canada, 1979), 138-141.

84. Robert O. Becker, **THE BODY ELECTRIC** (New York: William Morrow, 1985) 318-319.

85. Ibid.

86. Ibid., 321.

KILL SWITCH

87. See Bowart's OPERATION MIND CONTROL, page 218, for an interesting example of this "rationalization" process at work in the case of Sirhan Sirhan, who was convicted for the assassination of Robert F. Kennedy. In prison, Sirhan was hypnotized by Dr. Bernard Diamond, who instructed Sirhan to climb the bars of his cage like a monkey. He did so. After the trance was removed, Sirhan was shown tapes of his actions; he insisted that he "acted like a monkey" of his own free will - he claimed he wanted the exercise.

88. Keeler suggests that the proposal was revealed only because Schapitz' sensationalistic implications may have worked to his discredit - and therefore hide - the REAL research. Personally, I don't accept this argument, but I respect Keeler's instincts enough to repeat her caveat here.

89. Margaret Cheney's TESLA: A MAN OUT OF TIME (New York: Dell, 1981), the most reliable book in the sea of wild speculation surrounding this extraordinary scientist, confirms Tesla's early work with the psychological effects of electromagnetic radiation. See especially pages 101-104; note also the afterword, in which we learn that certain government agencies have kept important research by Tesla hidden from the general public.

90. Noted in Lawrence, WERE WE CONTROLLED?, 29.

91. Particularly one Thomas Bearden of Huntsville, Alabama; I have in my possession a document written by Bearden associate Andrew Michrowski which identifies Bearden as an intelligence agent for an undisclosed agency.

92. Kathleen McAuliffe, "The Mind Fields," OMNI magazine, February 1985.

93. May 5, 1985.

94. I refer to an individual who later wrote a very clear-headed and thoughtful letter to Dr. Paul Lowinger, who has graciously made his files available to me. For now, I feel compelled to withhold this person's name.

95. Cameron became president of the American Psychiatric Association, the Canadian Psychiatric Association, and the World Association of Psychiatrists, He previously sat on the Nueremberg panel, helping to draw up the statutes governing ethical medical behavior!

96. In particular, Opton and Schefflin's overview, though excellent in scope and detail, continually seeks reassuring interpretations of evidence which points toward more distressing conclusions.

97. Martin T. Orne, "Can a hypnotized subject be compelled to carry out otherwise unacceptable behavior?" INTERNATIONAL JOURNAL OF CLINICAL AND EXPERIMENTAL HYPNOSIS, 1972, Vol. 20, 101-117.

98. Marks mentions, in a letter to Orne, the latter's claim to have been an unwitting participant in subproject 84. Yet the papers released concerning subproject 84 clearly establish the Agency's willingness to put Orne in the know; Orne later admitted to Marks that he was made aware of his CIA sponsorship (Marks, THE SEARCH FOR "THE MANCHURIAN CANDIDATE", 172-173). In an interview with Marks, Orne discounted the story of Candy Jones (which we shall recount later) by insisting that if such an experiment had occurred "someone in some agency would have come to me." Why would they come to him about a super-secret project, unless Orne had a high security clearance and worked extensively with intelligence agencies? Note also that Orne conducted extensive studies for the Office of Naval Research from June 1, 1968 to May 31, 1971. He has also been funded by DARPA.

KILL SWITCH

Moreover, I consider noteworthy the fact that Orne somehow became president of the Society for Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis despite the fact that the organization had decided not to have a president. (This fact was related to Marks by a prominent hypnosis specialist in an off-the-record interview that I probably wasn't supposed to see.)

99. The story has been told many times. See Turner and Christian's *THE KILLING OF ROBERT F. KENNEDY*, 207-208; also Peter J. Reiter, *ANTISOCIAL OR CRIMINAL ACTS AND HYPNOSIS* (Springfield, Illinois: Charles C. Thomas, 1958).

100. John G. Watkins, "Antisocial behavior under hypnosis: Possible or impossible?" *INTERNATIONAL JOURNAL FOR CLINICAL AND EXPERIMENTAL HYPNOSIS*, 1972, Vol. 20, 95-100.

101. Milton H. Erickson, "An experimental investigation of the possible anti-social use of hypnosis," *PSYCHIATRY*, 1939, vol. 2. Erickson argues that if a hypnotist has convinced his subject to misperceive reality, then resulting actions cannot be considered "anti-social," for the actions would be acceptable within the subject's internal reality construct. This argument strikes me as semantic quibbling.

102. See generally Flo Conway and Jim Seigelman, *SNAPPING* (New York: Lippincott, 1978).

103. Lee and Schlain, *ACID DREAMS*, 8-9.

104. John Marks interview with Victor Marchetti, December 19, 1977 (Marks files).

105. Martin T. Orne, "On the Mechanisms of Posthypnotic Amnesia," *THE INTERNATIONAL JOURNAL OF CLINICAL AND EXPERIMENTAL HYPNOSIS*, 1966, vol. 14, 121-134. Orne's work with post-hypnotic amnesia was funded by NIMH, the Air Force Office of Scientific Research, and the Office of Naval Research. I should like to hear what innocent explanation, if any, the Air Force has to offer to explain their interest in post-hypnotic amnesia.

106. Bowart, *OPERATION MIND CONTROL*, 242-243.

107. Obviously Allan Dulles. This may have been a hypnotically-induced delusion; on the other hand, Dulles' legendary sexual rapacity makes this claim rather less unlikely than one might first assume.

108. Always the best indicator of whether or not hypnosis is genuine; I can't understand why Orne didn't use this test in the Blanche case.

109. Herbert Spiegel, "Hypnosis and evidence: Help or hindrance," *ANN. N.Y. ACAD. SCI.*; 1980, 347, 73-85.

110. See, for example, Kroger, *HYPNOSIS AND BEHAVIOR MODIFICATION*, 21-22

111. See especially Klass, *UFO ABDUCTIONS: A DANGEROUS GAME*, 60-61. Orne, interviewed here, makes reference to the work summarized in his article "The use and misuse of hypnosis in court" (*INTERNATIONAL JOURNAL OF CLINICAL HYPNOSIS*, 1979, vol. 27, 311-341.)

112. Klass argues that ufologists, in conducting hypnotic regression sessions, inadvertently cue their subjects. A close reading of his text reveals that he never proves or claims that such "cues" have taken place in any individual instance; he simply believes that cueing MIGHT have occurred. Had Klass been more willing to deal with abductees directly, he might have found evidence of cause and effect; as it stands, his argument really amounts to no more than a suggestion. For all that, I find his ideas regarding the running of "clean" hypnotic regression sessions potentially valuable.

KILL SWITCH

113. Marks, *THE SEARCH FOR "THE MANCHURIAN CANDIDATE"*, 34-37.

114. Donald Bain, *THE CONTROL OF CANDY JONES* (Chicago, Playboy Press, 1976).

115. The use of hypnotized couriers in warfare goes back to the 19th century.

116. Estabrooks, *HYPNOTISM*, 193-214.

117. John Marks interview with Milton Kline, December 22, 1977 (Marks files). In another interview, Professor Clare Young (a colleague of Estabrooks' at Colgate University) confirmed that Estabrooks' hypnosis work for the government has never been published.

118. Or could her marriage have been part of the program? "Long John," as he was popularly known, was famous in UFO circles, and had provided a forum for such early-day contactees as Howard Menger. He also knew Jackie Gleason, a prominent (if unlikely) name in the "crashed disc" rumor vaults. Could Candy have been assigned to discover what Nebel knew?

119. Marks files. John Marks did excellent work on the Candy Jones story; he erred - almost unforgivably - on the side of conservatism when he refused to include information about this incident in his book. I know the name of the institute involved; however, since Candy saw fit to keep this aspect of her story secret (probably for sound legal reasons), I shall follow her lead.

120. Schefflin and Opton, *THE MIND MANIPULATORS*, 446-447.

121. Interviews, Marks files. One of Marks' informants offered the interesting speculation that Candy's torture sessions were not conducted in the field, but in the lab - her entire mission might have been a hypno-programmed fantasy.

122. The information about Candy's CIA files stems from a telephone interview with Candy Jones. A problem looms here: CIA cover stories unravel like the skin of an onion; once you remove the outer layer, the next lie is revealed. In the case of Candy Jones, the substrata of buncombe involves allegations that she **WILLINGLY** complied with the CIA, and used Jensen's hypnosis experiments as a rationalization for her compliance. Such is the explanation offered by certain of Marks' informants; alas, Opton and Schefflin seem to have bought this line. Anyone familiar with the vile acts of self-degradation to which Candy's programmers subjected her will laugh this story out of court. No one, short of a severely psychotic masochist, would willingly undergo what she went through.

123. Marks files.

124. William Kroger, *CLINICAL AND EXPERIMENTAL HYPNOSIS* (Philadelphia: Lippincott, 1963), 299.

125. Recently, ufologist Jim Moseley, an acquaintance of Candy's, has claimed that an unidentified source on Nebel's "inner circle" once, off-the-record, pronounced Candy's story "a crock." This assertion deserves careful and respectful consideration. Still, Moseley won't identify his source, and we have no way of telling if this insider spoke from instinct or certain knowledge, or indeed, what he really meant. Did he feel Candy was fantasizing or fibbing? If the former, why did her hallucinations match details of **MKULTRA** released only after publication of her book? If the latter, how are we to explain the many hypnotic regression tapes, at least some of which were made available to outside investigators? (Fairly elaborate, for a hoax.) In any case, how could Candy have known the fact (confirmed by Marks' associates) that Kroger taught "Jensen" at a certain West-coast institute? Why, if the story was "a crock," would Candy risk libel suits by naming - to associates and investiga-

KILL SWITCH

tors, if not to the general public - real-life hypnotherapists? All in all, I would suggest that Moseley's "insider" was speaking glibly, and did not know the true facts.

126. Philadelphia, Lippincott, 1976.

127. Ibid., 415.

128. Similar paranoid outbreaks led to the dissolution of Dr. Richard Neal's UFO abductee group in Los Angeles, according to a phone interview I had with Dr. Neal.

129. Affidavit of Dr. Simpson-Kallas in the case of Sirhan-Sirhan, 1973; see Bowart, OPERATION MIND CONTROL, 225.

130. All true MPs have experienced some form of abuse or trauma, psychological or physical, during childhood.

131. One was ritually abused in an occult setting. If I were a "spy-chiatrist" scouting potential fodder for mind control experiments, I would seek out abused children from military families. (A military background would ensure that the "right" doctor gets access to the child.) Abduction researchers should look for such a pattern.

132. I refer here to the vast upsurge in alien abductions which took place that year; see generally Kevin Randle, THE OCTOBER SCENARIO (Middle Coast, 1988). Of course, abductions (or, according to my hypothesis, disguised mind control operations) occurred previous to this year.

133. John Marks interview with Milton Kline, December 22, 1977 (Marks files).

134. Brenda Butler ET AL., SKY CRASH, expanded edition (London: Grafton Books, 1986), 305-321, 354-355.

135. Telephone interview with Nancy Wright.

136. Telephone interview with Miranda Parks.

137. William Moore, "UFOs and the U.S. Government," FOCUS, vol. 4, June 30, 1989. Moore's role in the affair strikes me as highly questionable, even scandalous - although at least here we have one instance of direct and irrefutable "insider" testimony of government harassment.

138. Some have also raised questions about his psychiatric treatment of Oswald assassin Jack Ruby. I find it odd that a CIA mind control veteran - who did NOT reside or practice in Dallas - should have been assigned to the Ruby case.

139. Samiel Chavkin, THE MIND STEALERS (New York: Houghton Mifflin, 1978), 96-107.

140. Raymond Fowler, THE ANDREASSON AFFAIR (New York: Prentice Hall, 1979).

141. New York: Warner Books, 1989; 198-202.

142. Ruth Montgomery, ALIENS AMONG US (Ballantine, 1985), 49. My article "Psychiatric Abuse of UFO Witness," referred to earlier, also documents this phenomenon.

143. Chung-Kwang Chou and Arthur W. Guy, "Quantization of Microwave Biological Effects," SYMPOSIUM OF BIOLOGICAL EFFECTS AND MEASUREMENT OF RADIO FREQUENCY/MICROWAVES, edited by Dewitt G. Hazzard (U.S. Department of Health, Education and Welfare, 1977).

144. MIAMI HERALD, May 28, 1984 and June 6, 1984; NATIONAL EXAMINER, vol. 22, no. 18, April 30, 1985. Although the EXAMINER is a supermarket tabloid, and therefore a questionable source, this periodical has rendered researchers the service of printing the

KILL SWITCH

X-ray of Petit's brain, showing the implant.

145. Los Angeles TIMES, March 28, 1988.

146. Raymond Fowler, THE ANDREASSON AFFAIR, PHASE TWO (Reward, 1982). This book includes rare photographs of the unmarked helicopters which have plagued this abduction victim and her family.

147. A mutual friend described for me an incident in which the former SEAL, mistakenly perceiving a threat, almost instantly felled, and nearly killed, a man twice his size. Whatever the truth of my informant's other statements, he certainly has received advanced combat training.

148. Fenton Bresler, WHO KILLED JOHN LENNON? (New York: St. Martin's Press, 1989), 45-46.

149. Bowart, OPERATION MIND CONTROL, 27-42.

150. Denise Winn, THE MANIPULATED MIND (London, Octagon Press, 1983), 72-73; Bresler, WHO KILLED JOHN LENNON?, 41; see generally: Peter Watson, WAR ON THE MIND (London: Hutchison, 1978) (Watson broke the story on Narut for the London TIMES).

151. Larry Collins, "Mind Control," PLAYBOY, January 1990.

152. John Marks interview with Milton Kline, December 22, 1977 (Marks files).

153. Richard A. Gabriel, NO MORE HEROES (New York: Hill and Wang, 1987), 124.

154. Ibid., 150-151.

155. See generally: Mark Lane, CONVERSATIONS WITH AMERICANS (Simon and Shuster, 1970); A.J. Langguth, HIDDEN TERRORS (New York: Pantheon, 1978).

156. John G. Fuller, THE INTERRUPTED JOURNEY (New York: Dell, 1966).

157. This detail plays a part in other abductions - for example, it crops up in the Betty Andreasson Luca case. See Raymond Fowler, THE ANDREASSON AFFAIR (New York: Bantam, 1980), 50-51.

158. Stanton Friedman, for example; the reader is referred to his 1988 Whole Life Expo lecture, "UFOs: A Cosmic Watergate."

159. THE BODY ELECTRIC, 196-202.

160. The Fish map has received wide discussion; for a representative sampling, the reader is directed to the aforementioned Friedman lecture (note 158); Terence Dickenson, "The Zeti Reticuli Incident," ASTRONOMY, December, 1974; Klass, UFO ABDUCTIONS: A DANGEROUS GAME, 20-23; and John Rimmer, THE EVIDENCE FOR ALIEN ABDUCTIONS (Weillingborough: Aquarian, 1984), 88-92. Incidentally, Klass has proposed to Friedman a test regarding the ability to recall such material accurately under hypnotic regression; Friedman, for reasons best known to himself, declined the offer to participate.

161. Jacques Vallee, DIMENSIONS (Chicago: Contemporary, 1988), 266.

162. See Rimmer, THE EVIDENCE FOR ALIEN ABDUCTIONS, 91-92. None of this is meant to denigrate Marjorie Fish, whose work has received universal praise.

163. Fuller, THE INTERRUPTED JOURNEY, 18-19.

164. Athan G. Theoharis and John Stuart Cox, THE BOSS: J. EDGAR HOOVER AND THE GREAT AMERICAN INQUISITION (Philadelphia: Temple University Press, 1978), 325; Chip Berlet, "The Hunt for the Red Menace," COVERT ACTION INFORMATION BULLETIN, no. 31 (winter, 1989); J. Edgar Hoover, COINTELPRO (memo), March 4, 1968.

KILL SWITCH

165. For example, Delgado's work pre-dates the Hill incident. Moreover, one of the few pages released on MKULTRA subproject 119 concerns "a critical review of the literature and scientific developments related to the recording, analysis and interpretation of bio-electric signals from the human organism, and activation of human behavior by remote means." The review took place in 1960-61. Presumably, the CIA wanted to DO something with the information so derived.

166. "UFO Abductions Workshop," Whole Life Expo, March, 1988.

167. Ludwig Mayer, DIE TECHNIC DER HYPNOSE (Munich: J.H. Lehmanns Verlag, 1953), 225; quoted in: Heinz E. Hammerschlag (translation: John Cohen) HYPNOTISM AND CRIME (Hollywood: Wilshire Book Company, 1957), 24-25.

168. Numerous articles discuss this possibility; see, for example, William C. Coe ET AL. "An Approach Toward Isolating Factors that Influence Antisocial Conduct in Hypnosis," THE INTERNATIONAL JOURNAL OF CLINICAL AND EXPERIMENTAL HYPNOSIS, 1972, vol XX, no. 2, 118-131, as well as other reports in that issue. The difference between the laboratory and the "field" settings may account for the success of Mayer's experiment and the apparent failure of the "aliens."

169. For a description of a quite similar experiment conducted under CIA auspices in 1954, see "CIA able to control minds by hypnosis, data shows," THE WASHINGTON POST, February 19, 1978.

170. Abductee interview, "Veronica." The reader will, I hope, forgive my use of a pseudonym here. For the most part, I hope to deal in this work with published cases. Suffice it to say, Veronica's testimony proved fascinating, troubling, convoluted, problematical; in spite of all the questions raised by this case, I still believe it to have substantial bearing on my thesis. The reader will forgive me for severing relations with this abductee before completing an investigation; she keeps a mini-armory next to her bed.

171. Abductee interview, "Veronica," At one point, she ran an informal abductee/contactee group; as a result, she was able to describe many other cases to me.

172. One ARTICHOKE document explicitly details a failed attempt to use hypnosis to induce the assassination of a foreign leader. The document is undated; the experiment took place January 8-January 15, 1954. Document reproduced in CIA PAPERS, vol. 1 (Ann Arbor, MI: Capitol Information Associates, 1986), 39-41.

173. John Marks interview of Prof. Jack Tracktir (Marks files).

174. Jenny Randles, ABDUCTIONS (London: Robert Hale, 1988), 52-53.

175. As in, for example, the Palle Hardrup affair.

176. Private correspondence, Robert Durant to the author.

177. Abductee interview, "Polly." I won't give the facial details here; suffice it to say that this abductor, like Margary's (noted earlier), has something of the smell of greasepaint about him.

178. The base is mentioned in Ann Druffel's and D. Scott Rogo's THE TUJUNGA CANYON CONTACTS (New York: Signet, 1989) [expanded edition], 157.

179. On the other hand, Armstrong asks us to accept his own channelled material, so he would have an awkward time should he choose to challenge the "psychic impressions" of others.

180. Jacques Vallee, MESSENGERS OF DECEPTION (Berkeley: And/Or Press, 1979),

KILL SWITCH

192-193.

181. Curtis G. Fuller (editor), *PROCEEDINGS OF THE FIRST INTERNATIONAL UFO CONGRESS* (New York: Warner Books, 1980), 307.

182. For information of Pelley, see John Roy Carlson, *UNDER COVER* (New York: Dutton, 1943).

183. Gerald B. Bryan, *PSYCHIC DICTATORSHIP IN AMERICA* (Los Angeles: Truth Research, 1940). An essential book-length expose of Ballardism. One of Bryan's sources alleges that Ballard, before founding the I AM group, may have practiced some variety of black magic.

184. The student should carefully compare the I AM dogma with the available information on pre-Third Reich occultism; the best sources are James Webb's masterful analyses, *THE OCCULT ESTABLISHMENT* and *THE OCCULT UNDERGROUND* (La Salle, Illinois: Open Court Publishing, 1976).

185. Vallee, *MESSENGERS OF DECEPTION*, 192-194.

186. Even a cursory examination of Williamson's *SECRET OF THE ANDES* (London: Neville Superman, 1961), written under the pseudonym Brother Philip, will reveal the I AM connections.

187. Personal sources. Van Tassell's "Integration," a domed structure allegedly built under extra-terrestrial guidance (located near Twentynine Palms, California) prominently displays, to this day, key I AM artifacts

such as the portraits of Jesus and Saint Germain (commissioned by Ballard).

188. "The Afghan Arms Pipeline," *COVERT ACTION INFORMATION BULLETIN*, no. 30 (summer, 1988).

189. Telephone interview with John Judge.

190. Village of Oak Creek, Arizona: Entheos, 1989, 119. I can't recall ever encountering another book title which contained so many grammatical errors. Armstrong's accomplishment is genuinely impressive.

191. For further information on I AM, Prophet's organization, saucer cults, and other groups, see the appropriate sections of J. Gordon Melton's *ENCYCLOPEDIA OF AMERICAN RELIGION*.

192. Ruth Montgomery, *ALIENS AMONG US* (New York: Ballantine, 1985), 128-188.

193. Penny Harper, "Are Aliens Taking Over the Earth?" *WHOLE LIFE TIMES*, January 1990.

194. John Keel, *WHY UFOS: OPERATION TROJAN HORSE* (New York: Manor Books, 1970) [paperback edition], 228.

195. Hickson and Mendez, *UFO CONTACT AT PASCAGOULA*, 242.

196. Strieber, *COMMUNION*, 134; *TRANSFORMATION*, 109.

197. "Contactee: Firsthand," *UFO magazine*, vol. 4, no. 2, 1989.

198. Telephone conversation, Tom Adams.

199. Ed Conroy, *REPORT ON COMMUNION* (New York: William Morrow, 1989), 365-385.

200. "Contactee: Firsthand," *UFO magazine*, vol. 3, no. 3.

201. New York: Zebra, 1971. See especially note 2, Chap. 9.

KILL SWITCH

Selected Bibliography On Mind Control

ACID DREAMS, by Martin A. Lee and Bruce Shlain (Grove, 1985). Outstanding work on MKULTRA and drugs.

THE BODY ELECTRIC, by Robert Becker (Morrow, 1985). Important.

THE BRAIN CHANGERS, by Maya Pines (Signet, 1973). Outdated, but an excellent chapter on the stimoceiver and related technologies.

BRAIN CONTROL, by Elliot Valenstein (John Wiley and Sons, 1973). Highly conservative; outdated; still worth reading.

CIA PAPERS, compiled by Capitol Information Associates (POB 8275, Ann Arbor, Michigan, 48107). Interesting selection of MKULTRA documents.

THE CONTROL OF CANDY JONES, by Donald Bain (Playboy Press, 1976). Mandatory reading.

HUMAN DRUG TESTING BY THE CIA, hearings before the Subcommittee on Health and Scientific Research on the Committee on Human Resources, United States Senate (Government Printing Office, 1977).

HYPNOTISM, by George Estabrooks (Dutton, 1957). See especially the chapters on hypnosis in warfare and crime. Some modern experts in clinical hypnosis decry Estabrooks' work. These "experts" tend to have a history of funding by CIA cut-outs and military intelligence. I suspect they denounce Estabrooks not because his work was shoddy, but because he let the cat out of the bag.

INDIVIDUAL RIGHTS AND THE FEDERAL ROLE IN BEHAVIOR MODIFICATION, by the Staff of the Subcommittee on Constitutional Rights of the Committee of the Judiciary, United States Senate (Government Printing Office, 1974).

MEGABRAIN, by Michael Hutchison (Ballantine, 1986). The only popular book on modern mind machines.

MESSENGERS OF DECEPTION, by Jacques Vallee (And/Or, 1979). Vallee has been criticized, correctly, for including in this book invented "conversations" with a composite character he calls Major Murphy. But the section on cults in this book bears a haunting resemblance to stories I have heard in my own investigations.

THE MIND MANIPULATORS, by Opton and Schefflin (Paddington Press, 1978). Conservative, but extremely useful as a reference work.

MIND WARS, by Ronald McCrae (St. Martin's Press, 1984).

OPERATION MIND CONTROL, by Walter Bowart (Dell, 1978). The best single volume on the subject. Difficult to find; indeed, this book's rapid disappearance from bookstores and libraries has aroused the suspicions of some researchers. (Tom David Books, POB 1107, Aptos, CA 95001, carries this work.)

PHYSICAL CONTROL OF THE MIND, by Jose Delgado (Harper and Row, 1969). Outdated but still essential.

PROJECT MKULTRA, joint hearing before the Select Committee on Health and Scientific Research of the Committee on Human Resources, United States Senate (Government Printing Office, 1977).

PSYCHIC WARFARE: FACT OR FICTION? edited by John White (Aquarian, 1988). See

KILL SWITCH

especially Michael Rossman's contribution.

PSYCHOTECHNOLOGY, Robert L. Schwitzgebel and Ralph K. Schwitzgebel (Holt, Rhinehart and Winston, 1973).

THE SCIENTIST, by John Lilly (expanded edition: Ronin, 1988). Bizarre - Lilly is an ex-"brainwashing" specialist who claims to be in contact with aliens. Is he controlled or controlling?

THE SEARCH FOR "THE MANCHURIAN CANDIDATE", by John Marks (Bantam, 1978). An invaluable book. However, many people have made the mistake of assuming it tells the full story. It does not.

WERE WE CONTROLLED? by Lincoln Lawrence (University Books, 1967). Explores possible connections to the JFK assassination. Dr. Petter Lindstrom's endorsement of this work makes it mandatory reading.

WHO KILLED JOHN LENNON? by Fenton Bresler (St. Martin's Press, 1989). Interesting thesis concerning the possible use of mind control on Mark David Chapman. Better in its analysis of Chapman than in its history of mind control. In my own work, I have encountered data which may help confirm Bresler's theory.

THE ZAPPING OF AMERICA, by Paul Brodeur (MacLeod [Canadian edition], 1976). Contains a good chapter on microwave mind control technology.

LEADING SCIENTIST CONFIRMS EXISTENCE OF "THE CONTROLLERS"

Human beings are simply pawns in the games of alien minds that control our every move. All our lives and the complete existence of the universe is at the whim of these creatures who hold fantastic mental powers over us.

So says Fred Hoyle, the famed British astrophysicist and author. "They are everywhere," he said at a special press conference held in London. "In the sky, on the seas and on the earth. They have been there since the beginning of time and they control nearly everything we do."

Hoyle explained the many reasons why the majority of people have no idea of this. "Panic is the major reason that no general announcement was ever made," he said. "But there are some books out concerning the theory."

But the books have really only circulated in scientific circles and academic markets. The theory and arguments concerning it are much too technical for non-scientists. "They seem to be totally free of any physical restrictions, such as physical bodies. They are like pure thought and can appear anywhere and everywhere they please at any given moment."

Hoyle then explained that they (the aliens) had the power not only to be anywhere at any time they pleased, but that they could also appear as anything they wished. "They can take any shape or form. They can appear as a tiger in one place and as a human in another. They can appear as a god, as a cloud or any other thing that can be seen by the human eye, and often in shapes or forms that cannot be seen or recognized by the human brain.

Hoyle pointed out that this intelligence has probably controlled complete human evolution since the very beginning of time and continues to control our minds. All that man has built and has become was done because of the tinkering of these super-intelligent beings.

And the strange thing about it is that at times they actually appear in physical forms. Hoyle told those at the conference that a large part of the scientific community is convinced

KILL SWITCH

that another intelligent exists on this planet.

“It is not an intelligence from another planet; they are from a completely different universe. They entered our dimension at the very beginning of the creation of this universe and they have controlled everything that has happened since.”

This second universe; this other dimension, where the powerful beings originated is much like ours and yet it is on a totally different plane of existence. It is probably three dimensional like this universe and may even have a fourth, fifth or sixth dimension which breaks the time and space barriers that confine and restrict us. But their laws of chemistry and physics are, no doubt, completely different because they are much more advanced. In this way, they have been responsible for almost all of the legends in different countries countries that are scoffed at today. They also had a hand in the different things things which were discovered in some parts of the world and not in others.

Astrophysicist Hoyle, who is reknown throughout the world as one of the best in his field, could not give concrete details about the alien intelligence. They are so different from what we know that to describe them in a language that everyone would understand would be virtually impossible.

Hoyle said that the most recent documented evidence of their appearance was at sea. Dozens of ships were following something on their sonars. It was moving at 250 knots at a depth of 20,000 feet. There are no known submersible ships in any military or research inventory anywhere on this planet that can move that fast and at that depth.

Hoyle said he didn't expect many people to believe everything he said. “Most people will just think this is a hair-brained theory and laugh it off. Others will be worried and check with the police or government officials.”

Naturally, the government officials will deny everything. But most scientists know about it and agree that it would be a good thing to reveal all that is known about the alien presence and let the public chew on it. Little by little, the facts will be revealed until everyone has access to the information that is now only in the hands of a few scientists and government officials.

UFOS AND THE POWER ELITE:

WHO IS REALLY IN CONTROL OF PLANET EARTH?

As we speed toward the year 2018, it has become more apparent than ever that we are not in control of our lives; that there is a “power” that seems to be pulling us in a very negative and destructive direction.

This applies not only to us as individuals, but to the planet as a whole. Most of us seem to be unable to point a finger in the direction of the negative force, yet we realize that there is a weight upon our shoulders that is getting heavier with each passing day.

While the vast majority of people worldwide may not realize it, UFOs play an important role in our development as a species, providing us with signs that there is much beyond the range of normal human goals to strive for—both spiritually and technologically. If we could but achieve even a small part of that which is demonstrated by the alien craft and their occupants, we could create a better life for everyone, regardless of race, religion or country of origin.

Instead, those in power—going back thousands of years—have done all they could to keep the truth about such matters as UFOs from reaching the public arena, thus allowing

KILL SWITCH

them to hold yet another card against us when it comes to their total dominance over this planet.

The late Canadian scientist, Wilbert Brockhouse Smith, was one of the earliest pioneers during our lifetime whose job was to upset as much as possible the applecart of the negative forces who continue to operate behind the scenes of science, politics, medicine, religion and archeology and all other matters that determine what we are allowed to believe about the history and structure of the planet and those residing on, below and above its surface.

Although he has been remembered best for his discoveries pertaining to perpetual motion and alternate energy sources, many of his closet admirers do not realize that Smith often tapped into interdimensional and extraterrestrial sources for his knowledge and inspiration. In New Age circles, he would be known as a "channel." According to his biography, Smith's investigations carried him into the fields of physics, philosophy and religion. As an engineer, he was foremost in his field and the holder of numerous patents. He undertook a thorough study of gravity and devised several experiments that produced limited but encouraging results.

THE BATTLE FOR MAN'S MIND

A prophet by his own right, Wilbert Smith foresaw a great danger that would engulf the world and attempt to enslave humankind. While he fully realized the danger that communism would bring if it spread, Smith envisioned a far worse foe that would attempt to control our hearts and minds. But let's allow Smith to speak on his own behalf so as not to color his words.

"I propose to give the reader a warning of a grave danger that we are all, consciously or unconsciously, facing in a world in which two great forces are striving to gain control of man's mind. This struggle has been going on from time immemorial, but never in the world's history has the conflict been more intense than it is in this present era of confusion and unrest. In the old days, humankind was often made to suffer physically, unspeakable things in the name of power, but today, with man's mind more developed and better educated, he is now facing the prospect of a refinement of even greater mental and spiritual cruelty, unless he is prepared to protect himself with right thinking.

"The two great forces involved in trying to influence man's thinking may be described as positive, i.e., thoughts in harmony with the concept of a love of God and the brotherhood of man, and negative, those encompassing motives designed to gain control over man for the purpose of power. This battle for Man's mind is being waged on two fronts, the physical and the metaphysical, and the object of the fight is to bring about either the spiritual salvation or destruction of homo sapiens.

"To deal first with the physical aspects, no matter how hard we may all strive to be strong-minded and individualistic, we are all subtly influenced by the spoken and written word and other forms of thought communication, particularly through the medium of books, newspapers, radio and television. In the latter fields, as the sponsors know only too well, even the "commercials" play an important role in making up our minds to purchase certain products. In our business and social lives, we are often swayed by the thoughts of others, and some people too apathetic to form opinions for themselves will accept the views of others more articulate, as their own. In all our daily contacts, a little of the good, bad or indifferent, as the case may be, is rubbing off and influencing our thinking. "

KILL SWITCH

In the field of politics, often an area of great misrepresentation in order to gain votes, even greater pressures are brought to bear and we are often influenced by the seemingly convincing rhetoric of clever politicians. But it is in the area of international politics that the gravest dangers lie, for here the stakes are high and the lust for power the greatest. Because of this, many of us have been through the horrors of at least one world war, if not two. But let us first analyze how these two wars came about in the first place.

In each case, a few men in power, with great personal magnetism, were able to influence and organize the minds of the common people to such a degree of mass hypnotism, that the entire nation believed it had a true cause to fight. Many of us watched and history books have recorded the militarist build-up of Fascism and Communism, and, because of the evil they spawned that the free world had to fight against, we eventually witnessed the final downfall and disaster brought to these misguided people who allowed their minds to be warped by avaricious despots seeking only greater power. Unity in a country is a fine thing when it is directed into channels for the good of its people, but when it seeks to persecute others in order to gain its ends, it becomes a thing of evil and a triumph for the negative forces.

Crushing the evil forces of World War Two, however, did not bring peace to the world, and very soon thereafter, and for exactly the same reason, i.e., a few men in power masterminding the masses, we found ourselves involved in the long, drawn-out and expensive "cold war" with the U.S.S.R., and hovering on the brink of a third global war that would well end in total annihilation of every living creature on this planet. We can perhaps take some comfort from the fact that the odds against anyone surviving a nuclear war are so great that it is very unlikely that either side will be the first to press the panic button, and maybe it is for this reason that the Russians are turning to a more subtle weapon—the manipulation of man's mind.

Their success with the Pavlovian experiments and the subsequent "brainwashing" techniques, led them a step further toward the establishment of an extensive physical research program, with the main emphasis on mental telepathy and ESP. How far they have gone with this program, we do not know, but one well-known American columnist found it necessary to warn the U.S. government that the newly-developed Russian technique of "cloudbusting" (an expression used to describe the production of physical effects by intense mental concentration) would bear their close investigation. The Soviets evidently realize the potentialities of the power of thought far better than we do, and we must remember that power of any kind can be used for either good or evil.

These are some of the factors we are finding in the battle of man's mind on the physical plane. But what of the metaphysical influences at work on us, the invisible but all-powerful forces on the purely mental plane? Whether we realize it or not, we are equally susceptible, if not more so at the subconscious level, to these more subtle influences. Man's brain, which in reality operates on the metaphysical plane, is like a two-way radio that transmits and receives messages along the airwaves of the universe and this receiving mechanism is open to thoughts both good and bad, which we either accept or reject according to our stage of evolution.

Most of us are well aware of the truth of mental telepathy and many of us have had personal experiences of thought communication between loved ones often thousands of miles away. But what of special thoughts being beamed at us deliberately for a specific

KILL SWITCH

purpose, at both the conscious and subconscious levels, from another plane of existence?

Messages received through esoteric sources, purporting to come from Space Brothers who take an active interest in the spiritual welfare of the inhabitants of our planet, warn us that an even greater conflict is being fought on the metaphysical plane where intelligent beings of both a higher and a lower spiritual order than ourselves, are waging a fierce battle for Man's mind. The lower or negative forces, damned themselves by wrong thinking, are projecting strong thoughts Earthward in an attempt to bring about our spiritual downfall. On the other hand, the spiritual guardians of our planet are concentrating equally hard on sending out positive thoughts of goodwill and brotherly love. Thus we are being bombarded on the metaphysical plane by two conflicting schools of thought and, free will being the criterion of spiritual advancement, it is left to us which we choose to accept. However, from a purely logical point of view, if we want to save ourselves a lot of sorrow both in this life and lives to come, we should arm ourselves mentally against the onslaught of negative thoughts.

This is no time for confused or apathetic thinking, often the future breeding-ground of negative thoughts. Nor should we be just receivers and disseminators of the thoughts we pick up. Rather, we should get on the transmitting end and constantly project positive thoughts of goodwill to all. Every positive thought neutralizes a negative thought, so we shall be serving not only ourselves but all humanity.

In the final analysis, there are two simple, clear-cut maxims to be observed for complete protection from the negative forces at work on this planet: (1) acknowledgment and love of God as the Father of all Creation, and (2) brotherly love extended to all God's creatures throughout the universe. Anything else that interferes with these two beliefs should be vigorously rejected. Further, if we return love for hate, hate will die of malnutrition, for it can only feed on returned hatred. Let us rather pray for spiritual enlightenment for these wretched souls who seek to harm us.

THE SOULLESS ONES

It is only during the last quarter of a century that information regarding these sinister efforts to control the human race have come to our attention, due primarily to the likes of such dedicated "soldiers" for humankind as William Cooper, Dr. Antony C. Sutton, Riley Crabb, Alfred Bieiek, Ray Palmer, Richard Shaver and a handful of others who have risked life and limb, setting aside all personal reward to expose this global plot against humanity. But who, you may ask, and have every reason to want to know precisely, is behind this attempt at mental and physical slavery and how is it possible they have gained such control over all of us?

The answer is manifold and demands manifold explanations as set forth by those who have actually penetrated the inner workings of the negative forces who are referred to throughout many ancient writings as The Beast whose number is 666. Ancient texts identify these demented individuals as "the soulless ones" who, it is claimed, came here long ago "from another star system to become the uninvited inhabitants of earth. With technological wizardry, they influenced every aspect of our lives. They manipulated the genetic pattern. They altered the very fabric of our thought. And they created a counterfeit race of soulless human automatons programmed to control us and our civilizations in the ways of death.

The texts further contend that "there is a small group of powerful, behind-the-scenes rulers who have been manipulating the affairs of Earth toward their own ends for years, if

KILL SWITCH

not centuries.”

One of those, called upon for clarification is one Dr. Anthony C, Sutton who, as the author of a series of works, “claims to have come across secret documents that reveal a terrifying, long-range conspiracy that seeks to control our lives from cradle to grave, a goal that, if brought about, would turn this world into a closed system, a totalitarian nightmare as frightening as anything George Orwell could have imagined. Many people believe we are well down the track to just such a global nightmare, a New Dark Age.”

These evil elites, according to Dr. Sutton, already have control of education, the political parties, private banking firms, major law firms, the media and philanthropic foundations. They also have dominant influence in Western governments.

Is there a metaphysical explanation for them in our world? What is the real driving force behind such plutocratic groups that seek total world domination and control? What drives these oligarchy scattered among every nation, race, people and culture, in their quest to enslave humanity to do their bidding? Is there a counterfeit race, parallel to the human race, that is metaphysically programmed to do evil?

KILL SWITCH

THE SEARCH FOR THE “MANCHURIAN CANDIDATE”

The CIA and Mind Control

World War II

Them Unwitting: The Safehouses

Brainwashing

Hypnosis

The Search For The Truth

Chapter 1

World War II

On the outskirts of Basel, Switzerland, overlooking the Rhine, lies the worldwide headquarters of the Sandoz drug and chemical empire. There, on the afternoon of April 16, 1943, Dr. Albert Hofmann made an extraordinary discovery—by accident.

At 37, with close-cropped hair and rimless glasses, Hofmann headed the company's research program to develop marketable drugs out of natural products. He was hard at work in his laboratory that warm April day when a wave of dizziness suddenly overcame him. The strange sensation was not unpleasant, and Hofmann felt almost as though he were drunk.

But he became quite restless. His nerves seemed to run off in different directions. The inebriation was unlike anything he had ever known before. Leaving work early, Hofmann managed a wobbly bicycle-ride home. He lay down and closed his eyes, still unable to shake the dizziness. Now the light of day was disagreeably bright. With the external world shut out, his mind raced along. He experienced what he would later describe as “an uninterrupted stream of fantastic images of extraordinary plasticity and vividness. . . . accompanied by an intense, kaleidoscope-like play of colors.”

These visions subsided after a few hours, and Hofmann, ever the inquiring scientist, set out to find what caused them. He presumed he had somehow ingested one of the drugs with which he had been working that day, and his prime suspect was d-lysergic acid diethylamide, or LSD, a substance that he himself had first produced in the same lab five years earlier. As part of his search for a circulation stimulant, Hofmann had been examining derivatives of ergot, a fungus that attacks rye.

Ergot had a mysterious, contradictory reputation. In China and some Arab countries, it was thought to have medicinal powers, but in Europe it was associated with the horrible malady from the Middle Ages called St. Anthony's Fire, which struck periodically

KILL SWITCH

like the plague. The disease turned fingers and toes into blackened stumps and led to madness and death.

Hofmann guessed that he had absorbed some ergot derivative through his skin, perhaps while changing the filter paper in a suction bottle. To test his theory, he spent three days making up a fresh batch of LSD. Cautiously he swallowed 250 micrograms (less than 1/100,000 of an ounce). Hofmann planned to take more gradually through the day to obtain a result, since no known drug had any effect on the human body in such infinitesimal amounts. He had no way of knowing that because of LSD's potency, he had already taken several times what would later be termed an ordinary dose. Unexpectedly, this first speck of LSD took hold after about 40 minutes, and Hofmann was off on the first self-induced "trip" of modern times.[1]

Hofmann recalls he felt "horrific . . . I was afraid. I feared I was becoming crazy. I had the idea I was out of my body. I thought I had died. I did not know how it would finish. If you know you will come back from this very strange world, only then can you enjoy it." Of course, Hofmann had no way of knowing that he would return. While he had quickly recovered from his accidental trip three days earlier, he did not know how much LSD had caused it or whether the present dose was more than his body could detoxify. His mind kept veering off into an unknown dimension, but he was unable to appreciate much beyond his own terror.

Less than 200 miles from Hofmann's laboratory, doctors connected to the S.S. and Gestapo were doing experiments that led to the testing of mescaline (a drug which has many of the mind-changing qualities of LSD) on prisoners at Dachau. Germany's secret policemen had the notion, completely alien to Hofmann, that they could use drugs like mescaline to bring unwilling people under their control. According to research team member Walter Neff, the goal of the Dachau experiments was "to eliminate the will of the person examined."

At Dachau, Nazis took the search for scientific knowledge of military value to its most awful extreme. There, in a closely guarded, fenced-off part of the camp, S.S. doctors studied such questions as the amount of time a downed airman could survive in the North Atlantic in February. Information of this sort was considered important to German security, since skilled pilots were in relatively short supply. So, at Heinrich Himmler's personal order, the doctors at Dachau simply sat by huge tubs of ice water with stopwatches and timed how long it took immersed prisoners to die. In other experiments, under the cover of "aviation medicine," inmates were crushed to death in high-altitude pressure chambers (to learn how high pilots could safely fly), and prisoners were shot, so that special blood coagulants could be tested on their wounds.

The mescaline tests at Dachau run by Dr. Kurt Plötner were not nearly so lethal as the others in the "aviation" series, but the drug could still cause grave damage, particularly to anyone who already had some degree of mental instability. The danger was increased by the fact that the mescaline was administered covertly by S.S. men who spiked the prisoners' drinks. Unlike Dr. Hofmann, the subjects had no idea that a drug was causing their extreme disorientation. Many must have feared they had gone stark mad all on their own. Always, the subjects of these experiments were Jews, gypsies, Russians, and other groups on whose lives the Nazis placed little or no value. In no way were any of them true volunteers, although some may have come forward under the delusion that they would receive better treatment.

KILL SWITCH

After the war, Neff told American investigators that the subjects showed a wide variety of reactions. Some became furious; others were melancholy or gay, as if they were drunk. Not surprisingly, “sentiments of hatred and revenge were exposed in every case.” Neff noted that the drug caused certain people to reveal their “most intimate secrets.” Still, the Germans were not ready to accept mescaline as a substitute for their more physical methods of interrogation. They went on to try hypnosis in combination with the drug, but they apparently never felt confident that they had found a way to assume command of their victim’s mind.

Even as the S.S. doctors were carrying on their experiments at Dachau, the Office of Strategic Services (OSS), America’s wartime intelligence agency, set up a “truth drug” committee under Dr. Winfred Overholser, head of St. Elizabeth’s Hospital in Washington. The committee quickly tried and rejected mescaline, several barbiturates, and scopolamine. Then, during the spring of 1943, the committee decided that *cannabis indica*—or marijuana—showed the most promise, and it started a testing program in cooperation with the Manhattan Project, the TOP SECRET effort to build an atomic bomb. It is not clear why OSS turned to the bomb makers for help, except that, as one former Project official puts it, “Our secret was so great, I guess we were safer than anyone else.” Apparently, top Project leaders, who went to incredible lengths to preserve security, saw no danger in trying out drugs on their personnel.

The Manhattan Project supplied the first dozen test subjects, who were asked to swallow a concentrated, liquid form of marijuana that an American pharmaceutical company furnished in small glass vials. A Project man who was present recalls: “It didn’t work the way we wanted. Apparently the human system would not take it all at once orally. The subjects would lean over and vomit.” What is more, they disclosed no secrets, and one subject wound up in the hospital.

Back to the drawing board went the OSS experts. They decided that the best way to administer the marijuana was inhalation of its fumes. Attempts were made to pour the solution on burning charcoal, and an OSS officer named George White (who had already succeeded in knocking himself out with an overdose of the relatively potent substance) tried out the vapor, without sufficient effect, at St. Elizabeth’s. Finally, the OSS group discovered a delivery system which had been known for years to jazz musicians and other users: the cigarette. OSS documents reported that smoking a mix of tobacco and the marijuana essence brought on a “state of irresponsibility, causing the subject to be loquacious and free in his impartation of information.”

The first field test of these marijuana-laced cigarettes took place on May 27, 1943. The subject was one August Del Gracio, who was described in OSS documents as a “notorious New York gangster.”[2] George White, an Army captain who had come to OSS from the Federal Bureau of Narcotics, administered the drug by inviting Del Gracio up to his apartment for a smoke and a chat. White had been talking to Del Gracio earlier about securing the Mafia’s cooperation to keep Axis agents out of the New York waterfront and to prepare the way for the invasion of Sicily.[3]

Del Gracio had already made it clear to White that he personally had taken part in killing informers who had squealed to the Feds. The gangster was as tough as they came, and if he could be induced to talk under the influence of a truth drug, certainly German prisoners could—or so the reasoning went. White plied him with cigarettes until “subject

KILL SWITCH

became high and extremely garrulous.” Over the next two hours, Del Gracio told the Federal agent about the ins and outs of the drug trade (revealing information so sensitive that the CIA deleted it from the OSS documents it released 34 years later). At one point in the conversation, after Del Gracio had begun to talk, the gangster told White, “Whatever you do, don’t ever use any of the stuff I’m telling you.” In a subsequent session, White packed the cigarettes with so much marijuana that Del Gracio became unconscious for about an hour. Yet, on the whole the experiment was considered a success in “loosening the subject’s tongue.”

While members of the truth-drug committee never believed that the concentrated marijuana could compel a person to confess his deepest secrets, they authorized White to push ahead with the testing. On the next stage, he and a Manhattan Project counterintelligence man borrowed 15 to 18 thick dossiers from the FBI and went off to try the marijuana on suspected Communist soldiers stationed in military camps outside Atlanta, Memphis, and New Orleans. According to White’s Manhattan Project sidekick, a Harvard Law graduate and future judge, they worked out a standard interrogation technique:

Before we went in, George and I would buy cigarettes, remove them from the bottom of the pack, use a hypodermic needle to put in the fluid, and leave the cigarettes in a shot glass to dry. Then, we resealed the pack. . . . We sat down with a particular soldier and tried to win his confidence. We would say something like “This is better than being overseas and getting shot at,” and we would try to break them. We started asking questions from their [FBI] folder, and we would let them see that we had the folder on them. . . . We had a pitcher of ice water on the table, and we knew the drug had taken effect when they reached for a glass. The stuff actually worked. . . . Everyone but one—and he didn’t smoke—gave us more information than we had before.

The Manhattan Project lawyer remembers this swing through the South with George White as a “good time.” The two men ate in the best restaurants and took in all the sights. “George was quite a guy,” he says. “At the Roosevelt Hotel in New Orleans after we had interviewed our men, we were lying on the beds when George took out his pistol and shot his initials into the molding that ran along the ceiling. He used his .22 automatic, equipped with a silencer, and he emptied several clips.” Asked if he tried out the truth drug himself, the lawyer says, “Yes. The cigarettes gave you a feeling of walking a couple of feet off the floor. I had a pleasant sensation of well-being. . . . The fellows from my office wouldn’t take a cigarette from me for the rest of the war.”

Since World War II, the United States government, led by the Central Intelligence Agency, has searched secretly for ways to control human behavior. This book is about that search, which had its origins in World War II. The CIA programs were not only an extension of the OSS quest for a truth drug, but they also echoed such events as the Nazi experiments at Dachau and Albert Hofmann’s discovery of LSD.

By probing the inner reaches of consciousness, Hofmann’s research took him to the very frontiers of knowledge. As never before in history, the warring powers sought ideas from scientists capable of reaching those frontiers—ideas that could make the difference between victory and defeat. While Hofmann himself remained aloof, in the Swiss tradition, other scientists, like Albert Einstein, helped turned the abstractions of the laboratory into incredibly destructive weapons. Jules Verne’s notions of spaceships touching the moon stopped being absurd when Wernher von Braun’s rockets started pounding London. With

KILL SWITCH

their creations, the scientists reached beyond the speculations of science fiction. Never before had their discoveries been so breathtaking and so frightening. Albert Hofmann's work touched upon the fantasies of the mind—accessible, in ancient legends, to witches and wizards who used spells and potions to bring people under their sway. In the early scientific age, the dream of controlling the brain took on a modern form in Mary Shelley's creation, Dr. Frankenstein's monster. The dream would be updated again during the Cold War era to become the Manchurian Candidate, the assassin whose mind was controlled by a hostile government.[4] Who could say for certain that such a fantasy would not be turned into a reality like Verne's rocket stories or Einstein's calculations? And who should be surprised to learn that government agencies—specifically the CIA—would swoop down on Albert Hofmann's lab in an effort to harness the power over the mind that LSD seemed to hold?

From the Dachau experiments came the cruelty that man was capable of heaping upon his fellows in the name of advancing science and helping his country gain advantage in war. To say that the Dachau experiments are object lessons of how far people can stretch ends to justify means is to belittle by cliché what occurred in the concentration camps. Nothing the CIA ever did in its postwar search for mind-control technology came close to the callous killing of the Nazi "aviation research." Nevertheless, in their attempts to find ways to manipulate people, Agency officials and their agents crossed many of the same ethical barriers. They experimented with dangerous and unknown techniques on people who had no idea what was happening. They systematically violated the free will and mental dignity of their subjects, and, like the Germans, they chose to victimize special groups of people whose existence they considered, out of prejudice and convenience, less worthy than their own. Wherever their extreme experiments went, the CIA sponsors picked for subjects their own equivalents of the Nazis' Jews and gypsies: mental patients, prostitutes, foreigners, drug addicts, and prisoners, often from minority ethnic groups.

In the postwar era, American officials straddled the ethical and the cutthroat approaches to scientific research. After an Allied tribunal had convicted the first echelon of surviving Nazi war criminals—the Görings and Speers—American prosecutors charged the Dachau doctors with "crimes against humanity" at a second Nuremberg trial. None of the German scientists expressed remorse. Most claimed that someone else had carried out the vilest experiments. All said that issues of moral and personal responsibility are moot in state-sponsored research. What is critical, testified Dr. Karl Brandt, Hitler's personal physician, is "whether the experiment is important or unimportant." Asked his attitude toward killing human beings in the course of medical research, Brandt replied, "Do you think that one can obtain any worthwhile fundamental results without a definite toll of lives?" The judges at Nuremberg rejected such defenses and put forth what came to be known as the Nuremberg Code on scientific research.[5] Its main points were simple: Researchers must obtain full voluntary consent from all subjects; experiments should yield fruitful results for the good of society that can be obtained in no other way; researchers should not conduct tests where death or serious injury might occur, "except, perhaps" when the supervising doctors also serve as subjects. The judges—all Americans—sentenced seven of the Germans, including Dr. Brandt, to death by hanging. Nine others received long prison sentences. Thus, the U.S. government put its full moral force behind the idea that there were limits on what scientists could do to human subjects, even when a country's security was thought to hang in the balance.

KILL SWITCH

The Nuremberg Code has remained official American policy ever since 1946, but, even before the verdicts were in, special U.S. investigating teams were sifting through the experimental records at Dachau for information of military value. The report of one such team found that while part of the data was “inaccurate,” some of the conclusions, if confirmed, would be “an important complement to existing knowledge.” Military authorities sent the records, including a description of the mescaline and hypnosis experiments, back to the United States. None of the German mind-control research was ever made public.

Immediately after the war, large political currents began to shift in the world, as they always do. Allies became enemies and enemies became allies. Other changes were fresh and yet old. In the United States, the new Cold War against communism carried with it a piercing sense of fear and a sweeping sense of mission—at least as far as American leaders were concerned. Out of these feelings and out of that overriding American faith in advancing technology came the CIA’s attempts to tame hostile minds and make spy fantasies real. Experiments went forward and the CIA’s scientists—bitten, sometimes obsessed—kept going back to their laboratories for one last adjustment. Some theories were crushed, while others emerged in unexpected ways that would have a greater impact outside the CIA than in the world of covert operations. Only one aspect remained constant during the quarter-century of active research: The CIA’s interest in controlling the human mind had to remain absolutely secret.

World War II provided more than the grand themes of the CIA’s behavioral programs. It also became the formative life experience of the principal CIA officials, and, indeed, of the CIA itself as an institution. The secret derring-do of the OSS was new to the United States, and the ways of the OSS would grow into the ways of the CIA. OSS leaders would have their counterparts later in the Agency. CIA officials tended to have known the OSS men, to think like them, to copy their methods, and even, in some cases, to be the same people. When Agency officials wanted to launch their massive effort for mind control, for instance, they got out the old OSS documents and went about their goal in many of the same ways the OSS had. OSS leaders enlisted outside scientists; Agency officials also went to the most prestigious ones in academia and industry, soliciting aid for the good of the country. They even approached the same George White who had shot his initials in the hotel ceiling while on OSS assignment.

Years later, White’s escapades with OSS and CIA would carry with them a humor clearly unintended at the time. To those directly involved, influencing human behavior was a deadly serious business, but qualities like bumbling and pure craziness shine through in hindsight. In the CIA’s campaign, some of America’s most distinguished behavioral scientists would stick all kinds of drugs and wires into their experimental subjects—often dismissing the obviously harmful effects with theories reminiscent of the learned nineteenth-century physicians who bled their patients with leeches and belittled the ignorance of anyone who questioned the technique. If the schemes of these scientists to control the mind had met with more success, they would be much less amusing. But so far, at least, the human spirit has apparently kept winning. That—if anything—is the saving grace of the mind-control campaign.

World War II signaled the end of American isolation and innocence, and the United States found it had a huge gap to close, with its enemies and allies alike, in applying underhanded tactics to war. Unlike Britain, which for hundreds of years had used covert operations to hold her empire together, the United States had no tradition of using subversion as

KILL SWITCH

a secret instrument of government policy. The Germans, the French, the Russians, and nearly everyone else had long been involved in this game, although no one seemed as good at it as the British.

Clandestine lobbying by British agents in the United States led directly to President Franklin Roosevelt's creation of the organization that became OSS in 1942. This was the first American agency set up to wage secret, unlimited war. Roosevelt placed it under the command of a Wall Street lawyer and World War I military hero, General William "Wild Bill" Donovan. A burly, vigorous Republican millionaire with great intellectual curiosity, Donovan started as White House intelligence adviser even before Pearl Harbor, and he had direct access to the President.

Learning at the feet of the British who made available their expertise, if not all their secrets, Donovan put together an organization where nothing had existed before. A Columbia College and Columbia Law graduate himself, he tended to turn to the gentlemanly preserves of the Eastern establishment for recruits. (The initials OSS were said to stand for "Oh So Social.") Friends—or friends of friends—could be trusted. "Old boys" were the stalwarts of the British secret service, and, as with most other aspects of OSS, the Americans followed suit.

One of Donovan's new recruits was Richard Helms, a young newspaper executive then best known for having gained an interview with Adolf Hitler in 1936 while working for United Press. Having gone to Le Rosey, the same Swiss prep school as the Shah of Iran, and then on to clubby Williams College Helms moved easily among the young OSS men. He was already more taciturn than the jovial Donovan, but he was equally ambitious and skilled as a judge of character. For Helms, OSS spywork began a lifelong career. He would become the most important sponsor of mind-control research within the CIA, nurturing and promoting it throughout his steady climb to the top position in the Agency.

Like every major wartime official from President Roosevelt down, General Donovan believed that World War II was in large measure a battle of science and organization. The idea was to mobilize science for defense, and the Roosevelt administration set up a costly, intertwining network of research programs to deal with everything from splitting the atom to preventing mental breakdowns in combat. Donovan named Boston industrialist Stanley Lovell to head OSS Research and Development and to be the secret agency's liaison with the government scientific community.

A Cornell graduate and a self-described "saucepan chemist," Lovell was a confident energetic man with a particular knack for coming up with offbeat ideas and selling them to others. Like most of his generation, he was an outspoken patriot. He wrote in his diary shortly after Pearl Harbor: "As James Hilton said, 'Once at war, to reason is treason.' My job is clear—to do all that is in me to help America."

General Donovan minced no words in laying out what he expected of Lovell: "I need every subtle device and every underhanded trick to use against the Germans and Japanese—by our own people—but especially by the underground resistance programs in all the occupied countries. You'll have to invent them all, Lovell, because you're going to be my man." Thus Lovell recalled his marching orders from Donovan, which he instantly received on being introduced to the blustery, hyperactive OSS chief. Lovell had never met anyone with Donovan's personal magnetism.

Lovell quickly turned to some of the leading lights in the academic and private sec-

KILL SWITCH

tors. A special group—called Division 19—within James Conant’s National Defense Research Committee was set up to produce “miscellaneous weapons” for OSS and British intelligence. Lovell’s strategy, he later wrote, was “to stimulate the Peck’s Bad Boy beneath the surface of every American scientist and to say to him, “Throw all your normal law-abiding concepts out the window. Here’s a chance to raise merry hell.””

Dr. George Kistiakowsky, the Harvard chemist who worked on explosives research during the war (and who became science adviser to Presidents Eisenhower and Kennedy) remembers Stanley Lovell well: “Stan came to us and asked us to develop ways for camouflaging explosives which could be smuggled into enemy countries.” Kistiakowsky and an associate came up with a substance which was dubbed “Aunt Jemima” because it looked and tasted like pancake mix. Says Kistiakowsky: “You could bake bread or other things out of it. I personally took it to a high-level meeting at the War Department and ate cookies in front of all those characters to show them what a wonderful invention it was. All you had to do was attach a powerful detonator, and it exploded with the force of dynamite.” Thus disguised, “Aunt Jemima” could be slipped into occupied lands. It was credited with blowing up at least one major bridge in China.

Lovell encouraged OSS behavioral scientists to find something that would offend Japanese cultural sensibilities. His staff anthropologists reported back that nothing was so shameful to the Japanese soldier as his bowel movements. Lovell then had the chemists work up a skatole compound which duplicated the odor of diarrhea. It was loaded into collapsible tubes, flown to China, and distributed to children in enemy-occupied cities. When a Japanese officer appeared on a crowded street, the kids were encouraged to slip up behind him and squirt the liquid on the seat of his pants. Lovell named the product “Who? Me?” and he credited it with costing the Japanese “face.”

Unlike most weapons, “Who? Me?” was not designed to kill or maim. It was a “harassment substance” designed to lower the morale of individual Japanese. The inspiration came from academicians who tried to make a science of human behavior. During World War II, the behavioral sciences were still very much in their infancy, but OSS—well before most of the outside world—recognized their potential in warfare. Psychology and psychiatry, sociology, and anthropology all seemed to offer insights that could be exploited to manipulate the enemy.

General Donovan himself believed that the techniques of psychoanalysis might be turned on Adolf Hitler to get a better idea of “the things that made him tick,” as Donovan put it. Donovan gave the job of being the Führer’s analyst to Walter Langer, a Cambridge, Massachusetts psychoanalyst whose older brother William had taken leave from a chair of history at Harvard to head OSS Research and Analysis.[6] Langer protested that a study of Hitler based on available data would be highly uncertain and that conventional psychiatric and psychoanalytic methods could not be used without direct access to the patient. Donovan was not the sort to be deterred by such details. He told Langer to go ahead anyway.

With the help of a small research staff, Langer looked through everything he could find on Hitler and interviewed a number of people who had know the German leader. Aware of the severe limitations on his information, but left no choice by General Donovan, Langer plowed ahead and wrote up a final study. It pegged Hitler as a “neurotic psychopath” and proceeded to pick apart the Führer’s psyche. Langer, since retired to Florida, believes he came “pretty close” to describing the real Adolf Hitler. He is particularly proud of his pre-

KILL SWITCH

dictions that the Nazi leader would become increasingly disturbed as Germany suffered more and more defeats and that he would commit suicide rather than face capture.

One reason for psychoanalyzing Hitler was to uncover vulnerabilities that could be covertly exploited. Stanley Lovell seized upon one of Langer's ideas—that Hitler might have feminine tendencies—and got permission from the OSS hierarchy to see if he could push the Führer over the gender line.[7] “The hope was that his moustache would fall off and his voice become soprano,” Lovell wrote. Lovell used OSS's agent network to try to slip female sex hormones into Hitler's food, but nothing apparently came of it. Nor was there ever any payoff to other Lovell schemes to blind Hitler permanently with mustard gas or to use a drug to exacerbate his suspected epilepsy. The main problem in these operations—all of which were tried—was to get Hitler to take the medicine. Failure of the delivery schemes also kept Hitler alive—OSS was simultaneously trying to poison him.[8]

Without question, murdering a man was a decisive way to influence his behavior, and OSS scientists developed an arsenal of chemical and biological poisons that included the incredibly potent botulinus toxin, whose delivery system was a gelatin capsule smaller than the head of a pin. Lovell and his associates also realized there were less drastic ways to manipulate an enemy's behavior, and they came up with a line of products to cause sickness, itching, baldness, diarrhea, and/or the odor thereof. They had less success finding a drug to compel truth-telling, but it was not for lack of trying.

Chemical and biological substances had been used in wartime long before OSS came on the scene. Both sides had used poison gas in World War I; during the early part of World War II, the Japanese had dropped deadly germs on China and caused epidemics; and throughout the war, the Allies and Axis powers alike had built up chemical and biological warfare (CBW) stockpiles, whose main function turned out, in the end, to be deterring the other side. Military men tended to look on CBW as a way of destroying whole armies and even populations. Like the world's other secret services, OSS individualized CBW and made it into a way of selectively but secretly embarrassing, disorienting, incapacitating, injuring, or killing an enemy.

As diversified as were Lovell's scientific duties for OSS, they were narrow in comparison with those of his main counterpart in the CIA's postwar mind-control program, Dr. Sidney Gottlieb. Gottlieb would preside over investigations that ranged from advanced research in amnesia by electroshock to dragnet searches through the jungles of Latin America for toxic leaves and barks. Fully in the tradition of making Hitler moustacheless, Gottlieb's office would devise a scheme to make Fidel Castro's beard fall out; like Lovell, Gottlieb would personally provide operators with deadly poisons to assassinate foreign leaders like the Congo's Patrice Lumumba, and he would be equally at ease discussing possible applications of new research in neurology. On a much greater scale than Lovell's, Gottlieb would track down every conceivable gimmick that might give one person leverage over another's mind. Gottlieb would preside over arcane fields from handwriting analysis to stress creation, and he would rise through the Agency along with his bureaucratic patron, Richard Helms.

Early in the war, General Donovan got another idea from the British, whose psychologists and psychiatrists had devised a testing program to predict the performance of military officers. Donovan thought such a program might help OSS sort through the masses of recruits who were being rushed through training. To create an assessment system for

KILL SWITCH

Americans, Donovan called in Harvard psychology professor Henry “Harry” Murray. In 1938 Murray had written *Explorations of Personality*, a notable book which laid out a whole battery of tests that could be used to size up the personalities of individuals. “Spying is attractive to loonies,” states Murray. “Psychopaths, who are people who spend their lives making up stories, revel in the field.” The program’s prime objective, according to Murray, was keeping out the crazies, as well as the “sloths, irritants, bad actors, and free talkers.”

Always in a hurry, Donovan gave Murray and a distinguished group of colleagues only 15 days until the first candidates arrived to be assessed. In the interim, they took over a spacious estate outside Washington as their headquarters. In a series of hurried meetings, they put together an assessment system that combined German and British methods with Murray’s earlier research. It tested a recruit’s ability to stand up under pressure, to be a leader, to hold liquor, to lie skillfully, and to read a person’s character by the nature of his clothing.

More than 30 years after the war, Murray remains modest in his claims for the assessment system, saying that it was only an aid in weeding out the “horrors” among OSS candidates. Nevertheless, the secret agency’s leaders believed in its results, and Murray’s system became a fixture in OSS, testing Americans and foreign agents alike. Some of Murray’s young behavioral scientists, like John Gardner,[9] would go on to become prominent in public affairs, and, more importantly, the OSS assessment program would be recognized as a milestone in American psychology. It was the first systematic effort to evaluate an individual’s personality in order to predict his future behavior. After the war, personality assessment would become a new field in itself, and some of Murray’s assistants would go on to establish OSS-like systems at large corporations, starting with AT&T. They also would set up study programs at universities, beginning with the University of California at Berkeley.[10] As would happen repeatedly with the CIA’s mind-control research, OSS was years ahead of public developments in behavioral theory and application.

In the postwar years, Murray would be superseded by a young Oklahoma psychologist John Gittinger, who would rise in the CIA on the strength of his ideas about how to make a hard science out of personality assessment and how to use it to manipulate people. Gittinger would build an office within CIA that refined both Murray’s assessment function and Walter Langer’s indirect analysis of foreign leaders. Gittinger’s methods would become an integral part of everyday Agency operations, and he would become Sid Gottlieb’s protégé.

Stanley Lovell reasoned that a good way to kill Hitler—and the OSS man was always looking for ideas—would be to hypnotically control a German prisoner to hate the Gestapo and the Nazi regime and then to give the subject a hypnotic suggestion to assassinate the Führer. The OSS candidate would be let loose in Germany where he would take the desired action, “being under a compulsion that might not be denied,” as Lovell wrote.

Lovell sought advice on whether this scheme would work from New York psychiatrist Lawrence Kubie and from the famed Menninger brothers, Karl and William. The Menningers reported that the weight of the evidence showed hypnotism to be incapable of making people do anything that they would not otherwise do. Equally negative, Dr. Kubie added that if a German prisoner had a logical reason to kill Hitler or anyone else, he would not need hypnotism to motivate him.

Lovell and his coworkers apparently accepted this skeptical view of hypnosis, as did the overwhelming majority of psychologists and psychiatrists in the country. At the time,

KILL SWITCH

hypnosis was considered a fringe activity, and there was little recognition of either its validity or its usefulness for any purpose—let alone covert operations. Yet there were a handful of serious experimenters in the field who believed in its military potential. The most vocal partisan of this view was the head of the Psychology Department at Colgate University, George “Esty” Estabrooks. Since the early 1930s, Estabrooks had periodically ventured out from his sleepy upstate campus to advise the military on applications of hypnotism.

Estabrooks acknowledged that hypnosis did not work on everyone and that only one person in five made a good enough subject to be placed in a deep trance, or state of somnambulism. He believed that only these subjects could be induced to such things against their apparent will as reveal secrets or commit crimes. He had watched respected members of the community make fools of themselves in the hands of stage hypnotists, and he had compelled his own students to reveal fraternity secrets and the details of private love affairs—all of which the subjects presumably did not want to do.

Still his experience was limited. Estabrooks realized that the only certain way to know whether a person would commit a crime like murder under hypnosis was to have the person kill someone. Unwilling to settle the issue on his own by trying the experiment, he felt that government sanction of the process would relieve the hypnotist of personal responsibility. “Any ‘accidents’ that might occur during the experiments will simply be charged to profit and loss,” he wrote, “a very trifling portion of that enormous wastage in human life which is part and parcel of war.”

After Pearl Harbor, Estabrooks offered his ideas to OSS, but they were not accepted by anyone in government willing to carry them to their logical conclusion. He was reduced to writing books about the potential use of hypnotism in warfare. Cassandra-like, he tried to warn America of the perils posed by hypnotic control. His 1945 novel, *Death in the Mind*, concerned a series of seemingly treasonable acts committed by Allied personnel: an American submarine captain torpedoes one of our own battleships, and the beautiful heroine starts acting in an irrational way which serves the enemy. After a perilous investigation, secret agent Johnny Evans learns that the Germans have been hypnotizing Allied personnel and conditioning them to obey Nazi commands. Evans and his cohorts, shaken by the many ways hypnotism can be used against them, set up elaborate countermeasures and then cannot resist going on the offensive. Objections are heard from the heroine, who by this time has been brutally and rather graphically tortured. She complains that “doing things to people’s minds” is “a loathsome way to fight.” Her qualms are brushed aside by Johnny Evans, her lover and boss. He sets off after the Germans—“to tamper with their minds; Make them traitors; Make them work for us.”

In the aftermath of the war, as the U.S. national security apparatus was being constructed, the leaders of the Central Intelligence Agency would adopt Johnny Evans’ mission—almost in those very words. Richard Helms, Sid Gottlieb, John Gittinger, George White, and many others would undertake a far-flung and complicated assault on the human mind. In hypnosis and many other fields, scientists even more eager than George Estabrooks would seek CIA approval for the kinds of experiments they would not dare perform on their own. Sometimes the Agency men concurred; on other occasions, they reserved such experiments for themselves. They would tamper with many minds and inevitably cause some to be damaged. In the end, they would minimize and hide their deeds, and they would live to see doubts raised about the health of their own minds.

KILL SWITCH

Frank Olson's death could have been a major setback for the Agency's LSD testing, but the program, like Sid Gottlieb's career, emerged essentially unscathed. High CIA officials did call a temporary halt to all experiments while they investigated the Olson case and re-examined the general policy. They cabled the two field stations that had supplies of the drug (Manila and Atsugi, Japan) not to use it for the time being, and they even took away Sid Gottlieb's own private supply and had it locked up in his boss' safe, to which no one else had the combination. In the end, however, Allen Dulles accepted the view Richard Helms put forth that the only "operationally realistic" way to test drugs was to try them on unwitting people. Helms noted that experiments which gave advance warning would be "*pro forma* at best and result in a false sense of accomplishment and readiness." For Allen Dulles and his top aides, the possible importance of LSD clearly outweighed the risks and ethical problem of slipping the drug to involuntary subjects. They gave Gottlieb back his LSD.

Once the CIA's top echelon had made its decision to continue unwitting testing, there remained, in Richard Helms' words, "only then the question of how best to do it." The Agency's role in the Olson affair had come too perilously close to leaking out for the comfort of the security-minded, so TSS officials simply had to work out a testing system with better cover. That meant finding subjects who could not be so easily traced back to the Agency.

Well before Olson's death, Gottlieb and the MKULTRA crew had started pondering how best to do unwitting testing. They considered using an American police force to test drugs on prisoners, informants, and suspects, but they knew that some local politicians would inevitably find out. In the Agency view, such people could not be trusted to keep sensitive secrets. TSS officials thought about trying Federal prisons or hospitals, but, when sounded out, the Bureau of Prisons refused to go along with true unwitting testing (as opposed to the voluntary, if coercive, form practiced on drug addicts in Kentucky). They contemplated moving the program overseas, where they and the ARTICHOKE teams were already performing operational experiments, but they decided if they tested on the scale they thought was necessary, so many foreigners would have to know that it would pose an unacceptable security risk.

Sid Gottlieb is remembered as the brainstorming genius of the MKULTRA group—and the one with a real talent for showing others, without hurting their feelings, why their schemes would not work. States an ex-colleague who admires him greatly, "In the final analysis, Sid was like a good soldier—if the job had to be done, he did it. Once the decision was made, he found the most effective way."

In this case, Gottlieb came up with the solution after reading through old OSS files on Stanley Lovell's search for a truth drug. Gottlieb noted that Lovell had used George White, a prewar employee of the Federal Bureau of Narcotics, to test concentrated marijuana. Besides trying the drug out on Manhattan Project volunteers and unknowing suspected Communists, White had slipped some to August Del Gracio, the Lucky Luciano lieutenant. White had called the experiment a great success. If it had not been—if Del Gracio had somehow caught on to the drugging—Gottlieb realized that the gangster would never have gone to the police or the press. His survival as a criminal required he remain quiet about even the worst indignities heaped upon him by government agents.

To Gottlieb, underworld types looked like ideal test subjects. Nevertheless, according to one TSS source, "We were not about to fool around with the Mafia." Instead, this

KILL SWITCH

source says they chose “the borderline underworld”—prostitutes, drug addicts, and other small-timers who would be powerless to seek any sort of revenge if they ever found out what the CIA had done to them. In addition to their being unlikely whistle-blowers, such people lived in a world where an unwitting dose of some drug—usually knockout drops—was an occupational hazard anyway. They would therefore be better equipped to deal with—and recover from—a surprise LSD trip than the population as a whole. Or so TSS officials rationalized. “They could at least say to themselves, ‘Here I go again. I’ve been slipped a mickey,’” says a TSS veteran. Furthermore, this veteran remembers, his former colleagues reasoned that if they had to violate the civil rights of anyone, they might as well choose a group of marginal people.

George White himself had left OSS after the war and returned to the Narcotics Bureau. In 1952 he was working in the New York office. As a high-ranking narcotics agent, White had a perfect excuse to be around drugs and people who used them. He had proved during the war that he had a talent for clandestine work, and he certainly had no qualms when it came to unwitting testing. With his job, he had access to all the possible subjects the Agency would need, and if he could use LSD or any other drug to find out more about drug trafficking, so much the better. From a security viewpoint, CIA officials could easily deny any connection to anything White did, and he clearly was not the crybaby type. For Sid Gottlieb, George White was clearly the one. The MKULTRA chief decided to contact White directly to see if he might be interested in picking up with the CIA where he had left off with OSS.

Always careful to observe bureaucratic protocol, Gottlieb first approached Harry Anslinger, the longtime head of the Federal Bureau of Narcotics, and got permission to use White on a part-time basis. Then Gottlieb traveled to New York and made his pitch to the narcotics agent, who stood 5’7”, weighed over 200 pounds, shaved his head, and looked something like an extremely menacing bowling ball. After an early-morning meeting, White scrawled in his sweat-stained, leather-bound diary for that day, June 9, 1952: “Gottlieb proposed I be a CIA consultant—I agree.” By writing down such a thing and using Gottlieb’s true name,^[11] White had broken CIA security regulations even before he started work. But then, White was never known as a man who followed rules.

Despite the high priority that TSS put on drug testing, White’s security approval did not come through until almost a year later. “It was only last month that I got cleared,” the outspoken narcotics agent wrote to a friend in 1953. “I then learned that a couple of crew-cut, pipe-smoking punks had either known me—or heard of me—during OSS days and had decided I was ‘too rough’ for their league and promptly blackballed me. It was only when my sponsors discovered the root of the trouble they were able to bypass the blockade. After all, fellas, I didn’t go to Princeton.”

People either loved or hated George White, and he had made some powerful enemies, including New York Governor Thomas Dewey and J. Edgar Hoover. Dewey would later help block White from becoming the head of the Narcotics Bureau in New York City, a job White sorely wanted. For some forgotten reason, Hoover had managed to stop White from being hired by the CIA in the Agency’s early days, at a time when he would have preferred to leave narcotics work altogether. These were two of the biggest disappointments of his life. White’s previous exclusion from the CIA may explain why he jumped so eagerly at Gottlieb’s offer and why at the same time he privately heaped contempt on those who worked for the Agency. A remarkably heavy drinker, who would sometimes finish off a

KILL SWITCH

bottle of gin in one sitting, White often mocked the CIA crowd over cocktails. “He thought they were a joke,” recalls one longtime crony. “They were too complicated, and they had other people do their heavy stuff.”

Unlike his CIA counterparts, White loved the glare of publicity. A man who gloried in talking about himself and cultivating a hard-nosed image, White knew how to milk a drug bust for all it was worth—a skill that grew out of early years spent as a newspaper reporter in San Francisco and Los Angeles. In search of a more financially secure profession, he had joined the Narcotics Bureau in 1934, but he continued to pal around with journalists, particularly those who wrote favorably about him. Not only did he come across in the press as a cop hero, but he helped to shape the picture of future Kojaks by serving as a consultant to one of the early-television detective series. To start a raid, he would dramatically tip his hat to signal his agents—and to let the photographers know that the time had come to snap his picture. “He was sort of vainglorious,” says another good friend, “the kind of guy who if he did something, didn’t mind having the world know about it.”[12]

The scientists from TSS, with their Ph.D.s and lack of street experience, could not help admiring White for his swashbuckling image. Unlike the men from MKULTRA, who, for all their pretensions, had never worked as real-live spies, White had put his life on the line for OSS overseas and had supposedly killed a Japanese agent with his bare hands. The face of one ex-TSS man lit up, like a little boy’s on Christmas morning, as he told of racing around New York in George White’s car and parking illegally with no fear of the law. “We were Ivy League, white, middle-class,” notes another former TSSer. “We were naïve, totally naïve about this, and he felt pretty expert. He knew the whores, the pimps, the people who brought in the drugs. He’d purportedly been in a number of shootouts where he’d captured millions of dollars worth of heroin. . . . He was a pretty wild man. I know I was afraid of him. You couldn’t control this guy . . . I had a little trouble telling who was controlling who in those days.”

White lived with extreme personal contradictions. As could be expected of a narcotics agent, he violently opposed drugs. Yet he died largely because his beloved alcohol had destroyed his liver. He had tried everything else, from marijuana to LSD, and wrote an acquaintance, “I did feel at times I was having a ‘mind-expanding’ experience but this vanished like a dream immediately after the session.” He was a law-enforcement official who regularly violated the law. Indeed, the CIA turned to him because of his willingness to use the power of his office to ride roughshod over the rights of others—in the name of “national security,” when he tested LSD for the Agency, in the name of stamping out drug abuse, for the Narcotics Bureau. As yet another close associate summed up White’s attitude toward his job, “He really believed the ends justified the means.”

George White’s “pragmatic” approach meshed perfectly with Sid Gottlieb’s needs for drug testing. In May 1953 the two men, who wound up going folk dancing together several times, formally joined forces. In CIA jargon, White became MKULTRA subproject #3. Under this arrangement, White rented two adjacent Greenwich Village apartments, posing as the sometime artist and seaman “Morgan Hall.” White agreed to lure guinea pigs to the “safehouse”—as the Agency men called the apartments—slip them drugs, and report the results to Gottlieb and the others in TSS. For its part, the CIA let the Narcotics Bureau use the place for undercover activities (and often for personal pleasure) whenever no Agency work was scheduled, and the CIA paid all the bills, including the cost of keeping a well-stocked liquor cabinet—a substantial bonus for White. Gottlieb personally handed over the first

KILL SWITCH

\$4,000 in cash, to cover the initial costs of furnishing the safehouse in the lavish style that White felt befitted him.

Gottlieb did not limit his interest to drugs. He and other TSS officials wanted to try out surveillance equipment. CIA technicians quickly installed see-through mirrors and microphones through which eavesdroppers could film, photograph, and record the action. “Things go wrong with listening devices and two-way mirrors, so you build these things to find out what works and what doesn’t,” says a TSS source. “If you are going to entrap, you’ve got to give the guy pictures [*flagrante delicto*] and voice recordings. Once you learn how to do it so that the whole thing looks comfortable, cozy, and safe, then you can transport the technology overseas and use it.” This TSS man notes that the Agency put to work in the bedrooms of Europe some of the techniques developed in the George White safehouse operation.

In the safehouse’s first months, White tested LSD, several kinds of knockout drops, and that old OSS standby, essence of marijuana. He served up the drugs in food, drink, and cigarettes and then tried to worm information—usually on narcotics matters—from his “guests.” Sometimes MKULTRA men came up from Washington to watch the action. A September 1953 entry in White’s diary noted: “Lashbrook at 81 Bedford Street—Owen Winkle and LSD surprise—can wash.” Sid Gottlieb’s deputy, Robert Lashbrook, served as “project monitor” for the New York safehouse.[13]

White had only been running the safehouse six months when Olson died (in Lashbrook’s company), and Agency officials suspended the operation for re-evaluation. They soon allowed him to restart it, and then Gottlieb had to order White to slow down again. A New York State commissioner had summoned the narcotics agent to explain his role in the deal that wound up with Governor Dewey pardoning Lucky Luciano after the war. The commissioner was asking questions that touched on White’s use of marijuana on Del Gracio, and Gottlieb feared that word of the CIA’s current testing might somehow leak out. This storm also soon passed, but then, in early 1955, the Narcotics Bureau transferred White to San Francisco to become chief agent there. Happy with White’s performance, Gottlieb decided to let him take the entire safehouse operation with him to the Coast. White closed up the Greenwich Village apartments, leaving behind unreceipted “tips” for the landlord “to clear up any difficulties about the alterations and damages,” as a CIA document put it.[14]

White soon rented a suitable “pad” (as he always called it) on Telegraph Hill, with a stunning view of San Francisco Bay, the Golden Gate Bridge, and Alcatraz. To supplement the furniture he brought from the New York safehouse, he went out and bought items that gave the place the air of the brothel it was to become: Toulouse-Lautrec posters, a picture of a French cancan dancer, and photos of manacled women in black stockings. “It was supposed to look rich,” recalls a narcotics agent who regularly visited, “but it was furnished like crap.”

White hired a friend’s company to install bugging equipment, and William Hawkins, a 25-year-old electronics whiz then studying at Berkley put in four DD-4 microphones disguised as electrical wall outlets and hooked them up to two F-301 tape recorders, which agents monitored in an adjacent “listening post.” Hawkins remembers that White “kept a pitcher of martinis in the refrigerator, and he’d watch me for a while as I installed a microphone and then slip off.” For his own personal “observation post,” White had a portable

KILL SWITCH

toilet set up behind a two-way mirror, where he could watch the proceedings, usually with drink in hand.

The San Francisco safehouse specialized in prostitutes. “But this was before *The Hite Report* and before any hooker had written a book,” recalls a TSS man, “so first we had to go out and learn about their world. In the beginning, we didn’t know what a john was or what a pimp did.” Sid Gottlieb decided to send his top staff psychologist, John Gittinger, to San Francisco to probe the demimonde.

George White supplied the prostitutes for the study, although White, in turn, delegated much of the pimping function to one of his assistants, Ira “Ike” Feldman. A muscular but very short man, whom even the 5’7” White towered over, Feldman tried even harder than his boss to act tough. Dressed in suede shoes, a suit with flared trousers, a hat with a turned-up brim, and a huge zircon ring that was supposed to look like a diamond, Feldman first came to San Francisco on an undercover assignment posing as an East Coast mobster looking to make a big heroin buy. Using a drug-addicted prostitute name Janet Jones, whose common-law husband states that Feldman paid her off with heroin, the undercover man lured a number of suspected drug dealers to the “pad” and helped White make arrests.

As the chief Federal narcotics agent in San Francisco, White was in a position to reward or punish a prostitute. He set up a system whereby he and Feldman provided Gittinger with all the hookers the psychologist wanted. White paid off the women with a fixed number of “chits.” For each chit, White owed one favor. “So the next time the girl was arrested with a john,” says an MKULTRA veteran, “she would give the cop George White’s phone number. The police all knew White and cooperated with him without asking questions. They would release the girl if he said so. White would keep good records of how many chits each person had and how many she used. No money was exchanged, but five chits were worth \$500 to \$1,000.” Prostitutes were not the only beneficiaries of White’s largess. The narcotics agent worked out a similar system to forgive the transgressions of small time drug pushers when the MKULTRA men wanted to talk to them about “the rules of their game,” according to the source.

TSS officials wanted to find out everything they could about how to apply sex to spying, and the prostitute project became a general learning and then training ground for CIA carnal operations. After all, states one TSS official, “We did quite a study of prostitutes and their behavior. . . . At first nobody really knew how to use them. How do you train them? How do you work them? How do you take a woman who is willing to use her body to get money out of a guy to get things which are much more important, like state secrets. I don’t care how beautiful she is—educating the ordinary prostitute up to that level is not a simple task.”

The TSS men continually tried to refine their knowledge. They realized that prostitutes often wheedled extra money out of a customer by suggesting some additional service as male orgasm neared. They wondered if this might not also be a good time to seek sensitive information. “But no,” says the source, “we found the guy was focused solely on hormonal needs. He was not thinking of his career or anything else at that point.” The TSS experts discovered that the postsexual, light-up-a-cigarette period was much better suited to their ulterior motives. Says the source:

Most men who go to prostitutes are prepared for the fact that [after the act] she’s beginning to work to get herself out of there, so she can get back on the street to make some

KILL SWITCH

more money. . . . To find a prostitute who is willing to stay is a hell of a shock to anyone used to prostitutes. It has a tremendous effect on the guy. It's a boost to his ego if she's telling him he was really neat, and she wants to stay for a few more hours. . . . Most of the time, he gets pretty vulnerable. What the hell's he going to talk about? Not the sex, so he starts talking about his business. It's at this time she can lead him gently. But you have to train prostitutes to do that. Their natural inclination is to do exactly the opposite.

The men from MKULTRA learned a great deal about varying sexual preferences. One of them says:

We didn't know in those days about hidden sadism and all that sort of stuff. We learned a lot about human nature in the bedroom. We began to understand that when people wanted sex, it wasn't just what we had thought of—you know, the missionary position. . . . We started to pick up knowledge that could be used in operations, but with a lot of it we never figured out any way to use it operationally. We just learned. . . . All these ideas did not come to us at once. But evolving over three or four years in which these studies were going on, things emerged which we tried. Our knowledge of prostitutes' behavior became pretty damn good. . . . This comes across now that somehow we were just playing around and we just found all these exotic ways to waste the taxpayers' money on satisfying our hidden urges. I'm not saying that watching prostitutes was not exciting or something like that. But what I am saying was there was a purpose to the whole business.[15]

In the best tradition of Mata Hari, the CIA did use sex as a clandestine weapon, although apparently not so frequently as the Russians. While many in the Agency believed that it simply did not work very well, others like CIA operators in Berlin during the mid-1960s felt prostitutes could be a prime source of intelligence. Agency men in that city used a network of hookers to good advantage—or so they told visitors from headquarters. Yet, with its high proportion of Catholics and Mormons—not to mention the Protestant ethic of many of its top leaders—the Agency definitely had limits beyond which prudery took over. For instance, a TSS veteran says that a good number of case officers wanted no part of homosexual entrapment operations. And to go a step further, he recalls one senior KGB man who told too many sexual jokes about young boys. “It didn't take too long to recognize that he was more than a little fascinated by youths,” says the source. “I took the trouble to point out he was probably too good, too well-trained, to be either entrapped or to give away secrets. But he would have been tempted toward a compromising position by a preteen. I mentioned this, and they said, ‘As a psychological observer, you're probably quite right. But what the hell are we going to do about it? Where are we going to get a twelve-year-old boy?’” The source believes that if the Russian had had a taste for older men, U.S. intelligence might have mounted an operation, “but the idea of a twelve-year-old boy was just more than anybody could stomach.”

As the TSS men learned more about the San Francisco hustlers, they ventured outside the safehouse to try out various clandestine-delivery gimmicks in public places like restaurants, bars, and beaches. They practiced ways to slip LSD to citizens of the demi-monde while buying them a drink or lighting up a cigarette, and they then tried to observe the effects when the drug took hold. Because the MKULTRA scientists did not move smoothly among the very kinds of people they were testing, they occasionally lost an unwitting victim in a crowd—thereby sending a stranger off alone with a head full of LSD.

In a larger sense, *all* the test victims would become lost. As a matter of policy, Sid

KILL SWITCH

Gottlieb ordered that virtually no records be kept of the testing. In 1973, when Gottlieb retired from the Agency, he and Richard Helms agreed to destroy what they thought were the few existing documents on the program. Neither Gottlieb nor any other MKULTRA man has owned up to having given LSD to an unknowing subject, or even to observing such an experiment—except of course in the case of Frank Olson. Olson's death left behind a paper trail outside of Gottlieb's control and that hence could not be denied. Otherwise, Gottlieb and his colleagues have put all the blame for actual testing on George White, who is not alive to defend himself. One reason the MKULTRA veterans have gone to such lengths to conceal their role is obvious: fear of lawsuits from victims claiming damaged health.

At the time of the experiments, the subjects' health did not cause undue concern. At the safehouse, where most of the testing took place, doctors were seldom present. Dr. James Hamilton, a Stanford Medical School psychiatrist and White's OSS colleague, visited the place from time to time, apparently for studies connected to unwitting drug experiments and deviant sexual practices. Yet neither Hamilton nor any other doctor provided much medical supervision. From his perch atop the toilet seat, George White could do no more than make surface observations of his drugged victims. Even an experienced doctor would have had difficulty handling White's role. In addition to LSD, which they knew could cause serious, if not fatal problems, TSS officials gave White even more exotic experimental drugs to test, drugs that other Agency contractors may or may not have already used on human subjects. "If we were scared enough of a drug not to try it out on ourselves, we sent it to San Francisco," recalls a TSS source. According to a 1963 report by CIA Inspector General John Earman, "In a number of instances, however, the test subject has become ill for hours or days, including hospitalization in at least one case, and [White] could only follow up by guarded inquiry after the test subject's return to normal life. Possible sickness and attendant economic loss are inherent contingent effects of the testing."

The Inspector General noted that the whole program could be compromised if an outside doctor made a "correct diagnosis of an illness." Thus, the MKULTRA team not only made some people sick but had a vested interest in keeping doctors from finding out what was really wrong. If that bothered the Inspector General, he did not report his qualms, but he did say he feared "serious damage to the Agency" in the event of public exposure. The Inspector General was only somewhat reassured by the fact that George White "maintain[ed] close working relations with local police authorities which could be utilized to protect the activity in critical situations."

If TSS officials had been willing to stick with their original target group of marginal underworld types, they would have had little to fear from the police. After all, George White was the police. But increasingly they used the safehouse to test drugs, in the Inspector General's words, "on individuals of all social levels, high and low, native American and foreign." After all, they were looking for an operational payoff, and they knew people reacted differently to LSD according to everything from health and mood to personality structure. If TSS officials wanted to slip LSD to foreign leaders, as they contemplated doing to Fidel Castro, they would try to spring an unwitting dose on somebody as similar as possible. They used the safehouse for "dry runs" in the intermediate stage between the laboratory and actual operations.

For these dress rehearsals, George White and his staff procurer, Ike Feldman, enticed men to the apartment with prostitutes. An unsuspecting john would think he had bought a night of pleasure, go back to a strange apartment, and wind up zonked. A CIA document

KILL SWITCH

that survived Sid Gottlieb's shredding recorded this process. Its author, Gottlieb himself, could not break a lifelong habit of using nondescriptive language. For the MKULTRA chief, the whores were "certain individuals who covertly administer this material to other people in accordance with [White's] instructions." White normally paid the women \$100 in Agency funds for their night's work, and Gottlieb's prose reached new bureaucratic heights as he explained why the prostitutes did not sign for the money: "Due to the highly unorthodox nature of these activities and the considerable risk incurred by these individuals, it is impossible to require that they provide a receipt for these payments or that they indicate the precise manner in which the funds were spent." The CIA's auditors had to settle for canceled checks which White cashed himself and marked either "Stormy" or, just as appropriately, "Undercover Agent." The program was also referred to as "Operation Midnight Climax."

TSS officials found the San Francisco safehouse so successful that they opened a branch office, also under George White's auspices, across the Golden Gate on the beach in Marin County.[16] Unlike the downtown apartment, where an MKULTRA man says "you could bring people in for quickies after lunch," the suburban Marin County outlet proved useful for experiments that required relative isolation. There, TSS scientists tested such MKULTRA specialties as stink bombs, itching and sneezing powders, and diarrhea inducers. TSS's Ray Treichler, the Stanford chemist, sent these "harassment substances" out to California for testing by White, along with such delivery systems as a mechanical launcher that could throw a foul-smelling object 100 yards, glass ampules that could be stepped on in a crowd to release any of Treichler's powders, a fine hypodermic needle to inject drugs through the cork in a wine bottle, and a drug-coated swizzle stick.

TSS men also planned to use the Marin County safehouse for an ill-fated experiment that began when staff psychologists David Rhodes and Walter Pasternak spent a week circulating in bars, inviting strangers to a party. They wanted to spray LSD from an aerosol can on their guests, but according to Rhodes' Senate testimony, "the weather defeated us." In the heat of the summer, they could not close the doors and windows long enough for the LSD to hang in the air and be inhaled. Sensing a botched operation, their MKULTRA colleague, John Gittinger (who brought the drug out from Washington) shut himself in the bathroom and let go with the spray. Still, Rhodes testified, Gittinger did not get high, and the CIA men apparently scrubbed the party.[17]

The MKULTRA crew continued unwitting testing until the summer of 1963 when the Agency's Inspector General stumbled across the safehouses during a regular inspection of TSS activities. This happened not long after Director John McCone had appointed John Earman to the Inspector General position.[18] Much to the displeasure of Sid Gottlieb and Richard Helms, Earman questioned the propriety of the safehouses, and he insisted that Director McCone be given a full briefing. Although President Kennedy had put McCone in charge of the Agency the year before, Helms—the professional's professional—had not bothered to tell his outsider boss about some of the CIA's most sensitive activities, including the safehouses and the CIA-Mafia assassination plots.[19] Faced with Earman's demands, Helms—surely one of history's most clever bureaucrats—volunteered to tell McCone himself about the safehouses (rather than have Earman present a negative view of the program). Sure enough, Helms told Earman afterward, McCone raised no objections to unwitting testing (as Helms described it). A determined man and a rather brave one, Earman countered with a full written report to McCone recommending that the safehouses be closed.

KILL SWITCH

The Inspector General cited the risks of exposure and pointed out that many people both inside and outside the Agency found “the concepts involved in manipulating human behavior . . . to be distasteful and unethical.” McCone reacted by putting off a final decision but suspending unwitting testing in the meantime. Over the next year, Helms, who then headed the Clandestine Services, wrote at least three memos urging resumption. He cited “indications . . . of an apparent Soviet aggressiveness in the field of covertly administered chemicals which are, to say the least, inexplicable and disturbing,” and he claimed the CIA’s “positive operational capacity to use drugs is diminishing owing to a lack of realistic testing.”[20] To Richard Helms, the importance of the program exceeded the risks and the ethical questions, although he did admit, “We have no answer to the moral issue.” McCone simply did nothing for two years. The director’s indecision had the effect of killing the program, nevertheless. TSS officials closed the San Francisco safehouse in 1965 and the New York one in 1966.

Years later in a personal letter to Sid Gottlieb, George White wrote an epitaph for his role with the CIA: “I was a very minor missionary, actually a heretic, but I toiled wholeheartedly in the vineyards because it was fun, fun, fun. Where else could a red-blooded American boy lie, kill, cheat, steal, rape, and pillage with the sanction and blessing of the All-Highest?”

After 10 years of unwitting testing, the men from MKULTRA apparently scored no major breakthroughs with LSD or other drugs. They found no effective truth drug, recruitment pill, or aphrodisiac. LSD had not opened up the mind to CIA control. “We had thought at first that this was the secret that was going to unlock the universe,” says a TSS veteran. “We found that human beings had resources far greater than imagined.”

Yet despite the lack of precision and uncertainty, the CIA still made field use of LSD and other drugs that had worked their way through the MKULTRA testing progression. A 1957 report showed that TSS had already moved 6 drugs out of the experimental stage and into active use. Up to that time, CIA operators had utilized LSD and other psychochemicals against 33 targets in 6 different operations. Agency officials hoped in these cases either to discredit the subject by making him seem insane or to “create within the individual a mental and emotional situation which will release him from the restraint of self-control and induce him to reveal information willingly under adroit manipulation.” The Agency has consistently refused to release details of these operations, and TSS sources who talk rather freely about other matters seem to develop amnesia when the subject of field use comes up. Nevertheless, it can be said that the CIA did establish a relationship with an unnamed foreign secret service to interrogate prisoners with LSD-like drugs. CIA operators participated directly in these interrogations, which continued at least until 1966. Often the Agency showed more concern for the safety of its operational targets abroad than it did for its unwitting victims in San Francisco, since some of the foreign subjects were given medical examinations before being slipped the drug.[21]

In these operations, CIA men sometimes brought in local doctors for reasons that had nothing to do with the welfare of the patient. Instead, the doctor’s role was to certify the apparent insanity of a victim who had been unwittingly dosed with LSD or an even more durable psychochemical like BZ (which causes trips lasting a week or more and which tends to induce violent behavior). If a doctor were to prescribe hospitalization or other severe treatment, the effect on the subject could be devastating. He would suffer not only the experience itself, including possible confinement in a mental institution, but also social stigma.

KILL SWITCH

In most countries, even the suggestion of mental problems severely damages an individual's professional and personal standing (as Thomas Eagleton, the recipient of some shock therapy, can testify). "It's an old technique," says an MKULTRA veteran. "You neutralize someone by having their constituency doubt them." The Church committee confirms that the Agency used this technique at least several times to assassinate a target's character. [22]

Still, the Clandestine Services did not frequently call on TSS for LSD or other drugs. Many operators had practical and ethical objections. In part to overcome such objections and also to find better ways to use chemical and biological substances in covert operations, Sid Gottlieb moved up in 1959 to become Assistant for Scientific Matters to the Clandestine Services chief. Gottlieb found that TSS had kept the MKULTRA programs so secret that many field people did not even know what techniques were available. He wrote that tight controls over field use in MKDELTA operations "may have generated a general defeatism among case officers," who feared they would not receive permission or that the procedure was not worth the effort. Gottlieb tried to correct these shortcomings by providing more information on the drug arsenal to senior operators and by streamlining the approval process. He had less luck in overcoming views that drugs do not work or are not reliable, and that their operational use leads to laziness and poor tradecraft.

If the MKULTRA program had ever found that LSD or any other drug really did turn a man into a puppet, Sid Gottlieb would have had no trouble surmounting all those biases. Instead, Gottlieb and his fellow searchers came frustratingly close but always fell short of finding a reliable control mechanism. LSD certainly penetrated to the innermost regions of the mind. It could spring loose a whole gamut of feelings, from terror to insight. But in the end, the human psyche proved so complex that even the most skilled manipulator could not anticipate all the variables. He could use LSD and other drugs to chip away at free will. He could score temporary victories, and he could alter moods, perception—sometimes even beliefs. He had the power to cause great harm, but ultimately he could not conquer the human spirit.

In September 1950, the *Miami News* published an article by Edward Hunter titled "'Brain-Washing' Tactics Force Chinese into Ranks of Communist Party." It was the first printed use in any language of the term "brainwashing," which quickly became a stock phrase in Cold War headlines. Hunter, a CIA propaganda operator who worked under cover as a journalist, turned out a steady stream of books and articles on the subject. He made up his coined word from the Chinese *hsi-nao*—"to cleanse the mind"—which had no political meaning in Chinese.

American public opinion reacted strongly to Hunter's ideas, no doubt because of the hostility that prevailed toward communist foes, whose ways were perceived as mysterious and alien. Most Americans knew something about the famous trial of the Hungarian Josef Cardinal Mindszenty, at which the Cardinal appeared zombie-like, as though drugged or hypnotized. Other defendants at Soviet "show trials" had displayed similar symptoms as they recited unbelievable confessions in dull, cliché-ridden monotonous tones. Americans were familiar with the idea that the communists had ways to control hapless people, and Hunter's new word helped pull together the unsettling evidence into one sharp fear. The brainwashing controversy intensified during the heavy 1952 fighting in Korea, when the Chinese government launched a propaganda offensive that featured recorded statements by captured U.S. pilots, who "confessed" to a variety of war crimes including the use of germ warfare.

KILL SWITCH

The official American position on prisoner confessions was that they were false and forced. As expressed in an Air Force Headquarters document, “Confessions can be of truthful details. . . . For purposes of this section, ‘confessions’ are considered as being the forced admission to a lie.” But if the military had understandable reasons to gloss over the truth or falsity of the confessions, this still did not address the fact that confessions had been made at all. Nor did it lay to rest the fears of those like Edward Hunter who saw the confessions as proof that the communists now had techniques “to put a man’s mind into a fog so that he will mistake what is true for what is untrue, what is right for what is wrong, and come to believe what did not happen actually had happened, until he ultimately becomes a robot for the Communist manipulator.”

By the end of the Korean War, 70 percent of the 7,190 U.S. prisoners held in China had either made confessions or signed petitions calling for an end to the American war effort in Asia. Fifteen percent collaborated fully with the Chinese, and only 5 percent steadfastly resisted. The American performance contrasted poorly with that of the British, Australian, Turkish, and other United Nations prisoners—among whom collaboration was rare, even though studies showed they were treated about as badly as the Americans. Worse, an alarming number of the prisoners stuck by their confessions after returning to the United States. They did not, as expected, recant as soon as they stepped on U.S. soil. Puzzled and dismayed by this wholesale collapse of morale among the POWs, American opinion leaders settled in on Edward Hunter’s explanation: The Chinese had somehow brainwashed our boys.

But how? At the height of the brainwashing furor, conservative spokesmen often seized upon the very mystery of it all to give a religious cast to the political debate. All communists have been, by definition, brainwashed through satanic forces, they argued—thereby making the enemy seem like robots completely devoid of ordinary human feelings and motivation. Liberals favored a more scientific view of the problem. Given the incontrovertible evidence that the Russians and the Chinese could, in a very short time and often under difficult circumstances, alter the basic belief and behavior patterns of both domestic and foreign captives, liberals argued that there must be a technique involved that would yield its secrets under objective investigation.

CIA Director Allen Dulles favored the scientific approach, although he naturally encouraged his propaganda experts to exploit the more emotional interpretations of brainwashing. Dulles and the heads of the other American security agencies became almost frantic in their efforts to find out more about the Soviet and Chinese successes in mind control. Under pressure for answers, Dulles turned to Dr. Harold Wolff, a world-famous neurologist with whom he had developed an intensely personal relationship. Wolff was then treating Dulles’ own son for brain damage suffered from a Korean War head wound. Together they shared the trauma of the younger Dulles’ fits and mental lapses. Wolff, a skinny little doctor with an overpowering personality, became fast friends with the tall, patrician CIA Director. Dulles may have seen brainwashing as an induced form of brain damage or mental illness. In any case, in late 1953, he asked Wolff to conduct an official study of communist brainwashing techniques for the CIA. Wolff, who had become fascinated by the Director’s tales of the clandestine world, eagerly accepted.

Harold Wolff was known primarily as an expert on migraine headaches and pain, but he had served on enough military and intelligence advisory panels that he knew how to pick up Dulles’ mandate and expand on it. He formed a working partnership with Lawrence

KILL SWITCH

Hinkle, his colleague at Cornell University Medical College in New York City. Hinkle handled the administrative part of the study and shared in the substance. Before going ahead, the two doctors made sure they had the approval of Cornell's president, Deane W. Malott and other high university officials who checked with their contacts in Washington to make sure the project did indeed have the great importance that Allen Dulles stated. Hinkle recalls a key White House aide urging Cornell to cooperate. The university administration agreed, and soon Wolff and Hinkle were poring over the Agency's classified files on brainwashing. CIA officials also helped arrange interviews with former communist interrogators and prisoners alike. "It was done with great secrecy," recalls Hinkle. "We went through a great deal of hoop-de-do and signed secrecy agreements, which everyone took very seriously."

The team of Wolff and Hinkle became the chief brainwashing studiers for the U.S. government, although the Air Force and Army ran parallel programs.[23] Their secret report to Allen Dulles, later published in a declassified version, was considered the definitive U.S. Government work on the subject. In fact, if allowances are made for the Cold War rhetoric of the fifties, the Wolff-Hinkle report still remains one of the better accounts of the massive political re-education programs in China and the Soviet Union. It stated flatly that neither the Soviets nor the Chinese had any magical weapons—no drugs, exotic mental ray-guns, or other fanciful machines. Instead, the report pictured communist interrogation methods resting on skillful, if brutal, application of police methods. Its portrait of the Soviet system anticipates, in dry and scholarly form, the work of novelist Alexander Solzhenitzyn in *The Gulag Archipelago*. Hinkle and Wolff showed that the Soviet technique rested on the cumulative weight of intense psychological pressure and human weakness, and this thesis alone earned the two Cornell doctors the enmity of the more right-wing CIA officials such as Edward Hunter. Several of his former acquaintances remember that Hunter was fond of saying that the Soviets brainwashed people the way Pavlov had conditioned dogs.

In spite of some dissenters like Hunter, the Wolff-Hinkle model became, with later refinements, the best available description of extreme forms of political indoctrination. According to the general consensus, the Soviets started a new prisoner off by putting him in solitary confinement. A rotating corps of guards watched him constantly, humiliating and demeaning him at every opportunity and making it clear he was totally cut off from all outside support. The guards ordered him to stand for long periods, let him sit, told him exactly the position he could take to lie down, and woke him if he moved in the slightest while sleeping. They banned all outside stimuli—books, conversation, or news of the world.

After four to six weeks of this mind-deadening routine, the prisoner usually found the stress unbearable and broke down. "He weeps, he mutters, and prays aloud in his cell," wrote Hinkle and Wolff. When the prisoner reached this stage, the interrogation began. Night after night, the guards brought him into a special room to face the interrogator. Far from confronting his captive with specific misdeeds, the interrogator told him that he knew his own crimes—all too well. In the most harrowing Kafkaesque way, the prisoner tried to prove his innocence to he knew not what. Together the interrogator and prisoner reviewed the prisoner's life in detail. The interrogator seized on any inconsistency—no matter how minute—as further evidence of guilt, and he laughed at the prisoner's efforts to justify himself. But at least the prisoner was getting a response of some sort. The long weeks of isolation and uncertainty had made him grateful for human contact even grateful that his case was moving toward resolution. True, it moved only as fast as he was willing to incriminate himself, but . . . Gradually, he came to see that he and his interrogator were working toward

KILL SWITCH

the same goal of wrapping up his case. In tandem, they ransacked his soul. The interrogator would periodically let up the pressure. He offered a cigarette, had a friendly chat, explained he had a job to do—making it all the more disappointing the next time he had to tell the prisoner that his confession was unsatisfactory .

As the charges against him began to take shape, the prisoner realized that he could end his ordeal only with a full confession. Otherwise the grueling sessions would go on forever. “The regimen of pressure has created an overall discomfort which is well nigh intolerable,” wrote Hinkle and Wolff. “The prisoner invariably feels that ‘something must be done to end this.’ He must find a way out.” A former KGB officer, one of many former interrogators and prisoners interviewed for the CIA study, said that more than 99 percent of all prisoners signed a confession at this stage.

In the Soviet system under Stalin, these confessions were the final step of the interrogation process, and the prisoners usually were shot or sent to a labor camp after sentencing. Today, Russian leaders seem much less insistent on exacting confessions before jailing their foes, but they still use the penal (and mental health) system to remove from the population classes of people hostile to their rule.

The Chinese took on the more ambitious task of re-educating their prisoners. For them, confession was only the beginning. Next, the Chinese authorities moved the prisoner into a group cell where his indoctrination began. From morning to night, he and his fellow prisoners studied Marx and Mao, listened to lectures, and engaged in self-criticism. Since the progress of each member depended on that of his cellmates, the group pounced on the slightest misconduct as an indication of backsliding. Prisoners demonstrated the zeal of their commitment by ferociously attacking deviations. Constant intimacy with people who reviled him pushed the resistant prisoner to the limits of his emotional endurance. Hinkle and Wolff found that “The prisoner must conform to the demands of the group sooner or later.” As the prisoner developed genuine changes of attitude, pressure on him relaxed. His cellmates rewarded him with increasing acceptance and esteem. Their acceptance, in turn, reinforced his commitment to the Party, for he learned that only this commitment allowed him to live successfully in the cell. In many cases, this process produced an exultant sense of mission in the prisoner—a feeling of having finally straightened out his life and come to the truth. To be sure, this experience, which was not so different from religious conversion, did not occur in all cases or always last after the prisoner returned to a social group that did not reinforce it.

From the first preliminary studies of Wolff and Hinkle, the U.S. intelligence community moved toward the conclusion that neither the Chinese nor the Russians made appreciable use of drugs or hypnosis, and they certainly did not possess the brainwashing equivalent of the atomic bomb (as many feared). Most of their techniques were rooted in age-old methods, and CIA brainwashing researchers like psychologist John Gittinger found themselves poring over ancient documents on the Spanish Inquisition. Furthermore, the communists used no psychiatrists or other behavioral scientists to devise their interrogation system. The differences between the Soviet and Chinese systems seemed to grow out of their respective national cultures. The Soviet brainwashing system resembled a heavy-handed cop whose job was to isolate, break, and then subdue all the troublemakers in the neighborhood. The Chinese system was more like thousands of skilled acupuncturists, working on each other and relying on group pressure, ideology, and repetition. To understand further the Soviet or Chinese control systems, one had to plunge into the subtle mysteries of

KILL SWITCH

national and individual character.

While CIA researchers looked into those questions, the main thrust of the Agency's brainwashing studies veered off in a different direction. The logic behind the switch was familiar in the intelligence business. Just because the Soviets and the Chinese had not invented a brainwashing machine, officials reasoned, there was no reason to assume that the task was impossible. If such a machine were even remotely feasible, one had to assume the communists might discover it. And in that case, national security required that the United States invent the machine first. Therefore, the CIA built up its own elaborate brainwashing program, which, like the Soviet and Chinese versions, took its own special twist from *our* national character. It was a tiny replica of the Manhattan Project, grounded in the conviction that the keys to brainwashing lay in technology. Agency officials hoped to use old-fashioned American know-how to produce shortcuts and scientific breakthroughs. Instead of turning to tough cops, whose methods repelled American sensibilities, or the gurus of mass motivation, whose ideology Americans lacked, the Agency's brainwashing experts gravitated to people more in the mold of the brilliant—and sometimes mad—scientist, obsessed by the wonders of the brain.

In 1953 CIA Director Allen Dulles made a rare public statement on communist brainwashing: "We in the West are somewhat handicapped in getting all the details," Dulles declared. "There are few survivors, and we have no human guinea pigs to try these extraordinary techniques." Even as Dulles spoke, however, CIA officials acting under his orders had begun to find the scientists and the guinea pigs. Some of their experiments would wander so far across the ethical borders of experimental psychiatry (which are hazy in their own right) that Agency officials thought it prudent to have much of the work done outside the United States.

Call her Lauren G. For 19 years, her mind has been blank about her experience. She remembers her husband's driving her up to the old gray stone mansion that housed the hospital, Allan Memorial Institute, and putting her in the care of its director, Dr. D. Ewen Cameron. The next thing she recalls happened three weeks later:

They gave me a dressing gown. It was way too big, and I was tripping all over it. I was mad. I asked why did I have to go round in this sloppy thing. I could hardly move because I was pretty weak. I remember trying to walk along the hall, and the walls were all slanted. It was then that I said, "Holy Smokes, what a ghastly thing." I remember running out the door and going up the mountain in my long dressing gown.

The mountain, named *Mont Royal*, loomed high above Montreal. She stumbled and staggered as she tried to climb higher and higher. Hospital staff members had no trouble catching her and dragging her back to the Institute. In short order, they shot her full of sedatives, attached electrodes to her temples, and gave her a dose of electroshock. Soon she slept like a baby.

Gradually, over the next few weeks, Lauren G. began to function like a normal person again. She took basket-weaving therapy and played bridge with her fellow patients. The hospital released her, and she returned to her husband in another Canadian city.

Before her mental collapse in 1959, Lauren G. seemed to have everything going for her. A refined, glamorous horsewoman of 30, whom people often said looked like Elizabeth Taylor, she had auditioned for the lead in *National Velvet* at 13 and married the rich boy next door at 20. But she had never loved her husband and had let her domineering mother push

KILL SWITCH

her into his arms. He drank heavily. “I was really unhappy,” she recalls. “I had a horrible marriage, and finally I had a nervous breakdown. It was a combination of my trying to lose weight, sleep loss, and my nerves.”

The family doctor recommended that her husband send her to Dr. Cameron, which seemed like a logical thing to do, considering his wide fame as a psychiatrist. He had headed Allan Memorial since 1943, when the Rockefeller Foundation had donated funds to set up a psychiatric facility at McGill University. With continuing help from the Rockefellers, McGill had built a hospital known far beyond Canada’s borders as innovative and exciting. Cameron was elected president of the American Psychiatric Association in 1953, and he became the first president of the World Psychiatric Association. His friends joked that they had run out of honors to give him.

Cameron’s passion lay in the more “objective” forms of therapy, with which he could more easily and swiftly bring about improvements in patients than with the notoriously slow Freudian methods. An impatient man, he dreamed of finding a cure for schizophrenia. No one could tell him he was not on the right track. Cameron’s supporter at the Rockefeller Foundation, Robert Morrison, recorded in his private papers that he found the psychiatrist tense and ill-at-ease, and Morrison ventured that this may account for “his lack of interest and effectiveness in psychotherapy and failure to establish warm personal relations with faculty members, both of which were mentioned repeatedly when I visited Montreal.” Another Rockefeller observer noted that Cameron “appears to suffer from deep insecurity and has a need for power which he nourishes by maintaining an extraordinary aloofness from his associates.”

When Lauren G.’s husband delivered her to Cameron, the psychiatrist told him she would receive some electroshock, a standard treatment at the time. Besides that, states her husband, “Cameron was not very communicative, but I didn’t think she was getting anything out of the ordinary.” The husband had no way of knowing that Cameron would use an unproved experimental technique on his wife—much less that the psychiatrist intended to “depattern” her. Nor did he realize that the CIA was supporting this work with about \$19,000 a year in secret funds. [24]

Cameron defined “depatterning” as breaking up existing patterns of behavior, both the normal and the schizophrenic, by means of particularly intensive electroshocks, usually combined with prolonged, drug-induced sleep. Here was a psychiatrist willing—indeed, eager—to wipe the human mind totally clean. Back in 1951, ARTICHOKE’s Morse Allen had likened the process to “creation of a vegetable.” Cameron justified this *tabula rasa* approach because he had a theory of “differential amnesia,” for which he provided no statistical evidence when he published it. He postulated that after he produced “complete amnesia” in a subject, the person would eventually recover memory of his normal but not his schizophrenic behavior. Thus, Cameron claimed he could generate “differential amnesia.” Creating such a state in which a man who knew too much could be made to forget had long been a prime objective of the ARTICHOKE and MKULTRA programs.

Needless to say, Lauren G. does not recall a thing today about those weeks when Cameron depatterned her. Afterward, unlike over half of the psychiatrist’s depatterning patients, Lauren G. gradually recovered full recall of her life before the treatment, but then, she remembered her mental problems, too. [25] Her husband says she came out of the hospital much improved. She declares the treatment had no effect one way or another on her

KILL SWITCH

mental condition, which she believes resulted directly from her miserable marriage. She stopped seeing Cameron after about a month of outpatient electroshock treatments, which she despised. Her relationship with her husband further deteriorated, and two years later she walked out on him. "I just got up on my own hind legs," she states. "I said the hell with it. I'm going to do what I want and take charge of my own life. I left and started over." Now divorced and remarried, she feels she has been happy ever since.

Cameron's depatterning, of which Lauren G. had a comparatively mild version, normally started with 15 to 30 days of "sleep therapy." As the name implies, the patient slept almost the whole day and night. According to a doctor at the hospital who used to administer what he calls the "sleep cocktail," a staff member woke up the patient three times a day for medication that consisted of a combination of 100 mg. Thorazine, 100 mg. Nembutal, 100 mg. Seconal, 150 mg. Veronal, and 10 mg. Phenergan. Another staff doctor would also awaken the patient two or sometimes three times daily for electroshock treatments. [26] This doctor and his assistant wheeled a portable machine into the "sleep room" and gave the subject a local anesthetic and muscle relaxant, so as not to cause damage with the convulsions that were to come. After attaching electrodes soaked in saline solution, the attendant held the patient down and the doctor turned on the current. In standard, professional electroshock, doctors gave the subject a single dose of 110 volts, lasting a fraction of a second, once a day or every other day. By contrast, Cameron used a form 20 to 40 times more intense, two or three times daily, with the power turned up to 150 volts. Named the "Page-Russell" method after its British originators, this technique featured an initial one-second shock, which caused a major convulsion, and then five to nine additional shocks in the middle of the primary and follow-on convulsions. Even Drs. Page and Russell limited their treatment to once a day, and they always stopped as soon as their patient showed "pronounced confusion" and became "faulty in habits." Cameron, however, welcomed this kind of impairment as a sign the treatment was taking effect and plowed ahead through his routine.

The frequent screams of patients that echoed through the hospital did not deter Cameron or most of his associates in their attempts to "depattern" their subjects completely. Other hospital patients report being petrified by the "sleep rooms," where the treatment took place, and they would usually creep down the opposite side of the hall.

Cameron described this combined sleep-electroshock treatment as lasting between 15 to 30 days, with some subjects staying in up to 65 days (in which case, he reported, he awakened them for three days in the middle). Sometimes, as in the case of Lauren G., patients would try to escape when the sedatives wore thin, and the staff would have to chase after them. "It was a tremendous nursing job just to keep these people going during the treatment," recalls a doctor intimately familiar with Cameron's operation. This doctor paints a picture of dazed patients, incapable of taking care of themselves, often groping their way around the hospital and urinating on the floor.

Cameron wrote that his typical depatterning patient—usually a woman—moved through three distinct stages. In the first, the subject lost much of her memory. Yet she still knew where she was, why she was there, and who the people were who treated her. In the second phase, she lost her "space-time image," but still wanted to remember. In fact, not being able to answer questions like, "Where am I?" and "How did I get here?" caused her considerable anxiety. In the third stage, all that anxiety disappeared. Cameron described the state as "an extremely interesting constriction of the range of recollections which one ordinarily brings in to modify and enrich one's statements. Hence, what the patient talks

KILL SWITCH

about are only his sensations of the moment, and he talks about them almost exclusively in highly concrete terms. His remarks are entirely uninfluenced by previous recollections—nor are they governed in any way by his forward anticipations. He lives in the immediate present. All schizophrenic symptoms have disappeared. There is complete amnesia for all events in his life.”

Lauren G. and 52 other subjects at Allan Memorial received this level of depatterning in 1958 and 1959. Cameron had already developed the technique when the CIA funding started. The Agency sent the psychiatrist research money to take the treatment *beyond* this point. Agency officials wanted to know if, once Cameron had produced the blank mind, he could then program in new patterns of behavior, as he claimed he could. As early as 1953—the year he headed the American Psychiatric Association—Cameron conceived a technique he called “psychic driving,” by which he would bombard the subject with repeated verbal messages. From tape recordings based on interviews with the patient, he selected emotionally loaded “cue statements”—first negative ones to get rid of unwanted behavior and then positive to condition in desired personality traits. On the negative side, for example, the patient would hear this message as she lay in a stupor:

Madeleine, you let your mother and father treat you as a child all through your single life. You let your mother check you up sexually after every date you had with a boy. You hadn’t enough determination to tell her to stop it. You never stood up for yourself against your mother or father but would run away from trouble. . . . They used to call you “crying Madeleine.” Now that you have two children, you don’t seem to be able to manage them and keep a good relationship with your husband. You are drifting apart. You don’t go out together. You have not been able to keep him interested sexually.

Leonard Rubenstein, Cameron’s principal assistant, whose entire salary was paid from CIA-front funds, put the message on a continuous tape loop and played it for 16 hours every day for several weeks. An electronics technician, with no medical or psychological background, Rubenstein, an electrical whiz, designed a giant tape recorder that could play 8 loops for 8 patients at the same time. Cameron had the speakers installed literally under the pillows in the “sleep rooms.” “We made sure they heard it,” says a doctor who worked with Cameron. With some patients, Cameron intensified the negative effect by running wires to their legs and shocking them at the end of the message.

When Cameron thought the negative “psychic driving” had gone far enough, he switched the patient over to 2 to 5 weeks of positive tapes:

You mean to get well. To do this you must let your feelings come out. It is all right to express your anger. . . . You want to stop your mother bossing you around. Begin to assert yourself first in little things and soon you will be able to meet her on an equal basis. You will then be free to be a wife and mother just like other women.

Cameron wrote that psychic driving provided a way to make “direct, controlled changes in personality,” without having to resolve the subject’s conflicts or make her relive past experiences. As far as is known, no present-day psychologist or psychiatrist accepts this view. Dr. Donald Hebb, who headed McGill’s psychology department at the time Cameron was in charge of psychiatry, minces no words when asked specifically about psychic driving: “That was an awful set of ideas Cameron was working with. It called for no intellectual respect. If you actually look at what he was doing and what he wrote, it would make you laugh. If I had a graduate student who talked like that, I’d throw him out.” Warm-

KILL SWITCH

ing to his subject, Hebb continues: "Look, Cameron was no good as a researcher. . . . He was eminent because of politics." Nobody said such things at the time, however. Cameron was a very powerful man.

The Scottish-born psychiatrist, who never lost the burr in his voice, kept searching for ways to perfect depatterning and psychic driving. He held out to the CIA front—the Society for the Investigation of Human Ecology—that he could find more rapid and less damaging ways to break down behavior. He sent the Society a proposal that combined his two techniques with sensory deprivation and strong drugs. His smorgasbord approach brought together virtually all possible techniques of mind control, which he tested individually and together. When his Agency grant came through in 1957, Cameron began work on sensory deprivation.

For several years, Agency officials had been interested in the interrogation possibilities of this technique that Hebb himself had pioneered at McGill with Canadian defense and Rockefeller money. It consisted of putting a subject in a sealed environment—a small room or even a large box—and depriving him of all sensory input: eyes covered with goggles, ears either covered with muffs or exposed to a constant, monotonous sound, padding to prevent touching, no smells—with this empty regime interrupted only by meal and bathroom breaks. In 1955 Morse Allen of ARTICHOKE made contact at the National Institutes of Health with Dr. Maitland Baldwin who had done a rather gruesome experiment in which an Army volunteer had stayed in the "box" for 40 hours until he kicked his way out after, in Baldwin's words, "an hour of crying loudly and sobbing in a most heartrending fashion." The experiment convinced Baldwin that the isolation technique could break any man, no matter how intelligent or strong-willed. Hebb, who unlike Baldwin released his subjects when they wanted, had never left anyone in "the box" for more than six days. Baldwin told Morse Allen that beyond that sensory deprivation would almost certainly cause irreparable damage. Nevertheless, Baldwin agreed that if the Agency could provide the cover and the subjects, he would do, according to Allen's report, "terminal type" experiments. After numerous meetings inside the CIA on how and where to fund Baldwin, an Agency medical officer finally shot down the project as being "immoral and inhuman," suggesting that those pushing the experiments might want to "volunteer their heads for use in Dr. Baldwin's 'noble' project."

With Cameron, Agency officials not only had a doctor willing to perform terminal experiments in sensory deprivation, but one with his own source of subjects. As part of his CIA-funded research, he had a "box" built in the converted stables behind the hospital that housed Leonard Rubenstein and his behavioral laboratory. Undaunted by the limits set in Hebb's work, Cameron left one woman in for 35 days, although he had so scrambled her mind with his other techniques that one cannot say, as Baldwin predicted to the Agency, if the prolonged deprivation did specific damage. This subject's name was Mary C., and, try as he might, Cameron could not get through to her. As the aloof psychiatrist wrote in his notes: "Although the patient was prepared by both prolonged sensory isolation (35 days) and by repeated depatterning, and although she received 101 days of positive driving, no favorable results were obtained." [27] Before prescribing this treatment, Cameron had diagnosed the 52-year-old Mary C.: "Conversion reaction in a woman of the involuntional age with mental anxiety; hypochondriatic." In other words, Mary C. was going through menopause.

In his proposal to the CIA front, Cameron also said he would test curare, the South

KILL SWITCH

American arrow poison which, when liberally applied, kills by paralyzing internal body functions. In nonlethal doses, curare causes a limited paralysis which blocks but does not stop these functions. According to his papers, some of which wound up in the archives of the American Psychiatric Association, Cameron injected subjects with curare in conjunction with sensory deprivation, presumably to immobilize them further.

Cameron also tested LSD in combination with psychic driving and other techniques. In late 1956 and early 1957, one of his subjects was Val Orlikow, whose husband David has become a member of the Canadian parliament. Suffering from what she calls a “character neurosis that started with postpartum depression,” she entered Allan Memorial as one of Cameron’s personal patients. He soon put her under his version of LSD therapy. One to four times a week, he or another doctor would come into her room and give her a shot of LSD, mixed with either a stimulant or a depressant and then leave her alone with a tape recorder that played excerpts from her last session with him. As far as is known, no other LSD researcher ever subjected his patients to unsupervised trips—certainly not over the course of two months when her hospital records show she was given LSD 14 times. “It was terrifying,” Mrs. Orlikow recalls. “You’re afraid you’ve gone off somewhere and can’t come back.” She was supposed to write down on a pad whatever came into her head while listening to the tapes, but often she became so frightened that she could not write at all. “You become very small,” she says, as her voice quickens and starts to reflect some of her horror. “You’re going to fall off the step, and God, you’re going down into hell because it’s so far, and you are so little. Like Alice, where is the pill that makes you big, and you’re a squirrel, and you can’t get out of the cage, and somebody’s going to kill you.” Then, suddenly, Mrs. Orlikow pulls out of it and lucidly states, “Some very weird things happened.”

Mrs. Orlikow hated the LSD treatment. Several times she told Cameron she would take no more, and the psychiatrist would put his arm around her and ask, “Lassie,” which he called all his women patients, “don’t you want to get well, so you can go home and see your husband?” She remembers feeling guilty about not following the doctor’s orders, and the thought of disappointing Cameron, whom she idolized, crushed her. Finally, after Cameron talked her out of quitting the treatment several times, she had to end it. She left the hospital but stayed under his private care. In 1963 he put her back in the hospital for more intensive psychic driving. “I thought he was God,” she states. “I don’t know how I could have been so stupid. . . . A lot of us were naive. We thought psychiatrists had the answers. Here was the greatest in the world, with all these titles.”

In defense of Cameron, a former associate says the man truly cared about the welfare of his patients. He wanted to make them well. As his former staff psychologist wrote:

He abhorred the waste of human potential, seen most dramatically in the young people whose minds were distorted by what was then considered to be schizophrenia. He felt equally strongly about the loss of wisdom in the aged through memory malfunction. For him, the end justified the means, and when one is dealing with the waste of human potential, it is easy to adopt this stance.

Cameron retired abruptly in 1964, for unexplained reasons. His successor, Dr. Robert Cleghorn, made a virtually unprecedented move in the academic world of mutual back-scratching and praise. He commissioned a psychiatrist and a psychologist, unconnected to Cameron, to study his electroshock work. They found that 60 percent of Cameron’s depatterned patients complained they still had amnesia for the period 6 months to 10 years

KILL SWITCH

before the therapy.[28] They could find no clinical proof that showed the treatment to be any more or less effective than other approaches. They concluded that “the incidence of physical complications and the anxiety generated in the patient because of real or imagined memory difficulty argue against” future use of the technique.

The study-team members couched their report in densely academic jargon, but one of them speaks more clearly now. He talks bitterly of one of Cameron’s former patients who needs to keep a list of her simplest household chores to remember how to do them. Then he repeats several times how powerful a man Cameron was, how he was “the godfather of Canadian psychiatry.” He continues, “I probably shouldn’t talk about this, but Cameron—for him to do what he did—he was a very schizophrenic guy, who totally detached himself from the human implications of his work . . . God, we talk about concentration camps. I don’t want to make this comparison, but God, you talk about ‘we didn’t know it was happening,’ and it was—right in our back yard.”

Cameron died in 1967, at age 66, while climbing a mountain. The *American Journal of Psychiatry* published a long and glowing obituary with a full-page picture of his not-unpleasant face.

D. Ewen Cameron did not need the CIA to corrupt him. He clearly had his mind set on doing unorthodox research long before the Agency front started to fund him. With his own hospital and source of subjects, he could have found elsewhere encouragement and money to replace the CIA’s contribution which never exceeded \$20,000 a year. However, Agency officials knew exactly what they were paying for. They traveled periodically to Montreal to observe his work, and his proposal was chillingly explicit. In Cameron, they had a doctor, conveniently outside the United States, willing to do terminal experiments in electroshock, sensory deprivation, drug testing, and all of the above combined. By literally wiping the minds of his subjects clean by depatterning and then trying to program in new behavior, Cameron carried the process known as “brainwashing” to its logical extreme.

It cannot be said how many—if any—other Agency brainwashing projects reached the extremes of Cameron’s work. Details are scarce, since many of the principal witnesses have died, will not talk about what went on, or lie about it. In what ways the CIA applied work like Cameron’s is not known. What is known, however, is that the intelligence community, including the CIA, changed the face of the scientific community during the 1950s and early 1960s by its interest in such experiments. Nearly every scientist on the frontiers of brain research found men from the secret agencies looking over his shoulders, impinging on the research. The experience of Dr. John Lilly illustrates how this intrusion came about.

In 1953 Lilly worked at the National Institutes of Health, outside Washington, doing experimental studies in an effort to “map” the body functions controlled from various locations in the brain. He devised a method of pounding up to 600 tiny sections of hypodermic tubing into the skulls of monkeys, through which he could insert electrodes “into the brain to any desired distance and at any desired location from the cortex down to the bottom of the skull,” he later wrote. Using electric stimulation, Lilly discovered precise centers of the monkeys’ brains that caused pain, fear, anxiety, and anger. He also discovered precise, separate parts of the brain that controlled erection, ejaculation, and orgasm in male monkeys. Lilly found that a monkey, given access to a switch operating a correctly planted electrode, would reward himself with nearly continuous orgasms—at least once every 3 minutes—for up to 16 hours a day.

KILL SWITCH

As Lilly refined his brain “maps,” officials of the CIA and other agencies descended upon him with a request for a briefing. Having a phobia against secrecy, Lilly agreed to the briefing only under the condition that it and his work remain unclassified, completely open to outsiders. The intelligence officials submitted to the conditions most reluctantly, since they knew that Lilly’s openness would not only ruin the spy value of anything they learned but could also reveal the identities and the interests of the intelligence officials to enemy agents. They considered Lilly annoying, uncooperative—possibly even suspicious.

Soon Lilly began to have trouble going to meetings and conferences with his colleagues. As part of the cooperation with the intelligence agencies, most of them had agreed to have their projects officially classified as SECRET, which meant that access to the information required a security clearance.[29] Lilly’s security clearance was withdrawn for review, then tangled up and misplaced—all of which he took as pressure to cooperate with the CIA. Lilly, whose imagination needed no stimulation to conjure up pictures of CIA agents on deadly missions with remote-controlled electrodes strategically implanted in their brains, decided to withdraw from that field of research. He says he had decided that the physical intrusion of the electrodes did too much brain damage for him to tolerate.

In 1954 Lilly began trying to isolate the operations of the brain, free of outside stimulation, through sensory deprivation. He worked in an office next to Dr. Maitland Baldwin, who the following year agreed to perform terminal sensory deprivation experiments for ARTICHOKE’s Morse Allen but who never told Lilly he was working in the field. While Baldwin experimented with his sensory-deprivation “box,” Lilly invented a special “tank.” Subjects floated in a tank of body-temperature water wearing a face mask that provided air but cut off sight and sound. Inevitably, intelligence officials swooped down on Lilly again, interested in the use of his tank as an interrogation tool. Could involuntary subjects be placed in the tank and broken down to the point where their belief systems or personalities could be altered?

It was central to Lilly’s ethic that he himself be the first subject of any experiment, and, in the case of the consciousness-exploring tank work, he and one colleague were the *only* ones. Lilly realized that the intelligence agencies were not interested in sensory deprivation because of its positive benefits, and he finally concluded that it was impossible for him to work at the National Institutes of Health without compromising his principles. He quit in 1958.

Contrary to most people’s intuitive expectations, Lilly found sensory deprivation to be a profoundly integrating experience for himself personally. He considered himself to be a scientist who subjectively explored the far wanderings of the brain. In a series of private experiments, he pushed himself into the complete unknown by injecting pure Sandoz LSD into his thigh before climbing into the sensory-deprivation tank.[30] When the counterculture sprang up, Lilly became something of a cult figure, with his unique approach to scientific inquiry—though he was considered more of an outcast by many in the professional research community.

For most of the outside world, Lilly became famous with the release of the popular film, *The Day of the Dolphin*, which the filmmakers acknowledged was based on Lilly’s work with dolphins after he left NIH. Actor George C. Scott portrayed a scientist, who, like Lilly, loved dolphins, did pioneering experiments on their intelligence, and tried to find ways to communicate with them. In the movie, Scott became dismayed when the government

KILL SWITCH

pounced on his breakthrough in talking to dolphins and turned it immediately to the service of war. In real life, Lilly was similarly dismayed when Navy and CIA scientists trained dolphins for special warfare in the waters off Vietnam.[31]

A few scientists like Lilly made up their minds not to cross certain ethical lines in their experimental work, while others were prepared to go further even than their sponsors from ARTICHOKE and MKULTRA. Within the Agency itself, there was only one final question: Will a technique work? CIA officials zealously tracked every lead, sparing no expense to check each angle many times over.

By the time the MKULTRA program ended in 1963, Agency researchers had found no foolproof way to brainwash another person.[32] “All experiments beyond a certain point always failed,” says the MKULTRA veteran, “because the subject jerked himself back for some reason or the subject got amnesiac or catatonic.” Agency officials found through work like Cameron’s that they could create “vegetables,” but such people served no operational use. People could be tortured into saying anything, but no science could guarantee that they would tell the truth.

The impotency of brainwashing techniques left the Agency in a difficult spot when Yuri Nosenko defected to the United States in February 1964. A ranking official of the Soviet KGB, Nosenko brought with him stunning information. He said the Russians had bugged the American embassy in Moscow, which turned out to be true. He named some Russian agents in the West. And he said that he had personally inspected the KGB file of Lee Harvey Oswald, who only a few months earlier had been murdered before he could be brought to trial for the assassination of President Kennedy. Nosenko said he learned that the KGB had had no interest in Oswald.

Was Nosenko telling the truth, or was he a KGB “plant” sent to throw the United States off track about Oswald? Was his information about penetration correct, or was Nosenko himself the penetration? Was he acting in good faith? Were the men within the CIA who believed he was acting in good faith themselves acting in good faith? These and a thousand other questions made up the classical trick deck for spies—each card having “true” on one side and “false” on the other.

Top CIA officials felt a desperate need to resolve the issue of Nosenko’s legitimacy. With numerous Agency counterintelligence operations hanging in the balance, Richard Helms, first as Deputy Director and then as Director, allowed CIA operators to work Nosenko over with the interrogation method in which Helms apparently had the most faith. It turned out to be not any truth serum or electroshock depatterning program or anything else from the Agency’s brainwashing search. Helms had Nosenko put through the tried-and-true Soviet method: isolate the prisoner, deaden his senses, break him. For more than three years—1,277 days, to be exact—Agency officers kept Nosenko in solitary confinement. As if they were using the Hinkle-Wolff study as their instruction manual and the Cardinal Mindszenty case as their success story, the CIA men had guards watch over Nosenko day and night, giving him not a moment of privacy. A light bulb burned continuously in his cell. He was allowed nothing to read—not even the labels on toothpaste boxes. When he tried to distract himself by making a chess set from pieces of lint in his cell, the guards discovered his game and swept the area clean. Nosenko had no window, and he was eventually put in a specially built 12’ X 12’ steel bank vault.

Nosenko broke down. He hallucinated. He talked his head off to his interrogators,

KILL SWITCH

who questioned him for 292 days, often while they had him strapped into a lie detector. If he told the truth, they did not believe him. While the Soviets and Chinese had shown that they could make a man admit anything, the CIA interrogators apparently lacked a clear idea of exactly what they wanted Nosenko to confess. When it was all over and Richard Helms ordered Nosenko freed after three and a half years of illegal detention, some key Agency officers still believed he was a KGB plant. Others thought he was on the level. Thus the big questions remained unresolved, and to this day, CIA men—past and present—are bitterly split over who Nosenko really is.

With the Nosenko case, the CIA's brainwashing programs had come full circle. Spurred by the widespread alarm over communist tactics, Agency officials had investigated the field, started their own projects, and looked to the latest technology to make improvements. After 10 years of research, with some rather gruesome results, CIA officials had come up with no techniques on which they felt they could rely. Thus, when the operational crunch came, they fell back on the basic brutality of the Soviet system.

No mind-control technique has more captured popular imagination—and kindled fears—than hypnosis. Men have long dreamed they could use overwhelming hypnotic powers to compel others to do their bidding. And when CIA officials institutionalized that dream in the early Cold War Days, they tried, like modern-day Svengalis, to use hypnosis to force their favors on unwitting victims.

One group of professional experts, as well as popular novelists, argued that hypnosis would lead to major breakthroughs in spying. Another body of experts believed the opposite. The Agency men, who did not fully trust the academics anyway, listened to both points of view and kept looking for applications which fit their own special needs. To them, hypnosis offered too much promise not to be pursued, but finding the answers was such an elusive and dangerous process that 10 years after the program started CIA officials were still searching for practical uses.

The CIA's first behavioral research czar, Morse Allen of ARTICHOKE, was intrigued by hypnosis. He read everything he could get his hands on, and in 1951 he went to New York for a four-day course from a well-known stage hypnotist. This hypnotist had taken the Svengali legend to heart, and he bombarded Allen with tales of how he used hypnosis to seduce young women. He told the ARTICHOKE chief that he had convinced one mesmerized lady that he was her husband and that she desperately wanted him. That kind of deception has a place in covert operations, and Morse Allen was sufficiently impressed to report back to his bosses the hypnotist's claim that "he spent approximately five nights a week away from home engaging in sexual intercourse."

Apart from the bragging, the stage hypnotist did give Morse Allen a short education in how to capture a subject's attention and induce a trance. Allen returned to Washington more convinced than ever of the benefits of working hypnosis into the ARTICHOKE repertory and of the need to build a defense against it. With permission from above, he decided to take his hypnosis studies further, right in his own office. He asked young CIA secretaries to stay after work and ran them through the hypnotic paces—proving to his own satisfaction that he could make them do whatever he wanted. He had secretaries steal SECRET files and pass them on to total strangers, thus violating the most basic CIA security rules. He got them to steal from each other and to start fires. He made one of them report to the bedroom of a strange man and then go into a deep sleep. "This activity clearly indicates that individuals

KILL SWITCH

under hypnosis might be compromised and blackmailed," Allen wrote.

On February 19, 1954, Morse Allen simulated the ultimate experiment in hypnosis: the creation of a "Manchurian Candidate," or programmed assassin. Allen's "victim" was a secretary whom he put into a deep trance and told to keep sleeping until he ordered otherwise. He then hypnotized a second secretary and told her that if she could not wake up her friend, "her rage would be so great that she would not hesitate to 'kill.'" Allen left a pistol nearby, which the secretary had no way of knowing was unloaded. Even though she had earlier expressed a fear of firearms of any kind, she picked up the gun and "shot" her sleeping friend. After Allen brought the "killer" out of her trance, she had apparent amnesia for the event, denying she would ever shoot anyone.

With this experiment, Morse Allen took the testing as far as he could on a make-believe basis, but he was neither satisfied nor convinced that hypnosis would produce such spectacular results in an operational setting. All he felt he had proved was that an impressionable young volunteer would accept a command from a legitimate authority figure to take an action she may have sensed would not end in tragedy. She presumably trusted the CIA enough as an institution and Morse Allen as an individual to believe he would not let her do anything wrong. The experimental setting, in effect, legitimated her behavior and prevented it from being truly antisocial.

Early in 1954, Allen almost got his chance to try the crucial test. According to a CIA document, the subject was to be a 35-year-old, well-educated foreigner who had once worked for a friendly secret service, probably the CIA itself. He had now shifted his loyalty to another government, and the CIA was quite upset with him. The Agency plan was to hypnotize him and program him into making an assassination attempt. He would then be arrested at the least for attempted murder and "thereby disposed of." The scenario had several holes in it, as the operators presented it to the ARTICHOKE team. First, the subject was to be involuntary and unwitting, and as yet no one had come up with a consistently effective way of hypnotizing such people. Second, the ARTICHOKE team would have only limited custody of the subject, who was to be snatched from a social event. Allen understood that it would probably take months of painstaking work to prepare the man for a sophisticated covert operation. The subject was highly unlikely to perform after just one command. Yet, so anxious were the ARTICHOKE men to try the experiment that they were willing to go ahead even under these unfavorable conditions: "The final answer was that in view of the fact that successful completion of this proposed act of attempted assassination was insignificant to the overall project; to wit, whether it was even carried out or not, that under 'crash conditions' and appropriate authority from Headquarters, the ARTICHOKE team would undertake the problem in spite of the operational limitations."

This operation never took place. Eager to be unleashed, Morse Allen kept requesting prolonged access to operational subjects, such as the double agents and defectors on whom he was allowed to work a day or two. Not every double agent would do. The candidate had to be among the one person in five who made a good hypnotic subject, and he needed to have a dissociative tendency to separate part of his personality from the main body of his consciousness. The hope was to take an existing ego state—such as an imaginary childhood playmate—and build it into a separate personality, unknown to the first. The hypnotist would communicate directly with this schizophrenic offshoot and command it to carry out specific deeds about which the main personality would know nothing. There would be inevitable leakage between the two personalities, particularly in dreams; but if the hyp-

KILL SWITCH

notists were clever enough, he could build in cover stories and safety valves which would prevent the subject from acting inconsistently.

All during the spring and summer of 1954, Morse Allen lobbied for permission to try what he called “terminal experiments” in hypnosis, including one along the following scenario:

CIA officials would recruit an agent in a friendly foreign country where the Agency could count on the cooperation of the local police force. CIA case officers would train the agent to pose as a leftist and report on the local communist party. During training, a skilled hypnotist would hypnotize him under the guise of giving him medical treatment (the favorite ARTICHOKE cover for hypnosis). The hypnotist would then provide the agent with information and tell him to forget it all when he snapped out of the trance. Once the agent had been properly conditioned and prepared, he would be sent into action as a CIA spy. Then Agency officials would tip off the local police that the man was a dangerous communist agent, and he would be arrested. Through their liaison arrangement with the police, Agency case officers would be able to watch and even guide the course of the interrogation. In this way, they could answer many of their questions about hypnosis on a live guinea pig who believed his life was in danger. Specifically, the men from ARTICHOKE wanted to know how well hypnotic amnesia held up against torture. Could the amnesia be broken with drugs? One document noted that the Agency could even send in a new hypnotist to try his hand at cracking through the commands of the first one. Perhaps the most cynical part of the whole scheme came at the end of the proposal: “In the event that the agent should break down and admit his connection with US intelligence, we a) deny this absolutely and advise the agent’s disposal, or b) indicate that the agent may have been dispatched by some other organ of US intelligence and that we should thereafter run the agent jointly with [the local intelligence service].”

An ARTICHOKE team was scheduled to carry out field tests along these lines in the summer of 1954. The planning got to an advanced stage, with the ARTICHOKE command center in Washington cabling overseas for the “time, place, and bodies available for terminal experiments.” Then another cable complained of the “diminishing numbers” of subjects available for these tests. At this point, the available record becomes very fuzzy. The minutes of an ARTICHOKE working group meeting indicate that a key Agency official—probably the station chief in the country where the experiments were going to take place—had second thoughts. One participant at the meeting, obviously rankled by the obstructionism, said if this nay-sayer did not change his attitude, ARTICHOKE officials would have the Director himself order the official to go along.

Although short-term interrogations of unwitting subjects with drugs and hypnosis (the “A” treatment) continued, the more complicated tests apparently never did get going under the ARTICHOKE banner. By the end of the year, 1954, Allen Dulles took the behavioral-research function away from Morse Allen and gave it to Sid Gottlieb and the men from MKULTRA. Allen had directly pursued the goal of creating a Manchurian Candidate, which he clearly believed was possible. MKULTRA officials were just as interested in finding ways to assert control over people, but they had much less faith in the frontal-assault approach pushed by Allen. For them, finding the Manchurian Candidate became a figurative exercise. They did not give up the dream. They simply pursued it in smaller steps, always hoping to increase the percentages in their favor. John Gittinger, the MKULTRA case officer on hypnosis, states, “Predictable absolute control is not possible on a particular individual.

KILL SWITCH

Any psychologist, psychiatrist, or preacher can get control over certain kinds of individuals, but that's not a predictable, definite thing." Gittinger adds that despite his belief to this effect, he felt he had to give "a fair shake" to people who wanted to try out ideas to the contrary.

Gottlieb and his colleagues had already been doing hypnosis research for two years. They did a few basic experiments in the office, as Morse Allen did, but they farmed out most of the work to a young Ph.D. candidate at the University of Minnesota, Alden Sears. Sears, who later moved his CIA study project to the University of Denver, worked with student subjects to define the nature of hypnosis. Among many other things, he looked into several of the areas that would be building blocks in the creation of a Manchurian Candidate. Could a hypnotist induce a totally separate personality? Could a subject be sent on missions he would not remember unless cued by the hypnotist? Sears, who has since become a Methodist minister, refused to talk about methods he experimented with to build second identities.[33] By 1957, he wrote that the experiments that needed to be done "could not be handled in the University situation." Unlike Morse Allen, he did not want to perform the terminal experiments.

Milton Kline, a New York psychologist who says he also did not want to cross the ethical line but is sure the intelligence agencies have, served as an unpaid consultant to Sears and other CIA hypnosis research. Nothing Sears or others found disabused him of the idea that the Manchurian Candidate is possible. "It cannot be done by everyone," says Kline, "It cannot be done consistently, but it can be done."

A onetime president of the American Society for Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis, Kline was one of many outside experts to whom Gittinger and his colleagues talked. Other consultants, with equally impressive credentials, rejected Kline's views. In no other area of the behavioral sciences was there so little accord on basic questions. "You could find an expert who would agree with everything," says Gittinger. "Therefore, we tried to get everybody."

The MKULTRA men state that they got too many unsolicited suggestions on how to use hypnosis in covert operations. "The operators would ask us for easy solutions," recalls a veteran. "We therefore kept a laundry list of why they couldn't have what they wanted. We spent a lot of time telling some young kid whose idea we had heard a hundred times why it wouldn't work. We would wind up explaining why you couldn't have a free lunch." This veteran mentions an example: CIA operators put a great deal of time and money into servicing "dead drops" (covert mail pickup points, such as a hollow tree) in the Soviet Union. If a collector was captured, he was likely to give away the locations. Therefore Agency men suggested that TSS find a way to hypnotize these secret mailmen, so they could withstand interrogation and even torture if arrested.

Morse Allen had wanted to perform the "terminal experiment" to see if a hypnotically induced amnesia would stand up to torture. Gittinger says that as far as he knows, this experiment was never carried out. "I still like to think we were human beings enough that this was not something we played with," says Gittinger. Such an experiment could have been performed, as Allen suggested, by friendly police in a country like Taiwan or Paraguay. CIA men did at least discuss joint work in hypnosis with a foreign secret service in 1962.[34] Whether they went further simply cannot be said.

Assuming the amnesia would hold, the MKULTRA veteran says the problem was how

KILL SWITCH

to trigger it. Perhaps the Russian phrase meaning “You’re under arrest” could be used as a preprogrammed cue, but what if the police did not use these words as they captured the collector? Perhaps the physical sensation of handcuffs being snapped on could do it, but a metal watchband could have the same effect. According to the veteran, in the abstract, the scheme sounded fine, but in practicality, a foolproof way of triggering the amnesia could not be found. “You had to accept that when someone is caught, they’re going to tell some things,” he says.

MKULTRA officials, including Gittinger, did recommend the use of hypnosis in operational experiments on at least one occasion. In 1959 an important double agent, operating outside his homeland, told his Agency case officer that he was afraid to go home again because he did not think he could withstand the tough interrogation that his government used on returning overseas agents. In Washington, the operators approached the TSS men about using hypnosis, backed up with drugs, to change the agent’s attitude. They hoped they could instill in him the “ability or the necessary will” to hold up under questioning.

An MKULTRA official—almost certainly Gittinger—held a series of meetings over a two-week period with the operators and wrote that the agent was “a better than average” hypnotic subject, but that his goal was to get out of intelligence work: The agent “probably can be motivated to make at least one return visit to his homeland by application of any one of a number of techniques, including hypnosis, but he may redefect in the process.” The MKULTRA official continued that hypnosis probably could not produce an “operationally useful” degree of amnesia for the events of the recent past or for the hypnotic treatment itself that the agent “probably has the native ability to withstand ordinary interrogation . . . provided it is to his advantage to do so.”

The MKULTRA office recommended that despite the relatively negative outlook for the hypnosis, the Agency should proceed anyway. The operation had the advantage of having a “fail-safe” mechanism because the level of hypnosis could be tested out before the agent actually had to return. Moreover, the MKULTRA men felt “that a considerable amount of useful experience can be gained from this operation which could be used to improve Agency capability in future applications.” In effect, they would be using hypnosis not as the linchpin of the operation, but as an adjunct to help motivate the agent.

Since the proposed operation involved the use of hypnosis and drugs, final approval could only be given by the high-level Clandestine Services committee set up for this purpose and chaired by Richard Helms. Permission was not forthcoming.

In June 1960 TSS officials launched an expanded program of operational experiments in hypnosis in cooperation with the Agency’s Counterintelligence Staff. The legendary James Angleton—the prototype for the title character Saxonton in Aaron Latham’s *Orchids for Mother* and for Wellington in Victor Marchetti’s *The Rope Dancer*—headed Counterintelligence, which took on some of the CIA’s most sensitive missions (including the illegal Agency spying against domestic dissidents). Counterintelligence officials wrote that the hypnosis program could provide a “potential breakthrough in clandestine technology.” Their arrangement with TSS was that the MKULTRA men would develop the technique in the laboratory, while they took care of “field experimentation.”

The Counterintelligence program had three goals: (1) to induce hypnosis very rapidly in unwitting subjects; (2) to create durable amnesia; and (3) to implant durable and operationally useful posthypnotic suggestion. The Agency released no information on any

KILL SWITCH

“field experimentation” of the latter two goals, which of course are the building blocks of the Manchurian Candidate. Agency officials provided only one heavily censored document on the first goal, rapid induction.

In October 1960 the MKULTRA program invested \$9,000 in an outside consultant to develop a way of quickly hypnotizing an unwitting subject. John Gittinger says the process consisted of surprising “somebody sitting in a chair, putting your hands on his forehead, and telling the guy to go to sleep.” The method worked “fantastically” on certain people, including some on whom no other technique was effective, and not on others. “It wasn’t that predictable,” notes Gittinger, who states he knows nothing about the field testing.

The test, noted in that one released document, did not take place until July 1963—a full three years after the Counterintelligence experimental program began, during which interval the Agency is claiming that no other field experiments took place. According to a CIA man who participated in this test, the Counterintelligence Staff in Washington asked the CIA station in Mexico City to find a suitable candidate for a rapid induction experiment. The station proposed a low-level agent, whom the Soviets had apparently doubled. A Counterintelligence man flew in from Washington and a hypnotic consultant arrived from California. Our source and a fellow case officer brought the agent to a motel room on a pretext. “I puffed him up with his importance,” says the Agency man. “I said the bosses wanted to see him and of course give him more money.” Waiting in an adjoining room was the hypnotic consultant. At a prearranged time, the two case officers gently grabbed hold of the agent and tipped his chair over until the back was touching the floor. The consultant was supposed to rush in at that precise moment and apply the technique. Nothing happened. The consultant froze, unable to do the deed. “You can imagine what we had to do to cover-up,” says the official, who was literally left holding the agent. “We explained we had heard a noise, got excited, and tipped him down to protect him. He was so grubby for money he would have believed any excuse.”

There certainly is a huge difference between the limited aim of this bungled operation and one aimed at building a Manchurian Candidate. The MKULTRA veteran maintains that he and his colleagues were not interested in a programmed assassin because they knew in general it would not work and, specifically, that they could not exert total control. “If you have one hundred percent control, you have one hundred percent dependency,” he says. “If something happens and you haven’t programmed it in, you’ve got a problem. If you try to put flexibility in, you lose control. To the extent you let the agent choose, you don’t have control.” He admits that he and his colleagues spent hours running the arguments on the Manchurian Candidate back and forth. “Castro was naturally our discussion point,” he declares. “Could you get somebody gung-ho enough that they would go in and get him?” In the end, he states, they decided there were more reliable ways to kill people. “You can get exactly the same thing from people who are hypnotizable by many other ways, and you can’t get anything out of people who are not hypnotizable, so it has no use,” says Gittinger.

The only real gain in employing a hypnotized killer would be, in theory, that he would not remember who ordered him to pull the trigger. Yet, at least in the Castro case, the Cuban leader already knew who was after him. Moreover, there were plenty of people around willing to take on the Castro contract. “A well-trained person could do it without all this mumbo-jumbo,” says the MKULTRA veteran. By going to the Mafia for hitmen, CIA officials in any case found killers who had a built-in amnesia mechanism that had nothing to do with

KILL SWITCH

hypnosis.[35]

The MKULTRA veteran gives many reasons why he believes the CIA never actually tried a Manchurian Candidate operation, but he acknowledges that he does not know.[36] If the ultimate experiments were performed, they would have been handled with incredible secrecy. It would seem, however, that the same kind of reasoning that impelled Sid Gottlieb to recommend testing powerful drugs on unwitting subjects would have led to experimentation along such lines, if not to create the Manchurian Candidate itself, on some of the building blocks, or lesser antisocial acts. Even if the MKULTRA men did not think hypnosis would work operationally, they had not let that consideration prevent them from trying out numerous other techniques. The MKULTRA chief could even have used a defensive rationale: He had to find out if the Russians could plant a “sleeper” killer in our midst, just as Richard Condon’s novel discussed.

If the assassin scenario seemed exaggerated, Gottlieb still would have wanted to know what other uses the Russians might try. Certainly, he could have found relatively “expendable” subjects, as he and Morse Allen had for other behavior control experiments. And even if the MKULTRA men really did restrain themselves, it is unlikely that James Angleton and his counterintelligence crew would have acted in such a limited fashion when they felt they were on the verge of a “breakthrough in clandestine technology.”

Sid Gottlieb was one of many CIA officials who tried to find a way to assassinate Fidel Castro. Castro survived, of course, and his victory over the Agency in April 1961 at the Bay of Pigs put the Agency in the headlines for the first time, in a very unfavorable light. Among the fiasco’s many consequences was Gottlieb’s loss of the research part of the CIA’s behavior-control programs. Still, he and the others kept trying to kill Castro.

In the aftermath of the Bay of Pigs, President Kennedy reportedly vowed to splinter the CIA into a thousand pieces. In the end, he settled for firing Allen Dulles and his top deputies. To head the Agency, which lost none of its power, Kennedy brought in John McCone, a defense contractor and former head of the Atomic Energy Commission. With no operational background, McCone had a different notion than Dulles of how to manage the CIA, particularly in the scientific area. “McCone never felt akin to the covert way of doing things,” recalls Ray Cline, whom the new Director made his Deputy for Intelligence. McCone apparently believed that science should be in the hands of the scientists, not the clandestine operators, and he brought in a fellow Californian, an aerospace “whiz kid” named Albert “Bud” Wheelon to head a new Agency Directorate for Science and Technology.

Before then, the Technical Services Staff (TSS), although located in the Clandestine Services, had been the Agency’s largest scientific component. McCone decided to strip TSS of its main research functions—including the behavioral one—and let it concentrate solely on providing operational support. In 1962 he approved a reorganization of TSS that brought in Seymour Russell, a tough covert operator, as the new chief. “The idea was to get a close interface with operations,” recalls an ex-CIA man. Experienced TSS technicians remained as deputies to the incoming field men, and the highest deputyship in all TSS went to Sid Gottlieb, who became number-two man under Russell. For Gottlieb, this was another significant promotion helped along by his old friend Richard Helms, whom McCone had elevated to be head of the Clandestine Services.

In his new job, Gottlieb kept control of MKULTRA. Yet, in order to comply with McCone’s command on research programs, Gottlieb had to preside over the partial dis-

KILL SWITCH

mantling of his own program. The loss was not as difficult as it might have been, because, after 10 years of exploring the frontiers of the mind, Gottlieb had a clear idea of what worked and what did not in the behavioral field. Those areas that still were in the research stage tended to be extremely esoteric and technical, and Gottlieb must have known that if the Science Directorate scored any breakthroughs, he would be brought back into the picture immediately to apply the advances to covert operations.

“Sid was not the kind of bureaucrat who wanted to hold on to everything at all costs,” recalls an admiring colleague. Gottlieb carefully pruned the MKULTRA lists, turning over to the Science Directorate the exotic subjects that showed no short-term operational promise and keeping for himself those psychological, chemical, and biological programs that had already passed the research stage. As previously stated, he moved John Gittinger and the personality-assessment staff out of the Human Ecology Society and kept them under TSS control in their own proprietary company.

While Gottlieb was effecting these changes, his programs were coming under attack from another quarter. In 1963 the CIA Inspector General did the study that led to the suspension of unwitting drug testing in the San Francisco and New York safehouses. This was a blow to Gottlieb, who clearly intended to hold on to *this* kind of research. At the same time, the Inspector General also recommended that Agency officials draft a new charter for the whole MKULTRA program, which still was exempt from most internal CIA controls. He found that many of the MKULTRA subprojects were of “insufficient sensitivity” to justify bypassing the Agency’s normal procedures for approving and storing records of highly classified programs. Richard Helms, still the protector of unfettered behavioral research, responded by agreeing that there should be a new charter—on the condition that it be almost the same as the old one. “The basic reasons for requesting waiver of standardized administrative controls over these sensitive activities are as valid today as they were in April, 1953,” Helms wrote. Helms agreed to such changes as having the CIA Director briefed on the programs twice a year, but he kept the approval process within his control and made sure that all the files would be retained inside TSS. And as government officials so often do when they do not wish to alter anything of substance, he proposed a new name for the activity. In June 1964 MKULTRA became MKSEARCH.[37]

Gottlieb acknowledged that security did not require transferring all the surviving MKULTRA subprojects over to MKSEARCH. He moved 18 subprojects back into regular Agency funding channels, including ones dealing with the sneezing powders, stink bombs, and other “harassment substances.” TSS officials had encouraged the development of these as a way to make a target physically uncomfortable and hence to cause short-range changes in his behavior.

Other MKULTRA subprojects dealt with ways to maximize stress on whole societies. Just as Gittinger’s Personality Assessment System provided a psychological road map for exploiting an individual’s weaknesses, CIA “destabilization” plans provided guidelines for destroying the internal integrity of target countries like Castro’s Cuba or Allende’s Chile. Control—whether of individuals or nations—has been the Agency’s main business, and TSS officials supplied tools for the “macro” as well as the “micro” attacks.

For example, under MKULTRA Subproject #143, the Agency gave Dr. Edward Bennett of the University of Houston about \$20,000 a year to develop bacteria to sabotage petroleum products. Bennett found a substance that, when added to oil, fouled or destroyed any

KILL SWITCH

engine into which it was poured. CIA operators used exactly this kind of product in 1967 when they sent a sabotage team made up of Cuban exiles into France to pollute a shipment of lubricants bound for Cuba. The idea was that the tainted oil would “grind out motors and cause breakdowns,” says an Agency man directly involved. This operation, which succeeded, was part of a worldwide CIA effort that lasted through the 1960s into the 1970s to destroy the Cuban economy.[38] Agency officials reasoned, at least in the first years, that it would be easier to overthrow Castro if Cubans could be made unhappy with their standard of living. “We wanted to keep bread out of the stores so people were hungry,” says the CIA man who was assigned to anti-Castro operations. “We wanted to keep rationing in effect and keep leather out, so people got only one pair of shoes every 18 months.”

Leaving this broader sort of program out of the new structure, Gottlieb regrouped the most sensitive behavioral activities under the MKSEARCH umbrella. He chose to continue seven projects, and the ones he picked give a good indication of those parts of MKULTRA that Gottlieb considered important enough to save. These included none of the sociological studies, nor the search for a truth drug. Gottlieb put the emphasis on chemical and biological substances—not because he thought these could be used to turn men into robots, but because he valued them for their predictable ability to disorient, discredit, injure, or kill people. He kept active two private labs to produce such substances, funded consultants who had secure ways to test them and ready access to subjects, and maintained a funding conduit to pass money on to these other contractors. Here are the seven surviving MKSEARCH subprojects:

First on the TSS list was the safehouse program for drug testing run by George White and others in the Federal Bureau of Narcotics. Even in 1964, Gottlieb and Helms had not given up hope that unwitting experiments could be resumed, and the Agency paid out \$30,000 that year to keep the safehouses open. In the meantime, something was going on at the “pad”—or at least George White kept on sending the CIA vouchers for unorthodox expenses—\$1,100 worth in February 1965 alone under the old euphemism for prostitutes, “undercover agents for operations.” What White was doing with or to these agents cannot be said, but he kept the San Francisco operation active right up until the time it finally closed in June. Gottlieb did not give up on the New York safehouse until the following year.[39]

MKSEARCH Subproject #2 involved continuing a \$150,000-a-year contract with a Baltimore biological laboratory. This lab, run by at least one former CIA germ expert, gave TSS “a quick-delivery capability to meet anticipated future operational needs,” according to an Agency document. Among other things, it provided a private place for “large-scale production of microorganisms.” The Agency was paying the Army Biological Laboratory at Fort Detrick about \$100,000 a year for the same services. With its more complete facilities, Fort Detrick could be used to create and package more esoteric bacteria, but Gottlieb seems to have kept the Baltimore facility going in order to have a way of producing biological weapons without the Army’s germ warriors knowing about it. This secrecy-within-secrecy was not unusual when TSS men were dealing with subjects as sensitive as infecting targets with diseases. Except on the most general level, no written records were kept on the subject. Whenever an operational unit in the Agency asked TSS about obtaining a biological weapon, Gottlieb or his aides automatically turned down the request unless the head of the Clandestine Services had given his prior approval. Gottlieb handled these operational needs personally, and during the early 1960s (when CIA assassination attempts probably were at their peak) even Gottlieb’s boss, the TSS chief, was not told what was happening.

KILL SWITCH

With his biological arsenal assured, Gottlieb also secured his chemical flank in MKSEARCH. Another subproject continued a relationship set up in 1959 with a prominent industrialist who headed a complex of companies, including one that custom-manufactured rare chemicals for pharmaceutical producers. This man, whom on several occasions CIA officials gave \$100 bills to pay for his products, was able to perform specific lab jobs for the Agency without consulting with his board of directors. In 1960 he supplied the Agency with 3 kilos (6.6 pounds) of a deadly carbamate—the same poison OSS's Stanley Lovell tried to use against Hitler.[40] This company president also was useful to the Agency because he was a ready source of information on what was going on in the chemical world. The chemical services he offered, coupled with his biological counterpart, gave the CIA the means to wage “instant” chemical and biological attacks—a capability that was frequently used, judging by the large numbers of receipts and invoices that the CIA released under the Freedom of Information Act.

With new chemicals and drugs constantly coming to their attention through their continuing relations with the major pharmaceutical companies, TSS officials needed places to test them, particularly after the safehouses closed. Dr. James Hamilton, the San Francisco psychiatrist who worked with George White in the original OSS marijuana days, provided a way. He became MKSEARCH Subproject #3.

Hamilton had joined MKULTRA in its earliest days and had been used as a West Coast supervisor for Gottlieb and company. Hamilton was one of the renaissance men of the program, working on everything from psychochemicals to kinky sex to carbon-dioxide inhalation. By the early 1960s, he had arranged to get access to prisoners at the California Medical Facility at Vacaville.[41] Hamilton worked through a nonprofit research institute connected to the Facility to carry out, as a document puts it, “clinical testing of behavioral control materials” on inmates. Hamilton's job was to provide “answers to specific questions and solutions to specific problems of direct interest to the Agency.” In a six-month span in 1967 and 1968, the psychiatrist spent over \$10,000 in CIA funds simply to pay volunteers—which at normal rates meant he experimented on between 400 to 1,000 inmates in that time period alone.

Another MKSEARCH subproject provided \$20,000 to \$25,000 a year to Dr. Carl Pfeiffer. Pfeiffer's Agency connection went back to 1951, when he headed the Pharmacology Department at the University of Illinois Medical School. He then moved to Emory University and tested LSD and other drugs on inmates of the Federal penitentiary in Atlanta. From there, he moved to New Jersey, where he continued drug experiments on the prisoners at the Bordentown reformatory. An internationally known pharmacologist, Pfeiffer provided the MKSEARCH program with data on the preparation, use, and effect of drugs. He was readily available if Gottlieb or a colleague wanted a study made of the properties of a particular substance, and like most of TSS's contractors, he also was an intelligence source. Pfeiffer was useful in this last capacity during the latter part of the 1960s because he sat on the Food and Drug Administration committee that allocated LSD for scientific research in the United States. By this time, LSD was so widely available on the black market that the Federal Government had replaced the CIA's informal controls of the 1950s with laws and procedures forbidding all but the most strictly regulated research. With Pfeiffer on the governing committee, the CIA could keep up its traditional role of monitoring above-ground LSD experimentation around the United States.

To cover some of the more exotic behavioral fields, another MKSEARCH program

KILL SWITCH

continued TSS's relationship with Dr. Maitland Baldwin, the brain surgeon at the National Institutes of Health who had been so willing in 1955 to perform "terminal experiments" in sensory deprivation for Morse Allen and the ARTICHOKE program. After Allen was pushed aside by the men from MKULTRA, the new TSS team hired Baldwin as a consultant. According to one of them, he was full of bright ideas on how to control behavior, but they were wary of him because he was such an "eager beaver" with an obvious streak of "craziness." Under TSS auspices, Baldwin performed lobotomies on apes and then put these simian subjects into sensory deprivation—presumably in the same "box" he had built himself at NIH and then had to repair after a desperate soldier kicked his way out. There is no information available on whether Baldwin extended this work to humans, although he did discuss with an outside consultant how lobotomized patients reacted to prolonged isolation. Like Hamilton, Baldwin was a jack-of-all trades who in one experiment beamed radio frequency energy directly at the brain of a chimpanzee and in another cut off one monkey's head and tried to transplant it to the decapitated body of another monkey. Baldwin used \$250 in Agency money to buy his own electroshock machine, and he did some kind of unspecified work at a TSS safehouse that caused the CIA to shell out \$1450 to renovate and repair the place.

The last MKSEARCH subproject covered the work of Dr. Charles Geschickter, who served TSS both as researcher and funding conduit. CIA documents show that Geschickter tested powerful drugs on mental defectives and terminal cancer patients, apparently at the Georgetown University Hospital in Washington. In all, the Agency put \$655,000 into Geschickter's research on knockout drugs, stress-producing chemicals, and mind-altering substances. Nevertheless, the doctor's principal service to TSS officials seems to have been putting his family foundation at the disposal of the CIA—both to channel funds and to serve as a source of cover to Agency operators. About \$2.1 million flowed through this tightly controlled foundation to other researchers.[42] Under MKSEARCH, Geschickter continued to provide TSS with a means to assess drugs rapidly, and he branched out into trying to knock out monkeys with radar waves to the head (a technique which worked but risked frying vital parts of the brain). The Geschickter Fund for Medical Research remained available as a conduit until 1967.[43]

As part of the effort to keep finding new substances to test within MKSEARCH, Agency officials continued their search for magic mushrooms, leaves, roots, and barks. In 1966, with considerable CIA backing, J. C. King, the former head of the Agency's Western Hemisphere Division who was eased out after the Bay of Pigs, formed an ostensibly private firm called Amazon Natural Drug Company. King, who loved to float down jungle rivers on the deck of his houseboat with a glass of scotch in hand, searched the backwaters of South America for plants of interest to the Agency and/or medical science. To do the work, he hired Amazon men and women, plus at least two CIA paramilitary operators who worked out of Amazon offices in Iquitos, Peru. They shipped back to the United States finds that included *Chondodendron toxicoferum*, a paralytic agent which is "absolutely lethal in high doses," according to Dr. Timothy Plowman, a Harvard botanist who like most of the staff was unwitting of the CIA involvement. Another plant that was collected and grown by Amazon employees was the hallucinogen known as *yage*, which author William Burroughs has described as "the final fix."

MKSEARCH went on through the 1960s and into the early 1970s, but with a steadily decreasing budget. In 1964 it cost the Agency about \$250,000. In 1972 it was down to four subprojects and \$110,000. Gottlieb was a very busy man by then, having taken over all TSS

KILL SWITCH

in 1967 when his patron, Richard Helms finally made it to the top of the Agency. In June 1972 Gottlieb decided to end MKSEARCH, thus bringing down the curtain on the quest he himself had started two decades before. He wrote this epitaph for the program:

As a final commentary, I would like to point out that, by means of Project MKSEARCH, the Clandestine Service has been able to maintain contact with the leading edge of developments in the field of biological and chemical control of human behavior. It has become increasingly obvious over the last several years that this general area had less and less relevance to current clandestine operations. The reasons for this are many and complex, but two of them are perhaps worth mentioning briefly. On the scientific side, it has become very clear that these materials and techniques are too unpredictable in their effect on individual human beings, under specific circumstances, to be operationally useful. Our operations officers, particularly the emerging group of new senior operations officers, have shown a discerning and perhaps commendable distaste for utilizing these materials and techniques. They seem to realize that, in addition to moral and ethical considerations, the extreme sensitivity and security constraints of such operations effectively rule them out.

About the time Gottlieb wrote these words, the Watergate break-in occurred, setting in train forces that would alter his life and that of Richard Helms. A few months later, Richard Nixon was reelected. Soon after the election, Nixon, for reasons that have never been explained, decided to purge Helms. Before leaving to become Ambassador to Iran, Helms presided over a wholesale destruction of documents and tapes—presumably to minimize information that might later be used against him. Sid Gottlieb decided to follow Helms into retirement, and the two men mutually agreed to get rid of all the documentary traces of MKULTRA. They had never kept files on the safehouse testing or similarly sensitive operations in the first place, but they were determined to erase the existing records of their search to control human behavior. Gottlieb later told a Senate committee that he wanted to get rid of the material because of a “burgeoning paper problem” within the Agency, because the files were of “no constructive use” and might be “misunderstood,” and because he wanted to protect the reputations of the researchers with whom he had collaborated on the assurance of secrecy. Gottlieb got in touch with the men who had physical custody of the records, the Agency’s archivists, who proceeded to destroy what he and Helms thought were the only traces of the program. They made a mistake, however—or the archivists did. Seven boxes of substantive records and reports were incinerated, but seven more containing invoices and financial records survived—apparently due to misfiling.

Nixon named James Schlesinger to be the new head of the Agency, a post in which he stayed only a few months before the increasingly beleaguered President moved him over to be Secretary of Defense at the height of Watergate. During his short stop at CIA, Schlesinger sent an order to all Agency employees asking them to let his office know about any instances where Agency officials might have carried out any improper or illegal actions. Somebody mentioned Frank Olson’s suicide, and it was duly included in the many hundreds of pages of misdeeds reported which became known within the CIA as the “family jewels.”

Schlesinger, an outsider to the career CIA operators, had opened a Pandora’s box that the professionals never managed to shut again. Samples of the “family jewels” were slipped out to *New York Times* reporter Seymour Hersh, who created a national furor in December 1974 when he wrote about the CIA’s illegal spying on domestic dissidents during the Johnson and Nixon years. President Gerald Ford appointed a commission headed

KILL SWITCH

by Vice-President Nelson Rockefeller to investigate the past CIA abuses—and to limit the damage. Included in the final Rockefeller report was a section on how an unnamed Department of the Army employee had jumped out of a New York hotel window after Agency men had slipped him LSD. That revelation made headlines around the country. The press seized upon the sensational details and virtually ignored two even more revealing sentences buried in the Rockefeller text: “The drug program was part of a much larger CIA program to study possible means for controlling human behavior. Other studies explored the effects of radiation, electric-shock, psychology, psychiatry, sociology, and harassment substances.”

At this point, I entered the story. I was intrigued by those two sentences, and I filed a Freedom of Information request with the CIA to obtain all the documents the Agency had furnished the Rockefeller Commission on behavior control. Although the law requires a government agency to respond within 10 days, it took the Agency more than a year to send me the first 50 documents on the subject, which turned out to be heavily censored.

In the meantime, the committee headed by Senator Frank Church was looking into the CIA, and it called in Sid Gottlieb, who was then spending his retirement working as a volunteer in a hospital in India. Gottlieb secretly testified about CIA assassination programs. (In describing his role in its final report, the Church Committee used a false name, “Victor Scheider.”) Asked about the behavioral-control programs, Gottlieb apparently could not—or would not—remember most of the details. The committee had almost no documents to work with, since the main records had been destroyed in 1973 and the financial files had not yet been found.

The issue lay dormant until 1977, when, about June 1, CIA officials notified my lawyers that they had found the 7 boxes of MKULTRA financial records and that they would send me the releasable portions over the following months. As I waited, CIA Director Stansfield Turner notified President Carter and the Senate Select Committee on Intelligence that an Agency official had located the 7 boxes. Admiral Turner publicly described MKULTRA as only a program of drug experimentation and not one aimed at behavior control. On July 20 I held a press conference at which I criticized Admiral Turner for his several distortions in describing the MKULTRA program. To prove my various points, I released to the reporters a score of the CIA documents that had already come to me and that gave the flavor of the behavioral efforts. Perhaps it was a slow news day, or perhaps people simply were interested in government attempts to tamper with the mind. In any event, the documents set off a media bandwagon that had the story reported on all three network television news shows and practically everywhere else.

The Senate Select Committee on Intelligence and Senator Edward Kennedy’s Subcommittee on Health and Scientific Research soon announced they would hold public hearings on the subject. Both panels had looked into the secret research in 1975 but had been hampered by the lack of documents and forthcoming witnesses. At first the two committees agreed to work together, and they held one joint hearing. Then, Senator Barry Goldwater brought behind-the-scenes pressure to get the Intelligence panel, of which he was vice-chairman, to drop out of the proceedings. He claimed, among other things, that the committee was just rehashing old programs and that the time had come to stop dumping on the CIA. Senator Kennedy plowed ahead anyway. He was limited, however, by the small size of

KILL SWITCH

the staff he assigned to the investigation, and his people were literally buried in paper by CIA officials, who released 8,000 pages of documents in the weeks before the hearings. As the hearings started, the staff still not had read everything—let alone put it all in context.

As Kennedy's staff prepared for the public sessions, the former men from MKULTRA also got ready. According to one of them, they agreed among themselves to "keep the inquiry within bounds that would satisfy the committee." Specifically, he says that meant volunteering no more information than the Kennedy panel already had. Charles Siragusa, the narcotics agent who ran the New York safehouse, reports he got a telephone call during this period from Ray Treichler, the Stanford Ph.D. who specialized in chemical warfare for the MKULTRA program. "He wanted me to deny knowing about the safehouse," says Siragusa. "He didn't want me to admit that he was the guy. . . . I said there was no way I could do that." Whether any other ex-TSS men also suborned perjury cannot be said, but several of them appear to have committed perjury at the hearings.[44] As previously noted, Robert Lashbrook denied firsthand knowledge of the safehouse operation when, in fact, he had supervised one of the "pads" and been present, according to George White's diary, at the time of an "LSD surprise" experiment. Dr. Charles Geschickter testified he had not tested stress-producing drugs on human subjects while both his own 1960 proposal to the Agency and the CIA's documents indicate the opposite.

Despite the presence of a key aide who constantly cued him during the hearings, Senator Kennedy was not prepared to deal with these and other inconsistencies. He took no action to follow up obviously perjured testimony, and he seemed content to win headlines with reports of "The Gang That Couldn't Spray Straight." Although that particular testimony had been set up in advance by a Kennedy staffer, the Senator still managed to act surprised when ex-MKULTRA official David Rhodes told of the ill-fated LSD experiment at the Marin County safehouse.

The Kennedy hearings added little to the general state of knowledge on the CIA's behavior-control programs. CIA officials, both past and present, took the position that basically nothing of substance was learned during the 25-odd years of research, the bulk of which had ended in 1963, and they were not challenged. That proposition is, on its face, ridiculous, but neither Senator Kennedy nor any other investigator has yet put any real pressure on the Agency to reveal the content of the research—what was actually learned—as opposed to the experimental means of carrying it out. In this book, I have tried to get at some of the substantive questions, but I have had access to neither the scientific records, which Gottlieb and Helms destroyed, nor the principal people involved. Gottlieb, for instance, who moved from India to Santa Cruz, California and then to parts unknown, turned down repeated requests to be interviewed. "I am interested in very different matters than the subject of your book these days," he wrote, "and do not have either the time or the inclination to reprocess matters that happened a long time ago."

Faced with these obstacles, I have tried to weave together a representative sample of what went on, but having dealt with a group of people who regularly incorporated lying into their daily work, I cannot be sure. I cannot be positive that they never found a technique to control people, despite my definite bias in favor of the idea that the human spirit defeated the manipulators. Only a congressional committee could compel truthful testimony from people who have so far refused to be forthcoming, and even Congress' record has not been good so far. A determined investigative committee at least could make sure that the people being probed do not determine the "bounds" of the inquiry.

KILL SWITCH

A new investigation would probably not be worth the effort just to take another stab at MKULTRA and ARTICHOKE. Despite my belief that there are some skeletons hidden—literally—the public probably now knows the basic parameters of these programs. The fact is, however, that CIA officials actively experimented with behavior-control methods for another decade after Sid Gottlieb and company lost the research action. The Directorate of Science and Technology—specifically its Office of Research and Development (ORD)—did not remain idle after Director McCone transferred the behavioral research function in 1962.

In ORD, Dr. Stephen Aldrich, a graduate of Amherst and Northwestern Medical School, took over the role that Morse Allen and then Sid Gottlieb had played before him. Aldrich had been the medical director of the Office of Scientific Intelligence back in the days when that office was jockeying with Morse Allen for control of ARTICHOKE, so he was no stranger to the programs. Under his leadership, ORD officials kept probing for ways to control human behavior, and they were doing so with space-age technology that made the days of MKULTRA look like the horse-and-buggy era. If man could get to the moon by the end of the 1960s, certainly the well-financed scientists of ORD could make a good shot at conquering inner space.

They brought their technology to bear on subjects like the electric stimulation of the brain. John Lilly had done extensive work in this field a decade earlier, before concluding that to maintain his integrity he must find another field. CIA men had no such qualms, however. They actively experimented with placing electrodes in the brain of animals and—probably—men. Then they used electric and radio signals to move their subjects around. The field went far beyond giving monkeys orgasms, as Lilly had done. In the CIA itself, Sid Gottlieb and the MKULTRA crew had made some preliminary studies of it. They started in 1960 by having a contractor search all the available literature, and then they had mapped out the parts of animals' brains that produced reactions when stimulated. By April 1961 the head of TSS was able to report "we now have a 'production capability'" in brain stimulation and "we are close to having debugged a prototype system whereby dogs can be guided along specific courses." Six months later, a CIA document noted, "The feasibility of remote control of activities in several species of animals has been demonstrated. . . . Special investigations and evaluations will be conducted toward the application of selected elements of these techniques to man." Another six months later, TSS officials had found a use for electric stimulation: this time putting electrodes in the brains of cold-blooded animals—presumably reptiles. While much of the experimentation with dogs and cats was to find a way of wiring the animal and then directing it by remote control into, say, the office of the Soviet ambassador, this cold-blooded project was designed instead for the delivery of chemical and biological agents or for "executive action-type operations," according to a document. "Executive action" was the CIA's euphemism for assassination.

With the brain electrode technology at this level, Steve Aldrich and ORD took over the research function from TSS. What the ORD men found cannot be said, but the open literature would indicate that the field progressed considerably during the 1960s. Can the human brain be wired and controlled by a big enough computer? Aldrich certainly tried to find out.

Creating amnesia remained a "big goal" for the ORD researcher, states an ex-CIA man. Advances in brain surgery, such as the development of three-dimensional, "stereo-

KILL SWITCH

taxic” techniques, made psychosurgery a much simpler matter and created the possibility that a precisely placed electrode probe could be used to cut the link between past memory and present recall. As for subjects to be used in behavioral experiments of this sort, the ex-CIA man states that ORD had access to prisoners in at least one American penal institution. A former Army doctor stationed at the Edgewood chemical laboratory states that the lab worked with CIA men to develop a drug that could be used to help program in new memories into the mind of an amnesic subject. How far did the Agency take this research? I don’t know.

The men from ORD tried to create their own latter-day version of the Society for the Investigation of Human Ecology. Located outside Boston, it was called the Scientific Engineering Institute, and Agency officials had set it up originally in 1956 as a proprietary company to do research on radar and other technical matters that had nothing to do with human behavior. Its president, who says he was a “figurehead,” was Dr. Edwin Land, the founder of Polaroid. In the early 1960s, ORD officials decided to bring it into the behavioral field and built a new wing to the Institute’s modernistic building for the “life sciences.” They hired a group of behavioral and medical scientists who were allowed to carry on their own independent research as long as it met Institute standards. These scientists were available to consult with frequent visitors from Washington, and they were encouraged to take long lunches in the Institute’s dining room where they mixed with the physical scientists and brainstormed about virtually everything. One veteran recalls a colleague joking, “If you could find the natural radio frequency of a person’s sphincter, you could make him run out of the room real fast.” Turning serious, the veteran states the technique was “plausible,” and he notes that many of the crazy ideas bandied about at lunch developed into concrete projects.

Some of these projects may have been worked on at the Institute’s own several hundred-acre farm located in the Massachusetts countryside. But of the several dozen people contacted in an effort to find out what the Institute did, the most anyone would say about experiments at the farm was that one involved stimulating the pleasure centers of crows’ brains in order to control their behavior. Presumably, ORD men did other things at their isolated rural lab.

Just as the MKULTRA program had been years ahead of the scientific community, ORD activities were similarly advanced. “We looked at the manipulation of genes,” states one of the researchers. “We were interested in gene splintering. The rest of the world didn’t ask until 1976 the type of questions we were facing in 1965. . . . Everybody was afraid of building the supersoldier who would take orders without questioning, like the kamikaze pilot. Creating a subservient society was not out of sight.” Another Institute man describes the work of a colleague who bombarded bacteria with ultraviolet radiation in order to create deviant strains. ORD also sponsored work in parapsychology. Along with the military services, Agency officials wanted to know whether psychics could read minds or control them from afar (telepathy), if they could gain information about distant places or people (clairvoyance or remote viewing), if they could predict the future (precognition), or influence the movement of physical objects or even the human mind (photokinesis). The last could have incredibly destructive applications, if it worked. For instance, switches setting off nuclear bombs would have to be moved only a few inches to launch a holocaust. Or, enemy psychics, with minds honed to laser-beam sharpness, could launch attacks to burn out the brains of American nuclear scientists. Any or all of these techniques have numerous

KILL SWITCH

applications to the spy trade.

While ORD officials apparently left much of the drug work to Gottlieb, they could not keep their hands totally out of this field. In 1968 they set up a joint program, called Project OFTEN, with the Army Chemical Corps at Edgewood, Maryland to study the effects of various drugs on animals and humans. The Army helped the Agency put together a computerized data base for drug testing and supplied military volunteers for some of the experiments. In one case, with a particularly effective incapacitating agent, the Army arranged for inmate volunteers at the Holmesburg State Prison in Philadelphia. Project OFTEN had both offensive and defensive sides, according to an ORD man who described it in a memorandum. He cited as an example of what he and his coworkers hoped to find “a compound that could simulate a heart attack or a stroke in the targeted individual.” In January 1973, just as Richard Helms was leaving the Agency and James Schlesinger was coming in, Project OFTEN was abruptly canceled.

What—if any—success the ORD men had in creating heart attacks or in any of their other behavioral experiments simply cannot be said. Like Sid Gottlieb, Steve Aldrich is not saying, and his colleagues seem even more closemouthed than Gottlieb's. In December 1977, having gotten wind of the ORD programs, I filed a Freedom of Information request for access to ORD files “on behavioral research, including but not limited to any research or operational activities related to bio-electrics, electric or radio stimulation of the brain, electronic destruction of memory, stereotaxic surgery, psychosurgery, hypnotism, parapsychology, radiation, microwaves, and ultrasonics.” I also asked for documentation on behavioral testing in U.S. penal institutions, and I later added a request for all available files on amnesia. The Agency wrote back six months later that ORD had “identified 130 boxes (approximately 130 cubic feet) of material that are reasonably expected to contain behavioral research documents.”

Considering that Admiral Turner and other CIA officials had tried to leave the impression with Congress and the public that behavioral research had almost all ended in 1963 with the phaseout of MKULTRA, this was an amazing admission. The sheer volume of material was staggering. This book is based on the 7 boxes of heavily censored MKULTRA financial records plus another 3 or so of ARTICHOKE documents, supplemented by interviews. It has taken me over a year, with significant research help, to digest this much smaller bulk. Clearly, greater resources than an individual writer can bring to bear will be needed to get to the bottom of the ORD programs.

A free society's best defense against unethical behavior modification is public disclosure and awareness. The more people understand consciousness-altering technology, the more likely they are to recognize its application, and the less likely it will be used. When behavioral research is carried out in secret, it can be turned against the government's enemies, both foreign and domestic. No matter how pure or defense-oriented the motives of the researchers, once the technology exists, the decision to use it is out of their hands. Who can doubt that if the Nixon administration or J. Edgar Hoover had had some foolproof way to control people, they would not have used the technique against their political foes, just as the CIA for years tried to use similar tactics overseas?

As with the Agency's secrets, it is now too late to put behavioral technology back in the box. Researchers are bound to keep making advances. The technology has already spread to our schools, prisons, and mental hospitals, not to mention the advertising com-

KILL SWITCH

munity, and it has also been picked up by police forces around the world. Placing hoods over the heads of political prisoners—a modified form of sensory deprivation—has become a standard tactic around the world, from Northern Ireland to Chile. The Soviet Union has consistently used psychiatric treatment as an instrument of repression. Such methods violate basic human rights just as much as physical abuse, even if they leave no marks on the body.

Totalitarian regimes will probably continue, as they have in the past, to search secretly for ways to manipulate the mind, no matter what the United States does. The prospect of being able to control people seems too enticing for most tyrants to give up. Yet, we as a country can defend ourselves without sending our own scientists—mad or otherwise—into a hidden war that violates our basic ethical and constitutional principles. After all, we created the Nuremberg Code to show there were limits on scientific research and its application. Admittedly, American intelligence officials have violated our own standard, but the U.S. Government has now officially declared violations will no longer be permitted. The time has come for the United States to lead by example in voluntarily renouncing secret government behavioral research. Other countries might even follow suit, particularly if we were to propose an international agreement which provides them with a framework to do so.

Tampering with the mind is much too dangerous to be left to the spies. Nor should it be the exclusive province of the behavioral scientists, who have given us cause for suspicion. Take this statement by their most famous member, B. F. Skinner: “My image in some places is of a monster of some kind who wants to pull a string and manipulate people. Nothing could be further from the truth. People are manipulated; I just want them to be manipulated more effectively.” Such notions are much more acceptable in prestigious circles than people tend to think: D. Ewen Cameron read papers about “depatterning” with electroshock before meetings of his fellow psychiatrists, and they elected him their president. Human behavior is so important that it must concern us all. The more vigilant we and our representatives are, the less chance we will be unwitting victims.

[1] While Hofmann specifically used the word “trip” in a 1977 interview to describe his consciousness-altering experience, the word obviously had no such meaning in 1943 and is used here anachronistically.

[2] Del Gracio’s name was deleted by the CIA from the OSS document that described the incident, but his identity was learned from the papers of George White, whose widow donated them to Foothills College in Los Altos, California. CIA officials cut virtually all the names from the roughly 16,000 pages of its own papers and the few score pages from OSS that it released to me under the Freedom of Information Act. However, as in this case, many of the names could be found through collateral sources.

[3] Naval intelligence officers eventually made a deal in which mob leaders promised to cooperate, and as a direct result, New York Governor Thomas Dewey ordered Del Gracio’s chief, boss of bosses, Charles “Lucky” Luciano freed from jail in 1946.

[4] The term “Manchurian Candidate” came into the language in 1959 when author Richard Condon made it the title of his best-selling novel that later became a popular movie starring Laurence Harvey and Frank Sinatra. The story was about a joint Soviet-Chinese plot to take an American soldier captured in Korea, condition him at a special brainwashing center located in Manchuria, and create a remote-controlled assassin who was supposed to

KILL SWITCH

kill the President of the United States. Condon consulted with a wide variety of experts while researching the book, and some inside sources may well have filled him in on the gist of a discussion that took place at a 1953 meeting at the CIA on behavior control. Said one participant, “. . . individuals who had come out of North Korea across the Soviet Union to freedom recently apparently had a blank period of disorientation while passing through a special zone in Manchuria.” The CIA and military men at this session promised to seek more information, but the matter never came up again in either the documents released by the Agency or in the interviews done for this book.

[5] The Code was suggested in essentially its final form by prosecution team consultant, Dr. Leo Alexander, a Boston psychiatrist.

[6] Four months before Pearl Harbor, Donovan had enlisted Walter Langer to put together a nationwide network of analysts to study the morale of the country's young men, who, it was widely feared, were not enthusiastic about fighting a foreign war. Pearl Harbor seemed to solve this morale problem, but Langer stayed with Donovan as a part-time psychoanalytic consultant.

[7] Langer wrote that Hitler was “masochistic in the extreme inasmuch as he derives sexual pleasure from punishment inflicted on his own body. There is every reason to suppose that during his early years, instead of identifying himself with his father as most boys do, he identified with his mother. This was perhaps easier for him than for most boys since, as we have seen, there is a large feminine component in his physical makeup. . . . His extreme sentimentality, his emotionality, his occasional softness, and his weeping, even after he became Chancellor, may be regarded as manifestations of a fundamental pattern that undoubtedly had its origin in his relationship to his mother.”

[8] Although historians have long known that OSS men had been in touch with the German officers who tried to assassinate Hitler in 1944, the fact that OSS independently was trying to murder him has eluded scholars of the period. Stanley Lovell gave away the secret in his 1963 book, *Of Spies and Strategems*, but he used such casual and obscure words that the researchers apparently did not notice. Lovell wrote: “I supplied now and then a carbamate or other quietus medication, all to be injected into *der Führer's* carrots, beets, or whatever.” A “quietus medicine” is a generic term for a lethal poison, of which carbamates are one type.

[9] Gardner, a psychologist teaching at Mount Holyoke College, helped Murray set up the original program and went on to open the West Coast OSS assessment site at a converted beach club in San Juan Capistrano. After the war, he would become Secretary of HEW in the Johnson administration and founder of Common Cause.

[10] Murray is not at all enthusiastic with the spinoffs. “Some of the things done with it turn your stomach,” he declares.

[11] CIA operators and agents all had cover names by which they were supposed to be called—even in classified documents. Gottlieb was “Sherman R. Grifford.” George White became “Morgan Hall.”

[12] One case which put White in every newspaper in the country was his 1949 arrest of blues singer Billie Holliday on an opium charge. To prove she had been set up and was not then using drugs, the singer checked into a California sanitarium that had been recommended by a friend of a friend, Dr. James Hamilton. The jury then acquitted her. Hamilton's involvement is bizarre because he had worked with George White testing truth drugs for

KILL SWITCH

OSS, and the two men were good friends. White may have put his own role in perspective when he told a 1970 interviewer he “enjoyed” chasing criminals. “It was a game for me,” he said. “I felt quite a bit of compassion for a number of the people that I found it necessary to put in jail, particularly when you’d see the things that would happen to their families. I’d give them a chance to stay out of jail and take care of their families by giving me information, perhaps, and they would stubbornly refuse to do so. They wouldn’t be a rat, as they would put it.”

[13] Despite this indication from White’s diary that Lashbrook came to the New York safehouse for an “LSD surprise” and despite his signature on papers authorizing the sub-project, Lashbrook flatly denied all firsthand knowledge of George White’s testing in 1977 Senate testimony. Subcommittee chairman Edward Kennedy did not press Lashbrook, nor did he refer the matter to the Justice Department for possible perjury charges.

[14] This was just one of many expenditures that would drive CIA auditors wild while going over George White’s accounts. Others included \$44.04 for a telescope, liquor bills over \$1,000 “with no record as to the necessity of its use,” and \$31.75 to make an on-the-spot payment to a neighborhood lady whose car he hit. The reason stated for using government funds for the last expense: “It was important to maintain security and forestall an insurance investigation.”

[15] In 1984, George Orwell wrote about government-encouraged prostitution: “Mere debauchery did not matter very much, so long as it was furtive and joyless, and only involved the women of a submerged and despised class.”

[16] In 1961 MKULTRA officials started a third safehouse in New York, also under the Narcotics Bureau’s supervision. This one was handled by Charles Siragusa, who, like White, was a senior agent and OSS veteran.

[17] Rhodes’ testimony about this incident, which had been set up in advance with Senator Edward Kennedy’s staff, brought on the inevitable “Gang That Couldn’t Spray Straight” headline in the *Washington Post*. This approach turned the public perception of a deadly serious program into a kind of practical joke carried out badly by a bunch of bumblers.

[18] Lyman Kirkpatrick, the longtime Inspector General who had then recently left the job to take a higher Agency post, had personally known of the safehouse operation since right after Olson’s death and had never raised any noticeable objection. He now states he was “shocked” by the unwitting testing, but that he “didn’t have the authority to follow up . . . I was trying to determine what the tolerable limits were of what I could do and still keep my job.”

[19] Trying to explain why he had specifically decided not to inform the CIA Director about the Agency’s relationship with the mob, Helms stated to the Church committee, “Mr. McCone was relatively new to this organization, and I guess I must have thought to myself, well this is going to look peculiar to him . . . This was, you know not a very savory effort.” Presumably, Helms had similar reasons for not telling McCone about the unwitting drug-testing in the safehouses.

[20] Helms was a master of telling different people different stories to suit his purposes. At the precise time he was raising the Soviet menace to push McCone into letting the unwitting testing continue, he wrote the Warren Commission that not only did Soviet behavioral research lag five years behind the West’s, but that “there is no present evidence

KILL SWITCH

that the Soviets have any singular, new, potent, drugs . . . to force a course of action on an individual.”

[21] TSS officials led by Sid Gottlieb, who were responsible for the operational use of LSD abroad, took the position that here was “no danger medically” in unwitting doses and that neither giving a medical exam or having a doctor present was necessary. The Agency’s Medical Office disagreed, saying the drug was “medically dangerous.” In 1957 Inspector General Lyman Kirkpatrick noted it would be “unrealistic” to give the Medical Office what amounted to veto power over covert operations by letting Agency doctors rule on the health hazard to subjects in the field.

[22] While I was doing the research for this book, many people approached me claiming to be victims of CIA drugging plots. Although I listened carefully to all and realized that some might be authentic victims, I had no way of distinguishing between someone acting strangely and someone *made* to act strangely. Perhaps the most insidious aspect of this whole technique is that anyone blaming his aberrant behavior on a drug or on the CIA gets labeled a hopeless paranoid and his case is thrown into the crank file. There is no better cover than operating on the edge of madness.

One leftist professor in a Latin American university who had opposed the CIA says that he was working alone in his office one day in 1974 when a strange woman entered and jabbed his wrist with a pin stuck in a small round object. Almost immediately, he became irrational, broke glasses and threw water in colleagues’ faces. He says his students spotted an ambulance waiting for him out front. They spirited him out the back door and took him home, where he tripped (or had psychotic episodes) for more than a week. He calls the experience a mix of “heaven and hell,” and he shudders at the thought that he might have spent the time in a hospital “with nurses and straightjackets.” Although he eventually returned to his post at the university, he states that it took him several years to recover the credibility he lost the day he “went crazy at the office.” If the CIA was involved, it had neutralized a foe.

[23] Among the Air Force and Army project leaders were Dr. Fred Williams of the Air Force Psychological Warfare Division, Robert Jay Lifton, Edgar Schein, Albert Biderman, and Lieutenant Colonel James Monroe (an Air Force officer who would later go to work full time in CIA behavioral programs).

[24] Cameron himself may not have known that the Agency was the ultimate source of these funds which came through a conduit, the Society for the Investigation of Human Ecology. A CIA document stated he was unwitting when the grants started in 1957, and it cannot be said whether he ever found out.

[25] Cameron wrote that when a patient remembered his schizophrenic symptoms, the schizophrenic behavior usually returned. If the amnesia held for these symptoms, as Cameron claimed it often did, the subject usually did not have a relapse. Even in his “cured” patients, Cameron found that Rorschach tests continued to show schizophrenic thinking despite the improvement in overt behavior. To a layman, this would seem to indicate that Cameron’s approach got only at the symptoms, not the causes of mental problems. Not deterred, however, Cameron dismissed this inconsistency as a “persistent enigma.”

[26] Cameron wrote in a professional journal that he gave only two electroshocks a day, but a doctor who actually administered the treatment for him says that three were common at the beginning of the therapy.

KILL SWITCH

[27] In his proposal to the Human Ecology group, Cameron wrote that his subjects would be spending only 16 hours a day in sensory deprivation, while they listened to psychic driving tapes (thus providing some outside stimuli). Nevertheless, one of Cameron's colleagues states that some patients, including Mary C. were in continuously. Always looking for a better way, Cameron almost certainly tried both variations.

[28] Cleghorn's team found little loss of memory on objective tests, like the Wechsler Memory Scale but speculated that these tests measured a different memory function—short-term recall—than that the subjects claimed to be missing.

[29] Lilly and other veterans of government-supported research note that there is a practical advantage for the scientist who allows his work to be classified: it gives him an added claim on government funds. He is then in a position to argue that if his work is important enough to be SECRET, it deserves money.

[30] As was the case with LSD work, sensory deprivation research had both a mind control and a transcendental side. Aldous Huxley wrote thusly about the two pioneers in the field: "What men like Hebb and Lilly are doing in the laboratory was done by the Christian hermits in the Thebaid and elsewhere, and by Hindu and Tibetan hermits in the remote fastness of the Himalayas. My own belief is that these experiences really tell us something about the nature of the universe, that they are valuable in themselves and, above all, valuable when incorporated into our world-picture and acted upon [in] normal life."

[31] In a program called "swimmer nullification," government scientists trained dolphins to attack enemy frogmen with huge needles attached to their snouts. The dolphins carried tanks of compressed air, which when jabbed into a deepdiver caused him to pop dead to the surface. A scientist who worked in this CIA-Navy program states that some of the dolphins sent to Vietnam during the late 1960s got out of their pens and disappeared—unheard of behavior for trained dolphins. John Lilly confirms that a group of the marine mammals stationed at Cam Ranh Bay did go AWOL, and he adds that he heard that some eventually returned with their bodies and fins covered with attack marks made by other dolphins.

[32] After 1963 the Agency's Science and Technology Directorate continued brain research with unknown results. See Chapter 12.

[33] Sears still maintains the fiction that he thought he was dealing only with a private foundation, the Geschickter Fund, and that he knew nothing of the CIA involvement in funding his work. Yet a CIA document in his MKULTRA subproject says he was "aware of the real purpose" of the project. Moreover, Sid Gottlieb brought him to Washington in 1954 to demonstrate hypnosis to a select group of Agency officials.

[34] Under my Freedom of Information suit, the CIA specifically denied access to the documents concerning the testing of hypnosis and psychedelic drugs in cooperation with foreign intelligence agencies. The justification given was that releasing such documents would reveal intelligence sources and methods, which are exempted by law. The hypnosis experiment was never carried out, according to the generic description of the document which the Agency had to provide in explaining why it had to be withheld.

[35] Referring to this CIA-mob relationship, author Robert Sam Anson has written, "It was inevitable: Gentlemen wishing to be killers gravitated to killers wishing to be gentlemen."

[36] The veteran admits that none of the arguments he uses against a conditioned

KILL SWITCH

assassin would apply to a programmed “patsy” whom a hypnotist could walk through a series of seemingly unrelated events—a visit to a store, a conversation with a mailman, picking a fight at a political rally. The subject would remember everything that happened to him and be amnesic only for the fact the hypnotist ordered him to do these things. There would be no gaping inconsistency in his life of the sort that can ruin an attempt by a hypnotist to create a second personality. The purpose of this exercise is to leave a circumstantial trail that will make the authorities think the patsy committed a particular crime. The weakness might well be that the amnesia would not hold up under police interrogation, but that would not matter if the police did not believe his preposterous story about being hypnotized or if he were shot resisting arrest. Hypnosis expert Milton Kline says he could create a patsy in three months; an assassin would take him six.

[37] At 1977 Senate hearings, CIA Director Stansfield Turner summed up some of MKULTRA’s accomplishments over its 11-year existence: The program contracted out work to 80 institutions, which included 44 colleges or universities, 15 research facilities or private companies, 12 hospitals or clinics, and 3 penal institutions. I estimate that MKULTRA cost the taxpayers somewhere in the neighborhood of \$10 million.

[38] This economic sabotage program started in 1961, and the chain of command “ran up to the President,” according to Kennedy adviser Richard Goodwin. On the CIA side, Agency Director John McCone “was very strong on it,” says his former deputy Ray Cline. Cline notes that McCone had the standing orders to all CIA stations abroad rewritten to include “a sentence or two” authorizing a continuing program to disrupt the Cuban economy. Cuba’s trade thus became a standing target for Agency operators, and with the authority on the books, CIA officials apparently never went back to the White House for renewed approval after Kennedy died, in Cline’s opinion. Three former Assistant Secretaries of State in the Johnson and Nixon administrations say the sabotage, which included everything from driving down the price of Cuban sugar to tampering with cane-cutting equipment, was not brought to their attention. Former CIA Director William Colby states that the Agency finally stopped the economic sabotage program in the early 1970s. Cuban government officials counter that CIA agents were still working to create epidemics among Cuban cattle in 1973 and that as of spring 1978, Agency men were committing acts of sabotage against cargo destined for Cuba.

[39] In 1967 a Senate committee chaired by Senator Edward Long was inquiring into wiretapping by government agencies, including the Narcotics Bureau. The Commissioner of Narcotics, then Harry Giordano told a senior TSS man—almost certainly Gottlieb—that if CIA officials were “concerned” about its dealings with the Bureau involving the safehouses coming out during the hearings, the most “helpful thing” they could do would be to “turn the Long committee off.” How the CIA men reacted to this not very subtle blackmail attempt is unclear from the documents, but what does come out is that the TSS man and another top-level CIA officer misled and lied to the top echelon of the Treasury Department (the Narcotics Bureau’s parent organization) about the safehouses and how they were used.

[40] James Moore of the University of Delaware, who also produced carbamates when he was not seeking the magic mushroom, served at times as an intermediary between the industrialist and the CIA.

[41] During the late 1960s and early 1970s, it seemed that every radical on the West Coast was saying that the CIA was up to strange things in behavior modification at Vacaville.

KILL SWITCH

Like many of yesterday's conspiracy theories, this one turned out to be true.

[42] Geschickter was an extremely important TSS asset with connections in high places. In 1955 he convinced Agency officials to contribute \$375,000 in secret funds toward the construction of a new research building at Georgetown University Hospital. (Since this money seemed to be coming from private sources, unwitting Federal bureaucrats doubled it under the matching grant program for hospital construction.) The Agency men had a clear understanding with Geschickter that in return for their contribution, he would make sure they received use of one-sixth of the beds and total space in the facility for their own "hospital safehouse." They then would have a ready source of "human patients and volunteers for experimental use," according to a CIA document, and the research program in the building would provide cover for up to three TSS staff members. Allen Dulles personally approved the contribution and then, to make sure, he took it to President Eisenhower's special committee to review covert operations. The committee also gave its assent, with the understanding that Geschickter could provide "a reasonable expectation" that the Agency would indeed have use of the space he promised. He obviously did, because the CIA money was forthcoming. (This, incidentally, was the only time in a whole quarter-century of Agency behavior-control activities when the documents show that CIA officials went to the White House for approval of anything. The Church committee found no evidence that either the executive branch or Congress was informed of the programs.)

[43] In 1967, after *Ramparts* magazine exposed secret CIA funding of the National Student Association and numerous nonprofit organizations, President Johnson forbade CIA support of foundations or educational institutions. Inside the Agency there was no notion that this order meant ending relationships, such as the one with Geschickter. In his case, the agile CIA men simply transferred the funding from the foundation to a private company, of which his son was the secretary-treasurer.

[44] Lying to Congress followed the pattern of lying to the press that some MKULTRA veterans adopted after the first revelations came out. For example, former Human Ecology Society director James Monroe told *The New York Times* on August 2, 1977 that "only about 25 to 30 percent" of the Society's budget came from the CIA—a statement he knew to be false since the actual figure was well over 90 percent. His untruth allowed some other grantees to claim that their particular project was funded out of the non-Agency part of the Society.

The prospect of domination of the nation's scholars by federal employment, project allocations, and the power of money is ever present—and is gravely to be regarded. Yet, in holding scientific research and discovery in respect, as we should, we must also be alert to the equal and opposite danger that public policy could itself become the captive of a scientific-technological elite.

[President Dwight D. Eisenhower, January 17, 1961]

Covert actions are counterproductive and damaging to the national interest of the United States. They are inimical to the operation of an effective national intelligence system, and corruptive of civil liberties, including the functioning of the judiciary and a free press. Most importantly, they contradict the principles of democracy, national self-determination and international law to which the United States is publicly committed.

[Credo of the Association of National Security Alumni]

KILL SWITCH

MICROWAVE HARASSMENT AND MIND-CONTROL EXPERIMENTATION

Whither the KGB?

In February 1974, Georgetown University's Center for Strategic and International Studies (CSIS) hosted discussions on the plight of dissenters in the Soviet Union, and on the means by which the U.S. Government might most effectively intervene. Highlights of these discussions are reported in *Understanding the Solzhenitzyn Affair: Dissent and its Control in the USSR* (CSIS, 1974).

KGB strategies were addressed in some detail during these discussions. It was noted that the KGB's success depended on the extensive use of informant networks and *agents provocateurs*; and, following Brezhnev's rise to power, on the use of drugs and psychiatrists for further purposes of manipulation and control. Shadowing, bugging, slandering, black-listing and other related tactics were also cited as serving KGB purposes. Participants in the conference agreed that the KGB's obvious intent was to divide and isolate the populace, to spread fear, and to silence dissenters.

Agencies of our own government are on record as having employed precisely these same tactics on a recurrent basis. The Church and Rockefeller Committee Hearings in the mid-1970's purportedly put an end to these practices. Based on recent developments, it would appear that the CIA's and FBI's Operations MKULTRA, MHCHAOS and COINTELPRO (the focus of these Senate Committee and Vice-Presidential-level Hearings) were instead merely driven underground. We are now in contact with a total of 25* individuals, scattered throughout the United States, who firmly believe they are being harassed by agencies of the U.S. Government. Others have been brought to our attention whom we will be contacting in the future. The majority of these individuals claim that their harassment and surveillance began in 1989.

The methods reportedly employed in these harassment campaigns bear a striking resemblance to those attributed to the CIA and FBI during Operations MKULTRA, MHCHAOS and COINTELPRO. The only difference now is that electronic harassment and experimentation also appear to be (more blatantly) involved.

The Berlin Wall is down, Communism is in the midst of a death rattle, and the KGB no longer poses the threat which purportedly served to justify the U.S. Government's resort to such operations as MKULTRA, MHCHAOS and COINTELPRO. The KGB, since 1989, has been reduced to an increasingly distant memory.

Reactivation of surveillance/harassment/mind-control operations in this country suggests that the KGB, as an institution, was never the real threat. A KGB "mentality," with its underlying pragmatic contempt for civil liberties, appears, instead, to have been the driv-

KILL SWITCH

ing force behind MKULTRA, MHCHAOS and COINTELPRO, and the operations now being reported to us.

The KGB “mentality” is a matter of personal predilection, not ideology. Its objective is power and control, regardless of human cost. It is a corrupting, cancerous influence, which feeds on fear, conformity and government funding.

Four months ago, when this Project commenced, we approached these complaints of government harassment and experimentation with an admitted “high degree of caution.” We are no longer skeptical. The growing numbers of independent complaints and the similarities between those complaints cannot be ignored. Under the circumstances, the KGB should be proud of itself. As a “mentality,” the KGB appears to be accomplishing more in “burying this country” from within, than it could ever have hoped to have achieved as an institution. It would appear that this country has a serious problem on its hands which needs to be resolved.

Part I of this report, which is reprinted from the June-July 1992 edition of the Association’s publication, *Unclassified*, preliminarily addresses the complaints brought to our attention as of July 1992. Our objective, as noted, was to weigh the legitimacy of those complaints in terms of the directed-energy technologies reportedly involved. Part II discusses the overt and covert patterns of harassment identified as a result of our investigations, to date. A part of our objective, here, is to limit the success of such operations in the future, by according them widespread publicity.

In Part II, we do not identify individuals by name, both to honor their privacy and because our investigations have not been completed. Part II, like Part I, is a preliminary finding. Our focus is on the similarities of the complaints being received—similarities which Federal and State legislators, the courts, the FBI, local law enforcement agencies, the medical and psychiatric professions, and organizations such as the ACLU and Amnesty International have so far chosen to ignore.

We frankly find it curious that more attention and credibility is being accorded purported victims of UFO experiences and spectral visitations, than to persons who complain of systematic harassment and experimentation by the U.S. Government, involving technologies which the U.S. Government is only now grudgingly admitting to possess. These complaints require investigation. In due course (and provided financial support is obtained), we hope to be able to acquire the technology and supportive medical expertise to substantiate the claims being made. We also hope to alter the institutional mindset that U.S. Intelligence can be trusted. History, repeatedly, has proven otherwise.

THE PROBLEM SURFACES

The August-September 1991 issue of *UNCLASSIFIED* reviewed Hamline University’s *Public Administration* report on the resolution of MKULTRA cases in 1988. Although the shocking details of medical ethics abuses by the U.S. and Canadian governments were amply detailed, Washington and Ottawa—citing national security and government privilege—stalled for so long that the cases never came to trial. The surviving victims settled for a pittance in an out-of-court settlement.

Since no individuals or agencies were held legally accountable, the door was left open for possible resumption of similar “mind-control” activities.

In the context of that article, we mentioned briefly that some half-dozen people had contacted us with appeals for assistance in ending what they believe to be electronic ha-

KILL SWITCH

harassment and mind-control experimentation, possibly involving the CIA. We decided to take a closer look at this situation.

We are now in touch with approximately a dozen individuals located throughout the United States who appear to be targets of harassment and mind-control experimentation involving directed-energy technologies. [By mid-November 1992, that number had increased to 25.]

Typically, persons who complain of being “zapped by radio waves” and of “hearing voices” are stigmatized as psychotic, delusional or schizophrenic. Being mindful of this, as well as aware of the treatment accorded UFO and psychic phenomena “freaks,” we approach this subject with a high degree of caution. Based on our preliminary investigation, including interviews with the affected individuals, we conclude that the matter is serious and should be pursued further.

The Existing Directed-Energy Arsenal

Our first step was to determine what, if any technology exists which might be used for electronic harassment. That information was found in a “white paper” published in 1991 by the U.S. Global Strategy Council—a Washington-based organization, under the chairmanship of Ray Cline, former Deputy Director of the CIA, who maintains very close ties with the U.S. Intelligence community. The “white paper” describes the foreign and domestic uses foreseen for laser weapons, isotropic radiators, infrasound, non-nuclear electromagnetic pulse generators, and high-power microwave emitters.

The term, “non-lethal,” used to describe this technology is misleading. The energy emitted from all of these weapons can kill when appropriately amplified. At lower levels of amplification, they can cause extreme forms of physical discomfort and debilitation.

The Department of Army (DA) identifies these same weapons as “non-conventional.” They were so identified in an exhibit at a DA-sponsored symposium on “The Soldier As A System,” in Crystal City, VA, on June 30, 1992. Beta wave incapacitators were separately mentioned during the symposium as being of particular interest to the U.S. Marine Corps.

We discussed these “non-conventional” directed-energy weapons with Mr. Vernon Shisler, manager of the exhibit and the Army’s delegate to NATO in matters pertaining to “The Soldier As A System.” Mr. Shisler acknowledged not only that directed-energy weapons are in DoD’s arsenal, but also that the American soldier will remain vulnerable to their effects, should they be employed in the battlefield.

The U.S. Global Strategy Council recognizes the issue of vulnerability, as well, and urges ongoing research into effective countermeasures.

Interested readers may want to send for the U.S. Global Strategy Council’s complete project proposal on this subject: (Title: *Nonlethality: Development of a National Policy and Employing Nonlethal Means in a New Strategic Era*, prepared by Janet Morris). A number of references in this Proposal to unidentified, elusive “enemies” of the U.S. Government and to the potential domestic applications of this “non-lethal” technology invite serious consideration by the public at large.

The Council’s address is 1800 K Street, N.W., Washington, D.C. 20006, (202) 466-6029.

Bioeffects of Microwave Radiation

Research into the biological and psychological effects of exposure to microwave

KILL SWITCH

radiation is voluminous. The U.S. public has been led to believe that the former Soviet Union leads in this research. The fact is, the CIA and DoD [Department of Defense] have jointly pursued precisely the same research since commencement of Project Pandora in the 1950's. The current primary users of this research appear to be the CIA, DoD, the National Security Agency (NSA) and the Department of Energy (DoE).

The Walter Reed Army Institute of Research (WRAIR) has participated in this research since Project Pandora. In 1973, WRAIR discovered that externally-induced auditory input could be achieved by means of pulsed microwave audiograms, or analogs of spoken words' sounds. The effect on the receiving end is the (schizophrenic) sensation of "hearing voices" which are not part of the recipients' own thought processes.

The experiment prompted the following comment in *The Body Electric: Electromagnetism and the Foundation of Life*, by Robert O. Becker, M.D., and Gary Selden (Wm. Morrow & Company, NY, 1985): "Such a device has obvious applications in covert operations designed to drive a target crazy with 'voices' or deliver undetectable instructions to a programmed assassin."

This research has continued, and the results are published in various publicly available scientific and technical journals. Interested readers might consult, for example: Lin, James C., *Electromagnetic Interaction With Biological Systems* (Plenum Press, NY, 1989). Professor Lin, then with the Department of Bioengineering, University of Illinois, Chicago, has published a number of books and articles on this subject. [He has more recently informed us that he had designed the experiment referenced above in Dr. Becker's book.]

WRAIR has more recently been studying the biological effects of exposure to high-power microwave radiation. WRAIR presented a paper on this subject to a DoD-sponsored symposium on "MW [microwave] Weapons" at the Naval Postgraduate School in Monterey, CA, in mid-1989.

A matter of interest to us is why WRAIR should be experimenting with auditory effects of pulsed microwave audiograms. Also, recent statements by an Army psychiatrist assigned to the Walter Reed Army Medical Center (WRAMC) suggest that WRAIR may be experimenting upon select psychiatric inpatients with microwaves. This, too, is a matter of interest to us.

Congressional Oversight

The Government's past record of abuses in the area of civil rights is well documented. Within the past 30 years alone, we have witnessed the effects of Operations MKULTRA, MHCHAOS and COINTELPRO.

Primarily because of MKULTRA, MHCHAOS and COINTELPRO, Executive Orders and implementing regulations were published which prohibited military and CIA domestic covert intelligence operations. Experiments on involuntary human subjects, and the surveillance of/collection of personal information on U.S. citizens, except under strictly regulated conditions were also prohibited.

Congressional committees were created to oversee compliance with these (quasi) legal prohibitions. We have evidence that this is not being done. Moreover, where there are laws and, in this case, no laws enacted, there are loopholes, as well as individual and institutions who deliberately capitalize upon the existence of loopholes. Iran-Contra is one of the more blatant recent examples. Loopholes are also found in government resort to "black" intelligence and weapons programs, in the use of contractors, and in the absence

KILL SWITCH

of clear definitions of such terms as “national security” and “national security risk.”

Executive Orders and regulations which currently limit official U.S. Intelligence activities do not extend to non-intelligence government agencies or to their contractors. In fact, Executive Order 12333 specifies that government contractors do not need to know that their services support U.S. Intelligence objectives.

In its report of July 8, 1992, the Senate Subcommittee on Oversight of Government Management addresses the problem of tracking funds granted to government-contracted research and development (R&D) centers. The report notes that the problem is compounded by DoD's penchant for creating hard-to-monitor “shell” contractors as disbursement centers for funding programs.

Neither shell contractors nor their subcontractors are directly accountable to Congress. Being beyond Congressional oversight, they have the license to operate as Government surrogates in intelligence operations about which, “officially” they know nothing.

In this context, a publication disseminated at DA's “The Soldier As A System” symposium noted that the Army's Research and Technology Program sponsors 42 laboratories and R&D centers, employing approximately 10,000 scientists and engineers. The annual budget of \$1.3 billion is only a small part of overall DoD research spending.

Weapons research, which includes the development and testing of “non-lethal” weapons, is not governed by laws restricting the activities of U.S. Intelligence agencies, though it may be presumed that these agencies contribute to and benefit from such research.

Preliminary Findings

1. The technology exists for the types of harassment and experimentation reported to us.
2. About a dozen U.S. citizens have informed us of continuing experiences with effects which directed-energy weapons are designed to produce.
3. U.S. Government-sponsored research into the bioeffects of exposure to microwave radiation is extensive and continuing.
4. The U.S. Government has a past record of having engaged in mind-control experimentation; and various agencies of the Government have a record of circumventing legal restrictions upon their activities.
5. Neither Congress nor the courts appear willing to look closely into “black” intelligence and weapons procurement programs.
6. A number of U.S. Government agencies might have interest in testing directed-energy technologies on U.S. citizens under non-clinical/non-controlled circumstances—DoD, to test ranges and degrees of “non-lethality”; DoE, to explore “safety” limits; CIA, to test “mind-control” capabilities, and NSA, for technological refinement.

OVERT AND COVERT HARASSMENT

Since publication of the preceding article less than four months ago, the association of National Security Alumni/Electronic Surveillance Project has heard from an additional 13* individuals who report both overt harassment and a range of symptoms which coincide with the known effects of exposure to microwaves, electromagnetic/radio frequency (RF) radiation and/or infrasound.

The similarity of these symptoms will be addressed in greater detail in future Project reports. Suffice it to say, at this point, that the physical and psychological symptoms being

KILL SWITCH

reported to us are consistent with the effects which directed-energy weapons are designed to produce. Indeed, the numerous afflictions (or “inflictions”) being reported appear to parallel standard torture “sequelae,”¹ (aftereffects).

Overt Harassment

Overt Harassment—which obviously is *meant* to be observed—may be intended to “precondition” individuals for eventual long-term electronic harassment. Persons terrified by unexplained overt harassment are not likely to cope with the sudden onset of electronic harassment in any more reasoned fashion. This phased pattern of harassment is apparent in all of the cases now being investigated. The fact that the overt harassment continues in these cases even after the electronic targeting commences suggests that the objective is to maintain long-term extremes of stress.

Many of the overt harassment tactics discussed below are surfacing in cases which (so far) have *not* involved discernible forms of electronic harassment. These are cases involving so-called “whistleblowers” who, because of their inside knowledge of certain potentially newsworthy events, pose particular threats of embarrassment to the Government or to government-affiliated employers. We have noticed that electronic harassment is beginning to surface as a form of retaliation against persons who try to assist electronic “harassees.” Retaliation suggests loss of control. Under the circumstances, we are not entirely confident that “whistleblowers” will continue to be exempted from this type of harassment in the long term.

The individuals now in touch with the Project describe their circumstances as involving most, if not all, of the following overt forms of harassment:

- **Sudden, bizarrely-rude treatment, isolation and acts of harassment and vandalism by formerly friendly neighbors.**
- **Harassing telephone calls, which continue even after the targeted individual obtains new, unlisted telephone numbers.**
- **Mail interception, theft and tampering.**
- **Noise campaigns.**

While unrelenting harassing telephone calls might be considered in this context, other tactics are employed. Blaring horns, whistles, sirens, garbage disposal (run concurrently in apartment settings, for excessively prolonged periods of time), and amplified transmissions of recorded “general racket” have been used on a recurrent basis under circumstances intended to persuade the individual that he or she is under surveillance.

In all of these cases, the individuals’ neighbors apparently pretend to be oblivious and/or indifferent to these sudden, continuous explosions of noise.

Door slamming is also a popular pastime, particularly in apartment buildings. One individual reported that, during a peak period of harassment, the neighbor across the hall began entering and leaving his apartment every 10 minutes, slamming his door loudly on each occasion. This was a daily occurrence, encompassing periods of several hours, over a period of several months. It apparently served to trigger a door-slamming “chain reaction” on the part of neighbors both on that floor and on the floors immediately above and below. When our contact politely asked her immediate neighbor to close his door more quietly, he slammed the door in her face. Prior to commencement of this harassment, that neighbor had apparently been quite friendly and courteous.

KILL SWITCH

In another case, the primary door-slammer is an employee of Radix Systems, Inc., Rockville, MD, a DoD contractor engaged in the “super-secret” research and development of some type of electronic equipment.

Several individuals reported recurrent, loud, strange noises in their ventilation systems during the preliminary stages of their harassment. One individual complained of being recurrently awakened in the middle of the night by the sound of wires being fed into his (independent) ventilation system. On checking further, he found that a tubular construction had been built into his vent system which appears to lead to the apartment upstairs. His upstairs neighbor is employed by the Department of Justice.

A number of individuals report that occupants of upstairs and downstairs apartments appear to follow them from room to room, tapping on the floor or engaging in other activities which appear intended to advertise an ongoing surveillance.

The Justice Department employee mentioned above went so far as to offer an unsolicited apology to her downstairs neighbor for the all-night “pacing about” in her bedroom (in the event he had happened to notice it). She claimed to be an insomniac. That pacing-about continued during her recent 36-hour absence from the area. When our contact politely alerted her to the fact that her apartment had apparently been entered during her absence, she told him, in effect, to mind his own business and then immediately complained to the building manager that he was stalking her.

She conveniently forgot to inform the building manager that she had assiduously “courted” this individual for several months, without success; and that she had been stealing his newspapers on a regular basis. (On one occasion, she handed him a week’s accumulation of those papers, claiming that they had been left outside the door of another apartment. Her reason for collecting and saving newspapers which had not been delivered to her directly is unknown.)

· Recurrent confrontations by unusually hostile strangers; and comments by strangers which appear intended to evoke “paranoid” reactions.

In this context, we note that several individuals have reported confrontations with “homeless” people who, on closer examination, were found to be fastidiously clean, though garbed in offbeat fashion (wigs included). The same “eccentric” confronted two of the individuals in contact with us, at separate distant locations. He is reported as having feigned mental illness on both occasions, and as having apparently enjoyed creating a public scene.

· Entries into the individual’s residence, during late-night hours while he/she is sleeping, and/or during the day when the individual is elsewhere.

In virtually all such cases, the burglars leave evidence of their visits, such as by relocating objects, or by committing petty and not-so-petty acts of vandalism. In two cases, the burglar’s “calling card” was to slaughter caged pets, leaving the mangled carcasses inside their locked cages.

In one case, the burglar stole several pieces of correspondence and left a packet of crack cocaine behind as a “calling card.” Our contact in this case—an individual who has no criminal record and no history of experimentation with drugs—is also being harassed (stalked) by a police officer in her community. One of his recent acts was to “frame” her with a drug possession charge. After pulling her off the road (a frequent pastime) and subjecting her to an illegal search (done, twice, so far), he conveniently managed to find a glassine packet of cocaine eight feet away, in front of his squad car. He retrieved the packet

KILL SWITCH

with his fingers and then charged her with Possession. Our contact found the packet of crack cocaine in her apartment shortly after this investigator reminded the attorney handling her case that the police officer had smudged his only piece of evidence with his own fingerprints. It would appear that someone is interested in correcting that police officer's oversight.

In another case, the individual reports that a tremendous amount of money had been stolen from a hiding place in her apartment, within hours after she had withdrawn the money from her bank. There were no obvious signs of entry into her apartment. The police conducted a cursory inquiry which failed to produce evidence of a crime worthy of investigation. (This case is an anomaly. Money is not usually stolen. Documents appear to be the preferred objects of theft, when thefts occur.)

In another case, the burglars replaced installed lightbulbs with "exploding" bulbs, many of which were *Made in Hungary*. The lightbulbs are now in our possession.

- **Rapidly deteriorating health, generally of a digestive nature.**

In two cases of the cases reported, massive rectal bleeding accompanied the sudden onset of severe gastrointestinal disturbances. One of these individuals abruptly terminated the deteriorative process simply by changing the locks on her door.

- **Sleep disruption/deprivation.**

This is achieved by means of both overt and electronic harassment. Sleep deprivation, as a tactic, invariably surfaces when the targeted individual begins exhibiting a strong emotional and irrational response to the other forms of harassment.

- **Vandalism of privately-owned vehicles.**

Vehicles invite peculiarly ferocious attacks in these harassment campaigns—slashed tires, smashed windows, oil drainage, oil contamination, destruction of electronic components and batteries (frequently involving wildly fluctuating, grounded fuel gages, often within range of weapons research facilities and/or other microwave emitters); and suddenly failed brakes and clutches (possibly involving anti-traction polymers, which are also in DoD's "non-lethal" weapons arsenal). Recurrent auto thefts have also been reported.

Two individuals reported finding their oil contaminated immediately after having the oil changed by reputable mechanics. In one of these cases, the oil viscosified (thickened) while the individual was driving through a remote rural area. Her car ground to a halt. Getting the "gunk" cleaned out of her engine proved to be an expensive ordeal. (Viscosification agents are also lauded by the U.S. Global Strategy Council as serving "non-lethal" strategic purposes—a topic discussed in Part I of this publication. Had this woman been assaulted while awaiting help in the said isolated area, the "non-lethal" attributes of viscosification agents might have required redefinition.)

Most of those who have experienced these attacks on a recurring basis have abandoned driving all together—an objective apparently sought by their tormentors as a means of increasing their isolation.

- **Staged accidents.**

The majority of those in touch with us have reported these types of experiences. One individual, for example, was tailgated at a high rate of speed by two vehicles, while concurrently being threatened with a gun by one of the vehicles' occupants. Two others narrowly avoided what appeared to be deliberately attempted collisions by drivers who

KILL SWITCH

quickly sped away from the scene. One avoided three attempts in four days at being run off the road. One survived being run off the road in two incidents within a one-week period, which resulted in “totaling” of her two vehicles. Another narrowly avoided being crushed into an expressway retaining wall, on four occasions, by an off-duty metro bus, as well as, within the same time frame, being “fried” by two suddenly-malfunctioned household appliances which subsequently repaired themselves.

It should be noted that, in some of these cases, “accidental” deaths do occur. One individual in contact with us reported that his mother drove off a cliff to her death, during a period when he was researching evidence that a still-respected, high level State Department official had passed A-bomb secrets to the Soviet Government during World War II. The accident occurred shortly after her car had undergone routine maintenance. She was returning from a dental appointment when the accident occurred. Witnesses state that it appeared that she had suddenly stepped on the accelerator before running off the road. The accident served to terminate this person’s research project.

We are also currently looking into the recent death of a woman in Lexington, MO, who was killed when the brakes on her tractor failed. We are informed that she had been collecting affidavits from persons who believe they are the targets of government harassment and experimentation when her “accident” occurred. We are also informed that those affidavits have disappeared.

Suicides might also qualify as “staged accidents,” particularly where “plausibly deniable” government involvement has been surfaced. We are currently looking into the recent suicide of a man in Trappe, PA, who, as early as 1981, had asked the FBI and CIA to intervene in his case. We have copies of that early correspondence. The man, a former U.S. Army radar technician, had a highly technical and—given the date of his correspondence—“precocious” grasp of the experimental objectives apparently being sought in his case. It is apparent from his correspondence that he had wanted to believe that the Soviets were conducting these experiments. The FBI and CIA, of course, did not intervene. We are informed that members of his family have also been targets of this experimentation.

Isolation of the individual from members of his/her immediate family—virtually assured when highly focused forms of electronic harassment commence.

The exception to this is when elderly parents and young children in the family become targets for apparent purposes of intimidation. This situation has been reported in eight of our cases, to date.

One individual (driven to extremes of stress by ongoing electronic harassment focusing on her children) killed one child in an effort to protect her from further pain.² It appears that lasers were being used in this individual’s case. The targeting intensified after she called the Soviet Embassy to report the harassment, which she believed to be U.S. Government-sponsored. It became even more deadly when, in a further show of defiance, she then called the representative of the Iraqi Government to portray the U.S. Government’s war in the Middle East as “hypocritical.” She is now hospitalized in a midwestern psychiatric facility, where, apparently, the experimentation is now continuing.

(That psychiatric facility is in a State where a disproportionate number of complaints of electronic harassment are beginning to surface. It is also within range of a U.S. Air Force base which houses a “super secret” research facility. We are currently looking into information that spouses and children of persons employed on that USAF base may be the tar-

KILL SWITCH

gets of involuntary experimentation involving directed-energy weapons technologies.)

Another individual, during a telephone conversation, was told by an employee of a local power company that, if she valued the lives of her children, she would drop her public opposition to the company's installation of high power lines. Since receiving that threat, the individual's 11-year-old daughter has been reduced to extremes of pain, resulting in her recurrent hospitalization for treatment of illnesses which cannot be diagnosed. It is now also apparent to this individual that her three-year-old son is on the receiving end of externally-induced auditory input. (DoE figures prominently in this case.)

· **Progressive financial impoverishment, brought on by termination of the individual's employment, and compounded by expenses associated with the harassment.**

The majority of those now in contact with the Project—educated, white-collar professionals—have lost their jobs. Termination of employment in many of these cases involved prefatory harassment by the employer and co-workers, which coincided with the other overt forms of harassment discussed above.

The overt harassment tactics are being described as recurrent, non-sequential and overlapping. As noted above, the overt harassment continues even after the electronic harassment commences.

Failure of "Establishment" Support Systems

Those individuals who have tried to resolve their respective situations through resort to "establishment" channels have invariably encountered the following:

· **Apathy, indifference and/or professed helplessness on the part of members of Congress and state legislators.**

· **Dismissal and/or attempted discrediting by psychiatrists who refuse to include the terms, "government harassment," "mind-control experimentation" and "torture" in their vocabulary.**

Several individuals, thinking that psychiatrists might help to alleviate the extreme stress associated with their harassment, were accorded "treatment" which clearly pointed to cooperation between their psychiatrists and members of the U.S. Intelligence community. One such psychiatrist, in fact, bragged about being a member of the U.S. Intelligence "inner circle," informing our contact that her harassment was a "Pavlovian Experiment," intended to "break" her.

· **Lack of interest, courage and/or competency in legal circles.**

Few of those in contact with us have been able to acquire legal assistance—not helped by their straitened financial circumstances. Most have found that few attorneys are willing to risk their careers by pursuing cases involving what is believed to be government-sponsored harassment and experimentation.

A few attorneys reportedly engaged in egregious violations of codes of professional conduct, in what appear to have been deliberate efforts at sabotaging our contacts' cases. Subsequent attempts by two individuals at obtaining legal redress were met with stonewalling, obstruction, and high-level denials of wrongdoing.

· **Refusal of the mass media to address this topic, except in those cases where suspected experimentees have been driven to the point of committing murder or suicide.**

KILL SWITCH

Such cases (particularly where an individual has claimed to be the victim of CIA-directed mind-control involving auditory input) are treated by the press as “curiosities.” An example of this is the individual who shot a Navy officer outside the Pentagon in mid-1991.³ He claimed to be a victim of CIA mind control, involving auditory input. According to the press, “he worried ‘about being run over by trains’...” (ref. incident described in following paragraph). He is now permanently residing in a psychiatric facility. He, being institutionalized, and others in the preliminary stages of his predicament are no longer of interest to the media.

Another recent case which received short-lived press attention⁴ involved a woman diagnosed as having “suffered from periods of confusion” who climbed over a fence onto a railroad track and walked into an oncoming train. Because the incident occurred in a community in which an unusually large number of these mind-control experiments have been reported, we are looking into the situation. The woman was reportedly “under a physician’s care” because of her “periods of confusion.” A family member described the physician to this investigator as “a psychiatrist.” We find that the alleged “psychiatrist” is a General Practitioner, otherwise non-accredited, practicing out of his home. We find also that the suicide may have been witnessed under peculiarly-timed circumstances by an alleged “homeless” person who has since disappeared. Needless to say, our interest has been whetted.

· **Refusal and/or inability of local police to intervene.**

The tendency of local police is to dismiss an individual’s complaints of government harassment as the ravings of a “fruitcake.” In one case, discussed above, it is apparent that one police officer is actively cooperating in the harassment. Some police agencies, while acknowledging the reality of the situation, hesitate to intervene in cases involving what they believe to be U.S. Intelligence. On a few occasions, certain police officials did attempt to intervene, based on what they perceived to be evidence of a systematic harassment/illegal surveillance campaign. Absent a clear mandate to prosecute “stalkers” acting under the aegis of U.S. Intelligence, the police obviously had their hands tied.

· **Refusal of the FBI to intervene in any of the cases brought to our attention thus far.**

FBI spokesmen do acknowledge that they have received a large number of requests for assistance from “mentally disturbed persons” who believe that they are being “zapped by radio waves” and/or “are hearing voices”...“from Mars, that is.”

In one case, an FBI spokesman reacted in an angry, defensive and bizarre fashion when our contact briefly alluded to PROJECT SLAMMER as possibly being related to her surveillance. (PROJECT SLAMMER is a CIA-funded study, managed by CIA and FBI behavioral scientist, which explores the “mental make-up” of alleged security risks, along with their family members and close associates. Participants in PROJECT SLAMMER include NSA, DIA, and Army, Navy and Air Force Intelligence.)

Until PROJECT SLAMMER was mentioned, the FBI spokesman’s approach in this case was to politely and redundantly explain that the law, as currently constructed, prevents the FBI’s intervening in this individual’s case. When she briefly pointed out that the surveillance activities might fall under the purview of PROJECT SLAMMER, the spokesman’s response was to abruptly and angrily declaim, “**You** don’t know who is conducting that surveillance! **You** don’t know if that is a state police surveillance! ...or a local police surveillance! It could be a totally unrelated operation! **You** don’t know who is conducting that sur-

KILL SWITCH

veillance! [etc., etc.]!”

It was apparent from this response that the FBI was at least acknowledging the existence of a surveillance, if in somewhat emotional fashion. The individual in question subsequently furnished acquired evidence to the local police, who made it clear that they are not participants in the surveillance which, based on the evidence, pointedly suggest that our contact is the target.

- **Refusal or inability of the ACLU and Amnesty International to intervene.**

Both organizations acknowledge receiving many complaints from persons claiming to be the targets of some type of electronic harassment. An ACLU spokes-woman characterized the complaints as appearing to be rational, except in a few cases. The complaints are not being investigated, she said, because of “limited resources.” We have to wonder, of course, why the ACLU could recently find resources to defend the rights of prostitutes and the Ku Klux Klan, yet remains incapable of intervening in cases such as we are now pursuing.

Amnesty International recently informed one of our contacts that they could not intervene in her case because their focus is on the U.S. Government’s treatment of prison inmates. While incarceration does appear to be one sought-for objective in these harassment/mind control experiments, we would like to think that protections by such organizations as Amnesty International can be achieved beforehand.

Related Covert Methodologies

The persons engaged in this harassment tend to become careless, possibly the result of arrogance born of an assumption that nobody can stop them. “Harassees” who have noted this carelessness have furnished us with the following insights into the covert side of these harassment activities.

- **Impersonation of military officers.**

One individual found that her next-door neighbor had claimed to be a military intelligence officer, assigned to a space technology unit in California, on year-long “TDY” (temporary duty) in the individual’s apartment building. It was subsequently determined that this alleged officer is not in fact a member of the U.S. Armed Forces; and that he had used this bogus status to acquire information from a major defense contractor. Our contact is certain that this person’s apartment was used as a base of harassment operations.

- **Use of concealment devices, and emitters detected to date.**

Several individuals and supportive associates report having seen some of the electronic devices being used in these harassment campaigns.

One saw electronic equipment concealed inside a false-front upright piano being moved out of her apartment building. She had previously noted that all of her surrounding neighbors had identical upright pianos in their apartments, not one of which was ever played.

Other suspected participants in the harassment may be concealing devices in oversized stereo speakers, measuring approximately 5' in height x 3' x 3'. Several of our contacts have noted the presence of such speakers in adjacent dwellings.

One individual was told by a resident of her building that her upstairs neighbor has “microwave ovens” in his bedroom and livingroom, but none in the kitchen.

Another individual, while standing outside, looked into her neighbor’s window to find that her bedroom appeared to be the target of a gray-colored, elongated box-like de-

KILL SWITCH

vice, measuring approximately 1' in length x 5" in height (side view). A large, black-framed lens protruded from the end facing her window. The electrical cord, if any, was not visible from that vantage point. The equipment was being operated by a stranger in a three-piece suit, who appeared to be quite startled to find that he was being observed.

Another was given strong reason to believe that portable emitters are being concealed in oversized, extremely heavy, sometimes expandable "briefcases" for use in places of public assembly, such as meeting halls, auditoriums and restaurants. Smaller varieties are apparently being used on aircraft.

On one 3-hour flight, our contact noticed that the man sitting next to her seemed peculiarly intent on keeping the attaché case on his lap propped open with his fingertips, while he gazed "blankly" into the distance during the entire flight. She believed that she was being electronically harassed while on the flight (a common complaint, in most of the cases now being investigated).

Our contact reports that, when they prepared to land, the man opened his attaché case to hastily check its contents, thus disclosing the presence of a raised, built-in "concealment device" covering the entire bottom surface of the attaché case. The low-slung, lift-off cover did not appear to be capable of concealing a laptop computer. At one point during the flight—apparently aware that his "reverie" was inviting attention—the man devoted approximately ten minutes to scribbling assorted entries on a sheet of lined paper, which he had placed on top of his briefcase two hours previously. He devoted roughly ten minutes to the effort (obviously preferring a pen to a laptop computer). His attaché case remained ajar during this process.⁵

One individual reports that mobile emitters may be installed in certain oversized, non-attributable medical emergency vehicles, possibly for eventual use in civil disturbances. Her unsuccessful attempts at following the "medical emergency" vehicle which had surfaced in her case ended with a high-speed chase.

The phony military intelligence officer, when recently moving out of our contact's apartment building, was found to possess a device which resembles an oversized microwave oven, measuring approximately 4' in width x 2' in height x 2 1/2' in depth. A subsequent examination of his apartment revealed that he had tapped numerous additional lines into existing, in-house telephone and TV cables; and that he had gone to great pains to conceal a major excavation into one wall abutting the "harassee's." Judging from photographs taken immediately after this person's departure, the wiring suggests that he was hooked by modem into a computer network, and that at least some of his electronic equipment was situated in a large walk-in closet, again abutting the "harassee's."

When the alleged officer moved out, his equipment (except for the oversized "microwave oven") was packaged in boxes identifying the contents only as stereo components. During his year-long residency in this building, no sounds emanated from his apartment to indicate use of this "stereo" equipment.

Use of modified license plates and vehicle look-alikes.

Some individuals have noted that their neighbors' vehicles are periodically replaced (during peak periods of harassment) by others which qualify as "rough look-alikes." The tags on these latter closely resemble those on the homeowners' vehicles, with a difference being noted in only one digit or one letter. These modified plates appear to have been acquired through State DMV channels, thus suggesting government/intelligence agency

KILL SWITCH

involvement.

In one case, where the individual has obtained police assistance, tracking of one plate surfaced evidence of a drug connection. That plate rapidly disappeared from the vehicle in question, to be replaced by another, again bearing a one-letter modification.

Use of neighbors' residences as bases of operation and training.

One individual recently saw a team of "technicians" in the house behind hers—a consequence of the team's failure to close the curtains and/or dim lighting when pattering around in the kitchen at 5:00 in the morning. The three men (strangers to this individual, all stripped down to their T-shirts) behaved as if they were unaware that they were being watched. Their observer had long suspected that this house was being used as a base of electronic harassment operations. The harassment had been ongoing throughout the night.

To provoke a response from these men, the individual eventually commented aloud on their activities. They responded immediately by turning the lights off and switching to the use of flashlights. Why they failed to close the curtains is unknown.

This individual is working with the police in an effort at ending this surveillance and harassment, with mixed results.

Another individual, paying a surprise visit to the apartment upstairs, overheard one of her own telephone conversations being played on a tape recorder inside that apartment. Lacking both a legitimate pretext to enter the apartment and the support of the building's management personnel and/or the police, she was prevented from pursuing this further. Her upstairs neighbor is purportedly employed by Stanford University Hospital, in Stanford, CA.

The target of surveillance and harassment in this case is still *also* trying to recover from the effects of exposure to potentially lethal doses of radiation, administered in the 1970's by a dangerously "incompetent" dentist. This might explain the involvement of alleged Stanford University Hospital personnel in her situation.

The government is on record as having experimented on unwitting U.S. citizens with radioactive materials during the 1970's (and earlier).⁶ The House Subcommittee on Energy and Commerce based their investigation into this matter on a 30-year accumulation of documents maintained by the Department of Energy. Under the circumstances, it will come as no surprise if it is ultimately found that DoE has been involved in this woman's surveillance and harassment.

Another individual paid a surprise visit to the apartment immediately beneath hers, in an attempt to identify the source of a tremendous racket in her ventilation system. Standing outside the door, she could hear an individual moving around, a short distance from the door. She also heard the sound of rustling paper and the steady, sonar-like "pinging" of some type of electronic device. In response to her repeated knockings on the door, the person inside simply stopped moving about. The sound of rustling paper (perhaps a print-out of some type) and the steady "...pin-ng! ...pin-ng!" sound continued. The occupant of this apartment resumed moving about only after it was (incorrectly) believed that our contact had departed the area. Typically, this situation could not be pursued further.

All of those who live in apartment buildings report unusual patterns of occupancy in the apartments surrounding their own; i.e., upstairs, downstairs and on all sides. They have become quite convinced—if only because of the highly focused nature of the symptoms being experienced—that these surrounding apartments are being used as bases of opera-

KILL SWITCH

tion. Perhaps this encirclement facilitates studies of holographic human telemetries; or perhaps it is intended to increase the prospect of brain entrainment by electronic means (“entrainment” being one published objective sought in mind control experiments).⁷

In examining this situation more closely, a number of individuals have found that surrounding apartments are either permanently vacant, for unknown reasons, or that they have been “sub-let” by the original occupants to persons who are purportedly unknown to the buildings’ management personnel. In one case, the surrounding renters all list two residences in the local telephone book. Not one lives in the apartment building in question, though the address is identified as one of the renters’ places of residence. One individual suspects that the original occupants of apartments surrounding hers have simply been relocated to other apartments in the same (large) building. Another suspects that an adjacent apartment, which has been permanently rented to the U.S. Government for use by “visitors” is also being used as a base of operations.

One individual found that an immediate neighbor’s housemate has the same (unusual) name of a university professor who has engaged in extensive research on behalf of the government, studying the bioeffects of exposure to microwave radiation.

• **Use of informants/agents provocateurs, frequently members of the opposite sex.**

As noted in the U.S. House of Representatives Committee on Interior and Insular Affairs’ draft report, *Alyeska Pipeline Service Company Covert Operation* (July 1992), the Wackenhut Corporation’s Special Investigations Division adopted this tactic when pursuing Alyeska’s critics.

A number of individuals in touch with us report a range of experiences with new “friends” who—apparently posing as confidants—used acquired personalia to abruptly end these “friendships” under deliberately degrading and humiliating circumstances. When taken in the context of the ongoing surveillances and harassment, these exercises appear intended to heighten emotional trauma, perhaps to provoke an uncontrolled response and/or to enforce isolation.

• **Misuse of covert intelligence personnel (possible former case officers).**

One individual, while under contract to the U.S. Government, properly reported what he believed to be an approach by a hostile intelligence service. Within a few weeks, alleged U.S. Intelligence officers contacted this individual. In addition to questioning him about his background, these alleged intelligence officers asked that he keep in constant touch with them, particularly when planning to travel.

It soon became apparent that the alleged intelligence officers were intent only on forcing this individual to report to them as directed, and to account for his activities. He was not asked to assist the U.S. Government in any form of intelligence operation; he was not asked to execute any form of secrecy affirmation statement acknowledging the classified nature of these meetings; nor was he told why these meetings—involving a total of seven alleged case officers—were necessary.

When he began to balk at a continuation of this process, one of his “handlers” conveyed a threat, suggesting that his continued compliance might be “enforced.” Finally, when this individual adamantly refused to cooperate further, massive overt harassment commenced and is currently ongoing.

The operation (clearly intended to bully this individual into submissive compliance

KILL SWITCH

for purposes which are still unknown) involved crude tactics formerly prized by the KGB.

Whether or not legitimate U.S. Intelligence case officers were involved in this activity remains to be determined. Some private firms retain former U.S. Intelligence case officers for contracting out as “security specialist.” The founder and CEO of one such firm (Gerald P. Burke, The Parvus Company, Silver Spring, MD) has informed us that the activities of contract case officers are neither monitored nor subject to formal restraint.

Use of psychotropic drugs by cooperative physicians.

Shortly after resigning from the CIA, one of our contacts underwent a range of experiences which suggested that she had been massively drugged. One of the alleged perpetrators, whom we have met, alternately claims to be employed by NASA and/or by a firm in Miami, handling, “microwave equipment.” NASA has no record of this person under the name furnished.

The “experimentee” ultimately sought the assistance of a psychiatrist, whom her parents had located as a referral. The psychiatrist treated her reported “flashbacks” by immediately placing her on a regimen of Stelazine, which quickly aggravated her condition. He also made comments to this individual which suggested that he had a foreknowledge of her situation, and that he was cooperating with U.S. Intelligence. On one occasion the psychiatrist intimated that our contact might be employable as an assassin; and he repeatedly urged her to move to Great Britain where, he said, she would be put in touch with an unidentified Member of Parliament.

Interestingly, he had a tremendous computer system in his office suite, which he explained as being connected by modem into a national level system which, in turn, connected into private residences. When showing her this equipment, this psychiatrist informed our contact that she had been “CAT scanned,” pointing out that she was the subject of the vast series of “A’s” and “B’s” being printed out by one of the many terminals at his disposal.

Our contact also found that this psychiatrist kept a military uniform in his closet which bore the rank and insignia of a three-star general.

The individual ultimately sought psychiatric support elsewhere. Her new psychiatrist, formerly employed by DoD, immediately put her on a regimen of Haldol Decanoate, Klonopin and Benzatropine. The combined effect of these drugs was loss of memory and a state of mind which, under other circumstances, might be diagnosed as Depersonalization or Dissociative Disorder. All three drugs proved to be highly addictive. Our contact, since severing contact with this psychiatrist as well, has finally successfully overcome the addiction.

Another individual—the one whose psychiatrist had informed her of her role in a “Pavlovian Experiment”—was subjected to attempted drugging by Trazodone, one of the strongest sedatives on the market. The psychiatrist in question kept no record of the individual’s outpatient visits, nor of her Trazodone prescriptions. Being unaware that the individual was not adhering to his regimen, the psychiatrist urged her to rapidly increase her dosage, renewing her 30-day prescription after a period of only 11 days.

Though aware of her heart condition, he failed to monitor her condition, dismissing her complaints of (electronically-induced) pains in her heart as inconsequential. Trazodone is known to aggravate heart conditions. Perhaps the intent was to have this individual succumb to a “heart attack” as the result of “imagined” government harassment. Neither the appropriate psychiatric society nor the FBI would touch this case.

KILL SWITCH

Another individual (a clear target of retaliation) sought medical assistance to counter sudden massive headaches and recurrent attacks of vomiting—effects which can be produced by infrasound. The physician to whom she was referred (an alleged specialist in Internal Medicine) placed her on a combination of Compazine and Xanax, prescribing dosages which the Physicians' Desk Reference warns against.

Compazine, in addition to being an anti-emetic, is used in the treatment of psychotic disorders. It can also cause tardive dyskinesia, an irreversible syndrome involving loss of motor control. Xanax is known to induce vomiting. Both drugs can lead to dependency and a worsening of the patient's condition. The effects of all such drugs, in fact, can be mutated in high-energy fields, thus increasing the likelihood of adverse reactions.

We have recently found that this prescribing "physician" is not licensed to practice medicine in the State in which she has been practicing since at least 1989.

Our contact, being concerned about the long-term effects of Xanax and Compazine, consulted another physician in that same office. This physician immediately prescribed Prozac, failing to concurrently recommend that her patient discontinue the Xanax and Compazine prescriptions. When our contact refused to take any psychotropic drugs, the doctor became upset and asked, "Don't you want to get well?"

This second physician is a licensed practitioner in Internal Medicine, with no background in Psychiatry. We have also found that she apparently refers her patients to yet a third physician in the office who claims to be a psychiatrist. She, too, is licensed to practice Internal Medicine, only. Her receptionist described this third physician as having a psychiatric "sub-specialty,"... "as an internist." The receptionist also informed us that this internist "is treating a number of psychiatric patients."

On pursuing this further, we find that these physicians are in a small "medical group" which is not listed by specialty in standard regional telephone directories. The group bears the same name as one of the CIA's most infamous recruited physicians (perhaps best described as "the Mengele of MKULTRA").

The doctor's offices are located in a bank building, which, we have found, is a favored hiding place for security-oriented businesses and government agencies. Two computer firms, co-located with an attorney who represents "Island Resort Development, Ltd.," are situated immediately beneath the doctors' offices. The prospect of our finding island resort developments within 500 miles of this attorney's office is limited.

Our contact, being apprised of these findings, is seeking medical help elsewhere.

In two of our cases, urologists took it upon themselves to play the role of "psychiatrist"; i.e., they rendered psychiatric diagnoses and prescribed psychotropic drugs. One of these urologists, employed by The Mayo Clinic in Rochester, MN, prescribed Haldol, informing our contact that he perceived her to be "psychotic." His efforts at getting a Clinic psychiatrist to confirm this diagnosis were unsuccessful. The psychiatrist, apparently a rare individual who subscribes to codes of medical ethics, found nothing wrong with this woman, even given the nature of her complaints. The urologist's response to this was to issue his own Haldol prescription. Sensing that something was amiss, the woman refused to have the prescription filled.

Yet another individual ended up in the hands of a psychiatrist who, as a purported means of ending the stress associated with her harassment, offered to put her under hypnosis. She described the hypnotic state as "equivalent to floating" and (based on her overall

KILL SWITCH

experiences with this physician) has not ruled out the possibility that drugs may have been surreptitiously administered. The psychiatrist claimed to be interested in psychic phenomena and demonstrated an apparently remarkable ability to read this individual's mind.

While in her "hypnotic state," the individual felt a sharp, painful pressure inside her nose, as if something were being shoved up her nostrils to the sinus cavities. She awoke to find blood pouring out of her nostrils. The psychiatrist casually dismissed this as owing to a probable cold.

Shortly after that experience, the individual began to hear loud tones in her head, followed in due course by auditory input. Brain scans have failed to yield evidence of an implanted device. (We have recommended that she undergo a scan by means of a suitably adapted non-linear junction detector, as a preliminary.) Suffice it to say, this individual has severed contact with the psychiatrist and is continuing to cope with ongoing overt and electronic harassment by other non-medical means.

Use of medical implant devices.

The situation just described is not our first encounter with the apparent use of medical implant devices in these harassment/mind-control cases. Another of our contacts began receiving auditory input roughly 15 years after she had 4 mm. cochlear implants placed in her ears. The "voices" claimed to be affiliated with the CIA and, among other things, expressed intentions of running this woman as an agent in denied areas by "piggybacking" their audio transmissions onto standard FM frequencies to avoid detection.

We have been unable to locate the surgeon who implanted these devices, though we do have a copy of his operative reports. A recent CAT scan of this individual failed to disclose the presence of the cochlear implants.

Several years ago, the individual (now a psychologist) applied for a position with the CIA. She was interviewed by four Langley-based, purported psychologist, who allegedly informed her that her job would involve the assessment of certain criminals for purposes of weighing their prospects for loyalty to this agency.

During these interviews, she was told to read several books by such persons as Philip Agee, Stansfield Turner and Ralph McGehee, all of whom were unknown to her. The alleged psychologist claimed that these authors had described the CIA "as it really is." Our contact was not asked to execute a secrecy affirmation statement acknowledging the classified nature of these proceedings.

The unconventional manner of this interview process suggests that this individual was being toyed with, for reasons which remain to be determined. She did not get the job and in fact more recently lost her job with a state penitentiary. She was fired on the recommendation of the prison's psychiatrist, because of her insistence that she is receiving auditory input from CIA personnel who persist in feeding her classified information.

Interestingly, though this individual was deemed unfit to function as a psychologist in the penitentiary system, the State has rehired her, assigning her to a mental health facility where, apparently, she is to develop a behavioral modification program for retarded adults with diagnosed mental illnesses.

This individual claimed to be receiving and responding to externally-induced auditory "advice" while working with prison inmates. It may be presumed that the process will continue. Under the circumstances, we have to wonder if this case qualifies as a benchmark in mind-control experimentation; i.e., employment of a mind-controlled psychologist to run

KILL SWITCH

the equivalent of mind-control experiments on mentally-ill retarded adults. We will continue to monitor the situation.

The individual whom we previously identified as having challenged a local power company also appears to have been "tagged" by some type of implant device. During a recent symposium, she was approached by a man whose business card identifies him as "Program Manager, Electromagnetic Radiation Division," DoE. His approach was suitably sympathetic. Our contact ultimately accepted the man's invitation to continue discussing their common ranges of interest in his hotel room. During this meeting, she accepted the offer of a drink, blacked out after consuming it, and awoke four hours later, still in this man's hotel room, to find that the back of her ear had been punctured and was bleeding. There was no evidence of a sexual assault. The man glibly evaded this woman's requests for an explanation. She has since found two adjacent puncture marks behind her ear, which are not healing properly, and between which she can feel the presence of a "wire" measuring approximately 1/4" in length. We are pursuing this further.

The said DoE Project Manager has more recently initiated contact with yet another activist in touch with this Association. His call was unsolicited. He apparently wanted to know if this woman would be attending an upcoming conference. We have warned the individual to avoid any form of private meeting with the said Project Manager.

* * *

To date, we are aware of three cases involving clandestine behavior on the part of alleged DoE employees. The CIA figures prominently (if peculiarly) in the majority of our other cases. Two of those have been discussed above.

In another, also involving auditory input, the individual is certain that the current Director of Central Intelligence (DCI) participated in the "voice transmission" process on at least one occasion. She claims to have recognized his voice. When she commented aloud on the DCI's perceived involvement in this experimentation, the "voice" responded with stuttered and stammered denials. We are told that this particular "voice" has not been heard from since.

In yet another case involving auditory input, the individual has allegedly been informed by her "voices" that the technologies being used against her were stolen from the CIA by a maverick employee, whose group is now targeting her from a distance of 2,000 miles. She reported this to the DCI's office and was allegedly informed by the Deputy DCI that she will be awarded millions of dollars if she can produce the equipment and any of the personnel involved in her harassment.

One unusually-candid CIA spokesman also allegedly informed this individual that, "while the CIA does not deny having this equipment," they "do not use it in this country." Perhaps this explains why a number of our contacts have also been electronically harassed while traveling overseas.

This woman has also been repeatedly assured by CIA DDS (security) personnel of the Agency's sincere concern for her welfare. During a recent telephone conversation with that Office, we confirmed that she is indeed known to the CIA. Based on this, we asked that the Agency "put its money where its mouth is," so to speak, by conducting a long-term electronic sweep of this individual's premises. That was two months ago. No sweep has been conducted, though CIA spokesmen continue to "sympathize" with her predicament.

Another individual, a target of harassment and experimentation since 1952 (appar-

KILL SWITCH

ently singled out because of his student activism while at Penn State University) began hearing “voices” after having most of his teeth capped. He has more recently been informed by his “handlers” that implanted devices are no longer used for purposes of inducing auditory input. No explanation was offered. He was quite visibly surprised when informed by this investigator that auditory input can be achieved solely by means of pulsed microwave audiograms (discussed in Part I of this report).

This individual’s “handlers” allegedly have also stated that their experiments on U.S. citizens are in pursuit of a variety of objectives; viz.,

- (1) develop an effective means for creating a perfect, “robotized” soldier;
- (2) alter individual sexual preferences, such as by turning heterosexuals into homosexuals (they allegedly claim to be having “difficulties” reversing the process): and
- (3) enhance or destroy levels of academic achievement, at will, such as by degrading the performance of otherwise brilliant students, and by drastically improving the performance of poor students.

Given the technology at the government’s disposal and a predisposition on the part of certain governmental agencies to “play God” in experimental fashion with citizens’ lives, these purported projects do not come across as being totally far-fetched.

Another case involves a woman whose experiences suggest that she, too, is an MKULTRA experimentee being kept on the books, so to speak. The woman, apparently a “pet” experimentee, found herself being introduced to a wide array of prominent individuals whose connections with the CIA she believed to be quite apparent. One of those she states, was Robert Jay Lifton, a well-known author and expert on brainwashing, whose books include *The Nazi Doctors: Medical Killing and the Psychology of Genocide* (Basic Books, 1986).

Her experiences included a voluntary (“referral”) admission to Hollywood Hospital, Vancouver, British Columbia, Canada, in 1973, during an era when MKULTRA experiments at the Alan Memorial Institute, McGill University, Montreal, Canada, were only beginning to capture the attention of the U.S. Senate.⁸

More recently, in 1990, she was transported to New York University’s Cameron Medical Center, in Westchester, NY (under circumstances which qualify as an abduction), where she was forcibly wrestled to the ground by approximately six Center staffers and forcibly confined for a period of approximately three weeks. She was neither psychiatrically counseled nor formally tested while in that facility. The psychiatrists assigned to her case appeared more intent on forcing her to take a combination of neuroleptic drugs, to include Haldol, Navane, and Cogentin. (Haldol and Navane can cause tardive dyskinesia.) She resisted those attempts.

A court ultimately ordered this woman released from the Center, stipulating that she was not to be administered drugs. On subsequently acquiring her medical records, under conditions which prevented censoring or doctoring of those records, she found that her psychiatrists had planned to inject her with drugs (in defiance of the court order) on the day of her release. As luck would have it, she was released a day early.

This woman states also that she has met Budd Hopkins, of the Intruders Foundation, and that she had a long-term, confiding relationship with John E. Mack, Professor of Psychiatry, Harvard Medical School, and founding Director of the Center for Psychological Studies in the Nuclear Age (previously named, Research Program for the Study of Human Continuity; and, still previously, rumored to have cooperated with the CIA in studies of “human

KILL SWITCH

ecology”).

At one point in their relationship, Professor Mack apparently accompanied this woman to a “support group” meeting of UFO abductees, who, she observed bemusedly, “spent their time comparing [extraterrestrially] implanted devices.” Professor Mack is on record as promoting the perception that UFO abductions are legitimate.⁹

We frankly doubt that extraterrestrials who have a means to commute intergalactically would stoop to implanting comparatively primitive devices in human beings. However, should it be proved that the psychiatrist, surgeon and DoE Project Manager discussed above are extraterrestrials posing as humans, we will be happy to weigh that information. If it is similarly established that the vehicular “abduction” of the woman discussed above was the work of an extraterrestrial named Kaplan, who is posing as a human with Cornell Medical Center connections, we will be happy to ponder that as well.

In the meantime, it would seem reasonable that the government would want the public to believe that extraterrestrial visitations are on the upswing. Mind-altering drugs, externally-induced auditory input, holographic projections (also a DoD capability),¹⁰ appropriately focused directed-energy targeting, device implantations, special effects and abductions are all within this government’s capabilities and can be used for purposes of creating illusions of UFO experiences. Persons not cognizant of this might be more inclined to fall for the UFO mythologies now being officially “legitimized.”

Other cases, possibly involving U.S. Navy Intelligence, NSA, the Drug Enforcement Agency (DEA) and, peripherally, members of former Soviet Bloc intelligence services will be discussed in future reports.

Harassment Objectives

In his book, *Psychiatry and the CIA: Victims of Mind Control*, Dr. Harvey Weinstein quotes the following passage from a book entitled, *Battle for the Mind: A Physiology of Conversion and Brainwashing*, by William Sargant (Greenwood Press, Westport, CT, 1957):

“By increasing or prolonging stresses in various ways, or inducing physical debilitation, a more thorough alteration of the person’s thinking processes may be achieved. ...If the stress or the physical debilitation, or both, are carried one stage further, it may happen that patterns of thought and behavior, especially those of recent acquisition, become disrupted. New patterns can then be substituted, or suppressed patterns allowed to reassert themselves; or the subject may begin to think or act in ways that precisely contradict his former ones.

“...If a complete sudden collapse can be produced by prolonging or intensifying emotional stress, the cortical slate may be wiped clean temporarily of its more recently implanted patterns of behavior, perhaps allowing others to be substituted more easily.”

Dr. Weinstein then comments: “The parallel with [Dr. Ewen] Cameron’s theory of differential amnesia is striking, and the relationship to brainwashing is abundantly clear.”¹¹ Dr. Cameron, employed by McGill University’s Allan Memorial Institute in Montreal, Quebec, Canada, between 1943 and 1964, conducted brainwashing experiments upon select, non-volunteer psychiatric patients on behalf of the CIA. Dr. Weinstein’s father was one of Cameron’s victims.

Sargant’s theorems and Cameron’s associated experimental findings appear to be the driving force behind the harassment and experimentation now being reported to this Association. All of these individuals are being subjected to a series of overlapping circum-

KILL SWITCH

stances which apparently are meant to induce and sustain long-term extremes of stress. All of these individuals have been effectively isolated. Unethical psychiatrists and physicians are involved in the majority of these cases. Mind-altering prescription drugs are being used for clearly non-therapeutic purposes. Evidence of LSD use is also beginning to surface (one of Cameron's favored mind-altering substances). And "psychic driving" techniques—Cameron's pet brainwashing method—are involved in all these cases, to a much greater and more potentially effective degree where auditory input is involved.

The long-term objectives of these harassment and experimentation campaigns appear to be quite fundamental; viz.,

(1) induce a sense of perverted "loyalty" toward the very agencies engaged in the individual's harassment, to confuse his or her priorities where the possibility of obtaining legal redress might be concerned;

(2) redirect the targeted individual's feelings of hopelessness, anger and frustration toward racial and ethnic groups, and toward select, prominent political figures, to include the President of the United States; and

(3) force the individual to commit an act of violence, whether suicide or murder, under conditions which can be plausibly denied by the government.

An operation's ultimate success apparently hangs on this latter objective. We have successfully obstructed this process in a number of cases now being investigated.

The "Stalker" Phenomenon

In recent weeks, considerable publicity has been given the trauma suffered by victims of "stalkers" (persons who obsessively surveil, harass and, in some cases, kill targeted individuals for assorted, unfathomable reasons). Movie stars who have been stalked recurrently make the news. Stalking, as a problem, is in fact becoming widespread, to the point where, in some States, the activity has finally been specifically proscribed by law.

The individuals in contact with our Association are reporting the same terrifying ranges of experiences as are now being reported in the press on behalf of other victims of stalkers. The only difference in the cases reported to us is that the stalkers operate in groups over extremely prolong periods of time, and (it would appear) with the blessing of certain agencies of the U.S. Government. The laws being passed to protect victims of stalkers are clearly being selectively applied. We hope to put an end to this situation; that is, in addition to achieving the objectives discussed above.

It should be noted that the FBI, though unwilling to intervene in the cases described above recently intervened on a massive scale to protect Joy Silverman, a Bush-appointed trustee of the J.F. Kennedy Center for the Performing Arts, from the ardent "stalkings" of her estranged paramour, Sol Wachtler, Chief Justice, Court of Appeals for the State of New York.¹²

Wachtler had apparently threatened to kidnap Silverman's daughter if not paid \$20,000. Since no kidnapping had occurred, and the case qualified merely as an attempted extortion, a question arises as to why the New York State Police could not have handled this investigation. Mrs. Silverman resides in New York.

It would appear that the FBI devoted more than 100 agents and technicians to the effort, resolving the case within approximately 30 days. On November 7, 1992, the day of his arrest, Wachtler ran a gauntlet of 80 FBI special agents on the Long Island Expressway. Apparently the FBI does not have enough to do, if staking out a lone stalker is their top

KILL SWITCH

priority. We have to wonder, of course, if the FBI's massive response was prompted by what was perceived to be Wachtler's usurpation of governmental stalking prerogatives.

Mrs. Silverman's \$300,000 donations to Republican Party causes could be considered a basis for the FBI's solicitous concern for her welfare. It would appear, under the circumstances, that the "stalking victims" discussed above—being by now quite poverty-stricken—should abandon all hope of FBI intervention in their respective situations. FBI protection appears to have a price tag, which not one of our contacts can afford.

Footnotes

* 71 (7-30-93)

* 59 (7-30-93)

1 Peters, Edward, *Torture*, Basil Blackwell, Inc., New York/London, 1985.

2 *The Plain Dealer*, Cleveland, OH, June 28, 1991, p. 4-B ("Psychiatrist Testifies at mom's Hearing"); November 6, 1991, ("Woman Ruled Competent for Trial"); and December 21, 1991, p. 4-C ("Ruling Expected Monday on Sanity of Parma Mother/Woman says she stabbed her 3 children to protect them").

3 *The Washington Post*, June 1, 1991, p. C-1 ("Voices' Led to Tragedy for 2 Men/Pentagon Suspect's Mother Says Institutions Should Have Held Son") and December 14, 1991, p. D-3 ("Suspect in Pentagon Killing Is Found Unfit to Stand Trial").

4 *The Washington Post*, September 4, 1992, p. D-3 ("Freight Train kills Woman Near Home in Silver Spring").

5 *Jane's Security and Co-In [Counter-Insurgency] Equipment*, (Surrey, UK, 1991-92), as a preliminary source, contains a number of references to attaché-case concealment devices, for use in surveillance/communications operations. The electronic components are built into the bottom interior of these cases. Obviously the man just described could not have carried a "microcircuitried" attaché case aboard a U.S. airliner without first clearing Security. We are advised by a former CIA DDS (Security) employee that credential-carrying members of U.S. Intelligence can bypass airport security checks of their carry-on luggage.

6 *St. Paul Pioneer Press Dispatch*, October 15, 1986, p. 1-A ("U.S. Used Humans for Radiation Guinea Pigs").

7 See, for example, Weinstein, Harvey M., M.D., *Psychiatry and the CIA: Victims of Mind Control*, American Psychiatric Press, Washington, D.C., 1990; Marks, John, *The Search for the "Manchurian Candidate": The CIA and Mind Control*, Times Books, New York, 1979; Delgado, José M. R., M.D., *Physical Control of the Mind: Toward a Psychocivilized Society*, Harper & Row, New York, 1969; and Hutchison, Michael, *Megabrain: New Tools and Techniques for Brain Growth and Mind Expansion*, Ballantine Books, New York, 1986.

8 According to a *Vancouver Sun* archivist, Hollywood Hospital, Ltd. (a privately-owned institution), went out of business in 1975, two years after this woman's hospitalization and after approximately 30 years of doing business. The event coincided with findings by the U.S. Senate Church Committee concerning the CIA's brainwashing experiments under MKULTRA. Our contact also identified the Director of Hollywood Hospital as Dr. Ross MacLean—information also confirmed by the *Vancouver Sun*. Nothing in these records, copies of which are being obtained, points to CIA involvement with the hospital. Perhaps a portion of history has been overlooked. Cornell Medical Center's role in MKULTRA is a

KILL SWITCH

matter of public record. (See, for example, Thomas, Gordon, *Journey Into Madness: The True Story of Secret CIA Mind Control and Medical Abuse*, Bantam Books, New York, 1989).

9 The Roper Organization, *Unusual Personal Experiences: An Analysis of the Data from Three National Surveys*, (Bigelow Holding Corp., Las Vegas, NV, 1991. Contributors lending “credibility” to this publication include John Mack and Budd Hopkins.

10 *Defense Week*, October 19, 1992, Vol. 13, No. 41, pp. I and II, (“Pentagon, State [Department] Collaborate on Counterterror Gear”).

11 Op. cit., Weinstein, pp. 140-141.

12 *The Washington Post*, November 10, 1992, p. A-I (“An Unlikely Suspect for Scandal/Top N.Y. Judge Accused of Breaking Law in Secret Life”).

There can never be any justification for torture. It creates an escalation of violence in the internal affairs of states. It spreads like a contagious disease from country to country. It has lasting effects on the mental and physical health of the victim and brutalizes the torturer. It is our fundamental duty as human beings to express what is surely the conscience of humanity and to eradicate this evil.

[Amnesty International, February 1990, in the context of the U.S. Government’s continuing failure to ratify the U.N. Convention Against Torture and Other Cruel, Inhuman or Degrading Treatment or Punishment, dated December 10, 1984]

KILL SWITCH

COLD WAR GUINEA PIGS

The Government's Secret Experiments Using Radiation, Mind Control, Chemicals and Drugs on its Citizens

The Cold War Experiments

Radiation tests were only one small part of a vast research program that used thousands of Americans as guinea pigs

Many of the stories of people whose lives were destroyed by mind-altering drugs, electroshock “treatments” and other military and CIA experiments involving toxic chemicals or behavior modification have been known for almost 20 years. But *U.S. News* has discovered that only a handful were ever compensated—or even told what was done to them. “There has essentially been no legitimate follow-up, despite the CIA’s promise to track down the victims and see what happened to them,” says Alan Schefflin, a professor at Santa Clara University Law School and an authority on cold war mind-control research. “It’s just one of the many broken promises.” A CIA spokesman last week said the agency is searching its files for radiation tests but has no plans to revisit other human experimentation.

MKULTRA. Most victims have never been informed by the government of the nature of the experiments they were subjected to or, in some cases, even the fact that they were subjects. In a 1977 hearing, then CIA director Stansfield Turner said he found the experiments “abhorrent” and promised that the CIA would find and notify the people used in the tests. Turner last week insisted that “they found everyone they possibly could find.” But internal memos and depositions taken from CIA officials in a lawsuit against the agency in the 1980s reveal that of the hundreds of experimental subjects used in the CIA’s mind-control program, code-named MKULTRA, only 14 were ever notified and only one was compensated—for \$15,000. [...]

In 1955, the Army supported research at Tulane University in which mental patients had electrodes implanted in their brains to measure the LSD and other drugs. In other experiments, volunteers were kept in sensory-deprivation chambers for as long as 131 hours and bombarded with white noise and taped messages until they began hallucinating. The goal: to see if they could be “converted” to new beliefs. [...]

Brain implant is 4 mm by 4 mm with 100 tiny electrodes that read neural signals. The chip transmits the signals via cable or telemetry to computers that translate the data. Patients with the implants manage emails, draw circles with software, play video games, and control televisions using *only their thoughts*. Above example resembles some implants, methods, and results reported since the 1960s.

KILL SWITCH

Image from “Brain Implants for Paralysis Victims,” Brian Liu, *Global National*, July 12, 2006.

Transdermal Stimoceiver

“If the stimulation Delgado plans to administer is electric, the shaft is an exceedingly thin steel-wire electrode coated with insulation except at the tip.[*] Dozens of such needle-like wires may be inserted from one opening and can be attached to the same socket on top of the skull, or eventually inside it. ...

Delgado has pioneered in the remote control of electrical stimulation. He began shaping the behavior of subjects while he was in a nearby room manning a push-button radio device. Now he can do this from thousands of feet away.

At first the sockets he was using to receive radio messages were outside the scalp. Now the equipment, built under a microscope, is the size of a coin and can be planted under the scalp and so is unnoticeable in a free-moving subject. Also, the device not only receives instructions but broadcasts back the subject’s reactions. Delgado calls it a transdermal stimoceiver. ... [pp. 42-43]

With humans he and his associates have stimulated several areas involved in motor activity. ... He caused one woman patient in his group, when she was alone in her own room, to turn her head and move her body as if she were looking for something. This was repeated. When she was asked what she was doing, the woman always had a plausible explanation. Apparently, she had no idea she was responding to the electrical stimulation of her brain. ... [p. 55]

Lawrence R. Pinneo, a ... neurophysiologist ... at the Stanford Research Institute, ... has proved that you can think into a computer, and that the instructions you think can cause the computer to activate and move remote-control cameras and other machines. In short, the machines obey your mental instructions.

Pinneo started with the motor theory of thought. This holds that verbal thinking is nothing more than subvocal speech. With a number of subjects he attached electrodes to the area of the scalp near the region where speech originates. On command they were to think of a word, such as ‘schoolboy’ or ‘start’ or ‘left.’ They were to repeat the word in their minds ten times. All this thinking of words was being registered by a computer. It averaged out a recognition pattern for each word. He proceeded to build up a vocabulary of fifteen unspoken English words that the computer could recognize. He trained the computer to recognize actually spoken words (overt speech) as well as think words (covert speech). They came out much alike in the word patterns that the computer stored away. ...

In his preliminary report Pinneo stated: ‘We conclude that it is feasible for a human verbally to communicate both overtly and covertly with a computer using biological information [EEG] alone, with a high degree of accuracy and reliability, at least with a small vocabulary.’[†] ... [p. 285]

Quotes from *The People Shapers*, Vance Packard, Boston: Little, Brown and Company, 1977.

[*] José M.R. Delgado, M.D., was a neurophysiologist at the Yale University School of Medicine.

[†] Lawrence R. Pinneo, Ph.D., “Persistent EEG Patterns Associated with Overt and Covert Speech,” Neurophysiology Program, Menlo Park, California: Stanford Research In-

KILL SWITCH

stitute (SRI), 1975.

MIND CONTROL AND THE AMERICAN GOVERNMENT

The spectre of technofascism haunts the democratic nations. All the powers of the espionage empire and the scientific establishment have entered into an unholy alliance to evoke this spectre: psychiatrist and spy, Dulles and Delgado, microwave specialists and clandestine operators.

Substantial evidence exists linking members of the American intelligence community — including the Central Intelligence Agency, the Defence Advanced Research Projects Agency and the Office of Naval Intelligence — with the esoteric technology of mind control. For decades, ‘psychiatrists’ working behind the scenes — on college campuses, in CIA-sponsored institutes, and (most heinously) in prisons — have experimented with the erasure of memory, hypnotic resistance to torture, truth serums, posthypnotic suggestion, rapid induction of hypnosis, electronic stimulation of the brain, non-ionizing radiation, and a host of even more disturbing technologies. Some of the projects exploring these areas were ARTICHOKE, BLUEBIRD, PANDORA, MKDELTA, MKSEARCH and the infamous MKULTRA.

The CIA was not the only government agency involved in this research. (1) Indeed, many branches of our government took part in these studies — including NASA, the Atomic Energy Commission, as well as all branches of the Defence Department. Although misleading (and occasionally perjured) testimony before Congress indicated that the CIA’s ‘brainwashing’ efforts met with little success, (2) striking advances were, in fact, made in this field. As the late CIA veteran Miles Copeland once admitted to a reporter, ‘The congressional subcommittee which went into this sort of thing got only the barest glimpse.’ (3) Clandestine research into thought manipulation has not stopped, despite CIA protestations that it no longer sponsors such studies. 14-year CIA veteran, Victor Marchetti, confirmed in a 1977 interview that the mind control research continues, and that CIA claims to the contrary are a ‘cover story’. (4)

A brief overview

In the early days of World War 2, George Estabrooks of Colgate University wrote to the Department of War, describing in breathless terms the possible uses of hypnosis in warfare. (5) The Army was intrigued; Estabrooks had a job. The true history of Estabrooks’ wartime collaboration with the CID, FBI (6) and other agencies may never be told: after the war he burned his diary pages covering the years 1940-45, and thereafter avoided discussing his continuing government work with anyone, even close members of the family. (7) Occasionally, however, his lips loosened, and he would intimate that his work involved the creation of hypno-programmed couriers and hypnotically-induced split personalities. Whether he succeeded in these areas remains a controversial point. Nevertheless, the eccentric and flamboyant Estabrooks remains a pivotal figure in the early history of clandestine behavioural research.

Which is not to say the he worked alone. World War 2 was the first conflict in which the human brain became a field of battle, where invading forces were led by the most notable names in psychology and pharmacology. On both sides, the war spurred furious efforts to create a ‘truth drug’ for use in interrogating prisoners. General William ‘Wild Bill’ Donovan, director of OSS, tasked his team — including Dr. Winifred Overshulser, Dr. Edward Strecker, Harry J. Anslinger and George White -to modify human perception and behaviour through chemical means. Their ‘medicine cabinet’ included scopolamine, peyote,

KILL SWITCH

barbiturates, mescaline and marijuhana.

Simultaneously, the notorious Nazi doctors at Dachau experimented with mescaline as a means of eliminating the victim's will to resist. Jews, slavs, gypsies and other untermenschen in the camp were surreptitiously slipped the drug; later, mescaline was combined with hypnosis. (8)

After the war, a number of Nazi chemical warfare specialists went on to work for the American secret services. These scientists included Karl Tauboeck, whose attempts to find a workable 'truth serum' provided the CIA with a wealth of data — data derived, ultimately, from ruthless human experimentation. Other Third Reich researchers found covert American employment: Friedrich Hoffman discovered a paralysis-inducing conch shell venom, while Theodore Wagner-Jauregg, Karl Rarh and Hans Turit continued their wartime exploration of Tabun, Sarin and other poison gases. (9) These men had acted as the handmaidens of Holocaust, yet American authorities paid no heed; by 1947, when the Navy instituted Project CHATTER, America had fully entered the post-war psy-war era, and the men running such programs were willing to overlook their new hires' bloodstained resumes..

The newly-formed CIA first plunged into this cesspool in 1950 with Project BLUE-BIRD, rechristened ARTICHOKE in 1951. To establish a cover story for this research, the CIA funded a propaganda effort designed to convince the world that the Communist Bloc had devised insidious new methods to re-shape the human will; the CIA's own efforts could therefore, if exposed, be explained as an attempt to 'catch up' with Soviet and Chinese work. The primary promoter of this 'line' was one Edward Hunter, a CIA contract employee operating under cover as a journalist (and, later, a prominent member of the John Birch Society). (10) When the CIA's mind control program was transferred from the Office of Security to the Technical Services Staff (TSS) in 1953, the name changed again — to MKULTRA. (11) Through MKULTRA the Agency created an umbrella program of positively Joycean scope, designed to ferret out all possible means of invading what George Orwell once called 'the space between our ears'. (12) Later still, in 1962, mind control research was transferred to the Office of Research and Development (ORD): project cryptonyms remain unrevealed. (20)

What was studied? Everything — including hypnosis, conditioning, sensory deprivation, drugs, religious cults, microwaves, psycho-surgery, brain implants, and even ESP. When MKULTRA leaked to the public during the great CIA investigations of the 1970s, public attention focused most heavily on drug experimentation and the work with ESP. (13) Mystery still surrounds the area which seems to have most interested ORD, psychoelectronics.

Implants

In the late 1950s a neuroscientist named Jose Delgado developed the stimoceiver, a miniature depth electrode which can receive and transmit electronic signals over FM radio waves. By stimulating a correctly-positioned stimoceiver within an individual's cranium, an outside operator can wield a surprising degree of control over the the subject's responses. The most famous example of the stimoceiver in action occurred in a Madrid bull ring. Delgado 'wired' the bull before stepping into the ring, entirely unprotected. The bull charged toward the doctor — then stopped, just before reaching him. Delgado had halted the animal by simply pushing a button on a black box, held in the hand. (14)

Delgado's Physical Control of the Mind: Towards a Psychocivilised Society (15) re-

KILL SWITCH

mains the sole full-length work on intracerebral implants and electronic stimulation of the brain (ESB). While subsequent work has long since superceded the techniques described in this book, Delgado's achievements were seminal. His animal and human experiments clearly demonstrate that the experimenter can electronically induce emotions and behavior. Under certain conditions, the extremes of temperament — rage, lust, fatigue etc. — can be elicited by an outside operator as easily as an organist might call forth a C-major chord.

Delgado wrote: 'Radio Stimulation of different points in the amygdala and hippocampus in the four patients produced a variety of effects, including pleasant sensations, elation, deep, thoughtful concentration, odd feelings, super relaxation, colored visions, and other responses.' (16) The evocative phrase 'colored visions' clearly indicates remotely-induced hallucinations. Speaking in 1966 — and reflecting research undertaken years previously — Delgado asserted that his experiments 'support the distasteful conclusion that motion, emotion, and behaviour can be directed by electrical forces and that humans can be controlled like robots by push buttons.' (17)

He even prophesied a day when brain control could be turned over to non-human operators, by establishing two-way radio communication between the implanted brain and a computer. (18)

In a fascinating series of experiments, Delgado attached the stimoceiver to the tympanic membrane, thereby transforming the ear into a sort of microphone. An assistant would whisper 'How are you?' into the ear of a suitably 'fixed' cat, and Delgado could hear the words over a loudspeaker in the next room. The application of this technology to the spy trade should be readily apparent. According to Victor Marchetti, the Agency once attempted a highly-sophisticated extension of this basic idea, in which radio implants were attached to a cat's cochlea, to facilitate the pinpointing of specific conversations, freed from extraneous surrounding noises. (19)

Such 'advances' exacerbate the already imposing level of 20th century paranoia: not only can our phone be tapped and mail checked, but even Tabby might be spying on us!

Yet the ramifications of this technology may go even deeper than Marchetti indicates. I presume that if a suitably-wired subject's inner-ear can be made into a microphone, it can also be made into a loudspeaker. 'Hearing voices' has, of course, long been recognized as a symptom of schizophrenia — but what if the technological inheritors of the Delgado legacy have discovered a mechanism for inducing, or reproducing, this symptom? How do we tell the difference between a 'manufactured madman' and the real item? This science fictional concept actually lies well within the reach of current technology: not many years after Delgado's experiments with the cat, Ralph Schwitzgebel devised a 'bug-in-the-ear' via which a therapist (odd term, under the circumstances) can communicate with his or her subject. (20)

Robert G. Heath, of Tulane University, who has implanted as many as 125 electrodes in his subjects, achieved his greatest notoriety by attempting to 'cure' homosexuality through ESB. In his experiments he discovered that he could control his patients' memory and induce sexual arousal, fear, pleasure and hallucinations. (21) Heath and another researcher, James Olds, (22) independently illustrated that areas of the brain in and near the hypothalamus have, when electronically stimulated, what they describe as 'rewarding' and 'aversive' effects. Both animals and human beings, when given the means to induce their own ESB of the brain's pleasure centres will stimulate themselves at a tremendous rate, ignoring such

KILL SWITCH

basic drives as hunger and thirst. (23)

(Using fixed electrodes of his own invention, John C. Lilly had accomplished similar effects in the early 1950s. (24)) Anyone who has studied the work of B. F. Skinner will find themselves on familiar territory here. Such brain stimulation represents operant conditioning at its most extreme, and most insidious — for here we see a form of conditioning in which the manipulator renders him or herself invisible. Indeed, Skinner-esque aversive therapy, remotely applied, was Heath's prescription for 'healing' homosexuality. (25)

Ralph Schwitzgebel and his brother Robert have produced a panoply of devices for tracking individuals over long ranges; they may be considered the creators of 'electronic house arrest' devices recently approved by the courts. (26) Schwitzgebel devices could be used for tracking all of the physical and neurological signs of a 'patient' within a quarter of a mile, thereby lifting the distance limitations which restricted Delgado. (27) In Ralph Schwitzgebel's initial work, application of this technology to ESB seems to have been limited by cumbersome brain implants with protruding wires. But the technology was soon miniaturized, and a scheme was proposed whereby radio receivers would be mounted on utility poles throughout a given city, thereby providing a 24-hour monitoring capability. (28) Like Heath, Schwitzgebel was much exercised about the use of intracranial devices to combat sexual deviation. But he has also spoken ominously about applying his devices to 'socially troublesome persons', which, of course, could mean anyone. (29)

Perhaps the most disturbing wanderer in this mind-field is Joseph A. Meyer, of the National Security Agency. Meyer has proposed implanting roughly half of all Americans arrested — not necessarily convicted — of any crime. These 'subscribers' (his term) could be monitored continually by computer. Meyer, who has carefully worked out the economics of his mass-implantation system, asserts that taxpayer liability should be reduced by forcing subscribers to 'rent' the implant from the state.

Implants are cheaper and more efficient than police, Meyer suggests, since the call to crime is relentless for the poor 'urban dweller' who, this spook-scientist admits in a surprisingly candid aside, is fundamentally unnecessary to a post-industrial economy. (30)

A question of Timing

How long have the 'psychiatrists' been modifying behaviour by directly accessing their subjects' grey matter? Alas, when dealing with research funded by the engines of national security, one can never know the true origin date of any individual scientific advance. However, if we listen carefully to the scientists who have pioneered this research, we may hear whispers, faint but unmistakable, hinting that remotely-applied ESB originated earlier than published studies would indicate.

In his autobiography *The Scientist*, John C. Lilly (who would later achieve reknown for his work with dolphins, drugs and sensory deprivation) records a conversation he had with the director of the National Institute of Mental Health (NIMH) — in 1953.

The director asked Lilly to brief the CIA, FBI, NSA and the various military intelligence services on his work using electrodes to stimulate directly the pleasure and pain centres of the brain. Lilly refused, noting in his reply: 'Dr. Antoine Remond, using our techniques in Paris, has demonstrated that this method of stimulation of the brain can be applied to the human without the help of the neurosurgeon; he is doing it in his office in Paris without neurosurgical supervision. This means that anybody with the proper apparatus can carry this out on a person covertly, with no external signs that electrodes have been

KILL SWITCH

used on that person. I feel that if this technique got into the hands of a secret agency, they would have total control over a human being and be able to change his beliefs extremely quickly, leaving little evidence of what they had done.’ (31)

Lilly’s assertion of the high moral ground here is interesting. A careful reading of *The Scientist* reveals that he continued to do work useful to the United States’ national security apparatus. His sensory deprivation experiments expanded upon the work of ARTICHOKE’s Maitland Baldwin, and even his dolphin research has — perhaps inadvertently — proved useful in naval warfare. (32) One should note that Lilly’s work on monkey’s carried a ‘secret’ classification, and that the NIMH was a common CIA funding conduit.

But the most important aspect of Lilly’s statement is its date. 1953? How far back does radio-controlled ESB go? Alas, I have not yet seen Redmond’s work — if it is available in the open literature. In the documents made available to CIA researcher John Marks, the earliest reference to remotely-applied ESB is a 1959 financial document pertaining to MKULTRA sub-project 94. The general sub-project descriptions sent to the CIA’s financial department rarely contain much information, and rarely change from year to year, leaving us little idea as to when this sub-project began.

Unfortunately, even the Freedom of Information Act couldn’t pry loose much information on electronic mind control techniques, though we know that a great deal of study was done in these areas. We have, for example, only four pages on subproject 94 — by comparison, a veritable flood of documents was released on the use of drugs in mind control. (33) We know, however, that research into psychoelectronics was extensive; indeed, statements of project goals dating from ARTICHOKE and BLUEBIRD days clearly identify this area as a high priority. Marks’ anonymous informant, jocularly nicknamed ‘Deep Trance’, even told a previous interviewer that, beginning in 1963, the CIA and military’s mind control efforts strongly emphasised electronics. (34) I therefore assume that the ‘dark’ MKULTRA sub-projects concerned matters such as brain implants, microwaves, ESB and related technologies.

I make an issue of the timing and secrecy involved in this research to underscore three points:

1. We can never know with certainty the true origin dates of the various brainwashing methods — often we discover the techniques which seem impossibly futuristic actually originated in the 19th century. (35)
2. The open literature almost certainly gives a bowdlerized view of the actual research.
3. Lavishly-funded clandestine researches — unrestrained by peer review or the need for strict controls — can achieve far more rapid progress than scientists on ‘the outside’.

Remote hypnosis

Over the years, certain journalists have asserted that the CIA has mastered a technology called RHIC-EDOM, Radio Hypnotic Intracerebral Control and Electronic Dissolution of Memory. Together these techniques can — allegedly — remotely induce hypnotic trance, deliver suggestions to the subject, and erase all memory for both instruction period and the act which the subject is asked to perform. According to published accounts, RHIC uses the stimoceiver, or a microminiaturized offspring of that technology, to induce a hypnotic state. EDOM is the erasure of memory from consciousness through the blockage of

KILL SWITCH

synaptic transmission in certain areas of the brain. By jamming the brain's synapses through a surfeit of acetochole, neural transmission along selected pathways can be effectively stilled. According to the proponents of RHIC-EDOM, acetochole production can be affected by electromagnetic means.

Does RHIC-EDOM exist? The term first appeared in a strange 1969 book, *Were We Controlled?* written by one Lincoln Lawrence, a former FBI agent turned journalist. (36) A careful comparison of Lawrence's work with the MKULTRA files declassified ten years later indicates a strong possibility that the writer did indeed have 'inside' sources. Here is how Lawrence describes RHIC in action: 'It is the ultra-sophisticated application of post-hypnotic suggestion triggered at will by radio transmission. It is a recurring state, re-induced automatically at intervals by the same radio control. An individual is brought under hypnosis. This can be done either with his knowledge — or without it — by use of narco-hypnosis, which can be brought into play under many guises. He is then programmed to perform certain actions and maintain certain attitudes upon radio signal.'

Other authors have mentioned this technique: Walter Bowart in *Operation Mind Control*, and journalist James Moore, who, in a 1975 issue of a periodical called *Modern People*, claimed to have secured a 350-page manual, prepared in 1963, on RHIC-EDOM. (37) He maintains that he received the manual from CIA sources, although — interestingly — the technique is said to have originated in the military.

According to Moore, RHIC works like this: 'Medically, these radio signals are directed to certain parts of the brain. When a part of your brain receives a tiny electrical impulse from outside sources, such as vision, hearing, etc., an emotion is produced -anger at the sight of a gang of boys beating an old woman, for example. The same emotion of anger can be created by artificial radio signals sent to your brain by a controller. You could instantly feel the same white hot anger without any apparent reason.' (38)

Lawrence's sources imparted an even more tantalising — and frightening — revelation: '...there is already in use a small EDOM generator-transmitter which can be concealed on the body of a person. Contact with this person — a casual handshake or even just a touch — transmits a tiny electronic charge plus an ultra-sonic signal tone which for a short while will disturb the time orientation of the person affected.' (39)

At present there is no evidence that RHIC-EDOM is real. To my knowledge, the only official questioning of a CIA representative concerning these techniques occurred in 1977, during Senate hearings on CIA drug testing. Senator Richard Schweiker had the following interchange with Dr. Sidney Gottlieb, an important MKULTRA administrator:

Schweiker: Some of the projects under MKULTRA involved hypnosis, is that correct?

Gottlieb: Yes.

Schweiker: Did any of these projects involve something called radio hypnotic intracerebral control, which is a combination, as I understand it, in layman's terms, of radio transmission and hypnosis?

Gottlieb: My answer is 'no'.

Schweiker: None whatsoever?

Gottlieb: Well, I am trying to be responsive to the terms you used. As I remember it, there was a current interest, running interest, all the time in what affects people's standing in the field of radio energy have, and it could easily have been that somewhere in many

KILL SWITCH

projects, someone was trying to see if you could hypnotize someone easier if he was standing in a radio beam. That would seem like a reasonable piece of research to do.

Schweiker went on to mention that he had heard testimony that radar (i.e. microwaves) had been used to wipe out memory in animals. Gottlieb responded, 'I can believe that, Senator.' (40)

Gottlieb's blandishments do not comfort much. For one thing, the good doctor did not always provide thoroughly candid testimony. During the same hearing, he averred that 99 per cent of the CIA's research had been openly published. If so, why are so many MKULTRA sub-projects still 'dark', and why does the Agency still go to great lengths to protect the identities of its scientists? (41) We should also recognise that the CIA's operations are compartmentalized on a 'need-to-know' basis; Gottlieb may not have had access to the information requested by Schweiker. Note that the MKULTRA rubric circumscribed Gottlieb's statement: RHIC-EDOM might have been the focus of another program. (There were several others: MKNAOMI, MKACTION, MKSEARCH, etc.) Also keep in mind the allegation by 'Deep Trance' that the CIA concentrated on psychoelectronics after the termination of MKULTRA in 1963. Most significantly: RHIC-EDOM is described by both Lawrence and Moore as a product of military research; Gottlieb spoke only of matters pertaining to CIA. He may thus have spoken truthfully — at least in a strictly technical sense — while still misleading his Congressional interlocutors.

Personally, I believe that the RHIC-EDOM story deserves a great deal of further research. I find it significant that when Dr. Peter Lindstrom examined x-rays of Robert Naesland, a Swedish victim of brain-implantation, the doctor cited *Were We Controlled?* in his letter of response. (42) This is the same Dr. Lindstrom noted for his pioneering use of ultrasonics in neurosurgery. (43) Lincoln Lawrence's book has received a strong endorsement indeed.

That's Entrainment

Robert Anton Wilson, co-author of *The Illuminatus Trilogy*, recently has taken to promoting a new generation of 'mind machines' designed to promote creativity, stimulate learning, and alter consciousness — i.e. provide a drugless high. Interestingly, these machines can also induce 'Out of Body Experiences', in which the percipient mentally 'travels' to another location while the body remains at rest. (44)

One such device is called the 'hemi-synch'. This headphone-like invention produces slightly different frequencies in each ear; the brain calculates the difference between these frequencies, resulting in a rhythm known as 'binaural beat'. The brain 'entrains' itself to this beat; that is, the subject's EEG slows down or speeds up to keep pace with its electronic running partner. (45) A suitably entrained brain is much more responsive to suggestion, and is even likely to experience vivid hallucinations.

There's more than one way to entrain a brain. Michael Hutchison's excellent book *Mega Brain* details the author's experiences with many such devices — the Alphastim, TENS, the Synchro-energizer, Tranquillite etc.. He recounts dazzling, Dali-esque hallucinations as a result of using this mind-expanding technology; moreover, he offers a seductive argument that these devices may represent a true breakthrough in consciousness control, thereby fulfilling the dashed dream of the hallucinogenic '60s and '70s. But what about the possibility of an outside operator literally 'changing our minds' by altering our brainwaves without our knowledge? If these machines can induce an hypnotic state, what's to stop a skilled hypnotist from making use of this state? Granted, most of these devices require some physi-

KILL SWITCH

cal interaction with the subject. But a tool called the Bio-Pacer can, according to its manufacturer, produce a number of mood-altering frequencies — without attachment to the subject. Indeed, the Bio-Pacer III (a high-powered version) can affect an entire room. This device costs \$275, according to the most recent price sheet available. (46) What sort of machine might \$27,5000 buy? Or \$275,000? What effects, what ranges might a million dollar machine be capable of?

The military certainly has that sort of money; and they're certainly interested in this sort of technology, according to Michael Hutchison. His interview with an informant named Joseph Light elicited this, for example: "There are powerful elements in the scientific community, powerful people, who are very much interested in these areas.... but they have to keep most of their work secret. Because as soon as they start to publish some of these sensitive things, they have problems in their lives. You see, they work on research grants, and if you follow the research being done, you find that as soon as these scientists publish something about this, their research funds are cut off.

There are areas in bioelectric research where very simple techniques and devices can have mind-boggling effects. Conceivably, if you have a crazed person with a bit of a technical background, he can do a lot of damage.' (47)

This last statement is particularly evocative. In 1984 a violent neo-Nazi group called The Order — responsible for the murder of talk show host Alan Berg — established contact with two government scientists engaged in clandestine research to project chemical imbalances and render targeted individuals docile via certain electronic wave frequencies. For \$100,000 the scientists were willing to deliver this information. (48)

Thus at least one group of crazed individuals almost got the goods.

Wave Your Brain Goodbye

I am told that many Senate and Congressional representatives have a 'wavie' file. So do many state representatives. Wavies have even pled their case to private institutions such as the Christic Institute, a public interest law firm. (49) Wavies claim to be the victims of clandestine bombardment with non-ionising radiation, or microwaves. They report sudden changes in psychological states, alteration of sleep patterns, intracerebral voices and other sounds, and physiological effects. I've spoken to many.

Are these troubled individuals seeking an exterior rationale for their mental problems? I'm sure that is the case in many instances. But the fact is that the literature on the behavioural effects of microwaves, extra-low-frequencies (ELF) and ultra-sonics is such that we cannot blithely dismiss all such claims.

For decades American science and industry have tried to convince the population that microwaves could have no adverse affects on human beings at sub-thermal levels. The attitude was 'If it can't burn you, it can't hurt you.' This approach became increasingly difficult to defend as reports mounted of microwave-induced physiological effects. Technicians described 'hearing' certain radar installations; users of radar telescopes began developing cataracts at an appallingly high rate. (50) The Soviets have long recognised the strange and sometimes subtle effects of these radio frequencies, which is why their exposure standards have always been much stricter.

Soviet microwave bombardment of the U.S. Embassy in Moscow prompted the Defense Advanced Research Projects Agency's Project PANDORA (later renamed), whose ostensible goal was to determine whether these pulsations - - reportedly at 10 cycles per

KILL SWITCH

second, which puts them in the alpha range — could be used for the purposes of mind control. I suspect that the ‘war on Tchaikowsky Street’, as I call it, (51) was used, at least in part, as a cover story for DARPA mind control research, and that the stories floated in the news, via, for example, Jack Anderson’s column, about Soviet remote brainwashing served the same propaganda purpose as the did the bleatings of Edward Hunter during the 1950s. (52)

What can low-level microwaves do to the mind? According to a DIA report released under the Freedom of Information Act, microwaves can induce metabolic changes, alter brain functions, and disrupt behaviour patterns.(53) PANDORA discovered that pulsed microwaves can create leaks in the blood/brain barrier, induce heart seizures, and create behavioural disorganization. (54) In 1970 a RAND corporation scientist reported that microwaves could be used to promote insomnia, fatigue, irritability, memory loss and hallucinations.(55)

Perhaps the most significant work in this area has been produced by Dr. W. Ross Adey at the University of Southern California. He determined that behaviour and emotional states can be altered without electrodes — simply by placing the subject in an electromagnetic field. By directing a carrier frequency to stimulate the brain and using amplitude modulation to ‘shape’ the wave into mimicry of a desired EEG frequency, he was able to impose a 4.5 CPS theta rhythm on his subjects — a frequency which he previously measured in the hippocampus during avoidance learning. This he could externally condition the mind towards an aversive reaction.(56)(Adey has also done extensive work on the use of electrodes in animals.(57)) According to another prominent microwave scientist, Allen Frey, other frequencies could — in animal studies — induce docility.(58)

As journalist Anna Keeler noted: ‘Specific frequencies at low intensities can predictably influence sensory processes.... pleasantness — unpleasantness, strain-relaxation, and excitement — quiescence can be created with the field. Negative feelings and avoidance are strong biological phenomena and relate to survival.

Feelings are the true basis of much ‘decision-making’ and often occur as sub-threshold impressions.... Ideas including names can be synchronized with the feelings that the fields induce.’ (59)

Adey and compatriots have compiled an entire library of frequencies and pulsation rates which can affect the mind and nervous systems. Some of these effects can be extremely bizarre. For example, engineer Tom Jarski, in the attempt to replicate the seminal work of F. Cazzamalli, found that a particular frequency caused a ringing sensation in the ears of his subjects — who felt strangely compelled to bite the experimenters! (60) On the other hand, the diet-conscious may be intrigued by the finding that rats exposed to ELF waves failed to gain weight normally.(61) For our present purposes, the most significant electromagnetic research findings concern microwave signals modulated by hypnoidal EEG frequencies. Microwaves can act like the ‘hemi-synch’ device previously described, entraining the brain to theta rhythms. (62)

I need not emphasise the implication of remotely synchronising the brain to resonate at a frequency conducive to sleep, or to hypnosis. Trance may be remotely induced: but can it be directed? Yes. Recall the intracerebral voices mentioned earlier in our discussion of Delgado. The same effect can be produced by ‘the wave’. Frey demonstrated in the early 1960s that microwaves could produce booming, hissing, buzzing and other intracere-

KILL SWITCH

bral static. (This phenomenon is now called 'the Frey effect'.) In 1973 Dr Joseph Sharp, of the Walter Reed Army Institute of Research, expanded on Frey's work in an experiment where the subject -in this case Sharp himself — 'heard' and understood spoken words delivered via a pulsed-microwave analog of the speaker's sound vibrations. (63) Dr. Robert Becker commented that 'Such a device has obvious applications in covert operations designed to drive a target crazy with 'voices' or deliver undetectable instructions to a programmed assassin.' (64) Indeed, the former capability could effectively disguise the latter. Who will listen to the victims, when the electronically-induced hallucinations they recount exactly parallel the classical signals of paranoid schizophrenia and/or temporal lobe epilepsy?

Perhaps the most ominous revelations concern the mysterious work of J. F. Schapitz, who in 1974 filed a plan to explore the interaction of radio frequencies and hypnosis. 'In this investigation it will be shown that the spoken word of the hypnotist may be conveyed by modulate electromagnetic energy directly into the subconscious parts of the human brain — i.e. without employing any technical devices for receiving or transcoding the messages and without the person exposed to such influence having a chance to control the information input consciously.'

He outlined an experiment, innocent in its immediate effect yet chilling in its implications, whereby subjects would be implanted with the subconscious suggestion to leave the lab and buy a particular item, the action triggered by a certain 'cue' word or action. Schapitz felt certain that the subjects would rationalize the behaviour, chalking up the action to the working of free will. (65) His instincts on this latter point coalesce perfectly with findings of professional hypnotists. (66) Schapitz' work was funded by the Department of Defence. Despite Freedom of Information Act requests, the results have never been revealed. (67)

Final thoughts on 'the wave'

I must again offer a caveat about possible disparities between the 'official' record of electromagnetism's psychological effects and the hidden history. Once more we face a question of timing. How long ago did this research really begin? In the early years of this century, Nikola Tesla seems to have stumbled upon certain of the behavioural effects of electromagnetic exposure. (68) Cazamelli, mentioned above, conducted his studies in the 1930s. In 1934 E. L. Chaffee and R. U. Light published a paper on 'A Method For the Remote Control of Electrical Stimulation of the Nervous System.' (69)

From the very beginning of their work with microwaves, the Soviets explored the more subtle physiological effects of electromagnetism; and despite the bleatings of certain right-wing alarmists that an 'electromagnetic gap' separated us from Soviet advances, the literature in this area from the former Soviet bloc has been closely monitored for decades by the West. (70) ARTICHOKE and BLUEBIRD project outlines, dating from the early 1950s, prominently mention the need to explore all possible uses of the electromagnetic spectrum.

Another point worth mentioning concerns the combination of EMR and miniature brain electrodes. The father of the stimoceiver, Dr. Delgado, has recently conducted experiments in which monkeys are exposed to electromagnetic fields, thereby eliciting a wide range of behavioural effects — one monkey might fly into a volcanic range while, just a few feet away, his simian partner begins to nod off. Fascinatingly, when monkeys with brain

KILL SWITCH

implants felt 'the wave', the effects were greatly intensified.

Apparently these tiny electrodes can act as an amplifier of the electromagnetic effect. (71) Critics might counter that any burst of microwave energy powerful enough to have truly remote effects would probably also create a thermal reaction. That is, if a clandestine operator propagated a 'wave' from outside an unwitting subject's bedroom (say, from a low-flying helicopter), the power necessary to do the job might be such that the microwave would cook the target before it got a chance to launder his thoughts. It is a fair criticism. But if our 'wavier' had previously been implanted with a Delgado-style device, it would act as an intensifier of the signal. Such an individual could have any number of remotely-induced hallucinatory experiences while his or her bed partner dozes comfortably. Furthermore, recent reports indicate that a 'waver' can achieve pinpoint accuracy without the use of Delgado-style implants. In 1985 volunteers at the Midwest Research Institute in Kansas City, Missouri, were exposed to microwave beams as part of an experiment sponsored by the Department of Energy and the New York State Department of Health. As *The Arizona Republic* described the experiment, 'A matched control group sat in the same room without being bombarded by non-ionizing radiation.' (72)

Parting observations

Too much of the preceding remains mired in the past; we know, however, that the present practitioners of mind control have their eye on the future. Information regarding current research remains, of course, quite sketchy. We know that one project, SLEEPING BEAUTY, is directed toward the battlefield use of mind-altering electromagnetic weaponry. Jack Verona, a highly placed, highly secretive DIA chief, heads this project, which employs (among others) Dr. Michael Persinger of Laurentian University. According to sources I have interviewed, Verona counts among his associates the mysterious C. B. Scott Jones, the well known (infamous, in some circles) aide to Rhode Island senator Claiborne Pell.

Jones, a 16-year veteran of Naval Intelligence, pursues a strange array of interests. Not only does he frequently lecture on the subject of UFOs (he 'vetted' the credentials of several intelligence operatives who gave journalist William Moore putative 'inside' information on this topic), Scott Jones has also established a controversial presence in the field of parapsychology as the current head of the American Society for Psychical Research. Another Scott Jones associate, Edward Dames, recently founded a company called PSI-tech, which allegedly performs 'remote viewing' experiments for both the government and corporate clients. (73) Scott Jones has been a key source for writer Michael Drosnin (author of *Citizen Hughes*) who is now writing a book on mind control.

Two separate sources have described to me another ongoing mind control project, MONARCH. The ramifications of this alleged program are so appalling, and the claims so large, that I hesitate to deliver any details without further confirmation. Suffice it to say, this project supposedly involves the deliberate creation of severe multiple personality disorder, a still under-researched psychological phenomenon which invariably results from some type of childhood trauma, or abuse.

At this point the reader has every reason to ask 'But why?' With the Cold War melted into oblivion, what is the purpose of these technofascist intrusions into innermost thoughts and actions? How do the researchers of these technologies justify their work to themselves? What overriding objective do they hope to achieve? The doctor who started it all, George Estabrooks, once suggested an ominous answer to this question.

KILL SWITCH

Ornery by nature, and — towards the end — perhaps a bit too fond of his liquor, 'Esty' possessed a looser tongue than did his colleagues in clandestine study. In 1968 Estabrooks told a reporter for the Providence (Rhode Island) Evening Bulletin that he had conducted extensive hypnosis work on behalf of the CIA, FBI and military intelligence. (An astonishing admission: at this early date, no other researcher had dared to let this particular cat loose from its well-sealed bag.) 'Dr. Estabrooks said that the key to creating an effective spy or assassin rests in..... creating a multiple personality, with the aid of hypnosis', a procedure which the good doctor described as 'child's play'. Estabrooks even offered the suggestion that Lee Harvey Oswald and Jack Ruby 'could very well have been performing through hypnosis.'

The article's date? May 13, 1968, two weeks before the assassination of Robert F. Kennedy: the title? 'To sleep: perchance to kill'.

Notes

1. Much of the information in this article is derived from the files compiled by John Marks, author of *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate* (expanded Dell edition, 1988). The files, now stored at the National Security Archives in Washington, D.C., contain some 20,000 pages of declassified CIA documents and other materials, including the notes of interviews with scientists employed by American intelligence. In an interview with John Marks, hypnosis expert Milton Kline, a veteran of clandestine experimentation in this field, averred that his work for the government continued. Since this interview took place in 1977, years after the CIA allegedly halted mind control research, we must conclude either that the CIA lied, or that another agency continued the work. In another interview with Marks, former Air Force — CIA liaison L. Fletcher Prouty confirmed that the Department of Defense ran studies either in conjunction with or parallel to those operated by the CIA.

2. See generally Project MKULTRA, the CIA's Program of Research in Behavioural Modification, joint hearing before the Select Committee on Health and Scientific Research of the Committee on Human Resources, United States Senate (Washington, Government Printing Office, 1977).

3. Robert Eringer, 'Secret Agent Man', in *Rolling Stone*, January 16, 1986.

4. John Marks interview with Victor Marchetti (Marks files).

5. A copy of this letter can be found in the Marks files.

6. Estabrooks attracted an eclectic group of friends, including J. Edgar Hoover and Alan Watts.

7. Interview with daughter Doreen Estabrooks in Marks files.

8. Marks, pp. 4-6.

9. Hunt pp. 157-74; Marks files.

10. Hunter invented the term 'brainwashing' in a September 24 1950 *Miami News* article. Hunter was an OSS veteran of the China theatre, which also produced Richard Helms, Howard Hunt, Mitch Werbell, Fred Crisman and Paul Halliwell.

11. Marks, pp. 60-61. A folk etymology has it that the MK of MKULTRA stands for 'Mind Kontrol'. According to Marks, TSS prefixed the cryptonyms of all its projects with these initials. Note, though, that MKULTRA was preceded by a still-mysterious TSS program called QKHILLTOP.

12. Marks, pp. 224-229. Seven MKULTRA sub-projects were continued, under TSS

KILL SWITCH

supervision, as MKSEARCH. This project ended in 1972. CIA apologists often proclaim that 'brainwashing' research ceased in either 1962 or 1972. These blandishments refer to the TSS projects, not to the ORD work, which remains terra incognita for independent researchers. Marks discovered that the ORD research was so voluminous that retrieving documents via FOIA would have proven unthinkably expensive.

13. For a description of the research into parapsychology, see McRae, the best book available on a subject which awaits a truly authoritative text.

14. Allegedly, this experiment took place in 1964. However the pseudonymous 'Lincoln Lawrence' at p. 36 makes an interesting argument that the demonstration took place some years earlier.

15. Much of Delgado's work was funded by the Office of Naval Intelligence, a common conduit for CIA funds during the 1950s and 60s. Gordon Thomas misleadingly implies that CIA interest in Delgado's work began in 1972.

16. J. M. R. Delgado, 'Intracerebral Radio Stimulation and Recording in Completely Free Patients', in Schwitzgebel and Schwitzgebel (eds.).

17. David Kreech, 'Controlling the Mind Controllers', in Think 32 (July-August), 1966.

18. Delgado (1969)

19. Ranelagh p. 208. Marchetti casts this story in the form of an amusing anecdote: after much time and expense, a cat was suitably trained and prepared — only, on its first assignment, to be run over by a taxi. Marchetti neglects to point out that nothing stopped the Agency from getting another cat. Or from using a human being.

20. Schefflin and Opton p. 347

21. Gordon Thomas p. 276.

22. Olds 1962 p. 554; and Olds 1967.

23. Mark and Ervin, Chapter 12, excerpted in Individual Rights and the Federal Role in Behaviour Modification, prepared by the Staff of the Subcommittee on Constitutional Rights of the Committee of the Judiciary, United States Senate (Washington, Government Printing Office, 1974).

24. Lilly p. 90. Monkeys allowed to stimulate themselves continually via ESB brought themselves to orgasm once every three minutes, sixteen hours a day.

25. Schefflin and Opton, pp. 336-7. Heath even monitored his patient's brain responses during the subject's first heterosexual encounter. Such is the nature of the brave new world before us.

26. Schwitzgebel and Bird pp. 99-105.

27. Gordon Thomas p. 277. In Schwitzgebel and Bird, Schwitzgebel details how the radio signals may be fed into a telephone via a modem and thus analyzed by a computer anywhere in the world.

28. Schefflin and Opton, pp. 347-349.

29. Tackwood p. 226.

30. Schefflin and Opton pp. 351-35. 'Urban dweller' may be another of Meyer's euphemisms. He uses New York's Harlem as his model community in working out the details of his mind management system.

31. Lilly, p. 91.

KILL SWITCH

32. Marks, pp 151-4.

33. Whenever an author tells us that MKULTRA met with little success, the reference is to drug testing. On this point, I must criticize John Marks. His book never mentions that roughly 2025 per cent of the MKULTRA sub-projects are 'dark' — i.e., little or no information was ever made available, despite lawyers and FOIA requests. Marks seem to feel that the only information worth having is the information he received.

34. The story of 'Deep Trance', an MKULTRA 'insider' who provided invaluable information, is somewhat involved. I do not know who Trance is/was, and Marks may not know either. He contacted 'Trance' via a writer of an article published shortly before research on The Search for The Manchurian Candidate began, addressing his informant 'Dear Source whose anonymity I respect'. I respect it too — hence my reticence to name the aforementioned article, which may mark a trail to Trance. The fact that I have not followed this trail would not prevent others from doing so.

35. Pioneering ESB research was conducted in 1898, by J.R. Ewald, Professor of Physiology at Strausbourg. See Perry London.

36. One source tells me that the man's real name is Arthur J. Ford. I have no confirmation of this.

37. Bowart pp. 261-264.

38. Ibid p. 263.

39. 'Lincoln Lawrence' p. 52.

40. Human Drug Testing by the CIA (United States Government Printing Office, 1977), Hearings before the Subcommittee on Health and Scientific Research of the Committee on Human Resources, United States Senate.

41. Note especially the Supreme Court's decision in Central Intelligence Agency et al versus Sims et al (no 83-1075, decided April 16 1986). The egregious and dangerous majority opinion in this case held that disclosure of the names of scientists and institutions involved in MKULTRA posed 'an unacceptable risk of revealing intelligence sources'. The decisions of the [CIA] Director, who must of course be familiar with 'the whole picture', as judges are not, are worthy of great deference.... it is conceivable that the mere explanation of why information must be withheld can convey valuable information to a foreign intelligence agency.' How do we square this continuing need for secrecy with the CIA's protestations that MKULTRA achieved little success, that the studies were conducted within the Nuremberg statutes governing medical experiments, and that the research was made available in the open literature?

42. Letter, P.A. Linstrom to Robert Naeslund, July 17 1983; copy available from Marti Koski, Kiilinpellontie 2, 21290, Rusko, Finland, who also claims to be a victim of such experiments. Lindstrom writes that he fully agrees with 'Lincoln Lawrence'.

43. Bowart, p. 265. I have attempted, without success, to contact Dr. Lindstrom.

44. Robert Anton Wilson, 'Adventures with Head Hardware', in Magical Blend, 23, July 1989.

45. Hutchison pp. 199-201; Oster.

46. Bio-Pacer promotional and price sheet, available from Lindemann Laboratories, 3463 State Street, #264, Santa Barbara, CA 93105.

47. Hutchison pp. 117-8. Compare Light's observations about 'the grant game' to Sid

KILL SWITCH

Gottlieb's protestations that nearly all 'mind control' research was openly published.

48. Martinez and Guinther, p. 230.

49. Interview with Sandy Munroe of the Los Angeles office of the Christic Institute.

50. See generally, Paul Brodeur.

51. Until recently the American Embassy was on a street named after the composer.

52. It was finally determined that the microwaves were used to receive transmission from bugs planted within the embassy. DARPA Director George H. Heimeier went on record as stating that PANDORA was never designed to study 'microwaves as a surveillance tool'. See Keeler. I would note that the Soviet embassy was 'bugged and waved' in Canada during the 1950s, and, according to the Los Angeles Times (5 June 1989), the Soviet embassy in Britain has been similarly affected.

53. Adams and Williams. Brodeur notes that much of the work ascribed to the Soviets in this report was actually first accomplished by scientists in the United States. Keeler argues that this report is an example of 'mirror imaging' — i.e. parading domestic advances as a foreign threat, the better to pry funding from a suitably-fearful Congress.

54. Keeler

55. MacGregor

56. Keeler

57. Larry Collins, 'Mind Control', in *Playboy*, January 1990..

58. Allan Frey, 'Behavioural Effects of Electromagnetic Energy', in Hazzard (ed.).

59. Keeler

60. Lawrence (1973).

61. Susan Schiefelbein, 'The Invisible Threat', in *Saturday Review*, 15 September 1976.

62. E. Preston, 'Studies on the Nervous System Cardiovascular Function and Thermoregulation', in Assenheim (ed.) pp. 138-41.

63. Becker, pp. 318-9.

64. *Ibid.*

65. *Ibid.* p. 321

66. See Bowart, p. 218 for an interesting example of this 'rationalization' process at work in the case of Sirhan Sirhan, who was convicted of the assassination of Robert F. Kennedy. In prison, Sirhan was hypnotized by Dr. Bernard Diamond, who instructed Sirhan to climb the bars of his cage like a monkey. He did so. After the trance was removed, Sirhan was shown tapes of his actions. He insisted that he 'acted like a monkey' of his own free will — he claimed he wanted the exercise!

67. Keeler suggests that the proposal was revealed because Schapitz's sensationalistic implications may have worked to discredit — and therefore hide — the real research. Personally, I don't accept this argument, but I respect Keller's instincts enough to repeat her caveat here.

68. Margaret Cheyney's *Tesla: Man Out of Time* (New York, Dell, 1981), the most reliable book in the sea of wild speculation surrounding this extraordinary scientist, confirms Tesla's early work with the psychological effects of electromagnetic radiation. See

KILL SWITCH

especially pp. 101- 4. Note also the afterword in which we learn that certain government agencies have kept important research by Tesla hidden from the general public.

69. Noted in 'Lincoln Lawrence' p. 29.

70. Particularly one Thomas Bearden of Huntsville, Alabama. I have a document written by Bearden associate Andrew Michrowski which identifies Bearden as an intelligence agent for an undisclosed agency. According to one source I have interviewed, Bearden may be connected with a paramilitary outfit in New Mexico. The man's precise position in this game is unclear.

71. Kathleen McAuliffe, 'The Mind Fields', in *Omni*, February 1985.

72. May 5, 1985

73. Ruth Sinai, 'ESP used in Iraqi weapons hunt', in *Nashville Banner*, November 18, 1991. Although I am uncomfortable with the dangerous topic of government-sponsored ESP research, I must note that 'psychic warfare' was the concern of several MKULTRA sub-projects: covert American interest in this field goes back at least to the 1940s. Information on Scott Jones derives from confidential sources, as well as a privately distributed 1992 paper by Robert Durant.

Bibliograph

· Adams, Ronald I. and Williams, R. A., — *Biological Effects of Electromagnetic Radiation (Radiowaves and Microwaves) Eurasian Communist Countries*, (Defense Intelligence Agency, March 1976)

· Assenheim, H.M. (ed.) *The Biological Effects of Radio-Frequency and Microwave Radiation* (Ottawa, National Research Council of Canada, 1979)

· Bowart, Walter, *Operation Mind Control* (New York, Dell, 1978)

· Brodeur, Paul, *The Zapping of America* (Toronto edition, George J. Macleod, 1977)

· Delgado, Jose, *Physical Control of the Mind: Towards a Psychocivilized Society*, (New York, Harper and Row, 1969).

· Hazzard, DeWitt G. (ed.) *Symposium on Biological Effects and Measurements of Radio Frequencies/Microwaves* (U.S. Department of Health, Education and Welfare, 1977)20

· Hunt, Linda, *Secret Agenda* (New York, St. Martin's Press, 1991)

· Hunter, Edward, *Brainwashing in Red China* (New York, Vanguard Press, 1951)

· Hutchison, Michael, *Mega Brain* (New York, Ballantine, 1986)

· Keeler, Anna, 'Remote Mind Control Technology', in *Full Disclosure #15*, PO Box 903,

· Libertyville, Illinois 60048, U.S.A.

· Lawrence, Lincoln (pseudonym), *Were We Controlled?* (New Hyde Park, NY, University Books, 1967)

· Lawrence, L. George, 'Electronics and Brain Control', in *Popular Electronics*, July 1973.

· Lilly, John, *The Scientist* (Berkeley, Ronin Publishing, 1988 [revised edition])

· London, Perry, *Behaviour Control* (New York, Harper and Row, 1969)

· McGregor, R. J., *A Brief Survey of Literature Relating to Influence of Low Intensity Microwaves on Nervous Function* (Santa Monica, RAND Corporation, 1970).

· McRae, Ronald M., *Mind Wars* (New York, St. Martin's Press, 1984)

KILL SWITCH

- Mark, Vernon and Ervin, Frank, *Violence and the Brain* (New York, Harper and Row, 1970).
- Marks, John, *The Search for The Manchurian Candidate*, (New York, Dell, 1988)
- Martinez, Thomas and Guinther, John, *The Brotherhood of Murder* (New York, McGraw-Hill, 1988)
- Olds, James, 'Hypothalamic Substrates of Reward' in *Physiological Reviews*, 1962; 'Emotional Centers in the Brain', in *Science Journal*, 1967, 3 (5)
- Oster, Gerald, 'Auditory Beats in the Brain', in *Scientific American*, September 1973.
- Ranelagh, John, *The Agency* (New York, Simon and Shuster, 1986)
- Schefflin, Alan W. and Opton Jr., Edward M., *The Mind Manipulators* (London, Paddington Press, 1978)
- Schwitzgebel, Robert L. and Bird, Richard M., 'Sociotechnical Design Factors in Remote Instrumentation With Humans in Natural Environments', in *Behaviour Research Methods and Instrumentation*, 1970, 2.
- Schwitzgebel, Robert L. and Schwitzgebel, Ralph K., eds., *Psychotechnology*, (New York, Rinehart and Winston, 1973)
- Tackwood, Louis and the Citizens' Research and Investigation Committee, *The Glass House Tapes* (New York, Avon 1971)
- Thomas, Gordon, *Journey Into Madness* (New York, Bantam, 1989)

U.S ARMY INTELLIGENCE MIND CONTROL EXPERIMENTATION

This article examines hallucinogenic-type drug experiments conducted by various elements of the U.S. Army Intelligence community in conjunction with sections of the

U.S. Army Chemical Corps. Most of the related records have been destroyed. The following is what I have been able to salvage from the records available on these programs.

Edgewood Tests

From the available records in the Intelligence Center at Fort Holabird and the Chemical Warfare Laboratories we know that a joint co-ordinated psychochemical drug project started in November 1957. The ground work on this joint project was apparently conducted in the latter part of 1957 and early 1958. The discussion about this programme took place between officers of the Intelligence Board at Fort Holabird, Maryland, and the Medical Research Laboratories at Edgewood Arsenal in May 1958.

As a result of this meeting, on June 3 1958 the President of the Intelligence Board sent an informal plan to the Medical Research Directorate of the Chemical Warfare Laboratories.(1) The plan was entitled 'Material Testing Program EA 1279'. EA 1279 was LSD. The plan's main thrust was the 'method of approach to prospective volunteers' who were to be selected from official personnel, based on their records and security clearance information. It called upon the proper code of conduct for volunteers, requiring them to sign a security statement. The volunteers were to be examined physically and mentally prior to any testing.

The test program on the first group of volunteers arriving at Army Chemical Center (ACC) Edgewood, contained a specific emphasis on 'Unwitting test reaction'. A three-day stay was required for the test to be carried out on the first group. After physical examination, those who were physically unfit were excused. In the early evening of the first day after arrival at ACC, the group met socially. Each volunteer had been introduced to a trained

KILL SWITCH

interrogator, who had already studied the file on the subject volunteer. In reality the scene was set for each interrogator to try and elicit additional information from the volunteer under his control — simulating a diplomatic cocktail party where an attempt would be made to obtain classified information from unwitting subjects. All drinks served to volunteers included LSD. The interrogators then tried to extract extra classified information about their special duties at their place of service.

Where and when necessary, the interrogators, without the knowledge of their subject, administered additional doses of LSD.

Additional facilities were provided for private meetings and interviews in the course of the gathering for each pair. The results of these interviews would be compared with the results of interviews the next day when the individual was not under the drug influence. The volunteers were informed but were unaware of their previous 'interview'. On the second day, the volunteers were told about the events of the previous day.

In the course of other planned tests on other groups of volunteer visitors to Edgewood, experiments were conducted to evaluate the ability to deliberately lie while under the influence of LSD. There were also 'Memory Impairment Tests', to evaluate the effects of LSD on retention ability of subjects; 'Specialised Motor Reaction Memory Testing', to evaluate the impairment of simple motor reactions of the subjects after ingestion of LSD; and 'Effect of Environment and Physical Condition', evaluating the effect of LSD on a subject under various environments and physical conditions, including total isolation and hostile interrogation situations. A further test, 'Influence of Material Under Artificially Created Stress Situations', was to determine the ability of the subject to withhold information under unusual stress and the influence of LSD.

There is no evidence that these tests were approved at any level above the President of the Intelligence Board or Director of the Medical Research Laboratories at Edgewood. The only document available to the Office of the Inspector General and the Auditor General, U.S. Department of the Army, shows that the proposed plan was sent from the Intelligence Center to the Commanding General, Edgewood. It was signed by the Adjutant General for the Center Commander, indicating that the Intelligence Center Commander may have approved the program from the Intelligence Corps side. (2)

However, the former Commander of the Intelligence Centre, Richard S. Prather, in his testimony of 29 October 1979, admitted that he knew nothing about the plan, and it is possible that the letters were signed on his behalf. He further stated that although the Intelligence Board was located within his command, they usually reported directly to the Office of the Assistant Chief of Staff for Intelligence, (ACSI) Department of the Army, regarding any subjects dealing with operational matters. (3)

The Intelligence Board Project Officer, William J. Jacobsen, supported Richard Prather's testimony, adding that it was his understanding that at the time no definite decision could have been made at Holabird to participate in these testings without the approval of ACSI. (4) Jacobsen's statement on this matter was not confirmed by former ACSI staff. Furthermore, no evidence was found showing that the Medical Research Laboratories obtained approval through Chemical Corps, nor had the Surgeon General's Office checked or reviewed the plan. They had clearly over-stepped the legal line.

The surviving records show that the experiments were conducted in two phases: the first series of tests from August to November 1958, (5) and the second from September 1959

KILL SWITCH

to May 1960. Although there are no records of the exact number of volunteers used, from the travel orders and testimony, between 30 and 35 volunteers were used. There are no records to indicate the number of times LSD was administered to each volunteer. It is important to note that none of the volunteers gave their 'informed consent' prior to receiving LSD. Furthermore, there was a deliberate attempt to deny the volunteers any information that would have permitted them to evaluate the dangers involved. The responsibility for this deliberate failure lies with the Intelligence Board, as the initiator, and the Medical Research Laboratories, as medical investigators. It was only after surreptitious administration of LSD that the volunteers were informed and briefed about the rest of the project.

These tests were conducted a few years after Dr. Frank Olson's death, caused mainly by unwitting administration of LSD in his drink in November 1953. As Dr Olson had worked quite closely with the Army's Chemical Corps' Special Operations Division (SOD) at Fort Detrick, these records show that the U.S. Army soon put behind them the lessons learned from Olson's death and carried on the tests as before. According to the testimony of Charles L. Shirley Jr., one of the volunteers, in August 5 1975, the belief amongst most of the volunteers was that if they declined to participate in the tests it would have put them in an immediate disfavour with their superiors.

Field Tests

After the first phase of Intelligence Corps experiments in November 1958, a letter from the Chief of Clinical Division at Edgewood to Commanding General Army Intelligence Center stated that all the initial work on the first phase was completed with rewarding results. He further recommended that 'actual application of the material [LSD] be utilised in real situations on an experimental basis, if possible.' (6) It is hard to believe such a recommendation on such a dangerous drug with unpredictable results after tests on only 35 volunteers.

On 21 January 1959 the U.S. Army Intelligence Center gave the go-ahead to Edgewood: 'This headquarters has forwarded your letter to the Assistant Chief of Staff for Intelligence (ACSI), Department of the Army, concurring in your recommendation that that actual application of the material be utilized in real situations on an experimental basis.' (7) From the records available, a field test plan was prepared with Medical Research Laboratories' representatives and an Intelligence Board officer as an aid to interrogation. Early in March 1959 the Director of Medical Research at Edgewood informed his superior, Commander, Chemical Warfare Labs, that the plan would be submitted to him shortly by the Intelligence Center. (8) The plan called for use of LSD overseas on foreign nationals. The Surgeon General's office was the avenue chosen to rapidly implement the plan. (9)

On April 9 1959, representatives from the Chemical Warfare Laboratory and the Intelligence Center briefed the Chief, Research and Development, Office of the Surgeon General on 'Material Testing Program, EA 1729', proposing the field experimentation. He had shown reservations in approving the plan, but later informally notified Edgewood that the Surgeon General would reconsider the plan if it was presented through the Assistant Chief of Staff for Intelligence (ACSI). The Intelligence Center sent the plan to ACSI to be coordinated with the Surgeon General, and the latter 'concurred in the finding of the Chemical Corps and offered no medical objections to the field experimental plan.' (10) The Office of ACSI ordered the Commander, U.S. Army Intelligence Center (USAINTC) to prepare a detailed staff study about the test on overseas nationals and prepare a report for ACSI. On

KILL SWITCH

October 15 1959, USAINTC sent the requested study to ACSI. (11)

On August 8 1960, the 'Office of Assistant Chief of Staff Intelligence Liaison Team' was sent to Europe to brief the European intelligence community on the joint Intelligence Corps/ Chemical Warfare Laboratories project for testing LSD and acquaint the G-2 U.S. Army Europe (USAREUR) with the plan. The team consisted of three members: the action officer from the Office of the Assistant Chief of Staff for Intelligence of the Department of the Army (OACSI), the Project Officer from the U.S. Army Intelligence Board at Fort Holabird (USAINTB), and another Project Officer from the U.S. Chemical Research and Development Laboratories (USACRDL) at Edgewood. This team briefed the G-2, USAREUR.

It was left to the intelligence community in Europe to devise the plan and provide the subjects for the proposed 'Field Test'. They were to be non-volunteer, foreign nationals. The Department of the Army was to be responsible for the execution of the plan under the watchful eyes of the Special Purpose Team (SPT). (12) Surviving records suggest that on 25 November 1960 the Deputy, ACSI and the G-2 USAREUR, informally agreed on the working relationship for the proposed plan. (13)

On December 7 1960, the USAINTC Project Officer, in the presence of representatives of the Chief Chemical Officer DA, and the Surgeon General's office, briefed the ACSI about the plan to conduct LSD tests on European non-volunteer subjects. (14) The briefing report shows that ACSI agreed with the method applied to enhance their conventional interrogation standards. Although little concern was shown, the question of co-ordination with other agencies such as the CIA and FBI was raised. The final decision was made that the co-ordination with the other agencies would be postponed until after the conclusion of the field tests in Europe. According to ACSI's remarks, 'His concern was that if this project is going to be worth anything it [LSD] should be used on higher types of non-U.S. subjects, and, as he put it - staffers.

This could be accomplished if the CIA was brought in.' ACSI also added that 'maybe the FBI should be informed and to possibly join us to further develop the experimentation.' (15)

There is absolutely no evidence that this plan was approved by the Chief of Staff of the Army or any other officers higher than ACSI. Furthermore, there is no evidence that it was co-ordinated either with FBI, CIA or any other non-U.S. Army department.

In January 1961 the Chemical Corps made an officer available to be a member of the Special Purpose Team who joined the USAINTB project officer.(16) The new member, apparently provided by the Surgeon General's office, was a medical officer from Fort Totten, New York. (There is no documentary evidence of this assignment by the Surgeon General.)

Operation THIRD CHANCE

On 28 April 1961 the Department of the Army EA 1729 [LSD] Special Purpose Team (SPT) departed for a 90-day field experimentation program to Europe, 'Operation THIRD CHANCE'. The team consisted of an Army medical officer, a Chemical Corps EA 1279 project officer and the U.S. Army Intelligence Center project officer representing OACSI. The objectives were: 'to confirm or refute laboratory findings (1958-60) in an effort to ascertain whether or not the EA 1729 technique could be employed as an aid to interrogation and whether or not the technique does enhance the exploitability of actual subjects of intelligence interest.'(17)

The subjects had already been nominated by the sponsoring intelligence units. They

KILL SWITCH

were all from the critical category considered unresolvable through conventional interrogation or investigation techniques. The subjects were brought individually to a prearranged operational site on the pretext that they were to undergo a physical examination by the SPT doctor. After the introduction to the members of the SPT in a social environment, the subjects were surreptitiously administered LSD in drinks. Once the LSD had taken effect the group moved to an interrogation room. The medical officer and psychologist were present throughout the interrogation in an advisory capacity.(18) There were 11 experiments involving 10 individuals, all but one of whom were foreign nationals, Army intelligence sources or agents. The exception was a U.S. soldier who was involved in the theft of classified documents. All the subjects were non-volunteers, although one had agreed to take a 'truth serum' test.

The Special Project Team returned to the U.S. in late July 1961. They concluded that there was an urgent need for advanced and unconventional techniques to improve the field capability of intelligence units where intensive special interrogations were required, and that LSD had a promising future in this area. Among their other recommendations were: 'A comprehensive field testing program to be established in conjunction with appropriate associated U.S. intelligence and security agencies for the scientific derivation of empiric data upon which to standardise the EA 1279 technique; and that future field experimentation utilise real subjects of actual cases for both research purposes and operational advantage.' (19)

There is no evidence that any part of THIRD CHANCE was presented to, or approved by, the Army Chief of Staff or the Secretary of the Army. From the evidence it is clear that from start to finish the project violated Department of Defense and Department of Army policies, as well as specific procedures set for chemical or medical research. Furthermore the SPT used non-volunteers of foreign nationality in all but one case. Additionally, the use of the U.S. soldier was not experimental but operational. Finally, the flagrant disregard for Department of the Army policies and directives was the responsibility of the Assistant Chief of Staff, Intelligence, the Office of the Surgeon General and the Chief Chemical Officer.

Operation DERBY HAT

After the return of the Special Purpose Team from Europe in December 1971, a decision was made at ACSI to explore the possibility of similar experiments in the U.S. Army Pacific (USARPAC). (20) On 27 February 1962 the Intelligence Corps project officer briefed the Assistant Chief of Staff, G-2, USARPAC about the LSD program at his headquarters in Hawaii. 'The primary purpose of the field testing program will be experimental research under actual operating conditions, verification of previous laboratory and field test findings regarding [LSD] technique and development of further data regarding operational employment of the material. Any operational gains accruing to individual cases selected for experimentation will be considered a collateral advantage.' (21)

The initial tests were to begin on 20 April 1962. The program was code named Operation DERBY HAT, and ACSI requested the Chief Chemical Officer to provide an officer as a member of the Special Purpose Team for this phase. (22) The Chemical Corps assigned the same officer who had been present in Operation THIRD CHANCE. (23)

For reasons that are unclear Operation DERBY HAT was aborted before LSD could be administered to any of the eight subjects — seven foreign nationals and one U.S. soldier — chosen for it. In a briefing on 10 April 1963 the Deputy ACSI, DA ordered that no further field

KILL SWITCH

testing with EA 1279 be conducted. The reasons given were the lack of data, the inconclusive nature of the tests, and the legal, political and moral problems inherent in the use of EA 1279 (LSD). (24)

In conclusion

In the course of two years the Intelligence Corps used 30 to 35 humans in their LSD tests. The first experiments of the surreptitious administration of LSD at a simulated social reception were in direct violation of published Department of Defense and Department of Army policies. For a majority of the volunteers and the tests themselves no records are available. Records were deliberately destroyed to protect the identity of many of the participants in these operations. Although the use of LSD on any subject, for any purpose, was stopped as from 10 April 1963 in the U.S. Department of the Army, these operations opened new avenues for other U.S. agencies — and allies of the U.S. government — to continue research using LSD on unwitting human subjects thereafter.

Notes

1. U.S. Army Chemical Warfare Laboratories (ACC), MD. Letter to Commanding General, U.S. Army Intelligence Center, Fort Holabird, MD.

Subject: Proposed Plan for Field Experimentation with EA 1279, dated 19 March 1959.

2. U.S. Army Intelligence Center, Fort Holabird, letter to Commanding General, U.S. Army Chemical Center, Edgewood, MD. Subject: Material Testing Program EA 1279, dated 28 April 1958.

3. Disposition Form by a Medical Research Laboratory staff member. Subject: Comments on 'K' Material Testing Program Proposed from USAINTC, dated 27 March 1958.

4. Testimony of Lt. Col. (Retd.) William J. Jacobson, 29 August 1975.

5. U.S. Army Intelligence Board, letter to Chief Medical Research Directorate, Chemical Warfare Laboratories. Subject: Transmittal of Planned Worksheet, dated 3 June 1958.

6. Medical Research Laboratories, letter to Commanding General, U.S. Army Intelligence Center. Subject: Material Testing Program EA 1279, dated 14 January 1959.

7. U.S. Army Intelligence Center, letter to Commanding General, U.S. Army Chemical Research and Development Command, Edgewood. Subject: Material Testing Program, EA 1279, dated 21 January 1959.

8. Disposition Form from Director of Medical Research to Commander, U.S. Army Chemical Warfare Laboratories. Subject: CIC Test Plan, dated 6 March 1959.

9. USAINTC Letter to ACSI, DA. Subject: Staff Study: Material Testing Program EA 1279, dated 15 October 1959. (Includes a reference to ACSI-SC letter, 27 July 1959, requesting study.)

10. Ibid.

11. Ibid.

12. Report of trip of OACSI Liaison Group re Material Testing Program EA 1279, dated 26 August 1960.

13. U.S. Army Chemical Corps R and D Command, letter to Commander, U.S. Army Chemical R and D Laboratories. Subject: Material Testing Program EA 1279, dated 25 January 1961. Enclosure 2, Material Testing Program EA 1279. Phase 1, Background and Summary to date. Undated.

KILL SWITCH

14. Ibid. — enclosure 4. Fact sheet by OACSI/ODSMCI Security Division.
Subject: Material Testing Program EA 1279, dated 9 December 1960.
15. Ibid.
16. Ibid. without enclosure.
17. Project Officer Report to ACSI. Subject: Report of Trip and Activities of the Department of the Army EA 1279 Special Purpose Team re: Operation 'Third Chance', dated 6 September 1961.
18. Ibid.
19. Reference to letter, ACSI-SC. Subject: Material Testing Project EA 1279, dated 29 December 1961.
20. Memorandum for Record. Subject: Policy and Operational Factors involved in the conduct of Field Experimentation of EA 1279, dated 1 March 1962.
21. ACSI letter to Chief Chemical Officer. Subject: Material Testing Program EA 1279, dated 28 March 1962.
22. U.S. Army Chemical Corps Research and Development Command Letter.
Subject: Material Testing Program EA 1279, dated 6 April 1962.
23. ACSI letter to USAINTC. Subject: Material Testing Program EA 1279, dated 9 April 1962, with attached Memorandum for Record.
24. ACSI, DA, Memorandum for Record. Subject: Material Testing Program, EA 1279, dated 12 August 1963.

JFK

Introduction

We were as surprised as anybody at the furore over Oliver Stone's movie. When we published the Dean Andrews material and the analysis of the Clay Shaw U.K. contacts in November 1990, we did so in the certain knowledge that hardly anybody was still interested in the JFK case either here or in the USA. Still, here we are, very happy to return to the subject once again. In this section we have both contributed essays and book reviews, some contradictory. (There are three 'theories' about the assassination expressed here. As 'Garrison' said in that ridiculous closing speech in the movie, 'It's up to you'.)

1. Stephen Dorril

- Mark Lane, *Plausible Denial: Was the CIA Involved in the Assassination of JFK?*, Plexus, 1992.
- Jim Marrs, *Crossfire; The Plot that Killed Kennedy*, Carroll & Graf, 1992.
- David E. Scheim, *The Mafia Killed President Kennedy*, Virgin, 1992.
- Anthony Summers, *Conspiracy, Sphere*, 1992. The release of the Oliver Stone film has seen a crop of books reissued and repackaged on the assassination of President Kennedy. Summers' *Conspiracy* remains the best. It packs in a great deal of information, its assessment of the evidence is very good, and while I do not agree with all of the conclusions, I agree with more of them than any other JFK book. Lane's book is a mess and will only be of interest to real buffs. However, it contains slivers of information which were new to me, including some interesting material on the spook-backed journalist, Priscilla Johnson, and Oswald's visits to the American embassy in Moscow; statements made by David Attlee

KILL SWITCH

Phillips and background on former CIA officer, William Corson; and a short biography of Howard Hunt, which shows him to be a much more interesting and well-connected CIA officer than previously portrayed. But these are all tidbits. Marrs' effort, which was apparently extensively dipped into by Stone, should be avoided at all costs. Its passages on British intelligence are so wide of the mark that it made me wary of everything else in the book. Finally, there is Scheim's re-issue which looks little different to the last edition. The title says it all — The Mafia killed President Kennedy — a bold statement for which there is not a shred of evidence.

The thesis that the Mafia killed Kennedy rests on a number of circumstantial points.

1. The Mafia hated JFK and RFK. True, a motive but not evidence of the murder.
2. Various Mafia leaders talked about a hit on JFK. True, but unreliable. The majority of evidence relates to construction of alleged conversations a number of years later. The recent biography of Sam Giancana (Double Cross, Sam and Chuck Giancana, Macdonald, 1992) has to be judged as being totally unreliable with its lack of notes, reconstructed dialogue etc. All the alleged remarks made by Trafficante and others can be construed as direct threats or, more likely, expressions of what they hoped would happen.
3. Mafia links to Oswald. These are so removed from Oswald, essentially his uncle in New Orleans, as to be irrelevant. Buffs who take these seriously are clutching at straws, particularly when links to other groups — the CIA, for one — are so much stronger.
4. Ruby knew Oswald. We don't know. The evidence is highly dubious.
5. Oswald was killed by mobster, Jack Ruby, therefore the Mafia killed Kennedy. It has a straightforwardness which is highly compelling but it is not logical.
6. The CIA employed the Mafia in a series of assassination plots against Castro. True, but at best only circumstantial evidence with regard to the JFK murder. It is a fact that Ruby was linked to the Mafia but we have no evidence that Ruby killed Oswald on mob orders. I believe it to be true, but it could just as well have been a plot organised by Dallas policemen — for which there is a great deal of evidence — or right-wing oilmen with whom Ruby was indeed in contact. Ruby's gun-running activities are also an area which might provide productive leads. Even accepting that the Mafia ordered Oswald's death, it does not follow that the Mafia were also responsible for the assassination of JFK. If we accept that the CIA/Mafia plots against Castro played a part in the assassination, then you could argue that the CIA killed JFK and then asked Ruby to silence Oswald.

The assassination conspiracy was clearly a failure: the President was murdered but the patsy survived for two days. It seems quite obvious to me that the real intention was for Oswald to be killed in the movie theatre (some of the new information on this episode in Summers' book is important and fascinating). All the constructed biographies of Oswald were in place - - Communist, pro-Cuba, defector to the USSR etc. — but their power and influence on events was diluted by his survival. One can only surmise at what might have happened had Oswald been killed within an hour of the assassination. Some of the messages from intelligence units following the assassination suggest that one motive may have been to push the United States into an attack on Castro's Cuba.

Before we reach that point, we should draw back. What would have happened if, instead of having a Coke in the rest room, Oswald had wandered outside and watched the motorcade? What if the check-shirted figure of Billy Loveday photographed on the Book Depository steps really had been Oswald? The point is that for the conspiracy to succeed

KILL SWITCH

Oswald had to be inside the Book Depository. Was Oswald ordered to remain inside? Did he receive (or make) a telephone call there? I believe that Oswald was having lunch at the moment the President was killed but his behaviour — total disinterest in the President's visit — was distinctly odd. What was he really doing?

The whole conspiracy collapses if Oswald had not been employed by the Book Depository the short time before the 22 December, if the gun and shells had not been in the building; most importantly, if the route of the motorcade had not been changed, and if Oswald had not been inside the building at 12.30. The conspiracy was not simple, it was extremely complex and well-organised. For these and other reasons, I believe that the conspiracy was beyond the means of the Mafia.

As far as I am aware there is no recorded instance in the United States of the Mafia organising a triangular fire assassination in the open. The Mafia have much easier ways — poison, car bombs; a gun to the chest, fire, and the assassin escapes in the confusion, a la Robert Kennedy. The mob had many chances of getting close to Kennedy but did not use the opportunity. The only group capable of pulling off an assassination of the type which claimed JFK were covert branches of the intelligence agencies or former personnel. The assassination attempts on General De Gaulle are an interesting comparison.

The important point about the events in Dealey Plaza is that everything was done in the open. It was so alarmingly public. It must have been quite obvious to the watchers in the intelligence services that one of their own had done the deed. And, of course, that was the entire intention. The immediate knee-jerk reaction would have been cover-up at all costs.

When did the conspiracy begin? Although the facts of Oswald's life before the assassination are fascinating and important, we should perhaps concentrate on the activities of the conspirators — whoever you choose — in, say, the two months before the assassination. They may have wanted to get rid of Kennedy for some time but the actual planning would only have been undertaken a few weeks before the event. During those last weeks someone then pulled out Oswald's file and thought that here was the man they were seeking as the patsy.

There is no straight line in Oswald's career as a patsy. As a young man he clearly had been of some kind of low-level intelligence interest, then he went to the USSR, probably as some kind of false defector organised by Naval Intelligence. When the KGB failed to take the bait he came back to start a new career as a COINTELPRO agent, flirting with Marxism and pro-Cuban activities. (Incidentally, while a great deal of research has concentrated on his time in New Orleans with the Fair Play for Cuba Committee, this has obscured the fact that this link actually began in Dallas, just before his mentor, George de Mohrenschildt, left for Haiti.) This operation also seemed to fail, although it may have been tied to the strange goings-on in Mexico in September 1963 which seemed designed to present Oswald as a potential defector to Cuba.

My own theory on the assassination is as follows. Following the Cuban Missile Crisis, the Kennedy brothers had angered the anti-Castro crusaders in the intelligence community by banning covert activity against Cuba from American soil. The solution to this problem was to use one of the islands in the Caribbean as a base for launching a new covert war. The chosen base was Haiti, controlled by the hated Papa Doc. An alliance of the CIA, Military Intelligence, anti-Castro Cubans, possibly Mafia finance, and with Kennedy support, would organise an invasion in late 1963. The fall of Papa Doc fitted in with Kennedy philoso-

KILL SWITCH

phy, would be electorally popular, and would provide the much needed launch pad for the assault on Cuba.

A number of events can be re-interpreted to fit in with this theory. De Mohrenschildt's trip to the island in April 1963 was part of the general process. The Silvia Odio incident involved mercenaries who were in fact visiting an anti-Castro Cuban in the same block of flats, who was later involved in plots in Haiti.

The mercenaries, who later spread Oswald stories, said that they were on their way to a covert operation against Haiti. There was a general build-up in the months before the assassination. And then it all went wrong. In October 1963 Kennedy vetoed the Haiti plan. One can imagine the anger of the people who already thought the President was soft on communism and Castro. It is at this point, I believe, that they decided that the target was closer to home.

2. Robin Ramsay

Although I usually hate drama-docs, the film itself was actually very good. I could have done without the domestic sub-theme and most of the closing speech, and some of the exposition was rather clumsy, but on the whole it was hard to resist. (My favourite section was the marvellous cameo of Guy Bannister by Ed Asner.) In my view it matters not a jot that Stone's version of the event itself is flawed, that the picture of Garrison is ludicrously romanticised, and so on. The right-wing media got it right: it is psychological warfare, and it makes a pleasant change to hear the screams of protest coming from the Right.

Kennedy's murder was last used in a psywar project in the struggle to generate a new Cold War in the late seventies, via Edward J. Epstein's rubbishy Legend. With research funded by the Readers' Digest, one of Langley's major psy-war tools of the post-war years, Legend tried to restore the KGB as Oswald's ultimate paymasters. (2)

His links to the CIA, FBI and anti-Castro Cuban movements disappeared. It was childish drivel but quite effective nonetheless. You may not be able to fool all the media all of the time, but you certainly can fool some of the media some of the time, especially the bits that have or have had a covert relationship with the Anglo-American secret states. Legend got tons of favourable publicity from the Anglo-American right media.

It wasn't just the Stone movie, of course, which transformed the climate: more that JFK was the piece which set the whole mass critical. The thirteen years in office of the Anglo-American Right have been unprecedentedly seedy, a long, overlapping sequence of parapolitical scandals. Stone's movie has focused the attention. This is not just nostalgic interest in a 30 year-old murder. The fact that Stone's movie has been a success indicates both that the tide has turned against the Right, and is also part of that movement.

These pivotal events also flush out the right-wing media.(3) Here the Sunday Telegraph — allegiance basically with MI6 — ran a leader on JFK on February 2, titled 'Reshooting Kennedy'. This rehashed not only the central theme of the 1967 CIA memo on the assassination to its assets (reprinted in this issue), that a member of the plot would have sold his story by now, it also tried to explain the final backwards motion of Kennedy's head by a shot from behind him by way of 'neuromuscular reaction to sudden destruction of the brain's nerve centres'. This preposterous nonsense, I seem to remember, first appeared sometime during the House Committee investigation. In rehashing it the Telegraph has usefully reminded us how far some people are prepared to go to try and maintain the single assassin theory. (4)

KILL SWITCH

Over at the Sunday Times — basic orientation for the past few years Army/MI5 — on 26 January, James Adams, the Times' chief spook-contact for those years, now the paper's U.S. correspondent, was trotted out. Kennedy buffs are no longer a handful of cranks and sixties hold-overs according to Adams, but part of a 'Billion dollar conspiracy industry that thrives on Kennedy's death', to quote the headline of his piece.

Adams returns us to the simple world in which Oswald is a 'Marxist and Soviet sympathiser' and Jack Ruby a 'nightclub owner'. All the rest is uncertain, though, concludes Adams, and we conspiracy theorists are to blame: 'So muddy have the waters become that nobody will ever know the truth of what happened that day in Dallas'.

The central difficulty with the assassination is that the extant information on the conspiracy and its cover-up can be pretty plausibly reworked in many directions. Steve Dorril (above) has offered his current favourite theory. Though I am now reasonably convinced that the Mafia shot Kennedy, I share with many of the buffs a lingering desire to see the American state in there somewhere. My current favourite speculative theory which accomodates the U.S. state involves the so-called apertura a sinistra or opening to the left in Italy.

Nearly ten years ago former BOSS agent Gordon Winter replied to a letter from Steve Dorril about BOSS's view of the assassination with the answer that BOSS files had attributed it to 'a General named Walters'. In 1963 Vernon Walters was Military Attaché in Rome. (It may be a coincidence that in Walters' autobiography there is nothing at all on what he was doing in 1963.) Also in Rome in 1963 as CIA station chief was William Harvey, who, it is widely reported, hated the Kennedys.

Arthur Schlesinger's account of Kennedy's administration contains a section (pp. 675679) describing Kennedy's support for the apertura a sinistra — and the intense opposition to it within the State Department. If Kennedy's support for the apertura produced such oppositon from the State Department, how much more hostile were the CIA and the Pentagon? In his *Wilderness of Mirrors* (Harper Row, New York 1980) David Martin notes that 'to [James] Angleton, who viewed the [Italian] Socialist Party as nothing more than a Communist front, the policy was tantamount to surrender.' (p. 184) A lot of CIA money and energy had gone into keeping Italy in the hands of the Christian Democrats since the war.

To these fragments add contacts between the Mafia in the U.S. and the CIA, the U.S. Mafia's links with Italy, and you have the ingredients for a satisfying scenario in which Agency/Pentagon concern at the policy in Italy is translated into a Mafia hit in Dallas, with Oswald the designated stooge. All that is missing is evidence. But the lack of evidence was never a serious handicap in this field, was it?

Notes

1. The title of this piece was the title of Garrison's first book on the assassination.
2. I analysed *Legend in Lobster 2*, an essay which will be reprinted in a collection of the best of the early *Lobster* which is slowly being assembled. On the CIA and the Reader's Digest see Fred Landis, 'The CIA and the Reader's Digest', in *Covert Action Information Bulletin* No 29.
3. An entertaining rather than comprehensive survey of U.S. press reaction, past and present, is in *Extra!* March 1992 from FAIR, 130 W 25th St. New York NY10001. \$2.50 in the U.S.
4. The all-time best example of this was the New York Times. Faced with the House

KILL SWITCH

Committee's conclusion of 'probable conspiracy' in 1979, the NYT simply doubled the number of 'lone nuts', suggesting that there must have two madmen in Dallas that day.

SNAFU IN DALLAS

This, as some older readers will recognise, is a re-write of the essay published on the 20th anniversary of the assassination in November 1983. This rewrite was written for the first issue of Casablanca, but it failed to appear.

In JFK the Costner/Garrison character goes to Washington and meets a source, "Mr X" (based on former USAF Colonel L. Fletcher Prouty), who tells him that the way to investigate the assassination is to ask who benefited from it? (*cui bono?*), and who had the power to cover it up? Since 1963 many of the assassination researchers have followed this advice. For many it is practically axiomatic that complicity in the cover-up following JFK's shooting implies complicity in, or knowledge of, the murder conspiracy. From the cover-up the trail can be followed back to the crime. But practically the entire U.S. establishment took part in the cover-up: national and local government agencies, the mass media, the political system, and the Kennedy family and its political allies — all played a part in foisting the Warren Commission report onto the U.S. public. Each had good reasons for welcoming a cover-up which had nothing to do with the assassination *per se*.

The Kennedys had too many of their own secrets at risk. In 1963 the knowledge of John Kennedy's sexual promiscuity was still largely an insider's secret — as was the family's various links to the mafia, from Joe Kennedy's bootlegging days to the mob's assistance in the election of 1960. A decent investigation might have revealed both, destroying any chance the other brothers had of succeeding John as President. The mass media are interested primarily in making money, and in 1963 many sections of it still had secret relationships with the CIA established in the early years of the Cold War and would follow the Agency's "no conspiracy" line. (On which see the CIA memo reprinted in this issue.) The political establishment, especially the Democrats with their long history of links to organised crime, had nothing to gain from the enthusiastic "pursuit of the truth". (This applied spectacularly to LBJ, one of the most corrupt politicians in history.) In 1963 the American public had no idea of the intimate relationship between organised crime and the funding of political parties, and Jack Ruby's mafia presence ensured the silence of the Washington political establishment.

As for the various intelligence and law enforcement agencies, first and foremost they had to bury their links with Oswald. The FBI had to conceal the fact that they knew of Oswald but had not kept tabs on him; or, worse, that he was working for them in the phoney Fair Play for Cuba Committee branch he was running. The CIA had to conceal their prior use of Oswald in their phoney defector programme; and his activities with the anti-Castro Cubans in New Orleans led directly back to Operation Mongoose, the CIA's then secret war on Cuba based in Miami.

All these parties are, first and foremost, interested in politics — the acquisition and retention of power. Cover-up, lies, the harassment of those seeking "the truth" — the things which Oliver Stone's Garrison character finds so shocking in the movie — are among the normal activities of those engaged in American politics. The real Jim Garrison, the elected District Attorney of New Orleans, the politician Jim Garrison, knew this perfectly well. The cover-up after the assassination was routine American politics, an illustration of the basic rule of the American political game: don't let the rubes in on the scam. Covering-up a Presi-

KILL SWITCH

dential assassination was larger and more sensitive than usual, but was routine nonetheless.

The separation of the cover-up from the assassination has significant consequences. If the murder is viewed as the work of people powerful enough to enforce the cover-up, then we are looking for a very powerful, and, presumably, very large group. And we cannot be looking for the mafia, who had the capacity to do the shooting but not the cover-up. But if the cover-up is nothing more than the sum of a lot of autonomous parts, the actual assassination conspiracy need not be large — and could be the mafia.

The Cui bono? (who benefits?) question suggested by “Mr X” to “Garrison” also fails to illuminate — for essentially the same reasons. Many groups in the political game benefited from JFK’s death. LBJ, for example, inherited the Presidency and was able to halt a number of Congressional enquiries into domestic scandals in which he or his associates were implicated. The CIA, the anti-Castro Cubans, the FBI, the military-industrial complex — almost everybody else in Washington benefited from Kennedy’s death. Under Johnson there were no hesitations about the war in Vietnam, no prissy anxieties about democracy in Latin America. The American tax-payer would be milked to fund the arms corporations; the Generals of Brazil, Argentina et al could begin planning coups confident of U.S. approval. Nor were there many tears in the Democratic Party itself. For the Kennedys, with their own sources of money, and a trio of photogenic brothers, were a threat to the powers- that-be within the party and to other Democratic Presidential aspirants.

Neither “Who organised the cover-up?” nor “Who benefited from the assassination?” tells us anything specific about the assassination conspiracy. We are left with the murder itself. From the mountain of facts, factoids and speculation which had been erected these past 30 years, four features of the case take us close to the heart of things.

The first is the form of the assassination. Kennedy was bushwhacked; people fired rifles at him. Long-range shooting is intrinsically unreliable and generally means that the assassins can’t get close enough to do it any other way. (Assuming that the intention was to kill; it might just have been to fire at Kennedy; the death a bonus.) This was true, for example, of some of the many attempts by the OAS (Secret Army Organisation) to kill De Gaulle in this period. But it is difficult to believe that any of the powerful elements in the U.S. state apparatus — the intelligence agencies or the Pentagon, for example — would have felt it necessary to ambush Kennedy if they just wanted to get rid of him or change some of his policies. For such agencies there are always better, less public ways of persuading people to resign, permanently if necessary. Planes can crash, cars run off the road, boats sink, and so on. For all the talk — in the Stone movie, for example — of “triangulation of cross-fire” and the rest of the speculation to try and convince us that this was some kind of masterful operation, it wasn’t. This was a high-risk operation which almost failed. Only one killing shot was on target: at least three others missed. In other words, either the assassination was a crude attempt to bushwhack Kennedy, or it was something designed to look like one.

The second important element is the fact that the assassination was widely known about in advance, and by low level “street people” — a stripper, a waitress, a small-time right-winger and a minor intelligence agent. The assassination conspiracy was leaky.

This suggests that we are not dealing with a professional job by the intelligence services or the Pentagon. It is hard to imagine the pros holding anything more closely than the assassination of a President.

KILL SWITCH

The third element is the role of Oswald. After his arrest he had no doubts about his part in it: 'I'm just the patsy', he said, very striking and very specific. He didn't say they'd got the wrong man, or make great protestations of innocence: just 'I'm the patsy'. He was right. It is now proven beyond a reasonable doubt that Oswald was indeed the victim of a scheme to frame him as a pro-Castro assassin. This has two clear consequences. First, it explains why Kennedy was bushwacked — and by rifle-fire and not machine-guns. The shooting had to be roughly consistent with Oswald's having done it. Secondly, the original plan must have included Oswald's immediate demise. With his connections to the intelligence world — FBI and CIA — and the anti-Castro underground, he had to die. Alive he would have talked — did talk, in fact, though what he said has never been made public, and would presumably have talked some more when he came to court.

It seems likely that he was supposed to die 'resisting arrest' in the traditional manner. When the Dallas police grabbed him in the Texas Theatre a gun was heard to misfire. The Warren Report put this down to Oswald's gun despite the fact that an FBI weapons expert "found nothing to indicate that this [Oswald's] weapon's firing pin had struck the primer of any of these cartridges." Again, Oswald's reactions at the time are revealing. After the gun mis-fired he began shouting "I am not resisting arrest, I am not resisting arrest" to the other people in the cinema. A police mis-fire and Oswald's quick wits saved his life in the Texas Theatre.

Jack Ruby is the fourth element. Ruby didn't just appear out of the blue and shoot Oswald in the basement of the Dallas police station. He had been following the events rather closely. He followed Kennedy's body to the Parkland Hospital: the Dallas journalist Seth Kantor, who knew Ruby well, spoke to him there. (The Warren Commission had to ignore this.) At the hospital somebody planted the so-called "magic bullet" on the stretcher on which Governor John Connally had been brought in.

(The bullet was planted to link the rifle in the "sniper's nest" to the shooting.) As Warren and his committee could not encompass a conspiracy, they had to treat this bullet as if it had fired at Connally, and eventually were forced to the ludicrous pretence that this pristine bullet had passed through 2 human bodies, shattering bones and tearing flesh en route. Ruby is an obvious candidate for the role as the supplier of the "magic bullet". (Stone shows Ruby planting the bullet in JFK, but does it so quickly as to be almost subliminal.) Ruby then returned to the Dallas police headquarters and attended the first press conference addressed by District Attorney Henry Wade. When Wade named Oswald as part of an anti-Castro group, Ruby, at the back of the room, corrected him, telling the assembled journalists that Oswald was in the pro-Castro Fair Play for Cuba Committee. Why would a Mafia hoodlum and club owner know this? If Ruby was not a part of the conspiracy, tasked to help frame Oswald, what was he doing that day?

At this distance, what does the assassination look like? Kennedy is bushwacked, but the murder of Oswald, the patsy, goes wrong. Some crude attempts are made to attribute the assassination to Castro's Cuba, using Oswald's fake Fair Play For Cuba Committee as "evidence". Oswald is in custody, talking his head off to the Dallas Police, but nobody's taking notes of this interrogation. Along comes Ruby the local gangster and pay-off man between the mob and the Dallas Police. He's been stage-managing the framing of Oswald, and because he has virtually unique civilian access to the Dallas Police, it falls to him to solve everybody's problem by removing Oswald.

KILL SWITCH

Even then he almost blows it, grotesquely over-playing his role and claiming he shot Oswald to save Jackie Kennedy's feelings! (How did the American media and political establishment get that one to play?)

It was all sloppy, and it almost went disastrously wrong. The evidence linking Oswald to the shooting was very thin; he would certainly have been acquitted had it come to trial. But in the original plan that didn't matter. Oswald was going to be dead, and the evidence had to be merely superficially plausible. As it was, it was barely even that. A so convenient photographic montage of Oswald posed with revolutionary newspaper and rifle; 'magic bullet' fired from the cheapest, least reliable mail-order rifle in America, which nearly kills two people and emerges unscratched; an impossible shot — and so on. This tacky kit had been designed merely as the set dressing for an open and shut case: dead President, dead assassin. Pity the poor old Warren Commission, trying to put the lid on the case with such utterly naff props.

A murder and a cover-up, yes; but not the gangantuan conspiracy suspected by some of the assassination researchers. Conspiracy is normal politics, but the reality is a jostling mass of groups, lobbies, bureaucracies and temporary alliances, rather than a great over-arching conspiracy. There is also incompetence and accident, a world in which Murphy's Law (what can go wrong will go wrong) has near universal application.

It looks like the Mafia, and it always did, really. It's just that we were all fascinated by the cover-up and wanted it to be the CIA that did the dirty deed, or the Pentagon, or the military-industrial complex — the U.S. state in some form. We thought the "Mafia did it" story was the final fall-back position of the cover-up. But there is no evidence of the CIA in the assassination itself. The Mafia had the motive and the means. Some Mafia leaders were talking of killing Kennedy into the FBI's wire-taps in the months before the hit. Jack Ruby was Mafia: and blowing somebody away and letting some square john take the rap is just the Mafia's style.

Stalker, Conspiracy?

It is impossible to make an omlette without breaking eggs.

— James Anderton on anti-terrorism

My anger in this case stemmed from the denial that things had gone wrong, that no eggs were broken even though the omlette was there to see.

— John Stalker

The Stalker Affair

I had David Murphy's book for a number of months before I picked it up to read. When I did I found its coverage of the press campaign on the Stalker affair fascinating. It contained some information that was new to me and so I went back to the other three books to check various episodes. I then got very involved trying to unravel some troubling aspects. For a week or two I went round in circles. I had assumed that a conspiracy had been involved in Stalker's removal but as I read deeper and crosschecked the stories I began to doubt this explanation. Further on, and deeper still, I returned to the conclusion that there indeed had been a conspiracy. Unfortunately for Murphy, by the time his book appeared the media had moved on from Stalker to other things. However, Peter Taylor revived the affair with a strange defence of the 'no conspiracy' line in an edition of BBC2's Public Eye programme. In some ways this article is a response to that programme.

KILL SWITCH

The killings

On 27 October 1982, three Royal Ulster Constabulary (RUC) officers were killed by an Irish National Liberation Army (INLA) bomb. It turned out to be a significant incident in a grim year for the security forces. An RUC spokesman said that the bombing 'raised the temperature'; there were other reports that RUC officers were 'hyped up' and 'very angry' about the killings. The Independent was later moved to admit that the events which followed 'looked unpleasantly like revenge'.(1)

On 11 November 1982, three unarmed Provisional IRA men, Gervais McKerr, Eugene Toman and Sean Burns, were killed at a road block on Tullygally East Road, near Lurgan, by members of the RUC's elite Headquarters Mobile Support Unit (HQMSU).

An RUC spokesman said that the men were shot trying to escape. The police fired 109 bullets into the car. Thirteen days later, another HQMSU unit poured automatic fire into a hay shed. At the subsequent trial RUC spokesmen alleged that seventeen year-old Michael Tighe and Martin McCauley had pointed rifles at them from inside the building (the rifles later turned out to be useless sixty year-old weapons). McCauley was wounded while Tighe, who had no paramilitary connections, was killed. On 12 December, two unarmed members of the Irish National Liberation Army (INLA) were killed when 19 bullets were fired into their car on the outskirts of Armagh. RUC officers from the HQMSU unit involved lied at the subsequent trials, partly to conceal the fact that members of Special Branch had been involved in an illegal cross-border surveillance operation.

Enter Stalker, 'high-flyer'

John Stalker, Deputy Chief Constable of the Greater Manchester Police, was asked to investigate the circumstances which surrounded the fabrication of evidence and false statements following the series of killings which were seen by many people as the result of a shoot-to-kill policy. Stalker appeared to have the necessary qualifications and safe hands to undertake the inquiry. By 1983 he was a 'high-flyer', attending a year-long course at the Royal College of Defence Studies which dealt, in part, with internal subversion, with Northern Ireland serving as a case study. As Peter Taylor points out in his book on the Stalker affair, it was unlikely that MI5, whose C3 section was responsible for vetting the police, would have allowed him to get this far if there had been a skeleton in his cupboard. (2)

The RUC Chief Constable, Sir John Hermon, was against Stalker's inquiry from the beginning and 'privately regarded it as unnecessary'. When the two met for the first time, Hermon warned him about the 'jungle' he was about to enter. The Chief Constable had expected the inquiry would be narrowly focused and would merely 'review' the in-house CID investigation. However, when it became clear to Stalker's team that the CID had 'showed a lamentable standard of professionalism in their enquiries', Stalker refused to back away from a full investigation of the circumstances surrounding the killings. The RUC Special Branch became obstructive, particularly when the inquiry threatened to intrude into sensitive areas such as the use of informers. Stalker's team met with hostility from the middle and senior ranks. 'A few key officers took the decision..... to obstruct the progress of our investigation'. Stalker's intrusion into their secret world set off all kinds of 'panic bells'.(3)

Stalker's team came to believe that a 'tout' (informer), known as 'the mole', who had provided information which had formed the basis of the HQMSU ambushes, had been involved in serious criminal offences. Stalker began to think that there might be a common thread behind the killings which might lead to similar incidents which had been hidden

KILL SWITCH

away. He also suspected that an agent provocateur was at work and that his information may have been bogus.

The Mounsey inquiry

The withdrawal of co-operation by the RUC Special Branch was probably influenced by an earlier 1982 inquiry into leaks of secret information about informers to journalists, instituted by the Chief of the RUC, and conducted by Joe Mounsey, an Assistant Chief Constable from Lancashire. According to a Special Branch officer, it soured relations between the Special Branch and Hermon. Special Branch officers regarded the inquiry as a 'witch hunt' and 'counter-productive'. According to one of the officers, 'Hermon was paranoid about leaks. [He] had an intense mistrust of the media and was concerned about the management of news-related material.... He wanted to be in control of what the public was told.'

It is entirely possible that a conspiracy to remove Stalker evolved as soon as his appointment was announced, that Special Branch officers did not want another Mounsey-style 'witch-hunt'. Within two months of Stalker's appointment, a police informer in Manchester, who had helped the RUC with information about the IRA, was making wild allegations about Stalker. Even that stalwart supporter of the Security Service, James Adams, has written that 'once their actions were discovered..... [Special Branch officers] decided to thwart any outside investigation. The suspicion remains that some members caused the allegations to be made in order to muddy the waters.' (4)

The information which eventually led to Stalker's demise was based on allegations made by David Burton (a.k.a. Bertelstein), a professional criminal who, according to the Sampson report, 'was a regular informant to the police and other bodies'. The latter turned out to include the RUC on cases involving extortion and fraud organised by the IRA. While a few police officers regarded Burton as 'a high-grade source', others portrayed him as a known liar, a 'Walter Mitty' character, most of whose information proved to be unreliable. That he died in March 1985 has helped fuel the controversy surrounding both the reliability of his information and what precisely he did tell the Manchester police. Similarly, senior policemen have disputed the version of their information which was recorded against Stalker. There is no part of the inquiry into Stalker which is not in dispute. (5)

David Burton seeks a deal

In January 1983, Burton was arrested for cheque fraud in Bolton but was able to obtain bail and avoid custody by claiming he had evidence of police corruption. The named officer was already under internal suspicion and later retired from the police force: he was not charged and was most definitely not Stalker. Superintendent Bernard McGourlay was Burton's 'confidant' at this time and confirms that he never mentioned Stalker, though he did mention another policeman who was too close to the so-called Quality Street Gang. The QSG is allegedly a Manchester-based criminal fraternity. This is also a matter of controversy: is the QSG a serious criminal gang or just a joke? What Burton's 'touting' illustrated was that he was willing to provide information in return for lenient treatment. (6)

In October 1983, Burton was wanted for his part in the 'Cut Price' long firm fraud, and to avoid arrest informed the police about a planned IRA attack on the firm's premises in Northern Ireland. This enabled the RUC to prevent major damage to the warehouse and also to scupper the scheme of his partner, Mark Klapish. According to the Observer, this information 'appears to have been one of Burton's few genuine tips'. Accordingly, 'his stock rose' and he supplied further information to the RUC and Manchester police, including in-

KILL SWITCH

formation about two senior IRA brigade commanders who travelled to Manchester. (7)

On 9 June 1984, Burton's police confidant, Bernard McGourlay, was on a golf course when he had a conversation with Gerry Wareing, a friend of property developer, land speculator, and chairman of the Manchester Conservative Association, Kevin Taylor.

Wareing had recently returned from a holiday in Spain on Taylor's yacht, Diogenes.

According to one account he mentioned the QSG and the fact that Taylor held parties which were attended by John Stalker and other members of the gang. The Sampson report noted that Wareing said of Taylor: 'You must know him he is pal of Monaghan and Jack Trickett'. (Alleged QSG members — a third member was also mentioned).(8)

Worried about what he had heard, on 11 June 1984 McGourlay went to see Chief Superintendent Peter Topping, who as head of 'Y' Department dealt with complaints and discipline. McGourlay has said that he 'was hoping that somebody would speak to John Stalker and say 'people are talking about your association with these people' and advise him to drop them'. This seems reasonable but is not what happened; things went much further. It just so happened that with Topping on this occasion was 'another detective with previous experience of handling David Burton'. We are then asked to believe that on the same afternoon this detective received a telephone call from Burton in which he made a series of 'astonishing allegations'. This episode only came to light in a BBC2 Public Eye programme in June 1991 which attempted to rubbish the conspiracy theories surrounding Stalker's removal. Even the programme's producer, Peter Taylor, called this a 'remarkable coincidence'.

We are asked to believe that Burton said that he had been in Bridge Street that same afternoon and had just bumped into a prominent member of the QSG. The account of this conversation as revealed on 'Public Eye' goes so: Burton: Hi ya, long time no see, how ya doing? Hey what's happening to that little legal problem?

Unnamed man: Oh, it's a right pain! The case comes up next month.

Burton: What about that copper friend of yours? Can't he fix it?

Unnamed man: Who do you mean — Stalker?

Burton: Isn't he a top jolly nowadays?

Unnamed man: Nah, he's Kevin's man, he's not mine.

Burton: Oh, but you've got your own man, haven't yer?

Unnamed man: Him! He's a jerk. Anyway, I shouldn't be talking to you.

And you want to watch yourself, Burton, and keep away from the pub -you might get clocked by the QS.

As Peter Taylor reported, 'the encounter seemed too incredible for words'. McGourlay was 'amazed..... that such a coincidence could happen.... that this conversation was taking place on a busy street in Manchester.' But Topping supposedly took it seriously and eventually sent on a written report to Greater Manchester Chief Constable James Anderton on 17 July 1984, who authorized further inquiries.

A reasonable person, a sane person, might suggest that this was not a coincidence. Peter Taylor admits that Burton was 'a compulsive liar'. McGourlay, while acknowledging that he did come up with some useful information, found him 'a damn nuisance.... I wouldn't have told Burton I was crossing the road, because he would have told someone else I was committing suicide in front of a taxi..... the problem was that he could not admit to not know-

KILL SWITCH

ing something about anything, or anything about something.' Often his information was just too good to be true: 'He almost sounded as if he was reading from a script.' (9)

At the time, Burton was on bail for the 'Cut Price' fraud and had asked McGourlay for help if he turned 'supergrass'. Why, therefore, didn't Burton telephone McGourlay? Was the reality that Topping's detective (or Topping) telephoned Burton and asked something along the lines of 'What do you know about Kevin Taylor and John Stalker? Have you heard any whispers about a relationship with the QSG?' Even if we accept Topping's version there is every reason to suspect Burton's testimony precisely because he was trying to trade information for leniency. It is all too pat. Consider the following.

Topping obviously felt Burton was worth talking to and arranged a meeting with him on 22 June 1984, 11 days after the alleged phone call. The allegations were that Kevin Taylor was involved with the QSG, was a financier for drug trafficking, and that there was a corrupt relationship between Stalker, 'a leading member of the QSG' and Kevin Taylor.(10)

According to the Sampson report Burton made statements that: 'Kevin Taylor, Jimmy 'Swords' and Joseph Monaghan [brothers] assisted each other financially' and that 'James Donnelly [Jimmy the Weed] had said Kevin Taylor and Jimmy Swords [Monaghan] could get things 'straightened' through Mr Stalker.'

'Jimmy the Weed', James Donnelly, was later to play a role in disseminating Stalker stories to the tabloids which, according to David Murphy, 'had a smear-like quality'. A Salford ticket agent, 'the Weed' was later accused of being the man in a photograph showing Mrs Stalker with a criminal at a party seized from Kevin Taylor's home. The Sampson report said that it was 'the Weed'. Donnelly made a statement in which he claimed that he had been invited to the party by Taylor, who had introduced him to Stalker. According to Peter Taylor only one of the three gang members named by McGourlay to Topping attended a party at Taylor's house and Stalker had no recollection of meeting the man. Taylor later added that in relation to later evidence 'the most significant was a photograph of the QSG man Burton claimed to have met in Bridge Street, with him was John Stalker's wife'. Therefore the man Burton claimed to have met was 'Jimmy the Weed'. (11)

Playing the Burton card

At the subsequent 'Cut Price' fraud trial on 4 September 1984, Burton's co-defendant, Klapish, was sentenced to four years while Burton received two-and-a-half for an identical offence. While the court was cleared, Gourlay told the judge about Burton's allegations against corrupt policemen. Interestingly, there was a third defendant in the case, 'Swords' Monaghan, who, according to Peter Taylor, was 'a leading member of the QSG'. At a later trial he was acquitted because Burton never testified.(12)

What we have here then, in June 1984, is a known liar, Burton, who was on bail and actively seeking a lenient sentence, reporting what another liar, 'Jimmy the Weed', had told him about an alleged relationship between Taylor, Stalker and Monaghan. Monaghan, meanwhile, is charged with fraud in a case in which the informant was also Burton.(13) McGourlay said of Burton that 'the worst thing you could do was give [him] an idea that you were interested in a particular person because, somehow, he could weave a web of information to include what you wanted to know or what he thought you wanted to know and, consequently, you had to be very, very careful of anything he told you.'

Although there is no direct evidence that the government wanted Stalker removed, the fact that Whitehall disinformers later told Fleet Street contacts that the Deputy Chief

KILL SWITCH

Constable 'had been steeped in naughtiness of the sort which would have turned the average Borgia's hair white', suggests that they did. All that was required to set the hare running was a telephone call from Northern Ireland's RUC Special Branch to, say, Topping's office. (14)

Stalker the real target

It is my contention that the conspiracy against Stalker started the day he arrived in Northern Ireland to be faced by an RUC Special Branch which had not forgotten the 'witch-hunt' of the Mounsey inquiry. I believe that the backstage attempts to derail and finally remove the Manchester policeman went through various stages. Once Topping had his tainted information from Burton, he used it to persuade Anderton to institute an investigation into Taylor and the QSG, though the real target was Stalker. In his account of the Stalker affair in his autobiography, Topping reveals that Manchester police chief, James Anderton, had consulted 'high-level Home Office officials' who authorised the inquiry into Stalker. (15)

Meanwhile the Stalker inquiry in Northern Ireland took a new turn when the Manchester policeman and his team discovered that the hay shed, where Tighe had been killed, had been under electronic surveillance. In October 1984 it was originally denied to Stalker that the hay shed had been bugged, but army officers confirmed that a bug had been planted by MI5 and its product recorded by a police and Army technical team. 'The tape was to become the rope in a bitter tug-of-war between those who believe that methods of intelligence-gathering should be protected at all costs and those who regard the tape as possible evidence of murder committed by police, and therefore belonged in a wider arena.' (16)

Head of RUC Special Branch, Trevor Forbes, told Stalker, 'You will never be able to hear it'. Hermon said that he could not further the investigation of the tape without the authority of the Security Service. On 28 January 1985, Stalker travelled to London where he saw Bernard Sheldon, Executive Head of MI5's Legal Services, who told him that that the Security Service had no objections to him pursuing the matter.

Hermon prevaricated over the following months blaming MI5 for the inaction, claiming that they 'had the most powerful interest in the tape'. On 15 May, Stalker saw another MI5 officer in Belfast, the Director and Co-ordinator of Intelligence (DCI), who, after consultation with Hermon, said that the way was now open to 'complete consultation' but subject to 'unspecified safeguards'. MI5 were to be merely the 'honest brokers' assessing the contents of the tape before passing it on. With rising anger, Stalker refused to accept the conditions. He realised that the 'labyrinthine processes through which [he] had been groping' had brought him back to the same position he was in five months previously. 'It was obvious to me that much midnight oil had been burned.' (17)

James Prior by-passed

The following month, Stalker was back in London meeting Sheldon and the DCI. In a classic Whitehall manoeuvre, MI5 appeared to pass the buck on to the RUC. They said that they were prepared to release all the information to him but were 'very reluctant to discuss the authority for the use and installation of the device'. Stalker was asked to accept that 'everything was politically and legally in order'. The significance of this request passed Stalker by. According to Stalker's account, 'Permission for its installation had been given under the general authority of the previous Northern Ireland Secretary, James Prior.' However, Peter Taylor says that MI5 by-passed Prior and sought authority from the then Home Secretary, William Whitelaw. Prior was only to learn of the bugging operation when he was informed about it by the DCI when the bugs were in place.

KILL SWITCH

An MI5 technical officer from A Branch inserted two devices in the hay shed at the end of September 1982. Special Branch had been wary of using a bug and thought that human surveillance, though dangerous, would be more reliable. They were proved to be correct. The apparent failure of the bugs led to them not noticing the removal of the explosives hidden in the hay shed. Those explosives were then used in the bomb which killed the three RUC officers on 27 October and which became the springboard for the killings. MI5's operation had clearly failed and was a great embarrassment for them. Furthermore, the tape's existence was not revealed to the Attorney-General who undertook the failed prosecution of officers involved in the killing of Tighe in the hay shed.(18)

On his return to Belfast, Stalker was shocked when Hermon told him that while the tape had been destroyed a transcript existed. Stalker believed 'this revelation came as a surprise even to the senior MI5 officers.' On this last point, Stalker was to be proved wrong.(19)

The inquiry never did get to hear the crucial tape-recording. It was claimed that the bug was a routine operation and that the tape had been destroyed as per normal policy. There were over forty tapes covering the period of the surveillance operation. The crucial ten minute tape — Tape 42 — which featured the killing shots, was handed by an RUC Special Branch constable who had monitored the shooting, to his senior officer at the Tactical Co-ordinating Group. This, in turn, was sent to Belfast for transcription and was then destroyed. However, a clandestine copy of the missing tape was made by an army officer, who was monitoring the hay shed, as a 'macabre souvenir'. It was available to at least half a dozen MI5 officers and was eventually locked away in a safe in Belfast. As it held evidence of unlawful killing by the RUC, the tape obviously provided MI5 with valuable bureaucratic ammunition. A senior MI5 training officer doing the rounds of Northern Ireland stations apparently heard the tape and is believed to have been the person who informed the later Sampson inquiry of its existence. Stalker was deliberately misled by MI5 about the tape. As he tried to gain access to the tape, MI5 field officers ordered its destruction. Sampson later recommended the prosecution of a number of MI5 officers for conspiracy to pervert the course of justice for this deliberate destruction.(20)

Stalker was misled by what he called MI5's 'essentially neutral stance'. MI5's reluctance to talk about the authority for the placement of the bug was for fear that Stalker might discover that MI5 had also bugged the car in which McTern, Toman and Burns were killed. According to BBC reporter Chris Moore, 'the security forces involved in the covert surveillance operation were able to listen to the conversation going on in the car.' (21)

An 'interim' report was finally delivered to Hermon on 18 September 1985 without the section on the tape. It was already late but Hermon then dragged out the whole process, taking five months to deliver it to the Director of Public Prosecutions in Belfast. On 4 March 1986, the Northern Ireland DPP, Sir Barry Shaw, instructed Hermon to give Stalker greater co-operation on events connected to the hay shed incident. For twelve weeks Hermon studiously avoided meeting Stalker and appeared to pay little heed to Shaw's instructions. Things were coming to a head. Stalker realised that after eighteen months of trying to obtain the tape he was no nearer.

Stalker wrote: 'Investigations into Kevin Taylor did not truly begin until after I had delivered my report into the RUC to Belfast on 18 September 1985, and enquiries into me did not begin until after I had been given clearance in March 1986 to have access to the tape

KILL SWITCH

and to see Sir John Hermon and his deputy.' (22)

Get Kevin Taylor

The investigation into Kevin Taylor was the means to ensnare Stalker. It was led by a shadowy department of the Greater Manchester Police known as the Drugs Intelligence Unit (DIU) which was both comical in its incompetence and sinister in its uncontrolled 'cow-boy' operations. The DIU's 'Operation Kalooki' targetted Stalker as 'FEB', probably a reference to the month the inquiry began. Officers in the DIU denied being involved in a Stalker inquiry but in court one member, Keith Ware, did admit that the target was the deputy Chief Constable. (23) The DIU was set up on 2 February 1985 and ran until February 1988, spending several million pounds. Controlled by Topping, its official remit was to investigate drug trafficking but this turned out to be a cover for the secret investigation of Stalker. Known as 'the Butler' within the force for his obsequiousness, Topping would assert that the fraudster Burton had made allegations that Stalker was 'bent'. It was members of the DIU who interviewed Burton in prison in February and March 1985. One of those officers was Detective Inspector Ronald Murray, who happened to be the Greater Manchester Police liaison officer with MI5. Topping's close friend DS John Simon was head of the Fraud Squad and, more importantly, of the Operational Support Group co-ordinating specialist drugs, fraud and serious crimes investigations. He was therefore in the know about the investigation of Taylor. Simon, who ordered the raid on Kevin Taylor's Bury home, also happened to be Stalker's number three on the RUC inquiry. One of the officers in charge of the raid was Ronald Murray. (24)

There was 'paranoid secrecy' within the Greater Manchester Police about what the DIU was up to, and with good reason. Details revealed at Taylor's court case painted a picture of a covert force which was out of control and engaging in a campaign of dirty tricks. Taylor alleges, and the evidence he provides supports his view, that the DIU, which contained Special Branch officers, was engaged in illegal surveillance activities, buggings and burglaries. Later, when information about the activities of the unit began to unfold, rather in the manner of Colonel Oliver North, officers began to shred and incinerate documents. (25)

The 'trawling expedition' through Kevin Taylor's house on 9 May 1986, the first visible action against him, resulted in the removal of a number of photographs — some five years old — which showed Taylor and Stalker together at a party. One of the officers involved later admitted in court that he had not been asked to look for drugs, and the prosecution in the case let slip the fact that Taylor 'was not under suspicion of trafficking in drugs', though that had been the alleged basis of the inquiry. It was also revealed in court that the Access Orders granted by a judge for the search had been obtained by deceit. On this point the trial of Kevin Taylor collapsed. This was, of course, a prima facie case of a conspiracy. (26)

The case against Stalker moved to a climax in the Spring of 1986. Taylor notes, 'By the end of March 1986 there were strong suspicions within a very tight circle of officers within GMP that John Stalker's relationship with Kevin Taylor was suspect.' Even an apologist for the official version such as Peter Taylor has to admit that 'there was meticulous planning behind the surgical removal of John Stalker', though he does not see anything sinister in this. (27)

At some point in the middle of May, Anderton contacted Sir Philip Myers, HM Inspector of Constabulary for the North, which included Northern Ireland, and the man respon-

KILL SWITCH

sible for appointing Stalker, and told him about the allegations against Stalker. Peter Taylor suggests May 16, though the fact that Stalker was told on May 14 by Myers to cancel a planned trip to Belfast with no explanation given suggests that it was before that date. Myers told Stalker to re-arrange a meeting with Ulster Police chief Sir John Hermon for 26 May. Myers then referred the matter to Sir Philip's superior, Sir Lawrence Byford, HM Inspector of Constabulary at the Home Office.

Byford had apparently seen a dossier with allegations about Stalker on Saturday 17 May. Although it was not formally his decision to take, Byford had decided on the Sunday that Colin Sampson, Chief Constable of West Yorkshire, an officer he knew and respected, should lead the inquiry into the allegations against Stalker. Byford then arranged for a meeting to take place at a Police Federation conference at Scarborough the following day with Myers, Anderton and Sampson in attendance. (28)

The Scarborough meeting

According to a diary entry made by Sir John Hermon on Sunday, 18 May 1986, Myers rang the RUC Chief Constable and mentioned 'a C.C. seeing ['has seen' in Stalker's version] B. S., R. A. and T. K. and that D. H. was au fait with developments'. Much controversy surrounds this entry and the Home Office tried to talk down its significance. A 'former senior Northern Ireland official' claimed that the meeting referred to an event after Stalker had been removed from the inquiry; and the press generally lost interest when it was revealed that Stalker's identification of the names was mistaken. The initials actually referred to Barry Shaw (Director of Public Prosecutions in Northern Ireland), Robert Andrew (Permanent Secretary at the Northern Ireland Office), Tom King (Northern Ireland Secretary) and Douglas Hurd (Home Secretary). 'C.C.' was generally accepted to be (Chief Constable) Colin Sampson. Hermon was later to claim that this was the first time that he had heard of 'a Stalker problem'. The various accounts imply that Hermon was not told that Sampson would also take on the (Stalker) RUC inquiry. (29)

At the Scarborough meeting, according to Peter Taylor's account, Sampson 'was taken completely by surprise' by Byford's request for him to undertake the Stalker investigation. The decision to combine the two inquiries — Stalker and the RUC — 'was not made on the spot. It was only reached shortly afterwards, following long and agonizing discussions.' (30)

In my view the two accounts of what happened over that long weekend are irreconcilable. Byford claims that he is 'absolutely positive' that Douglas Hurd only knew about the allegations against Stalker and 'the developments that had taken place' at Scarborough. How can this possibly square with Hermon's diary note that on the day prior to Scarborough, Hurd 'was au fait with developments'? (31) According to the official account of the affair as outlined in Peter Taylor's book *Stalker* and a later Public Eye television programme, Sampson knew nothing about Stalker's troubles until he was approached at Scarborough. It is difficult to reconcile these two accounts. How was it possible for Hermon to know that Sampson was going to attend a meeting at least ten days in the future when Sampson had not even been approached to take over the inquiry?

We do know that Sampson went to Northern Ireland but it was before Stalker was removed. The *Belfast Telegraph* revealed that between the 19 and 26 May 1986 Sampson had travelled to Belfast where he had consultations with Hermon and Myers about the allegations against Stalker. According to the official account, around the 23 May Myers had

KILL SWITCH

gone to Belfast and consulted with Sir Barry Shaw, the Northern Ireland DPP and Hermon about taking Stalker off the inquiry. However, Sampson had already been given the inquiry and this could only be done when Sir John Hermon 'agree[d] to [Stalker's] removal'. (32)

It is possible that on the Sunday Myers was informing Hermon on the basis that he expected Sampson to accept Byford's request, but this difficult concept is undermined by a second point about this diary entry which has been missed. Again according to Peter Taylor, while Sampson was approached at Scarborough about taking on the inquiry into Stalker, it was only after 'much discussion' that it was agreed that he should undertake the RUC inquiry as well. If this is true, then it has to be asked why Myers should mention to Hermon a meeting with Northern Ireland officials who would have had no official interest in an internal police inquiry in Manchester? The only reason for Sampson to meet these officials was if he was going to be involved in the RUC inquiry. It can only lead to the conclusion that Byford, Myers and Hermon had already agreed to that.

On 28 May 1986, Stalker was busy in his garden when an official from the Greater Manchester Police Authority telephoned to inform him that he was under investigation by a team led by the West Yorkshire Chief Constable, Colin Sampson. The various insubstantial allegations centred around his relationship with Kevin Taylor, and were largely based on the uncorroborated testimony of a known criminal and liar, David Bertlestein (Burton), who had died in prison in March 1985.

In one of the strangest turn-arounds by any investigative journalist, BBC reporter Peter Taylor reversed the conclusion of his award-winning Panorama programme on the Stalker affair and decided that there had been no conspiracy involved in the Deputy Chief Constable's removal from Northern Ireland. Taylor believes that the events in Northern Ireland and Manchester were completely coincidental. In removing Stalker and replacing him with Colin Sampson, Chief Constable of Yorkshire, the aim had been 'to protect the integrity of the inquiry' and ensure that it was not derailed by the accusations against Stalker. The proof of this assertion, which was clearly what senior civil servants wished to propagate, lay in the outcome of the RUC inquiry which Colin Sampson took over from Stalker. On 23 March 1987, the final section of Sampson's report was delivered to Sir John Hermon and Sir Barry Shaw. Taylor appears to have had more than an inkling of what was going to happen in that he warned the reader of his book that because 'national assets' and covert operations run by MI5 and other intelligence agencies' with 'particular reference to Northern Ireland' were involved, the Attorney-General might decide that further prosecutions 'would not be in the public interest'. Taylor thought the DPP would be faced with 'a finely balanced judgement'. (33)

Enter 'national security'

In January 1988, Attorney-General Sir Patrick Mayhew told the Commons that because of 'considerations of national security' no charges would be brought against any of the eight named RUC officers in the Sampson report, including offences for conspiracy to murder, nor against the MI5 officers involved in conspiracy charges. Revealing his 'deep anxiety', Mayhew added, 'I have had to balance one harm to national security against another.'

The government had been clearly uncomfortable when Stalker had initially proposed charging seven officers with conspiracy offences, something which would have led 'to the top of the force, and beyond, by exposing the philosophy, strategy, and tactics behind co-

KILL SWITCH

vert security operations in Northern Ireland'. I believe that there was indeed a conspiracy to remove Stalker from the inquiry which had strayed into too many sensitive areas of the secret state. However, the purpose of the conspiracy was not to sabotage the whole inquiry but to blunt its edge. Whitehall had wanted the inquiry to succeed, if only as a public relations exercise, but by dragging it out as long as possible its impact would be considerably lessened. To this extent their delaying tactics were successful. The true nature of the conspiracy is partially revealed in Stalker's own book. 'It seemed that for well over two years, in Northern Ireland, in MI5, and now in my own police force and the Home Office, decisions have been constantly delayed, discussed behind closed doors, altered, amended, shaped and then passed to someone else to endorse them. In the meantime the clock had ticked away.' This theme is repeated. 'Time had been bought..... five years after the events themselves the reasons for bringing charges had become obscured.... So far as I am concerned, the time for prosecutions was in late 1985, when the evidence was fresh and strong — not in 1988.' (34)

No conspiracy?

While much effort has gone into claiming that Stalker's removal did not involve a conspiracy, criticism of the 'conspiracy theorists' has been often misplaced and rather banal. Defenders of the official account portray a conspiracy as a massive enterprise which is straightforward in operation. The reality is that most conspiracies are small scale — 'office politics' — and complex, as is bound to be the case when several people are involved. Critics also tend to ignore the fact that all that is needed to legally define an event as a conspiracy is evidence of 'the agreement of two or more persons to effect any unlawful purpose'. The term might also be used to include the deliberate evasion of set rules such as those used by the police which, though not law, do warrant disciplinary charges if broken. It should also be noted that under the law those involved in a conspiracy need only have knowledge of the purpose and are not required to have acted on it. It appears obvious to me that there were a number of conspiracies involved in both the smearing of Stalker and his final removal.

Notes

1. Independent 20 January '90; P. Taylor pp. 32/3.
2. P. Taylor p. 12.
3. Stalker pp. 27 and 3; P. Taylor pp. 62/3 and 101.
4. Martin Dillon, *The Dirty War*, Hutchinson, London 1988, p. 393; James Adams (and Robin Morgan and Anthony Bambridge), *Ambush: The War Between the SAS and the IRA*, Pan, London 1988, p. 93.
5. See the Observer 28 September '86 for details of Burton's links to the RUC.
6. The Observer 28 September '91.
7. Ibid
8. Murphy p. 73.
9. P. Taylor pp. 129/30.
10. P. Taylor pp. 127 and 135.
11. Murphy, p. 61; Peter Taylor p. 134; Public Eye, BBC2, 14 June '91.
12. P. Taylor p. 131.
13. BBC2 Public Eye.

KILL SWITCH

14. Murphy p. 146.

15. K. Taylor p. 165. Since we know that Sir Lawrence Byford, HM Inspector of Police at the Home Office, had known about the Stalker allegations at least a year before Stalker's dismissal in May 1986, it may be Byford to whom Topping is referring.

16. Stalker p. 66.

17. Stalker pp. 82-83.

18. Stalker p. 85; P. Taylor pp. 107 and 109.

19. Stalker p. 86.

20. P. Taylor p. 196; Stalker p. 68; Guardian 14 June '91; Public Eye, BBC2. op cit.

21. Stalker p. 89; Dillon op cit pp. 400/1.

22. Stalker pp. 188/9.

23. K. Taylor pp. 186 and 189. Later the unit liaised with the Sampson inquiry. The very close relationship between the Manchester and West Yorkshire forces probably precluded any claim that the Sampson inquiry could be independent.

24. Murphy p. 160.

25. K. Taylor pp. 158/9 and 199. According to Taylor, Stalker told him that the Greater Manchester Police were using over 10,000 telephone taps a year — an astonishing figure if true. See K. Taylor p. 94.

26. Additionally, Topping had been at the hearing before the Recorder of Manchester and he had told the judge that the application involved a matter of 'national interest'. He told the judge not to take notes and asked for the documents supporting the application to be sealed. Stalker p. 267; K. Taylor pp. 125, 190 and 209. On 26 March 1986, an RUC policeman 'above the rank of chief superintendent' made a secret visit to Manchester. Whether this was a coincidence or not I do not know, though, unusually, it was the DIU which provided transport to and from the airport. K. Taylor p. 189; P. Taylor p. 154.

27. P. Taylor p. 162.

28. P. Taylor pp. 159 and 161.

29. Murphy pp. 249/50, quoting the Observer 21 January '90.

30. P. Taylor p. 159.

31. BBC2, Public Eye, op cit.

32. Belfast Telegraph, 9 June '86, quoted in Murphy p. 151; P. Taylor p. 163.

33. P. Taylor pp. 197-9.

34. Stalker, pp. 221/2 and 272; the Guardian 16 June '86.

Splinter Factor update

When I commented on the lack of supporting material for the Operation Splinter Factor thesis, I somehow managed to omit the account of it in William Blum's *The CIA: a forgotten history* (Zed, London 1986) pp. 59-61. But that is taken entirely from Stewart Steven's book and his sources. To the latter's account can be added the following. (a) Michael Charlton's, *The Eagle and the Small Birds* (BBC, London, 1984) contains a section, pp. 78-85, on the post-war show trials. But there appears to be no readily available full-scale study of them. Given the appetite for anti-Soviet stories in the Cold War years, I find this rather curious. (b) Splinter Factor p. 163 says: 'Meanwhile, the CIA had been working on the Clementis case. In October 1949 Clementis attended the U.N. General Assembly in New York and

KILL SWITCH

immediately a two-pronged attack, designed to persuade him to seek political asylum, was launched by the CIA through its State Department outlets and by SIS through the Foreign Office. Journalists were told by senior officials that Clementis was one of the few independently minded politicians of Eastern Europe, 'fighting against the increasing Stalinist grip upon Czechoslovakia', and 'opposed to men like Gottwald'.

C.L. Sulzberger's *Long Row of Candles* (Macdonald, London, 1969) has this on p. 415, his diary entry for Paris, October 22, 1949: 'Cominform authorities have been tightening party discipline in several Eastern European states in an effort to eliminate all traces of 'Titoist' heresy. They have not yet quite decided what to do about Clementis, who is considered somewhat too independent-minded'. (emphasis added) Sulzberger's family owned the *New York Times* at the time, and from the evidence of this and other volumes of Sulzberger's diaries — among the most interesting memoirs of the post-war era — it is clear that Sulzberger shared the paper's intimate relations with the CIA.²⁰

Hayden B. Peake sent me a photocopy of the review of *Splinter Factor* from *Intelligence and Espionage; an Analytical Bibliography* by George Constantinides (Westview Press, Boulder, Colorado). This includes 'The story is quite unreliable.... one of the worst books to appear in years in the field of intelligence; no time need be spent on it.' Granted Stevens' book isn't reliable because not sourced, but maybe this is over-egging the pudding just a bit..

Defending the Warren Commission: the line from Langley

In 1967 the CIA sent out to 'Chiefs, Certain Stations and bases' a briefing document, Dispatch Document 1035- 960, titled 'Countering Criticism of the Warren Report'. This unintentionally very revealing and faintly comic document was reproduced in issue 2 of the now defunct newsletter, *The Dorff Report* in March 1990. In view of the media assault on Stone's movie *JFK*, it seemed worth reproducing again.

1. Our concern. From the day of President Kennedy's assassination, there has been speculation about the responsibility for his murder. Although this was stemmed for a time by the Warren Commission report (which appeared at the end of September 1964), various writers have now had time to scan the Commission's published report and documents for new pretexts for questioning, and there has been a new wave of books and articles criticizing the Commission's findings. In most cases the critics have speculated as to the existence of some kind of conspiracy, and often they have implied that the Commission itself was involved. Presumably as a result of the increasing challenge to the Warren Commission's Report, a public opinion poll recently indicated that 46% of the American public did not think that Oswald acted alone, while more than half of those polled thought that the Commission had left some questions unresolved. Doubtless polls abroad would show similar, or possibly more adverse, results.

2. This trend of opinion is a matter of concern to the U.S. government, including our organization. The members of the Warren Commission were naturally chosen for their integrity, experience and prominence. They represented both major parties, and they and their staff were deliberately drawn from all sections of the country. Just because of the standing of the Commissioners, efforts to impugn their rectitude and wisdom tend to cast doubt on the whole leadership of American society. Moreover, there seems to be an increasing tendency to hint that President Johnson himself, as the one person who might be said to have benefitted, was in some way responsible for the assassination. Innuendo of such seri-

KILL SWITCH

ousness affects not only the individual concerned, but also the whole reputation of the American government. Our organization is directly involved: among other facts, we contributed information to the investigation.

Conspiracy theories have frequently thrown suspicion on our organization, for example falsely alleging that Lee Harvey Oswald worked for us. The aim of this dispatch is to provide material for countering and discrediting the claims of the conspiracy theorists, so as to inhibit the circulation of such claims in other countries. Background information is supplied in a classified section and in a number of unclassified attachments.

3. Action. We do not recommend that discussion of the assassination question be initiated where it is not already taking place. Where discussion is active, however, addressees are requested:

a. To discuss the publicity problem with friendly elite contacts (especially politicians and editors), pointing out that the Warren Commission made as thorough an investigation as humanly possible, that the charges of the critics are without serious foundation, and that further speculative discussion only plays into the hands of the opposition. Point out also that parts of the conspiracy talk appear to be generated by communist propagandists. Urge them to use their influence to discourage unfounded and irresponsible speculation.

4. To employ propaganda assets to answer and refute the attacks on the critics. Book reviews and feature articles are particularly appropriate for this purpose. The unclassified attachments to this guidance should provide useful background material for passage to assets. Our play should point out, as applicable, that the critics are (1) wedded to theories adopted before the evidence was in, (2) politically interested, (3) financially interested, (4) hasty and inaccurate in their research, or (5) infatuated with their own theories. In the course of discussions of the whole phenomenon of criticism, a useful strategy may be to single out Epstein's theory for attack, using the attached Fletcher Knebel article and Spectator piece for background. (Although Mark Lane's book is much less convincing than Epstein's and comes off badly when contested by knowledgeable critics, it is also much more difficult to answer as a whole, as one becomes lost in a morass of unrelated details.)

5. In private or media discussion not yet directed at any particular writer, or in attacking publications which may yet be forthcoming, the following arguments should be useful:

a. No significant new evidence has emerged which the Commission did not consider. The assassination is sometimes compared (e.g. by Joachim Joesten and Bertrand Russell) with the Dreyfus case; however, unlike that case, the attacks on the Warren Commission have produced no new evidence, no new culprits. (A better parallel, though an imperfect one, might be the Reichstag fire of 1933 which some competent historians -Fritz Tobias, A. J. P. Taylor, D. C. Watt — now believe was set by Van der Lubbe on his own initiative, without acting for either Nazis or Communists; the Nazis tried to pin the blame on the Communists, but the latter have been much more successful in convincing the world that the Nazis were to blame.)

6. Critics usually overvalue particular items and ignore others. They tend to place more emphasis on the recollections of individual eyewitnesses (which are less reliable and more divergent... and hence offer more hand-holds for criticism) and less on ballistic, autopsy and photographic evidence. A close examination of the Commission's records will usually show that the conflicting eyewitness accounts are quoted out of context, or were

KILL SWITCH

discarded by the Commission for good and sufficient reasons.

7. Conspiracy on the large scale often suggested would be impossible to conceal in the United States, especially since informants could expect to receive large royalties etc.. Note that Robert Kennedy, Attorney General at the time and John F. Kennedy's brother, would be the last man to overlook or conceal any conspiracy. And as one reviewer pointed out, Congressman Gerald R. Ford would hardly have held his tongue for the sake of the Democratic administration, and Senator Russell would have had every political interest in exposing any misdeeds on the part of Chief Justice Warren. A conspirator moreover would hardly chose a location for a shooting where so much depended on conditions beyond his control: the route, the speed of the cars, a moving target, the risk that the assassin would be discovered. A group of wealthy conspirators could have arranged much more secure conditions.

8. Critics have often been enticed by a form of intellectual pride: they light on some theory and fall in love with it; they also scoff at the Commission because it did not always answer every question with a flat decision one way or another. Actually, the make-up of the Commission and its staff was an excellent safeguard against over-commitment to any one theory, or against the illicit transformation of probabilities into certainties.

9. Oswald would not have been any sensible person's choice for a co-conspirator. He was a 'loner', mixed-up, of questionable reliability and an unknown quantity to any professional intelligence service.

10. As to charges that the Commission's report was a rush job, it emerged three months after the deadline originally set. But to the degree that the Commission tried to speed-up its reporting, this was largely due to the pressure of irresponsible speculation already appearing, in some cases coming from the same critics who, refusing to admit their errors, are now putting out new criticisms.

11. Such vague accusations as that 'more than ten people have died mysteriously' can always be explained in some more natural way: e.g., the individuals concerned have for the most part died of natural causes; the commission staff questioned 418 witnesses (the FBI interviewed far more people, conducting 25,000 interviews and re-interviews) and in such a large group, a certain number of deaths are to be expected. (When Penn Jones, one of the originators of the 'ten mysterious deaths' line, appeared on television, it emerged that two of the deaths on his list were from heart attacks, one from cancer, one was from a head-on collision on a bridge and one occurred when a driver drifted into a bridge abutment.)

12. Where possible, counter speculation by encouraging reference to the Commission's Report itself. Open-minded foreign readers should still be impressed by the care, thoroughness, objectivity and speed with which the Commission worked. Reviewers of other books might be encouraged to add to their account the idea that, checking back with the Report itself, they found it far superior to the work of the critics.

Blinded by the light

Puppet Masters: the Political Use of Terrorism in Italy

Phillip Willan's *Puppet Masters: the Political Use of Terrorism in Italy*, (Constable, London, 1991) is a detailed and interesting book, dealing in a thorough (if partially flawed) way with a fascinating subject. It covers a wide array of interlocking subjects including the infamous P2 Masonic Lodge, under the command of Licio Gelli. The activities of this nefarious group were brought to a wider audience by the upsurge of political violence in Italy, starting with the (fascist imputed) Milan bank bombing in 1969, and two key trau-

KILL SWITCH

matic episodes — the capture and ultimate murder of Christian Democrat (DC) party leader Aldo Moro by the Red Brigades (BR) in 1978, and the Bologna railway station bombing in 1980 when 85 died, which was attributed to neo-fascists at the time. Willan also casts light on the Italian end of ‘Operation Gladio’, the organisation ostensibly set up in 1947-8 to provide resistance to a Russian invasion, but whose real aim was to ‘counter the internal threat of the PCI’ (p. 358), and in whose membership neo-fascists were well represented. Willan uses a wide variety of sources — published and unpublished documents, court transcripts, interviews with magistrates and protagonists such as Gelli himself.

The thesis advanced by Willan is essentially that the rise of rightist ‘terrorism’ (a word whose analytical validity I don’t accept, but he does, like most others) up to 1974 was sponsored by elements within the ruling bloc and the secret state in particular. He illustrates this by looking at incidents including the May 1972 killing of 3 carabinieri near Peateano (using weapons from a Gladio arms dump), and the bombing of the Italicus express train in August 1974 (a P2 operation). Such close attention to particular episodes is one of the great strengths of this book: for the first time in English as far as I am aware, such episodes are dealt with in detail.

The chapter on the Bologna bombing is exemplary in this respect, though unfortunately the only explanation he considers in detail is his own theorem that the secret services may ‘have organised a “genuine” right-wing bombing at Bologna station in order to reinforce the idea that the Itavia disaster [when a civilian airliner had been shot down over Ustica killing 81 in a Libyan — U.S. — French aerial dogfight] was caused by a bomb rather than a missile, and thus strengthen the alibi of whichever NATO air force had been responsible for the disaster’ (p. 170). Evidence since his book was published has tended to confirm suspicions of a cover-up concerning the Itavia incident, and he is undoubtedly correct in stressing the importance of the planting of a suitcase of explosives in Bologna station in January 1981 by two secret service operatives, with the intention of delaying the investigation and framing Giorgio Vale, a member of the fascist NAR (Armed Revolutionary Cells). However this doesn’t rule out some of the nine other explanations he outlines but examines somewhat cursorily.

Domestic elements or NATO?

Willan leaves little room for doubt that the Italian secret state was centrally involved in the Bologna bombing: SISMI (the principal player) even identified the explosive used at Bologna as being T4 military explosive before forensic tests had identified it!

(p. 171) The real question is though, who put them up to it and who else was involved? Ultimately, Willan is too ready to attribute to the USA and NATO the ‘overall responsibility’ for the political violence that was the strategy of tension (pp. 348-351). In fact as his evidence often shows, domestic elements needed no encouragement from abroad. This is not to deny the proven murderous capabilities of NATO and/or the CIA, but rather to point out they are an all too easy target, and that the attribution needs to be specifically proved in each case. For such claims of a general nature have often been advanced by official Communist parties as an alibi for their own political failings.

There is little attempt at sociological explanation of terrorism, although Willan might reply that such speculation has been entered into by others (such as Leonard Weinberg) already. On the strategic level, while repeating the traditional view that the aim was to prevent the Italian Communist Party (PCI, now renamed PDS) taking power, he provides a con-

KILL SWITCH

vincing elaboration of its scope, presenting certain acts of terror such as the Christmas 1984 train bombing killing 15 on the Naples-Milan express as coded messages, heavy with complex symbolism, from one fraction of those involved in the previous phase of violence to their co-conspirators, seeking to restore their support and maintain their silence.

'Left-wing terrorists more like marionettes'

When Willan moves from examining rightist terrorism to looking at that of the far left from 1974, he becomes most intriguing — and controversial. He puts it thus on p. 179: 'If many right-wing terrorists were glove-puppets, with their manipulator's hand inserted up their backs and controlling their every move, left-wing terrorists were more like marionettes, dancing on the end of invisible strings; their manipulation was an altogether subtler art. The ideal for the secret service marionette-masters was, after all, to use left-wing extremists to serve their conservative cause without any direct contact or collusion'.

Some elements of his case he argues persuasively — for instance the possibility that with the 1974 arrest of the 'first generation' BR leaders Renato Curcio and Alberto Franceschini, their place may well have been taken by secret state assets such as Mario Moretti (someone whose frequent escapes from arrest sometimes verged on the miraculous), the mastermind of the Moro kidnap.

In his rigorous examination of the circumstances surrounding the kidnap, which took place on the very day that Moro was going to parliament to try and cement an 'Historic Compromise' with the PCI, Willan points to the whole episode as having been organised by the forces of the state itself. The investigation to find Moro while alive and to negotiate for his release seems to have been so structured as to deliberately fail: there are substantial grounds for thinking that the state knew where he was throughout his 55 day ordeal, but chose not to look in the right place, or to publicise the fact.

Moro was most likely killed not just because he was about to conclude a deal with the relatively uncorrupt PCI, but because of what he knew about the murky past of the Christian Democrats and P2. Willan rightly makes great play of the non-disclosure by the BR of what Moro told them during his 'people's trial', as well as the disappearance of his confidential documents. Were the BR unit who captured Moro genuinely leftist would they not have publicised all this?

The Calogero theorem

So, I am prepared to go along with a lot of what Willan says about the BR after 1974 (while remaining convinced of the genuine motivation of most of their combatants). What I draw the line at though, is Willan's disgraceful and unsubstantiated slurs on the name, and more importantly, on the politics of Toni Negri. A founder of the Potere Operaia tendency, Negri went on to become a key theorist of the Worker's Autonomy movement, and remains one of the few inspirational figures on the European far left today. Willan, however, seeks to resuscitate the discredited 'Calogero theorem', named after the public prosecutor who first accused Negri of being the real mastermind behind the BR. Looking back at my contemporary records, I found that there were two versions of the theorem. In the first it was asserted that Negri had directed BR operations, including the Moro kidnap, even telephoning the Moro family on behalf of the BR. When, unsurprisingly, no evidence could be produced to back this up, Calogero concocted version two, that Negri was the 'intellectual inspiration' behind the BR. Key evidence for the prosecution was Negri's political writings, which certainly in places display an over-fondness for violent rhetoric. The real purpose of the

KILL SWITCH

Calogero theorem, however, as this shift of emphasis in the charges indicates, was to criminalise any opposition to the left of the PCI, something both the PCI and the Christian Democrats could enthusiastically agree on — an ‘Historic Compromise’ indeed.... In this light, the framing of Negri took place not just despite his differences with the BR, but because of them.

Willan adds a couple of twists to the theorem, most notably the astounding claim that Negri was a CIA asset. This is based on such ‘facts’ as the death of Negri’s fascist brother at the hands of partisans in 1943 (when Negri was ten), and that he visited the USA ‘and does not appear to have had any difficulty in obtaining a visa.... at a time when members of the Communist Party were routinely denied visas’ (p. 187). I find it hard to believe that Willan does not know that U.S. immigration authorities, stuck in the Cold-War groove as they were (are?), only ever ask questions about Communist Party membership, their bureaucratic inflexibility such they can’t even officially imagine the possibility of anything to the left of official Communism. Other ‘witnesses’ Willan summons to back up his charges against Negri were themselves secret state assets or even employees, such as Mino Pecorelli and General Dalla Chiesa (both murdered, as so many actors in this theatre of the absurd have been). Dalla Chiesa, who is rightly credited by Willan with playing a crucial role in official anti-terrorist initiatives, hardly seems to have been unambiguously on the side of the angels. He may well have known all about the Moro kidnap at the time, but never disclosed it (p. 288), and his methods and agents are themselves surrounded in mystery (p. 285).

While Negri is included in the same chapter as a patchy analysis of an institution called the Hyperion Language School in Paris, which may well have been CIA-linked, and some of whose associates went on to become the ‘second generation’ BR leadership that is so suspect, Willan’s hard evidence associating Negri with it is nonexistent.

The argument is that evidence linking Negri to the Hyperion was just about to come out when the story was blown by a secret service leak to *Il Corriere Della Sera* on 24 April 1979 (p. 188). Given the desperation of the state to criminalise Negri’s politics, that the Rome police should have issued reports speculating on Negri’s possible links with Hyperion (pp. 188 -193) is hardly proof of anything. Indeed, in the course of his vicious return to attacking Negri in the conclusion (pp.346-7), Willan is forced to admit that ‘the precise relationship between Negri and the Red Brigades has never been fully clarified’. Quite.

For some, these tendentious passages about Negri would invalidate the rest of the book, making all his conclusions and investigations suspect, but I think that would be too hasty. Influenced as he is by the PCI, and implicitly sympathetic to them (something which might appear strange to *Sunday Telegraph* readers, for whom Willan writes occasional articles),

Willan has a very understandable blind spot in his treatment of the far left. Given the PCI’s support for NATO and capitalism, or as he puts it on p. 353, the ‘threat of the PCI to the democratic order in Italy has consistently been overstated, while the party’s progressive distancing of itself from its revolutionary roots passed virtually unremarked’, he does not take on board the fact that this is precisely what the Italian far left legitimately (and in my view correctly) disliked about the ‘Historic Compromise’.

He dismisses Negri and associates as practitioners of ‘hysterical rantings.... preachers of evil’ with ‘delusionary ideas’ (pp. 184-5). But given the PCI’s move to the right, the far left was merely occupying vacated space. This lacuna in Willan’s thought leads him to over-

KILL SWITCH

look the hypothesis that the 'strategy of tension' was not just (or even necessarily primarily) aimed at the PCI, who were indeed no trouble for the system, but the possibility that their participation in government may have encouraged the further development of forces to the left of, opposed to, and beyond the control of, the PCI and Christian Democrats. After all, the beginning of the rightist phase of the 'strategy of tension', the Milan Bank bombing of 1969, was concurrent with the intense industrial and social mobilisation of the 'Hot Autumn' — and was initially blamed on the far left.

Willan's restricted view (undoubtedly held in good faith — an important qualification) of the scope of legitimate political debate and discourse cannot allow for 'intelligent leaders of the extreme left, many of them university professors' being 'sincerely convinced' of the possibility of Marxist revolution in Italy (p. 186). Once you grant such a position can have been (indeed can still be!) held sincerely, and that the Italian ruling class were aware of this, then a lot of Willan's facts can be cast in a new light.

For example, whereas Willan treats the utterances of Pecorelli with a respect bordering on awe (and assuredly they are of great significance), the sincerity of Negri's politics would indubitably account for the elliptical (and hence unanswerable in its own terms) smearing of Negri by such a secret state asset. Given such proven connections of Pecorelli's, the inclusion of Negri in one of his fantasy tales is on a par with the Quatrains of Nostradamus: after the event you can read anything you want in them, but the only truth is in the eye of the beholder.

A curious echo of McCarthyism

For someone so astute at times, Willan can be astonishingly naive, as when he suggests that a 1975 hint about Negri's forthcoming role in a secret state plot was a 'revelation one can only assume Pecorelli felt justified in making because of the limited circulation of his magazine and the coded language in which it was couched' (p. 187). But how about the obvious: Pecorelli being paid to circulate disinformation, entangling in advance an enemy of the system with the very nefarious goings-on Pecorelli himself was so privy to? The persecution of Negri and the whole 'area of autonomy' was very congenial for the PCI too, as it absolved them from any responsibility for those they had taken a hand in marginalising and/or excluding from the political system. No wonder they took on the role of witch-hunters in chief of Negri and others. It was not SISMI or P2 who tried to polarise opinion into being for the BR or the state, it was instead the PCI, in a curious echo of McCarthyism, who tried to reduce the complexities of Italian politics to this false antithesis, as a means of punishing and closing down the far left as a whole.

The secret-state manipulation of the BR at certain points, especially after 1974, can be easily fitted into my thesis. After all, what better way of delegitimising armed struggle in all circumstances than blurring the distinction between its role as one element in a popular revolutionary struggle (the considered position of much of the far left) and those who practised increasingly indiscriminate murder and kidnap, quite possibly some of it state-directed, cloaking it all in pseudo-Leninist military fetishism (the BR)? It could be said that in criticising Willan's book on this count, I am merely being partisan, so our views cancel out, but I would disagree. It is Willan who has failed to produce any real evidence linking Negri to the CIA, whereas I have merely sought to explain that failure. The frequent and friendly use Willan makes of the testimony of Franceschini, including his recent conversion to the 'Calogero theorem', while interesting, is not decisive. The views of Curcio and others who

KILL SWITCH

have not renounced their beliefs are given little prominence (though admittedly accorded some respect). In any event, not only might Franceschini have a complex mix of motives for his change of heart — psychological and spiritual exhaustion, the desire for early release and so on — the views of any member or ex-member of the BR cannot be treated as of too much weight analytically. After all, if they had been that politically sophisticated they would never have joined BR in the first place; there were a host of other more credible far left groupings around such as Potere Operaia or Lotta Continua.

Having got that substantial disagreement out of my system, I would nevertheless like to conclude by strongly recommending the book. These episodes in Italian history are of intrinsic interest, and this chronicle is a substantial contribution to English language accounts of them, undermining virtually all the extant literature in its well-documented central placing of the Italian 'secret services as active participants if not protagonists, in the strategy of tension'. (p.126) Furthermore (while agnostic on the issue myself) the events in the book indirectly provide a powerful argument against Proportional Representation, inasmuch as it could lead, like it has in Italy, to some parties never leaving power, merely jockeying for position. In the course of such negotiations, concealing (while threatening to disclose) evidence about the crimes of coalition partners is a far more useful counter than mere policy differences. This in itself is probably the major reason why virtually none of those who ordered or carried out the incidents of violence catalogued herein have ever been brought to justice.

Postscript

After the Italian national elections in April 1992, in which all the major parties lost ground to the populist Northern League, who should the corrupt cesspits that constitute the Christian Democrats and ill-named 'Socialists' have turned to at the time of writing to form a coalition? Why, the PDS, successors to the PCI, of course!

There's no smear like an old smear

The Spycatcher's Encyclopedia of Espionage

The cover-blurb says this is 'the rest of the story'. It feels more like the out-takes from Spycatcher spiced with a few more fragments of interesting gossip. And I do mean fragments: the interesting bits of 260 pages — largish print and much white space — would reduce to about 2 single-spaced A4 sheets.

For example: on p. 35 he lists the educationalist Brian Simon, a sometime CPGB member, among Soviet 'spies', an allegation which has produced a writ; on p. 47 he claims that every room in Claridge's hotel was 'permanently bugged'. He casually tells us that Oxfam and the Red Cross — and, by implication, many other organisations -were 'checked' by MI5 to see if they had been penetrated by the KGB. As in Spycatcher he denigrates both MI6 and the CIA, here describing a minor Middle Eastern incident in which MI6 and the CIA were backing different factions in the same country.

The reliability of any of this gossip is undermined by another of his fantasies about Jack Jones and Hugh Scanlon. In Spycatcher Wright had them addressing a Heath Cabinet meeting. Here MI5 bug a meeting at CPGB headquarters attended by Jack Jones and Hugh Scanlon, 'representing the TUC.... a lot of trade union leaders and two Russian trade union people.... The meeting solemnly agreed to destroy the British motor industry with a campaign of strikes.'

You can just see it, can't you? Presumably it went something like this. Voice from

KILL SWITCH

floor: 'Move the vote'. Chair: 'Those in favour of destroying the British car industry please show.'

Fairly typically, Wright doesn't bother to date this meeting, though from the context it is meant to be the late 1950s. (Jack Jones didn't join the TUC General Council until 1968.)

This fantasy was picked up and recycled by Robert Porter in the Sunday Telegraph, 'Author accuses Jack Jones of Moscow plot'. (26 January 1992)

This smear of Wright's rang bells for me, and I did a little checking. The earliest version of this theme I have found appeared in the 1963 Jack and Bessie Braddock book *The Braddocks*. (The Braddocks were Labour MPs who began on the left and ended on the Catholic right.) There, between pages 223-5, Bessie quotes at some length from a document headed 'Cominform Report October 1959 — Secret, must not fall into unauthorised hands'. Among other things this document stated: 'Although recent strikes which excellent undercover cadres have organised in the car industry are fully acknowledged, it is nevertheless of the greatest importance that these actions should be increased and become nation-wide occurrences.'

Bessie Braddock assured the reader that this 'bears all the distinctive marks of a genuine Communist directive'. Although it is difficult to parody the Stalinist mind, I doubt that even the Cominform would actually have written that 'new and and concentrated effort must be made by specially suitable undercover activists to penetrate into that bastion of British capitalism and so set up the strongest possible Communist cells within the Conservative Party'.

This document, I suspect, is a product of the Foreign Office's Information Research Department (IRD). This impression is greatly strengthened by Braddock's report of another document, called 'MVD Information' (MVD became the KGB) 'which circulates to executives of the Soviet secret police and secret service'. In this 'it has been predicted that by June 1962, the number of fully-trained men and women who will be sent to work as Resident Operators and Control Agents in foreign countries will amount to about 230.' Considerate of them to tell the counter-intelligence services of the NATO alliance, is it not?

A decade later we find the same theme in J. Bernard Hutton's 1972 *The Subverters of Liberty* (p. 227): 'In mid-May 1971 Moscow's Special Division for Subversion (sic) sent the following directive to its master subverters (sic) in the United Kingdom: "The recent slackness of revolutionary industrial activity in Britain must be condemned. The forces of reaction must not be allowed a breathing respite. Intensify all efforts on all fronts. Do not concentrate solely upon large industrial plants or factories. Every minor industrial dispute contributes to the achievement of the main objective. Disrupt production everywhere! And ensure that even the smallest industrial dispute receives wide publicity..... It must always be apparent that demonstrations, strikes or riots etc. are spontaneous. It must never be suspected that political influences have inspired them'. (p. 228)

This astonishing guff is then followed by a five-page list of strikes, many of them in the car industry, between June and September 1971. This list, says Hutton, 'shows the astonishing parallel between the Kremlin's orders and what happened inside the United Kingdom'.

J. Bernard Hutton was a very minor Czech defector who made a living recycling the coarser products of the disinformation wizzards at IRD. This 1972 book of his, for example, includes (p. 106) the all-time naff forgery 'the text of a Special Division for Subversion di-

KILL SWITCH

rective, sent in code in April 1968 from Moscow to undercover master-subverters in West Germany'. This begins:

HIGHLY CONFIDENTIAL! MEMORISE! THEN BURN!

Action must be taken at once to create disruptive situations that will rock the very foundations of the capitalist system. The disturbances must occur on such a large scale that they cause deep concern to the population.' Etc. etc.

The story about the car industry resurfaced again in 1978 via the estimable Lord Chalfont, erstwhile 1960s Times Defence Correspondent and Labour Cabinet Minister. On 2 October 1978 The Times carried a piece of his, 'Soviet Saboteurs Bringing Britain to her Knees'. In this he reported meetings in late 1974 of the Metal Workers Trade Union in Vichy in France, and an early 1975 conference of the World Federation of Trade Unions in Dusseldorf. At the Vichy meeting, said Chalfont, 'there was a call by the assembled comrades for concerted action against multinational companies, especially the car industry...'. At the Dusseldorf meeting 'the main outcome.... was a programme of industrial disruption in the car industry.'

Clearly the WFTU did not invite Lord Chalfont to its meeting, and we are indebted to Chapman Pincher's 1985 *The Secret Offensive* for the information (on p. 219) that Chalfont got this information from MI5 who had 'penetrated a secret meeting in West Germany of Communist trade-union leaders from Britain and Europe to discuss tactics of disrupting industry throughout Europe in the ensuing five years'.

Steve Dorril adds: There is one little gem in Wright's book which is worth noting. On p. 93 Wright reveals that the Director-General of MI5, Sir Roger Hollis, deliberately destroyed a document before the Denning Inquiry into the Profumo Affair. This showed that Hollis had tried, via the Cabinet Secretary, to enlist John Profumo's help in an entrapment operation of the Soviet diplomat, Eugene Ivanov, in July 1961. Tony Summers and I speculated that this was the case in Honeytrap but had no evidence. Hollis misled Denning — easy enough — and Prime Minister Macmillan, who told a few lies to the House of Commons on this point.

Curious Liaisons

Alien Liaison

Please note: all the telephone conversations referred to by the author in this essay have been tape-recorded.

Published in May 1991, the thesis in Good's book is (a) that alien space craft have landed and/or crashed on earth; and (b) that the U.S. government is concealing this fact while attempting to recreate the space technology used by the aliens. Working on the alien craft project is a super secret government group code-named MJ12. This is not a new thesis in the world of UFOlogy and Mr Good received much of the extensive media attention he did partly because of the support for his claims from Admiral Lord Hill-Norton (who endorses the book with a 'Commentary'), and partly because of chapter 10, *Cosmic Journey*. Since Good has no physical evidence -pictures, films, artefacts — of the existence of aliens, let alone of their meetings with members of the U.S armed forces etc., he has to rely on the testimony of individuals. In chapter 10 that is provided essentially by a Mr Bob Oeschler, who claims to have worked on a U.S. government-funded program working with crashed alien craft; retired Admiral Bobby Ray Inman, former Director of the National Security Agency; and retired Rear Admiral Shapiro, former head of the Office of Naval Intelligence.

KILL SWITCH

As a former NSA head, Inman's evidence in particular is quite a coup. For if any state agency in the U.S. could be presumed to know about alien landings etc., it would be the NSA with its global surveillance cover.

What Bobby Ray Inman said

Mr Good begins chapter 10 with an alleged encounter between Admiral Inman and Bob Oeschler in May 1988 and the transcript of a subsequent telephone conversation between them. According to Oeschler and Good, in that conversation Admiral Inman confirmed the existence of alien spacecraft. On p. 191, printed in italics, is this exchange:

Bob Oeschler: Do you anticipate that any of the recovered vehicles would ever become available for technological research?

Admiral Inman: Again, I honestly don't know. Ten years ago the answer would have been no. Whether, as time has evolved, they are beginning to become more open on it, there's a possibility. Again Mr Hineman [Retired Deputy Director of Science and Technology Division, CIA] probably would be the best person to put that kind of question to...'

I have since received a copy of the entire telephone conversation from Mr Oeschler and there is not a single specific reference to the subject of UFOs in it. Interestingly, Mr Good did not include in his book the text of a letter he had received from Admiral Inman dated 18 December 1989. This reads:

Dear Mr Good, Just a short note to thank you for your letters of 17 November and 7 December 1989. I did receive your book [presumably Good's previous book, *Above Top Secret* — author] and appreciate your thoughtfulness for sending it. I look forward to reading it in the weeks ahead. Unfortunately I do not know of any information which could be of assistance to you for your UFO report. I would like to take this opportunity to wish you success in your findings. Please pass my very best wishes to Admiral Lord Hill-Norton when you have the opportunity.'

Admiral Hill-Norton is Timothy Good's most distinguished supporter in this country, a man whose name would — did — open doors among the Anglo- American military and intelligence elite.

After receiving the complete text of the Oeschler-Inman telephone conversation, I asked Mr Oeschler if anyone else but Mr Good had listened to it. He gave me the name of a Mr John Dingley. On 14 July 1991 I telephoned Mr Dingley, who confirmed (a) that he had heard the taped telephone conversation, and (b) that there was no reference to UFOs in it. By then I had already contacted Admiral Inman, enclosing the pages of *Alien Liaison* on which he was quoted, asking him for comments. In his reply, received on July 26 1991, Admiral Inman said:

'I received your letter of July 1st concerning Timothy Good's book *Alien Liaison*. I believe all these allegations to be false. Concerning your comments on a group of scientists called MJ12, I have no such awareness and do not believe such a group exists. In summary, the book is filled with fabrication and distortions. My conclusion from the pages I have seen is that the book is without any merit.'

On 2 August 1991 I faxed another letter to Admiral Inman, asking him the following: 'What did you think Bob Oeschler was inquiring about? It is still obscure what your understanding was as to the topic of the conversation. Perhaps I should add that Bob Oeschler maintains that in his initial approach to you, when he gave you his card, he mentioned to you clearly and briefly that he required your assistance in contacting a member of the MJ12.'

KILL SWITCH

He maintains that you accepted his card, and in a cordial manner 'Okayed it'.

On 8 August 1991 I received the following from Admiral Inman, dated 5 August.

'Dear Dr. Victorian,

In response to the request in your letter dated 2 August 1991 for an 'ultimate clarification' by me re Mr Oeschler, I provide the following:

a. I receive hundreds of calling cards each year from individuals who approach me at public appearances. I have no specific recollection of the receipt of a calling card from Mr Oeschler prior to our telephone conversation.

b. I have never heard of any organization called MJ12 nor did I have any understanding from Mr Oeschler about his seeking information on a specific organization. His use of Admiral Lord Peter Hill-Norton's name was the principal factor in my having a conversation at all with Mr Oeschler.

c. Having no prior knowledge of Mr Oeschler's interest, I did not understand until well into his dialogue that his research was about Unidentified Flying Objects.

d. Throughout 22 years of service in the intelligence community, I never encountered any credible evidence of the existence of extraterrestrial or interplanetary entities. I do not believe any credible evidence of such activity exists. I have been appraised by RADM [Rear Admiral] Shapiro that Mr Oeschler totally misrepresented both the nature and content of their conversation. I remain persuaded that complete misrepresentation of my views and those of RADM Shapiro has occurred and thus I distrust any and all stories and conclusions that have been conveyed. I hope you will entertain no further doubts about my views.'

Shapiro says Oeschler a fraud

I had already contacted retired RADM Shapiro, former head of the Office of Naval Intelligence (ONI) on 3 August 1991. Asked if he had ever met Mr Bob Oeschler, he replied:

'He met me on one occasion and I realised that he was a fraud. He had arranged a meeting with me under fraudulent circumstances and I dismissed him almost immediately. I never had a meeting with him in a restaurant as he is suggesting in that book. [on p. 195] I never discussed any of that material with him.'

I asked RADM Shapiro what Mr Oeschler introduced himself as. 'He introduced himself as an independent... he didn't even describe what he was doing initially in order to see me. He said he had been referred to me by somebody, [Inman] that he should contact me. I tried to contact that person to verify — he was out of the country. I finally agreed that I will meet with him. And then, all he had was his card that described himself as some sort of robotic expert or something. You know, a complete sham.'

On pp. 198-201 Mr Oeschler talks about meeting an unidentified General who warned him off his inquiries in 1989. I worked out eventually that the 'General' was Lt. General Thomas P. Stafford, a former NASA astronaut. (Mr Oeschler subsequently confirmed that Stafford was the 'General' in a telephone conversation with me on August 8, 1991.) On the same day I rang General Stafford. I told him I had a copy of Mr Good's book and understood that he had met Mr Oeschler. General Stafford did not remember Mr Oeschler, did not remember meeting him, and did not remember a 'security device' in the Pentagon Mr Oeschler describes. Finally I asked him if he had seen any evidence of flying saucers. 'Hell no', he said.

NASA and anti-gravity

In Chapter 10 Mr Oeschler describes being employed to work on an anti-gravity

KILL SWITCH

propulsion device. It was not difficult to locate the facilities he is talking about on pp. 202-4. The complex to which Mr Oeschler claims to have been taken to 'during the second week of January' exists. I telephoned Linda Billica, Assistant Test Director for Reduced Gravity Office, NASA. She explained to me that there is no anti-gravity chamber as described by Mr Oeschler but told me that NASA does employ a KC-135 aircraft to fly loops, at the top of which reduced gravity is achieved for about 30 seconds. I faxed her the passage from Mr Good's book, and on August 22, 1991 I received the following letter dated August 12 from her.

Dear Dr Victorian, The material you sent me from the book, Alien Liaison, is not based on fact:

- a. No one by the name of Bob Oeschler was ever manifested to fly with us on the KC-135.
- b. Ellington Field has not been an Air Force Base since 1976.
- c. There are no billeting facilities at Ellington Field.
- d. The shuttle's Remote Manipulator System (the 'arm') was never designed by Canada, has been operating for years, and has never required any such 'reconfiguration'.
- e. NASA has no 'anti-gravity chamber' anywhere. As I explained over the phone, we fly a KC-135 aircraft in a series of parabolas to obtain short periods of microgravity.
- f. Protein crystals have nothing to do with superconductive materials.
- g. NASA has no 'bunker-like building north of Houston' and no 'alien craft'.
- h. Absolutely no effort is underway to design or build any 'groundbased anti-gravity chamber'.

I'm sorry Dr. Victorian, but Alien Liaison is hogwash. I do not wish to have my name or my organization's name associated with it in any way.'

Conclusion

Based on my inquiries so far, there is no credible evidence of the events described by Mr Good in chapter 10 of his book. I will let another of those quoted by Mr Good have the final word. Still critical of what Mr Good published about him in an earlier book, Col. William Coleman decided to ignore Mr Good's inquiry for this book. Undaunted, Mr Good included a section about Colonel Coleman. In a September 1991 letter to me, Colonel Coleman wrote:

'I read all of the material sent with great interest and am fortified in my opinion of Mr Good's alleged talent as a researcher and author. It is amazing that people of this ilk can be so successful. (I am presuming that he is enjoying some income from these ventures.).... I regret having agreed to talk to him with reference to my UFO sighting (1955)... but I did it as a favor to a friend. Never again! His use of my alleged statements in his first book were totally manufactured out of hot air and were without truth in toto.'

Crop Circles

Meanwhile, out on the fringes of all this, there is the curious case of the crop circles. Mufon UFO Journal (about which I know nothing) claimed the following in issue 284, December 1991.

1. Ministry of Defence personnel produced some faked circles in July 1990.
2. In September 1990 a meeting on the circles was held between reps from Ministry

KILL SWITCH

of Defence, Ministry of Agriculture and Ministry of the Environment at which the use of disinformation was discussed. (Information allegedly from a participant at the meeting.) It also reported the following: In September '91 the newspaper Today carried the 'confession' of Doug Bowers and David Chorley that they had been making the patterns in fields in Britain which had caused so much interest and speculation. The story in Today was by-lined to 'Copyright MBF Services', presumably linked to MBF Consultancy a 1991-formed company whose sole shareholders are a Dr Andrew Clifford and his wife. Dr Clifford is an engineer and metallurgist and his principal employer is the MOD.

In issue 286, February 1992, George Wingfield, author of the research in the paragraph above, adds: he cannot connect 'MBF Consultancy' with 'MBF Services'; that the editor of Today said MBF Services were 'just an agency that handled the details for us'; and Today journalist Graham Brough said that 'MBF Services was just a joke. We made it up.' This last claim seems unlikely. How many other cases have you noticed where journalists voluntarily attribute a story to a non-existent agency?

Wingfield comments that 'suspicion that the Doug and Dave story is part of a deliberate disinformation campaign remains as strong as ever'.

The CIA and the Marshall Plan

'My claim is that the emphasis on paramilitary operations in the literature has led to a distorted picture of covert operations in this seminal period. In fact, a recreation of the predominant views with the OPC and the CIA in the early Cold War era, 1946-52, reveals that paramilitary operations were regarded as only one method on a spectrum of covert operations. Indeed, paramilitary ventures were undertaken with reluctance and generally as a measure of last resort. More often the agency relied upon covert economic, political, and psychological operations because they suited the circumstances and were more difficult to detect than paramilitary operations.'

But where in this literature on the covert operations of the 46-52 period is this focus on 'paramilitary operations'? The well known examples offered — Cuba, Guatemala, Vietnam — all fall outside this period. I am no expert on the literature of OPC/CIA but I am not even sure that there is anything resembling 'a picture of the covert operations of this period'.

If asked about CIA covert operations in this period I would have difficulty producing much information about anything before the 1953 coup in Iran. Some bits on Italy, some on Germany, the Congress for Cultural Freedom.... Pisani's thesis is correcting a fault only she perceives.

Pisani shows how a smallish group of what one of their number, Richard Bissell, called 'determined interventionists' set about trying to reconstruct the post-WW2 world in the interests of U.S. capital. Many of them began in private organisations, like the Ford Foundation, but gravitated to Washington when they found such private forums unwilling to think big enough or act fast enough. In the capitol they staffed and motivated the Economic Cooperation Administration, the Marshall Plan, Economic Recovery Programme, and eventually the Office of Policy Coordination and the CIA.

The term 'imperialism' is rarely used. 'Intervention' is the new euphemism: her potted history of the expansion of American imperialism up to World War 2 is called 'A Grounding in American Interventionism'. And there are some curious emphases. The 1946-7 period, running up to and including the Marshall Plan, is some of the most bitterly fought ground

KILL SWITCH

in post-war historiography. Yet Pisani whizzes across the period between pages 58 and 63 as if the Revisionist Wars had never taken place. Showing how the Council on Foreign Relations served as the sounding board, ideology-generator and integration device for the East Coast elite busy fighting the good fight (with some clandestine methods) in Europe, this is thus something of a companion volume to Laurence Shoup and William Minter's study of the Council on Foreign Relations, *Imperial Brain Trust* (Monthly Review Press 1977); yet Shoup and Minter are not in her bibliography. Still, let's be grateful for what we've got. In illustrating that both the Marshall Plan and the ECA provided cover for (yes, non paramilitary) covert operations, Pisani has made an important contribution to the historiography of the Cold War, showing the continuity between World War II methods and the eventual emergence of a CIA dominated by the covert operators.

A fictional account of this period can be found in certain section of Charles McCarry's novels about his erstwhile employers the CIA. McCarry has been the most subtle of the Agency's apologists over the past ten years — and a beautiful writer, to boot. His most recent, *Second Sight*, includes some passages about the early years of the CIA which would be music to the ears of people like Richard Bissel. On p. 332, for example, he talks of the CIA in its 'great, early days manned by the flower of American youth.... something almost entirely new in history, a secret intelligence service that was dedicated to doing good in the world by stealth.' Ah, the self-confidence (and self-delusion) in 'doing good in the world by stealth'.

Thatcher's People

Also out in (Fontana) paperback this year, this book was curiously neglected when it appeared in 1991. This is easily the most interesting and informative book on the Thatcher years to have appeared so far. Ranelagh was a member of the Conservative Research Department (CRD) between 1975-79 — a member of the internal opposition to Mrs Thatcher while 'Thatcherism' was being cobbled together by group around her. The CRD was then headed by Heathite Chris Patten. As a former, albeit junior 'insider', Ranelagh has had access to almost everybody who matters — except Mrs Thatcher. The result is a fascinating account of how a tiny group of people, with a handful of elementary, core ideas, captured the Tory Party — and its attendant media. Much of the book is directly sourced to interviews with key individuals of the period, and even the bits attributed to 'close advisor' and 'close colleague' et al, contribute to the 'feel' of the period. On almost every page there is something of interest — and, on many, serious insights.

But Ranelagh became a true believer, and accepts 'Thatcherism's' talk of success and transformation. So at another level, this an extremely partial — laughably partial in places — account of the past 20 years. This is the 'Putting the Great back in Britain' fantasy; Maggie and the unions replaying George and the Dragon. Why has Britain been in relative decline since the war? Its all the fault of the the unions. The British economy's structural bias towards overseas investment? Not a word. Impact of the City on Tory economic policy? Not a word. It doesn't matter. This has some great anecdotes, some genuinely new information, and some wonderful, unwitting self-revelation by a spokesperson for the Thatcherite myth.

England and the Aeroplane

An Essay on a Militant and Technological Nation

Short (130 pages), elegant assault on the thesis of 'the declinist' tendency in British history, now associated chiefly with Corelli Barnett and Martin Weiner, who have argued

KILL SWITCH

that science and technology failed to penetrate British (but essentially English) culture. By looking at 20th British history through the development of the aircraft industry, Edgerton shows us British society through new eyes — and in so doing tramples gleefully all over the boundary markers of several would-be discrete academic areas.

The state equals military power; and after WW2 military power equals death from the air. Hence the primacy of the aeroplane in the scheme of things. In 1970 Britain still had the 3rd largest aircraft construction industry in the world — and far too much of the UK's R and D was being consumed by the effort to compete with the USA/USSR. Harold Wilson knew this even if others didn't: he 'saw clearly what [C.P.] Snow's scientific humanism could not bear to see: the deeply warlike orientation of English science and technology.' (p. 85) Despite the creation of the Ministry of Technology (MinTech) — 'an Industry Ministry of much greater scope than any other in the capitalist world; Japan's much-vaunted MITI is a minnow by comparison.' (p. 105) — Wilson failed.

But where did it go wrong? In his conclusion he attacks 'the declinists', whose theories are nothing more than 'stories left over from the 19th century'. Yes, but he hasn't answered how it is that the technological nation of the 1950s and 60s he describes had so little influence that it was unable to prevent both the Heath and Thatcher governments from deregulating the City of London — and wrecking the manufacturing economy. Or, more interestingly perhaps, how it was that the Tories persuaded the manufacturing turkeys to repeatedly vote for Christmas....

Right Woos Left; Populist Party, LaRouchian and other neo-fascist overtures to Progressives; and why they must be rejected

This 63-page essay describes a wide range of contacts between what in a British context would be described as right-wing conspiracy theorists and the left. Berlet documents a range of contacts between the far-right Liberty Lobby, followers of LaRouche, Bo Gritz and the Populist Party, the Christic Institute, Radio Free America and a number of individuals, notably Victor Marchetti, Mark Lane, L. Fletcher Prouty, Dave Amory, Sherman Skolnick, and one Craig Hulet. (Rather than use 'the left', Berlet refers to 'Progressives', the use of which in a British context used to signify a kind of naive, pro-Soviet Communism. I don't know if it does in a U.S. context.)

Prouty, Lane and Marchetti are attacked for their association with the Liberty Lobby. Lane and Marchetti worked for a Liberty-published anti-Zionist newsletter; Prouty allowed the Liberty front, the Institute for Historical Review, part of the Holocaust denial lobby, to republish his book *The Secret Team*. (Lane presents, without comment, Liberty Lobby founder Willis Carto's denial of anti-semitism in his recent book, *Plausible Denial*, reviewed elsewhere in this issue.) Almost everyone else is attacked for contacts with LaRouche's organisation.

This is all very interesting to me, but it is very small beer. With the exception of *Spotlight*, which apparently sells 200,000 copies, these are all groups scratching around on the margins of U.S. political life. In U.K. terms these groups are about as politically significant as, say, the Socialist Workers' Party.

Berlet's complaint is that '[s]ince the early 1980s, persons from far-right and fascist political groups in the United States have attempted to convince progressive activists to join forces to oppose certain government policies'. They have done this by the propagation of 'conspiracism and demagoguery' which 'feature simplistic answers to complex problems'

KILL SWITCH

— the conventional left hostility to talk of conspiracies. (Another example is Michael Albert's 'Conspiracy Theory' in Z, January 1992.) He contrasts 'the Christic [Institute] theme that Iran-Contragate was caused by a long-standing conspiracy of individual agents' with the 'systemic failure' of the American political system. But is this alleged contrast justified? It certainly is true that the Christic's central document, The Affidavit of Daniel Sheehan, is seriously flawed by his cavalier handling of evidence: Mae Brussel was the 'source' for the ridiculous section on the events of 22 November 1963, for example. But Sheehan is not the whole of the story.

In a fund-raising letter of 30 November 1990, for example, Christic Executive Director Sara Nelson writes of 'the first time since the mid-1970s that Congress had genuinely wrestled with the fundamental incompatibility between covert operations and constitutional democracy'; and, later on the same page, of 'the dangerous consequences of unchecked Presidential war-making power'. This, surely, is not the view of someone who is interested solely in the conspiracy of individual agents and rejects what Berlet calls 'the sytemic view'.

There need be no conflict between research into conspiracies and 'the systemic view'. What Berlet seems unwilling to acknowledge is that within a 'systemic view' of the United States (or the CIA, or the Congress-Presidency relationship, or whatever) there are going to be conspiracies of individuals: and when the individuals are as powerful as, say, senior CIA personnel, the conspiracies are also going to be significant. The trouble is that since the demise of Ramparts magazine, the American left (progressives) has rarely been much interested in conspiracies and has thus left the field open for the right, who are. Would Marchetti and Lane have been sucked into the Liberty Lobby's operations if they had been taken seriously by the American left in the past 15 years? Did Prouty get any other offers from the left to republish his book before the one from Liberty Lobby?

Berlet's interesting paper is available from Political Research Associates, Suite 205, 678 Massachusetts Avenue, Cambridge, Massachusetts 02139, USA, \$6.50 in the U.S.. If ordering outside the U.S. the price is \$9.00 airmail and \$7.00 by sea. Outside the U.S. send International Money Orders only.

Berlet also discusses these ideas in an extended interview in the January 1992 edition of Z magazine, 150 West Canton St, Boston MA

The Coors Connection; How Coors Family Philanthropy

Undermines Democratic Pluralism

Political Research Associates

Also from Political Research Associates is The Coors Connection; How Coors Family Philanthropy Undermines Democratic Pluralism by Russ Bellant. This is a short book, 100 pages of text and 40 of notes and appendices. Following the trail of Coors family funding, Bellant takes the reader on a tour of practically the entire spectrum of the American right, from the proselytising end of the Born Agains to the World Anti-Communist League (as was). If the territory is familiar from other works, much of the detail and some of the perspectives are new.

Doing this kind of detailed, compressed work, Bellant faces in acute form the the basic problem we all have. X knows Y, who knows Z. Is this significant? Is there a connection between X and Z? For example: the Reagan White House supports the appointment of a former European war criminal to run one of the Republican Party's minor committees. If this does not mean 'Reagan White House supports Nazis', what does it mean? Bellant is actually

KILL SWITCH

drawing out the strands of a large, ramified network.

The problem with the concept of network is: what is the status of network membership? In some senses the difference between good and bad parapolitical research hinges on this question. At its worst all the links are perceived as causal and you have vulgar conspiracy theories: 'Its all the fault of...'. The rest of us fall somewhere short of that, and for the most part Bellant's attribution of causality is restrained. Occasionally it goes wrong. This, for example, is on p. 43, about Phylis Schafley. Now best known for her anti-feminist, anti-ERA (Equal Rights Amendment) statements, Schafley began as a right-wing conspiracy theorist. Bellant notes that she 'defends as a hero the late Cardinal Mindszenty of Hungary, a noted anti-communist who has been called a pro-feudalist, anti-semitic collaborationist who did little to stop the German Nazi massacre of Hungarian Jews.' (My emphasis.) That takes up a third of the 9-line entry on Schafley, and it's a mistake.

The Campus Connection: Military Research on Campus

The contents list is reproduced here. This is not my field but Rob Evans of the Campaign Against Military Research on Campus (CAMROC) now has quite a track record in this area.

- Forward · Chapter 4.1 Nukes on Campus
- Introduction · Chapter 4.2 Aldermaston Research Projects
- Chapter 1.1 Consequences of military strength · Chapter 5.1 Researching for
- Chapter 1.2 Military Rand D and the Uncle Sam economy · Chapter 5.2 Pentagon research
- Chapter 1.3 The Secret Military projects
- Chapter 6.1 Ailing Alliance ·
- Chapter 2.1 Khaki Campuses NATO research
- Chapter 2.2 Joint Schemes
- Chapter 2.3 Close Partners · Chapter 7.1 Electronic spies
- Chapter 2.4 The MoD's areas of · Chapter 7.2 GCHQ reseach interest projects
- Chapter 2.5 Guns and Gowns · Chapter 7.1 What to do about it
- Chapter 3.1 Chemistry at War · Chapter 8.2 Military Research ·
- Chapter 3.2 Chemical and How to find it Biological Warfare Reserach
- Chapter 8.3 Producing a report
- Chapter 8.4 Campaigning
- Chapter 8.5 Caspar Weingerger comes to town!

North American Spies: New Revisionist Essays

This worthy, but expensive, anthology of ten essays ranges widely from the obscure 'secret operations of Spanish consular officials within Canada during the Spanish-American war' to the useful account of the 'birth of the Defense Intelligence Agency'. In between are a number of good essays on American intelligence which are well-served with notes and bibliography. It is hardly revisionist, though in an academic environment they obviously would appear to be. By far the most interesting selection is Andrew Lownie's 'Tyler Kent: isolationist or spy?'. I do not agree with all of the conclusions but Lownie proves himself to be one of the best researchers around.

KILL SWITCH

The Intelligence Game: Illusions and Delusions of International Espionage

James Rusbridger is Peter Wright's cousin oddly enough, and occasionally assisted MI6 in the 1950s and 60s, an experience which has left him a cheerful cynic. He canters briskly and amusingly over the field of spook foul-ups in the post-war period to 'show the pointlessness of so much of the work of the intelligence services everywhere.' The result is an entertaining but very sharp analysis of that peculiar mixture of ruthless patriotism and utter incompetence which characterises so much of the efforts of the contemporary action men (and women). For by 'intelligence services' he really means the covert operations arms of the state.

In Rusbridger's view one of our spooks' few successful operations has been their concealment of their futility and venality from the mug tax-payer. Do we still need such organisations? Every so often Rusbridger feels obliged to reassure us that we do. I wonder if he really means that: his correspondence with the British media suggests otherwise. Clearly we need something to keep an eye on putative 'revolutionaries' with access to Semtex — but do we need the present organisations? Do we really need MI5, for example? The CIA was originally going to be an open, intelligence-gathering agency. Would American economic interests have been better or worse served since 1948 had the CIA not come to be dominated by the covert operators?

Although topped and tailed with new material, this is otherwise unchanged since the hard-back edition in 1989. The further collapse of the Soviet empire since then has made a page or two now sound rather odd, but this remains the most purely enjoyable and subversive single volume on the world's secret servants.

Plausible Denial: Was the CIA Involved in the Assassination of JFK

In 1978 a right-wing American magazine, *Spotlight*, published an article by former CIA officer Victor Marchetti which claimed that in response to the beginning of public hearings of the House Committee on Assassinations, the CIA was about to admit that one of its former employees, Howard Hunt, one of the Watergate 'plumbers', had taken part in the assassination of John Kennedy. The admission would be a 'limited hang-out'. Hunt sued *Spotlight*; Marchetti had — or was willing to present — no evidence, and in 1981 Hunt duly won damages large enough to close *Spotlight*. However, on appeal the verdict was overturned on a technicality, a second trial ensued and JFK assassination buff Lane was enrolled to defend *Spotlight*. In so doing he got David Attlee Phillips, Hunt, Richard Helms and Marita Lorenz into court. Half the book is about that second trial in January 1985. (The rest is a — not very interesting — summary of Mark Lane's activities in the Kennedy assassination field since 1964.)

To a lapsed assassination buff like me, parts of the trial are rather interesting. Try this, the single most important claim in the entire book. David Attlee Phillips admits, for the first time, that Lee Harvey Oswald did not visit the Soviet embassy in Mexico City in 1963. If that means nothing to you, then the book will probably mean nothing.

At the heart of Lane's case was Hunt's alibi for November 22 1963 and the allegations of a woman called Marita Lorenz. In the event Hunt could not conclusively prove where he had been on the day — and doubts about his credibility were immeasurably increased by the failure of his children to back up his alibi. Marita Lorenz, former lover of Fidel Castro-turned-CIA-agent, testified that she had been part of the Kennedy assassination conspiracy along with Hunt, another Watergate 'plumber' Frank Sturgis, and some Cubans. But her

KILL SWITCH

first-hand knowledge of the assassination is nil. She left the group in Dallas on November 21st and claims she was told by Sturgis after the event.

Do we believe her? My initial reaction is that I don't, but only because it is just too neat and tidy that the same people would bump off Kennedy and then turn up in the Watergate 'plumbers'. Even if we believe her account of what Sturgis told her, Sturgis's claim might be a lie — disinformation, perhaps for the Agency; water muddying. Many other false trails have turned up over the years. Either way, along with most of the serious Kennedy researchers, I do not buy her story, and didn't buy it when it first surfaced in 1977. (See, for example, Sunday Times 6 November 1977.) Lorenz's story must be disinformation. But if it is, what is going on?

My guess would be that what we have here is a disinformation project by the CIA. It is 1977: at the top of the CIA's domestic agenda is making sure that House Select Committee on Assassinations uncovers nothing of interest. A number of disinformation projects are running. Over at the Reader's Digest Edward J. Epstein's preposterous book *Legend* is about to be published, reaffirming the Warren Commission's central findings — with a KGB twist added. The CIA have another disinformation hare running, a faked document purporting to be a CIA internal memo from 1966 which refers to Hunt being in Dallas on 22 November 1963. This is planted in the media, along with the notion that the CIA is prepared to toss Hunt to the investigators of the House Committee. In traditional psy-ops fashion, the story starts in minor media — via Marchetti in *Spotlight* and via the *Wilmington News Journal*. Hunt, a former (or 'former') CIA officer, begins to amplify the message with his law suit against *Spotlight*. The final result of the two trials was Hunt's failure to prove where he was on 22/11/63 — could you prove where you were on a day 20 years earlier? — and the inference that he was involved in Dallas, supporting the testimony of Lorenz. In other words, the outcome was exactly as originally predicted by Marchetti's article: in a 'limited hang-out' the story that Hunt was in Dallas was broadcast. (Surely, had it chosen to do so, the Agency could have provided Hunt with an alibi?)

Ratlines

The Mark Aarons, John Loftus book, *Ratlines* (reviewed in *Lobster* 22) is out in soft-back in the UK — Manderin, £4.99. This is an important book, essential background reading to the disintegration of Yugoslavia, and the drive by Germany and the Papacy to get diplomatic recognition for Croatia.

The April mail-shot from *The Keys of Peter* — an eccentric but entertaining mixture of high Catholicism, anti-Masonic thought and conspiracy theories — contains one of the truly great rewrites of an author's intentions. Of the Aarons and Loftus book about the collaboration between the Vatican and Axis war criminals, Keys editor Ronald King says: 'A topical book dealing with the Vatican's diplomatic efforts to defend Croatia and Slovenia from Nazism and Communism in the 1940s and 1950s, and how those efforts were subverted by the US and British governments.'

Mr King, that is awesome.

Journey Into Madness

The True Story of Secret CIA Mind Control and Medical Abuse

No one would remember March 18, 1957, as different than any other day at the Allan Memorial Institute. There was continued speculation at what was happening in the basement, part of it having been declared off limits by Dr. Cameron to everyone except

KILL SWITCH

Rubenstein and Zielinski. ... [p. 164]

Something else concerned Dr. Cleghorn. Two years earlier, at the annual conference of the American Psychiatric Association, Dr. Cameron had promoted psychic driving through the columns of *Weekend Magazine*, ... He had referred to the technique as “beneficial brainwashing.” Accompanying the interview was a photograph of a young woman wearing headphones and the caption described her listening to her repeated confession. Dr. Cameron was credited with inventing “a daring idea designed to help neurotic patients by using a modified form of brainwashing.” He had added he was confronted with “the same problems as professional brainwashers” because his patients, “like prisoners of the Communists, tended to resist and had to be broken down.” ...

He had begun to feel equally concerned about his superior’s multiple and massive electroshocks, for which Dr. Cameron had also created a special word—depatterning. Dr. Cleghorn saw no long-term benefit for a treatment in which a patient was first put to sleep for three days and then, still comatose, given between thirty to sixty electroshocks over a short period and, in between, doses of 1,000 milligrams of Largactil, a powerful tranquilizer, to combat anxiety. What especially disturbed Dr. Cleghorn’s sense of medical propriety was that when he finally queried the total amnesia the treatment produced, Dr. Cameron had simply said the patients’ families would have to “help them build a scaffold of normal events.” ... [p. 169]

But in the Sleep Room the tomorrows came and went, each day indistinguishable from the last. Some of the nurses called the place the Zombie Room. ... [p. 170]

Madeleine had been kept in a chemically controlled sleep for thirty-six days and was awakened only to eat. In between her meals she received thirty more multiple shocks. ... [p. 172]

Dr. Cameron intended his treatment to strip his patients of their selfhood and introduce into their minds what he wanted them to believe. ... By successfully manipulating the psychological mechanisms of denial and repression in his patients, he was certain he would have solved the mystery of mind control. ...

He had been encouraged by his old friend Dr. William Sargant. Many of Dr. Sargant’s own observations had been applied by English police interrogators and those employed by MI5, Britain’s counterintelligence service. Dr. Sargant had sent Dr. Cameron a proof of his forthcoming book, *Battle for the Mind*, urging him to read the chapters on brainwashing techniques. Dr. Cameron carefully noted that one method was, having found a sore spot, to keep touching it. Dr. Sargant wrote that it was also important ... “to fatigue him further, rather than exact any new information of value. When his memory begins to fail him, the difficulty in keeping to the same story makes him more anxious than ever. Finally, ... his brain will be too disorganized to respond normally, it can become transmarginally inhibited, vulnerable to suggestions, paradoxical and ultra-paradoxical phases may supervene and the fortress finally surrenders unconditionally.” ... [p. 177]

Surrounded by tape recorders, editing machines, and shelves stacked with pillow speakers and football helmets, microphones, cables, and boxes of new tapes, Zielinski felt the place was “more like a Radio Shack than a science lab.” ... [p. 178]

Rubenstein had told him they did not understand the wealth of important psychological data that could be spotted by repeated replaying of the tapes: the shifts in cadence, the tiny mental blocks, the change in speed and emphasis, the hesitations and silences.

KILL SWITCH

They were all stored on the tapes and provided Dr. Cameron with invaluable information. Rubenstein had called it “a whole universe of nonverbal communication carried on below the perceptual level.”

Descriptions like that made Zielinski believe that Rubenstein was serious when he said that Dr. Cameron and himself would one day become the world’s authorities on continuous radio telemetry of human activity. The lanky twenty-eight-year-old ex-Army signalman envisioned the time would come when “there would be no secrets of the mind that we cannot probe electrically.” Zielinski had been fascinated as Rubenstein had breezily told Dr. Cameron how this would be achieved. All the psychiatrist had to do was ensure a continuous supply of patients and the wisecracking Cockney would create the electronic equipment that “would enter the deepest corners of their minds.”

Dr. Cameron had accepted the technician’s claim without quibble. ... [p. 179]

Early in March, Rubenstein had told Zielinski that Dr. Cameron had finally given the go-ahead for part of the institute’s basement to be turned into a radio telemetry laboratory. Rubenstein enthused that its purpose would be not only to measure behavioral activity of patients more closely, but would also provide the groundwork for a system that could be used to monitor human activity at a point remote from the subject under study. In other words, Rubenstein had added, “we’ll develop a system that will keep tabs on people without their knowing what we’re getting from them.” ... [pp. 179-180]

The Grid Room had lines drawn across one wall and a hardbacked chair in front of them. At the opposite end of the room a carefully concealed hole had been made in the wall, only big enough for the lens of a movie camera mounted on a platform on the other side. Anyone sitting in the chair would be unaware he or she was being secretly filmed. ... Each patient would be fitted with electrodes, which Rubenstein called potentiometers, and which would convert an analog signal and telemeter it to a receiving station—a cubbyhole in a corner of the basement packed with electronic equipment. Most of it was purpose-built by Rubenstein. It included a large machine with dials and switches, which he called the body movement transducer. He predicted it would provide “up to ten thousand bits of information per second” from each patient. The Grid Room had also been fitted with concealed microphones to record any verbal sounds a patient made. Zielinski had been impressed but nevertheless was still unclear how Dr. Cameron would use such a vast amount of data. ... [p. 180]

Dr. Cameron had asked Rubenstein to build the Isolation Chamber because it would help his patients if they could be first isolated and then disoriented before he tried to restructure their attitudes. Even spending a short while in the chamber gave Zielinski a bad feeling. Yet Rubenstein had said that patients would remain incarcerated for weeks, months, and if need be, years—until they were ready to listen to what Dr. Cameron wanted them to hear. ... [p. 181]

It was true there had been considerable discussion, largely because no one knew what was going on in the basement. Patients were brought from the Sleep Room, still heavily drugged, by nurses who were met at the door of the Radio Telemetry Laboratory by one of the technicians or Dr. Cameron himself. Dr. Cameron had posted a memo saying the laboratory was out of bounds to all unauthorized personnel. ... [p. 187]

Dr. Freeman had performed over 4,000 further lobotomies, using the technique to destroy the brains of those suffering from apprehension, anxiety, depression, compulsions,

KILL SWITCH

obsessions, as well as drug addicts, sexual deviants, and of course schizophrenics. He was convinced the frontal lobes of the brain were somehow responsible for aggression or, ultimately, a patient's refusal to cooperate in what he termed an acceptable way.

Dr. Freeman most probably would have found Madeleine fit that criteria. In her drugged condition she had made sounds in the isolator that the voice analyzer in the Radio Telemetry Laboratory had identified as "father," "want baby," and "father." Transferred back to the Sleep Room, she had somehow found the strength to use her helmet to butt a nurse. Such behavior came well within Dr. Freeman's guidelines for those who could benefit from psychosurgery. ... [p. 218]

With CIA funding, Dr. Cameron's isolator was rebuilt at a laboratory of the National Institutes of Health. But instead of a human, like Madeleine Smith, being incarcerated, lobotomized apes were kept for months in total isolation. Rubenstein's radio telemetry techniques were adapted so that radio frequency energy was beamed into the brains of the already crazed animals. ...

By early 1966 the lobotomized apes who had survived faced another experiment. They were bombarded with radar waves to the brain to render them unconscious. ... [p. 250]

Throughout 1968 Dr. Gottlieb continued to preside over his empire of scientists who still prowled the backwaters of the world seeking new roots and leaves that could be crushed and mixed in the search for lethal ways to kill. In their behavior laboratories the psychiatrists and psychologists continued experimenting.

Once more they had turned back on an earlier line of research—implanting electrodes in the brain. They had done that with animals in the early 1960s, using radio signals to manipulate the chimpanzees into fighting and even killing each other. But no one had then been prepared to go further. Vietnam, with its almost endless supply of expendables, made it possible to see whether such control could be reproduced in humans.

An Agency team flew to Saigon in July 1968. Among them was a neurosurgeon and a neurologist. Their basic research had been conducted on animals at another CIA front organization, the Scientific Engineering Institute near Boston. It had been founded in 1956 under the presidency of Polaroid's Dr. Edwin Land.

In a closed-off compound at Bien Hoa Hospital, the Agency team set to work with three Vietcong prisoners who had been selected by the local station. Each man was anesthetized and the neurosurgeon, after he had hinged back a flap in their skulls, implanted tiny electrodes in each brain.

When the prisoners regained consciousness, the behaviorists set to work. The prisoners were placed in a room and given knives. Pressing the control buttons on their handsets, the behaviorists tried to arouse their subjects to violence. ... [pp. 264-265]

Beginning in 1969, a team of Agency scientists from the Office of Research and Development (ORD) ran a number of bizarre and potentially far-reaching experiments in mind control. ... [p. 272]

Concurrent with those investigations, ORD had taken up the challenge of brain implants. ... [p. 275]

Before setting up their own program, the ORD scientists evaluated the results achieved by Dr. José Delgado, a Yale psychologist. He had faced a charging bull, fitted with elec-

KILL SWITCH

trodes in its brain, and with no other protection save the small black box in his hands, Dr. Delgado had deliberately goaded the bull by activating the implant that provoked the animal to become further enraged. Then, with the bull almost upon him, the psychologist had pressed another button. The animal promptly stopped in its tracks, the result of a signal transmitted to the electrode implanted in the part of the bull's brain that calmed it.

Dr. Delgado freely admitted that his method of remote mind control was still crude and not always predictable. But Dr. Gottlieb and the behaviorists of ORD shared the psychologist's vision that the day must come when the technique would be perfected for making not only animals, but humans respond to electrically transmitted commands.

Dr. Robert G. Heath, a neurosurgeon at Tulane University, had brought that prospect closer through his experiments with electrical stimulation of the brain (ESB) to arouse his patients sexually. Dr. Heath had actually implanted 125 electrodes in the brain and body of a single patient—for which he claimed a world record—and had spent hours stimulating the man's pleasure centers.

Like Dr. Delgado, the neurosurgeon concluded that ESB could control memory, impulses, feelings, and could evoke hallucinations as well as fear and pleasure. It could literally manipulate the human will—at will.

Late in June 1972, Dr. Gottlieb had jiggled back and forth on the carpet of the director's office, and his carefully controlled stammer had surfaced as he enthused that at long, long last, here was the answer to mind control, that ESB was the key to creating not only a psychocivilized person but an entire psychocivilized society—a world where every human thought, emotion, sensation, and desire could be actually controlled by electrical stimulation of the brain.

The possibilities, said Dr. Gottlieb, were far beyond the neurological masturbation of the pleasure centers. Not only could a rampaging bull be stopped in full charge, but humans could finally be programmed to attack and kill on command. Another step forward was about to be taken in the Agency's search for the "Manchurian Candidate."

Helms agreed that research into ESB should come under the direct control of Dr. Stephen Aldrich. A former medical director of the Agency's Office of Scientific Intelligence, Dr. Aldrich was widely regarded among his ORD colleagues as a pathfinder. From dawn to dusk he spent his time speculating, theorizing, and experimenting with the possibilities of harnessing ESB for intelligence work. Using the latest computer technology, he developed Rubenstein's earlier work on radio telemetry, and the unfulfilled dream the English technician had shared with Dr. Cameron of a world of electrically monitored people became that much more of a reality

In the safe house where Yuri Nosenko had been brutalized, Dr. Aldrich supervised infinitely more sophisticated research. Included in the equipment he used was a piece not even Orwell had dared invent for his *1984*. Called the Schwitzgebel Machine, the boxlike construction had been developed by Ralph K. Schwitzgebel in the Laboratory of Community Psychiatry at Harvard Medical School. His brother, Robert, had subsequently modified the prototype so that the final product was something Rubenstein would have taken pride in; indeed, in many ways it resembled a smaller version of the cumbersome transducer the technician had built in the Montreal basement.

The Schwitzgebel Machine consisted of a Behavior Transmitter-Reinforcer (BT-R) fitted to a body belt that received from and transmitted signals to a radio module. In the offi-

KILL SWITCH

cial description of the machine the module was “linked to a modified missile-tracking device which graphs the wearer’s location and displays it on a screen.”

The Schwitzgebel Machine—its very name suggested something designed to make people enjoy their servitude—was able to record all physical and neurological signs in a subject from up to a quarter of a mile—an impressive improvement over the distance between the Grid Room and the cubbyhole where Dr. Cameron had monitored Madeleine Smith and other patients.

By August 1972 other proponents of the Schwitzgebel Machine were voicing their enthusiasm. They were led by Professor Barton L. Ingraham, a criminologist at the University of Maryland, and Gerald W. Smith, professor of criminal studies at the University of Utah.

In a joint paper, Ingraham and Smith painted a vivid scenario of how the machine could be used to keep track of known criminals. He or she would be fitted with a brain implant and would be tracked, with the psychological data being transmitted from the implant to the machine. The machine, using probabilities, would come to a decision and alert the police if necessary.

Adapting that frightening vision of tomorrow’s world formed part of ORD’s concept of the New Jerusalem of intelligence. ... [pp. 276-278]

One of the tried, though far from proven, techniques of the CIA that Ronald Reagan was helping to investigate in Washington was, in California, being given a warm welcome by him. He eagerly shared Dr. West’s conviction that one day the behavior of all persons with violent tendencies—no one had yet decided the criteria for measuring the degree of violence—would be monitored by the staff at central control stations presiding over screens producing signals from the implants. The first indication of an abnormal impulse could indicate the onset of violence. Attendants would rush with suitable psychotropic drugs to overpower the person. The system would be expensive to operate, but Governor Reagan visualized the day when thousands of his fellow Californians would be permanently monitored in this way.

Among those who was considered to work at the Center was Leonard Rubenstein. Two South American doctors who had worked at the institute under Dr. Cameron had also been targeted, one to run the center’s shock room—which would operate on a twenty-four-hour basis, seven days a week—and the other to assist in the center’s psychosurgical operating suite, where the very latest techniques in lobotomy would be used. The doctors were currently employed in detention centers in Paraguay and Chile.

Despite his considerable persuasive techniques, Governor Reagan failed to convince the California legislature to go ahead with Dr. West’s proposal. However, when the Rockefeller Commission report was issued, the governor provided a clear dissenting voice to the damning conclusion that the CIA had conducted a highly unethical program to “study possible means for controlling human behavior by irresponsibly exploring the effects of electroshock, psychiatry, psychology, sociology, and harassment techniques.” ... [pp. 284-285]

Documents

Plaintiffs’ statement of genuine issues in Civil Action No. 80-3163: detailed in following separate exhibits:

- a. The M-K-Ultra Program was established to explore covert brainwashing techniques

KILL SWITCH

for both offensive and defensive use by the Central Intelligence Agency. (Def. No. 6-9).

b. The central activity of the M-K-Ultra program was conducting and funding brainwashing experimentation with dangerous drugs and other techniques performed on persons who were not volunteers by Central Intelligence Agency Technical Service Division Employees, Agents, and Contractors. (Def. No. 10-17). ...

g. John Gittinger and former Air Force brainwashing expert Col. James Monroe recruited D. Ewen to perform experiments with potentially injurious experimental procedures similar to Communist brainwashing methods. (Def. No. 29-32). ...

j. Gottlieb, Lashbrook, Gittinger, and their CIA associates failed to take any steps to ensure that only volunteers were used in M-K-Ultra subproject 68 or to protect the well-being of experimental subjects. (Def. No. 39-48). ...

p. The CIA concealed M-K-Ultra subproject 68 and failed to notify plaintiffs that they had been unwitting subjects of those brainwashing experiments. (Def. No. 78-81, 106-118).

q. Defendants have admitted negligence in the CIA's M-K-Ultra brainwashing experiments. (Def. No. 13-26, 121-29).

r. Each plaintiff was injured by exposure to one or more of these brainwashing techniques of depatterning with intensive electroshock or LSD and other drugs, psychic driving, partial sensory isolation, and continuous sleep experiments described in the application and financed by M-K-Ultra subproject 68. (Def. No. 104, 124, 128). [pp. 371-373]

The Secrets of Mind Control

This summary is based on three books: *Bluebird* by Colin A. Ross MD, a leading Canadian psychiatrist; *Mind Controllers* by Dr. Armen Victorian; and *A Nation Betrayed* by recovered mind-control victim Carol Rutz. All three authors provide hundreds of footnotes for their research. Many of their footnotes are included in this document. Much of their work is based on 18,000 pages of declassified CIA documents on mind control. To order these declassified documents in CD format directly from the government follow the directions at the end of this summary.

The Secret Agenda

Please note: the letters and numbers after each paragraph denote the book and page from which the information given was taken. BB stands for *Bluebird*; MC for *Mind Controllers*; NB for *A Nation Betrayed*. To order these books, see our Resource List.*

A declassified CIA document dated 7 January 1953[1] with a section heading "Outline of Special H Cases" describes the experimental creation of multiple personality in two 19-year old girls by the CIA. "H" is used as shorthand for hypnotic, hypnotized, or hypnosis in these documents: "These subjects have clearly demonstrated that they can pass from a fully awake state to a deep H controlled state by telephone, by receiving written matter, or by the use of code, signal, or words, and that control of those hypnotized can be passed from one individual to another without great difficulty. It has also been shown by experimentation with these girls that they can act as unwilling couriers for information purposes." BB 32

After the end of World War II, German scientists were being held in a variety of detainment camps by the allies and Russians. In 1946, President Truman authorized Project Paperclip[2] [3] [4] to exploit German scientists for American research, and to deny these intellectual resources to the Soviet Union. Some reports bluntly pointed out that they were

KILL SWITCH

“ardent Nazis.” They were considered so vital to the “Cold War” effort, that they would be brought into the US and Canada. Some of these experts were accused of participating in murderous medical experiments on human subjects at concentration camps. A 1999 report to the Senate and the House said that “between 1945 and 1955, 765 scientists, engineers, and technicians were brought to the US under Paperclip and similar programs.” [5] BB 3, NB xi, xii

According to the Central Intelligence Agency’s Fact Book, [6] the NSC (National Security Council) and the CIA were established under the provisions of the National Security Act of 1947. In December 1947, the NSC held its first meeting. James Forrestal, the Secretary of Defense, pushed for the CIA to begin a ‘secret war’ against the Soviets. Forrestal’s initiative led to the execution of psychological warfare operations (psy-ops) in Europe. CIA personnel were not opposed to working with Nazi doctors who had proven to be proficient in breaking the mind and rebuilding it. In some cases military bases were used to hide these covert activities. It was decided that the communist threat was an issue that took priority over constitutional rights. MC 1, 3, 7, 8, NB xvii

The concept of running a secret ‘black’ project was no longer novel. In 1941, Roosevelt had decided, without consulting Congress, that the US should proceed with the utmost secrecy to develop an atomic bomb. Secrecy shrouded the Manhattan Project (the atomic bomb program) to the extent that Vice President Harry Truman knew nothing about it. [7] The project meant that by 1947, the US Government had already gained vast experience in the initiation of secret operations. The existence of ‘black projects’ funded by ‘black budgets’ was withheld not only from the public, but also from Congress for reasons of national security. MC 8-10

A declassified CIA document “Hypnotic Experimentation and Research, 10 February 1954” [8] describes a simulation of relevance to the creation of unsuspecting assassins: “Miss [deleted] was instructed (having previously expressed a fear of firearms in any fashion) that she would use every method at her disposal to awaken Miss [deleted] (now in a deep hypnotic sleep). Failing this, she would pick up a pistol nearby and fire it at Miss [deleted]. She was instructed that her rage would be so great that she would not hesitate to ‘kill’ [deleted] for failing to awaken. Miss [deleted] carried out these suggestions to the letter including firing the (unloaded) gun at [deleted] and then proceeded to fall into a deep sleep. Both were awakened and expressed complete amnesia for the entire sequence. Miss [deleted] was again handed the gun, which she refused (in an awakened state) to pick up or accept from the operator. She expressed absolute denial that the foregoing sequence had happened.” BB 36, 37

One of the main areas to be investigated by the CIA was mind control. The CIA’s human behavior control program was chiefly motivated by perceived Soviet, Chinese, and North Korean use of mind-control techniques. Under the protection of ‘national security,’ many other branches of the government also took part in the study of this area. The CIA originated its first program in 1950 under the name BLUEBIRD, which in 1951, after Canada and Britain had been included, was changed to ARTICHOKE. MKULTRA officially began in 1953. Technically it was closed in 1964, but some of its programs remained active under MKSEARCH well into the 1970s. In 1973, tipped off about forthcoming investigations, CIA Director Richard Helms ordered the destruction of any MKULTRA records. [9] MC 10, 17

Diligent use of the Freedom of Information Act (FOIA) helps to cast light on the ad-

KILL SWITCH

vances that have been made in controlling the way people think and act. In 1977, through an FOIA request 16,000 pages of documents were found, held as part of the Agency's financial history. The FOIA allows the most humble citizen to demand the disclosure of documents, although inevitably some will be heavily censored or not released at all. That is how much of this information has been pieced together. MC 5 NB, xvi, xvii

Inevitably, however, it is an incomplete picture. Most of the important details were conveniently destroyed under orders of CIA Director Helms to conceal wrongdoing.[10] What the mind controllers were and are doing may be only hinted at in a memo footnote or in the memoirs of a retired researcher. Nevertheless, there is more than enough here to show that secret new techniques are being exploited that are no longer in the realm of science fiction. We must all be aware of this threat so that those who wish to take liberties with democracy, and with our freedom to think, are deterred. MC 6, NB xvii

The CIA Mind-Control Projects

Project BLUEBIRD was approved by the director of the CIA on April 20, 1950. In a 1951 memo,[11] Bluebird states that practical research was to be conducted to include these specific problems:

Can we create by post-H control an action contrary to an individual's basic moral principles?

Can we in a matter of an hour, two hours, one day, etc., induce an H [Hypnotic] condition in an unwilling subject to such an extent that he will perform an act for our benefit?

Could we seize a subject and in the space of an hour or two by post-H control have him crash an airplane, wreck a train, etc.?

Can we by H and SI [Subconscious Isolation][Note:2] techniques force a subject to travel long distances, commit specified acts and return to us or bring documents or materials?

Can we guarantee total amnesia under any and all conditions?

Can we "alter" a person's personality?

Can we devise a system for making unwilling subjects into willing agents and then transfer that control to untrained agency agents in the field by use of codes or identifying signs?

Is it possible to find a gas that can be used to gain SI control from a gas pencil; odorless, colorless, one shot, etc.?

How can sodium A or P or any other sleep inducing agent be best concealed in a normal or commonplace item, such as candy, cigarettes, coffee, tea, beer, medicines?[12] NB 13, 14, BB 23

Officially, MKULTRA was established on 13 April 1953, at Richard Helms' suggestion as "ultra sensitive work." [13] The operational wing of MKULTRA, known as MKDELTA, had as its mission to find out how to use chemical and biological weapon ingredients to alter the human mind. Originally established as a supplementary funding mechanism to the ARTI-CHOKE project, MKULTRA quickly grew into a mammoth undertaking that outflanked earlier mind-control initiatives. MC 69, NB 28

A memorandum from Richard Helms,[14] Acting Deputy Director to CIA Director Allen Dulles dated 3 April 1953 and entitled "Two Extremely Sensitive Research Programs" (MKULTRA and MKDELTA) includes the statement, "Even internally in CIA, as few individu-

KILL SWITCH

als as possible should be aware of our interest in these fields and of the identity of those who are working for us. At present this results in ridiculous contracts which do not spell out the scope or intent of the work." BB 125

The memorandum below was written 10 years later to Helms, who by then had become CIA Director.

26 July 1963, MEMORANDUM FOR: Director of Central Intelligence[15]

SUBJECT: Report of Inspection, MKULTRA

It was deemed advisable to prepare the report of the MKULTRA program in one copy only, in view of its unusual sensitivity. Normal procedures for project approval, funding, and accounting were waived. The program requires the services of highly specialized authorities in many fields of natural science. The concepts involved in manipulating human behavior are found by many people both within and outside the Agency to be distasteful and unethical. Nevertheless, there have been major accomplishments both in research and operational employment.

Over the ten-year life of the program many additional avenues to the control of human behavior have been designated under the MKULTRA charter, including radiation, electro-shock, harassment substances, and paramilitary devices. Some MKULTRA activities raise questions of legality implicit in the original charter. A final phase of the testing of MKULTRA products places the rights and interests of US citizens in jeopardy. Public disclosure of some aspects of MKULTRA activity could induce serious adverse reaction in US public opinion.

TSD [Technical Services Division of CIA] initiated a program for covert testing of materials on unwitting US citizens in 1955. TSD has pursued a philosophy of minimum documentation in keeping with the high sensitivity of some of the projects. Some files contained little or no data at all. There are just two individuals in TSD who have full substantive knowledge of the program and most of that knowledge is unrecorded. In protecting the sensitive nature of the American intelligence capability to manipulate human behavior, they apply "need to know" doctrine to their professional associates to a maximum degree.

J.S. Earman, Inspector General [NB 108-113 and footnote]

The Senate Intelligence Committee did find some records during its investigation in 1976.[16] However it noted that the practice of MKULTRA was "to maintain no records of the planning and approval of test programs." Miles Copeland, a former CIA officer, said, "The congressional sub-committee which went into this got only the barest glimpse." [17] Senator Frank Church, who led the congressional investigations of the CIA's unlawful actions said that the agency was "a rogue elephant" operating above the law as it plotted assassinations, illegally spied on thousands of Americans, and even drugged our own citizens in its effort to develop new weapons for its covert arsenal." MC 13, 18, NB 38

The focal point of MKULTRA was the use of humans as unwitting subjects [without their knowledge or consent]. The CIA sponsored numerous experiments of this kind. Regardless of a report by the CIA's Inspector General in 1963 recommending the termination of testing on unwitting subjects, future CIA Director Richard Helms continued to advocate covert testing on the grounds that "we are less capable of staying up with the Soviet advances in this field." On the subject of moral issues, Helms commented, "we have no answer to the moral issue." [18] MC 18

KILL SWITCH

The Experience of CIA Mind-Control Victim Carol Rutz[19]

[Note: 3]

The CIA bought my services from my grandfather in 1952 starting at the tender age of four.[20] Over the next 12 years, I was tested, trained, and used in various ways. Electroshock, drugs, hypnosis, sensory deprivation, and other types of trauma were used to make me compliant and split my personality (create multiple personalities for specific tasks). Each *alter* or personality was created to respond to a post-hypnotic trigger, then perform an act and not remember it later. This “Manchurian Candidate” program was just one of the operational uses of the mind-control scenario by the CIA. Your hard-earned tax dollars supported this.

As a survivor of CIA programs Bluebird/Artichoke and MKULTRA, I began my intense search to document some of the mind-control experiments that I was made part of. Through a series of FOIA requests to various departments of the government, 48 years after I was first experimented on, I found solid proof of my memories—proof that was in the government vaults of the nearly 18,000 pages of declassified documents from the Bluebird/Artichoke and MKULTRA programs.

One of the declassified documents[21] states, “Learning studies will be instituted in which the subject will be rewarded or punished for overall performance and reinforced in various ways—with electric shock, etc. In other cases drugs and psychological tricks will be used to modify attitudes. The experimenters will be particularly interested in dissociative states [multiple personality]. An attempt will be made to induce a number of states of this kind, using hypnosis.” The government had finally handed me the validation I had been searching for. NB xvii, xviii

The basic premise of the book *The Manchurian Candidate*[22] is that a group of American POWs in the Korean War is brainwashed while crossing through Manchuria to freedom. They arrive back in the US amnesic for the period of brainwashing. One of them is programmed to be an assassin. His target is a candidate for president of the US. His handlers control him with a hypnotically implanted trigger. BB 23

In an experiment described in a document entitled “SI and H experimentation (25 September 1951)”, [23] two female subjects took part in an exercise involving the planting of a bomb. Both subjects performed perfectly and were fully amnesic for the exercise: “[*deleted*] was instructed that upon awakening, she would proceed to [*deleted*] room where she would wait at the desk for a telephone call. Upon receiving the call, a person known as ‘Jim’ would engage her in normal conversation. During the course of the conversation, this individual would mention a code word. When she heard this code word, she would pass into a SI trance state, but would not close her eyes and remain perfectly normal and continue the telephone conversation.

She was told that upon conclusion of the telephone conversation, she would carry out instructions: [*deleted*] was shown an electric timing device. She was informed that this device was a bomb, and was then instructed how to attach and set the device. After [*deleted*] learned how to set and attach the device, she was told to take the timing device which was in a briefcase, and proceed to the ladies room. In the ladies room, she would be met by a girl whom she had never seen who would identify herself by the code word ‘New York.’ [*deleted*] was then to show this individual how to attach and set the timing device and further instructions would be given that the timing device was to be carried in the briefcase to

KILL SWITCH

[deleted] room, placed in the nearest empty electric-light plug and concealed in the bottom, left-hand drawer of [deleted] desk, with the device set for 82 seconds and turned on.” BB 37, 38

The Mind-Control Doctors

In the second half of the 20th century, mind-control projects resulted in extensive political abuse of psychiatry in North America. Many thousands of prisoners and mental patients were subjected to unethical mind-control experiments by leading psychiatrists and medical schools. Organized academic psychiatry has never acknowledged this history. The network of mind-control doctors involved has done a great deal of harm to the field of psychiatry and to psychiatric patients. BB, pg. K

The work of the mind-control doctors did not occur in a vacuum. The importation of Nazi doctors to the US through secret programs like PAPERCLIP is part of the context. Mind-control experimentation was not only tolerated by medical professionals, but published in psychiatric and medical journals.[24] The climate was permissive, supportive, and approving of mind-control experimentation. BB 1

Dr. William Sweet[25] participated in both brain electrode implant experiments and the injection of uranium into medical patients at Harvard University. The 925-page *Final Report. Advisory Committee on Human Radiation Experiments*[26] tells the story of the radiation experiments, and their linkage to mind control. BB 1

Martin Orne is one of the leading experts on hypnosis of the 20th century.[27] [28] For about 30 years, he was the editor of *The International Journal of Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis*. Dr. Orne is one of two psychiatrists professionally still active into the late 1990's who is a documented CIA mind-control contractor (along with Dr. Louis Jolyon West).[29] BB 121, 124

P. Janet asked a “deeply hypnotized female to commit several murders before a distinguished group of judges, stabbing some victims with rubber daggers and poisoning others with sugar tablets.” The hypnotized subject did all these things without hesitation.[30] MC 160

Army doctors were actively involved in LSD testing at least until the late 1970's. Subjects of LSD experiments included children as young as five years old, and brain electrodes were implanted in children as young as 11 years of age. Four of the CIA's MKULTRA Sub-projects were on children. The mind-control doctors included presidents of the American Psychiatric Association and psychiatrists who received full-page obituaries in the *American Journal of Psychiatry*. Responsibility for the unethical experimentation lies first with the individual doctors, but also collectively with the medical profession, and with academia as a whole. BB 21

The MKULTRA contractor about whom the most has been written is Dr. Ewen Cameron.[31] [32] [33] [34] [35] At various times, Dr. Cameron was President of the American, Canadian, and World Psychiatric Associations. He was one of four co-founders of the World Psychiatric Association. Dr. Cameron began conducting unethical, unscientific, and inhumane brainwashing experiments in the 1930's. Schizophrenic patients were forced to lie naked in red light for eight hours a day for periods as long as eight months. Another experiment involved overheating patients in an electric cage until their body temperatures reached 102 degrees. BB 125-128

From January 1957 until September 1960, Dr. Cameron's project received \$64,242.44

KILL SWITCH

in CIA funds.[36] When the CIA stopped funding him, Cameron received \$57,750 from the Canadian government to continue his research from 1961 to 1964.[37] The actual number of patients on whom Cameron tried varieties of his experimental techniques is reported as 332.[38] NB 52, 53

Linda MacDonald was a victim of Dr. Ewen Cameron's unethical, destructive mind-control experiments in 1963. Dr. Cameron used a "treatment" which involved intensive application of three brainwashing techniques; drug disinhibition, prolonged sleep, and prolonged psychological isolation. These were combined with ECT [Electro-Convulsive Therapy] treatments.[39] [40] [41] The amount of electricity introduced into Linda's brain exceeded by 76.5 times the maximum amount recommended in the ECT Guidelines of the American Psychiatric Association.[Note:4] Dr. Cameron's "depatterning" technique resulted in permanent and complete amnesia. Dr. Cameron proved that doctors skilled in the right procedures can erase a subject's memory. To this day, Linda MacDonald is unable to remember anything from her birth to 1963. As recorded by nurses in her chart, Linda was completely disoriented. She didn't know her name, age or where she was. She didn't recognize her children. She couldn't read, drive, cook, or use a toilet. Not only did she not know her husband, she didn't even know what a husband was. BB 181-183

Life changed for Linda when the Canadian Broadcasting Corporation program, *The Fifth Estate*, aired a segment on Dr. Cameron on January 17, 1984. A Vancouver newspaper ran a full-page story on Robert Loggie, a Vancouver man who had been experimented on by Dr. Cameron. Loggie was a plaintiff in the class action suit against the CIA for Dr. Cameron's MKULTRA experiments, which was settled out of court for \$750,000, divided among the eight plaintiffs in 1988.[42] Eventually Linda got \$100,000 plus legal fees from the Canadian government. BB 187, 188

J.G. Watkins "induced a soldier to strike an officer by suggesting that the officer was a Japanese soldier." [43] In another experiment, two subjects who were told to throw sulphuric acid at a laboratory assistant (protected by glass) complied with the hypnotist's commands.[44] MC 158

G.H. Estabrooks is the only mind-control doctor who has publicly acknowledged the building of Manchurian Candidates. In his book *Spiritism*, [45] Dr. Estabrooks describes experiments done to create multiple personality.[46] [47] In his book *Hypnotism*, [48] Dr. Estabrooks states that the creation of experimental multiple personality for operational use in military subjects, whom he refers to as super spies, is ethical because of the demands of war. BB 159, 162

In a 1971 article in *Science Digest*, [49] Dr. Estabrooks claimed to have created hypnotic couriers and counterintelligence agents for operational use. "By the 1920's not only had they [clinical hypnotists] learned to apply posthypnotic suggestion to deal with this weird problem [multiple personality], but also had learned how to split certain complex individuals into multiple personalities like Jeckyl-Hydes....During World War II, I worked this technique with a vulnerable Marine lieutenant I'll call Jones....I split his personality into Jones A and Jones B. Jones A, once a 'normal' working Marine, became entirely different. He talked communist doctrine and meant it. He was welcomed enthusiastically by communist cells, and was deliberately given a dishonorable discharge by the Corps (which was in on the plot) and became a card-carrying party member....Jones B was the deeper personality, knew all the thoughts of Jones A, was a loyal American and was 'imprinted' to say

KILL SWITCH

nothing during conscious phases. All I had to do was hypnotize the whole man, get in touch with Jones B, the loyal American, and I had a pipeline straight into the Communist camp. It worked beautifully.” BB 167-169

Dr. Estabrooks did experiments on children. He corresponded with FBI Director J. Edgar Hoover about using hypnosis to interrogate juvenile delinquents. His experimentation raises the possibility that he or other investigators might have attempted to create Manchurian Candidates in children. Such a possibility might seem far-fetched until one considers the LSD, biological and radiation experiments conducted on children,[50] [51] [52] and the fact that four MKULTRA Subprojects were on children. The deliberate creation of multiple personality in children is an explicitly stated plan in the MKULTRA Subproject Proposal submitted for funding on May 30, 1961. BB 61, 176, 177

LSD Tests

From 1950 until the 1970s, the CIA collaborated closely with the US Army while conducting LSD and other chemical tests on humans. Experiments were conducted where none of the volunteers gave their ‘informed consent’ prior to receiving LSD. There was a deliberate attempt to deny the volunteers any information that would have permitted them to evaluate the dangers involved. Most of the related records have been destroyed.[53] [Note:5] MC 20, 21, 29, 32

A field test plan called for use of LSD on foreign nationals overseas. The Surgeon General “offered no medical objections to the field experimental plan.”[54] Subjects for the proposed field test were to be non-volunteer, foreign nationals. It is clear that from the start to finish the project violated Department of Defense policies, as well as specific procedures set for chemical or medical research. MC 33-36

Frank Olson was a biological warfare expert who committed suicide after being given LSD hidden in liqueur by Dr. Sidney Gottlieb, Director of MKULTRA. Olson’s family determined that he committed suicide subsequent to a bad LSD trip only after reading Nelson Rockefeller’s 1975 report on the CIA, published 22 years after Olsen’s death. They were given \$750,000 in compensation by Congress.[55] BB 49

Electronic Implants

José Delgado’s development of the Stimoeiver in the 1950s brought intelligence agencies’ ultimate dream of controlling human behavior one step closer to reality. The Stimoeiver—a miniature electrode capable of receiving and transmitting electronic signals by FM radio—could be placed within an individual’s cranium. And once in place, an outside operator could manipulate the subject’s responses. Delgado demonstrated the potential of his Stimoeivers by wiring a fully-grown bull. With the device in place, Delgado stepped into the ring with the bull. The animal charged towards the experimenter—and then suddenly stopped, just before it reached him. The powerful beast had been stopped with the simple action of pushing a button on a small box held in Delgado’s hand.[56] MC 147

Dr. Delgado, a neurosurgeon and professor at Yale, received funding for brain electrode research on children and adults.[57] [58] [59] [60] [61] [62] He did research on monkeys and cats, and in one paper describes the cats as “mechanical toys.” He was able to control the movements of his animal and human subjects by pushing buttons on a remote transmitter box. In 1966, Delgado asserted that his experiments “support the distasteful conclusion that motion, emotion and behavior can be directed by electrical forces, and that

KILL SWITCH

humans can be controlled like robots by push buttons.”[63] BB 88, 89, MC 147

An 11-year old boy underwent a partial change of identity upon remote stimulation of his brain electrode: Electrical stimulation of the superior temporal convolution induced confusion about his sexual identity. These effects were specific, reliable, and statistically significant. For example, the patient said, “I was thinking whether I was a boy or a girl,” and “I’d like to be a girl.” After one of the stimulations the patient suddenly began to discuss his desire to marry the male interviewer. Temporal-lobe stimulation produced in another patient open manifestations and declarations of pleasure, accompanied by giggles and joking with the therapist. In two adult female patients stimulation of the same region was also followed by discussion of marriage and expression of a wish to marry the therapist.[64] [Note:6] BB 88, 89

Brain electrode research was also conducted independently at Harvard by Dr. Delgado’s coauthors, Drs. Vernon Mark, Frank Ervin, and William Sweet. Mark and Ervin describe implanting brain electrodes in a large number of patients at Harvard hospitals. A patient named Jennie was 14 years old when they put electrodes in her brain. In their book *Violence and the Brain*, [65] photographs show 20-year old Julia smiling, angry, or pounding the wall depending on which button is being pushed on the transmitter box sending signals to her brain electrodes. The mind-control doctors saw their patients as biological machines, a view which made them sub-human, and therefore easier to abuse in mind-control experiments. BB 88-91

Dr. Robert G. Heath, [66] [67] [68] Chairman of the Department of Psychiatry and Neurology at Tulane University, placed brain electrodes in a young homosexual man and fitted him with a box. A button on the box could be used to electrically stimulate an electrode implanted in a pleasure center. During one three-hour period, the patient, referred to as B-19, stimulated himself 1,500 times. “During these sessions, B-19 stimulated himself to a point that he was experiencing an almost overwhelming euphoria and elation, and had to be disconnected, despite his vigorous protests.” [69] BB 94

Dr. John Lilly describes the technique of electrode implantation. “Electrodes could be implanted in the brain without using anesthesia. Short lengths of hypodermic needle tubing equal in length to the thickness of the skull were quickly pounded through the scalp into the skull. These stainless steel guides furnished passageways for the insertion of electrodes into the brain to any desired distance and at any desired location. Because of the small size of the sleeve guides, the scalp quickly recovered from the small hole made in it, and the sleeve guide remained imbedded in the bone for months to years. At any time he desired, the investigator could palpate [rub] the scalp and find the location of each of the sleeve guides. Once one was found, he inserted a needle down through the bone. After withdrawing the needle, the investigator placed a small sharp electrode in the track made by the needle and pressed the electrode through the skull and down into the substance of the brain to any desired depth.” [70] NB 62

Non-Lethal Weapons

Non-lethal weapons is a broad category which includes devices for beaming various kinds of energy at human targets in order to temporarily incapacitate them, or to control or affect their behavior. Non-lethal weapons research has been conducted at universities on contract to the CIA, and has overlapped with research on hallucinogens and brain electrode implants. BB 103

KILL SWITCH

In 1991, Janet Morris, one of the main proponents of non-lethal weapons, issued a number of papers.[71] According to one paper, US Special Operations Command already had a portable microwave weapon. "US Special Forces can cook internal organs." [72] Another concept was 'Infrasound' using acoustic beams. Laboratories were developing a high power, very low frequency acoustic beam weapon projecting non-penetrating acoustic bullets. Already, some governments have used infrasound as a means of crowd control. Very low frequency (VLF) sound, or low frequency RF modulations can cause nausea, vomiting and abdominal pains. "Some very low frequency sound generators can cause the disruption of human organs and, at high power levels, can crumble masonry." [73] MC 176-179

Funding of these experiments began in MKULTRA. Subproject 62 documents "certain kinds of radio frequency energy have been found to effect reversible neurological changes in chimpanzees." [74] Subproject 54 was studying how to produce concussions from a distance using mechanical blast waves propagated through the air. Such a concussion "is always followed by amnesia for the actual moment of the accident." It also states: "The blast duration would be in the order of a tenth of a second. Masking of a noise of this duration should not be difficult. It would be advantageous to establish the effectiveness of both of the above methods as a tool in brain-wash therapy." BB 103-105

A confidential report prepared by the US Army as early as 1969 detailed the effect an infra-sonic system would have on humans. These effects range from disruption of nervous systems to death.[75] MC 199, 200

That such weapons have been used can be in little doubt. When the deployment of Cruise missiles at American bases in the UK was at its height, women peace campaigners staged a series of highly publicized peaceful protests outside the perimeter wires. In late 1985, the women in the peace camps at Greenham Common began to experience unusual patterns of illness, ranging from severe headaches, drowsiness, menstrual bleeding at abnormal times or after the onset of menopause, to bouts of temporary paralysis and faulty speech coordination. *Electronics Today* [76] magazine carried out a number of measurements, and in December 1985 published their report which concluded: "Readings taken with a wide range of signal strength meters showed marked increases in the background signal level near one of the women's camps at a time when they claimed to be experiencing ill effects." They noted that if the women created noise or a disturbance near the fence, the signals rose sharply. MC 201

The evidence in hand suggests that the technology to produce 'voices in the head' does exist. The Department of Defense has already acquired the technology to alter consciousness through various projects and programs. A patent discusses methods and system for altering consciousness. The abstract from once such program states: "Researchers have devised a variety of systems for stimulating the brain to exhibit specific brain wave rhythms and thereby alter the state of consciousness of the individual subject." [77] Silent subliminal messages [were] "used throughout Operation Desert Storm (Iraq) quite successfully." [78] MC 203, 204

A US State Department report suggested it was possible to induce a heart attack in a person from a distance with radar.[79] MC 172

By 1974, Stanford Research Institute had developed a computer system capable of reading a person's mind by correlating the brain waves of subjects on an electroencephalograph with specific commands.[80] The concept of mind-reading computers is no longer

KILL SWITCH

science fiction. Neither is their use by Big Brotherly governments. Major Edward Dames of Psi-Tech said in April 1995 on NBC's *The Other Side* program: "The US government has an electronic device which could implant thoughts in people." Dames would not comment any further. MC 172

The latest development in the technology of induced fear and mind control is the cloning of the human EEG or brain waves of any targeted victim, or indeed groups. With the use of powerful computers, segments of human emotions which include anger, anxiety, sadness, fear, embarrassment, jealousy, resentment, shame, and terror, have been identified and isolated within the EEG signals as 'emotion signature clusters.' Their relevant frequencies and amplitudes have been measured. Then the very frequency/amplitude cluster is synthesized and stored on another computer. Each one of these negative emotions is separately tagged. They are then placed on the 'Silent Sound' carrier frequencies and could silently trigger the occurrence of the same basic emotion in another human being. MC 205

The entire non-lethal weapon concept is literally a Pandora's Box of unknown consequences. MC 179

[1] CIA MORI ID 190684, pp. 1, 4.

[2] Hunt, L. *Secret Agenda. The United States Government, Nazi Scientists, and Project Paperclip, 1945 to 1990*. New York: St. Martin's Press.

[3] Simpson, C. *Blowback. The First Full Account of America's Recruitment of Nazis, and the Disastrous Effect on Our Domestic and Foreign Policy*. New York: Weidenfeld and Nicolson, 1988.

[4] Simpson, C. *The Splendid Blonde Beast. Money, Law, and Genocide in the Twentieth Century*. New York: Grove Press, 1993.

[5] Interagency Working Group appointed to inform the appropriate committees of the US Senate and House of the activities of the Nazi War Criminal Records.

[6] Available at <http://www.cia.gov/cia/publications/index.html>.

[7] Vannevar Bush's memorandum to James Conant, Bush-Conant files, Office of Scientific Research and Development, S-1, Record Group 227, National Archives.

[8] CIA MORI ID 190691, p. 1.

[9] CIA MORI ID 17748, p. 30.

[10] Sidney Gottlieb's deputy and the Chief of the CIA Records Center tried unsuccessfully to stop the destruction by Helms and Gottlieb.

[11] CIA MORI ID 140401, pp. 6, 7, [8]. [Document 140401 is the same as 148197 in the CDs.]

[Note:2] CIA files confirm that SI is "Subconscious Isolation" or a *dissociative state*. See, e.g., CIA MORI ID 144823, pp. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, circa 1951. SI involves procedures that create *dissociation* or a *split personality* to interrogate and control individuals outside their normal consciousness.

[12] CIA MORI ID 144700, p. 3, 4/26/52: "Drugs—Sodium Pentathol, sodium amytal, and barbiturates in general. Evaluation: These techniques have been proven to be effective and they involve little risk to the subject if administered under competent medical direction."

CIA MORI ID 140394, pp. 2, 3, 2/25/52: "Q: Have you ever had any experience with drugs? A: Yes, many times. I worked with doctors using sodium amytal and pentathol and

KILL SWITCH

have obtained hypnotic control after the drugs were used. In fact, many times the drugs were used for the purpose of obtaining hypnotic control.” [Document 140394 is the same as 190597 in the CDs.]

[13] Memorandum from ADDP Helms to DCI Dulles, dated 3 April 1953, Tab A, pp. 1-2 (p. 30 on CDs), CIA MORI ID 17748.

[14] CIA MORI ID 17748, p. 30. Quote on p. 33.

[15] CIA MORI ID 17748, pp. 2, 4, 6, 7, 8, 9.

[16] Final Report. Book 1, Foreign and Military Intelligence. Senate Select Committee to Study Government Operations with Respect to Intelligence Activities, 94th Congress, 2nd Session, 26 April 1976, Special Report No. 94-755 (Better known as the Church Committee Report). Also see Book 1, p. 406.

[17] Eringer, Robert. *Secret Agent Man*. *Rolling Stone*, 1985.

[18] Final Report. Book 1, Foreign and Military Intelligence. Senate Select Committee to Study Government Operations with Respect to Intelligence Activities, 94th Congress, 2nd Session, 26 April 1976, Special Report No. 94-755 (Better known as the Church Committee Report).

[19] For a summary of Ms. Rutz’ riveting story which includes revealing testimony from other mind-control victims, see www.WantToKnow.info/nationbetrayed10pg. She backs up her experience with declassified CIA documents proving the existence of the programs she describes.

[Note:3] Accuracy of memories will vary, however, mental health professionals, congressional hearings, and U.S. Government documents have validated the mind-control methods.

[20] Project Bluebird/Artichoke’s primary purpose was the study of special interrogation techniques—primarily hypnosis, truth serums and brainwashing. See CIA-1978-S421-1 Project MKULTRA, The CIA’s Program of Research in Behavioral Modification, Appendix A, p. 66, Joint Hearing before the Select Committee on Intelligence and the Subcommittee on Health and Scientific Research of the Committee on Human Resources, United States Senate Ninety-Fifth Congress, First Session, August 3, 1977.

[21] CIA MORI ID 17395, p. 18. ESP Research, 1961 and 1962.

[22] Condon, R. *The Manchurian Candidate*. New York: Jove Books, 1959/1988.

[23] CIA MORI ID 190527, pp. 1, 2.

[24] You can find a dozen examples of this in these footnotes. See footnotes 39, 40, 41, 43, 44, 46, 47, 59, 64, 66, 67, and 69.

[25] Mark, V.H., & Ervin, F.R. *Violence and the Brain*. New York: Harper & Row, 1970.

[26] Faden, R.R. *Final Report. Advisory Committee on Human Radiation Experiments*. Washington, DC: US Government Printing Office, 1995.

[27] Marks, J. *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate*. (1977) New York: W.W. Norton, 1988.

[28] Orne, M.T. The potential uses of hypnosis in interrogation. In A.D. Biderman (Ed.), *The Manipulation of Human Behavior* (pp. 169-215). New York: John Wiley & Sons, 1961.

[29] West, L.J. Dissociative Reactions. In A.M. Freedman & H.I. Kaplan (Eds.), *Comprehensive Textbook of Psychiatry*, pp. 885-889. Baltimore: Williams and Wilkins, 1967.

KILL SWITCH

[30] Janet, P. *Psychological Healing; A Historical and Clinical Study*, London: George Allen and Unwin, 1925.

[31] Gillmor, D. *I Swear By Apollo. Dr. Ewen Cameron and the CIA-Brainwashing Experiments*. Montreal: Eden press, 1987.

[32] Schefflin, A.W., & Opton, E.M. *The Mind Manipulators*. New York: Paddington Press, 1978.

[33] Thomas, G. *Journey into Madness. The Secret Story of Secret CIA Mind Control and Medical Abuse*. New York: Bantam, 1989.

[34] Weinstein, H. *Psychiatry and the CIA: Victims of Mind Control*. Washington, DC: American Psychiatric Press, 1990.

[35] Collins, A. *In the Sleep Room. The Story of CIA Brainwashing Experiments in Canada*. Toronto: Lester & Orpen Dennys, 1988.

[36] CIA MORI ID 17468 [pp. 1, 45, 50, 51].

[37] Other Mental Health Project Grants awarded to Dr. Cameron by the Department of National Health and Welfare were:

Project #604-5-11, The Effect of Senescence on Resistance to Stress, \$195,388, 50-57,

Project #604-5-13, Research Studies on EEG and Electrophysiology, \$60,353, 50-57,

Project #604-5-14, Support for a Behavioral Laboratory, \$17,875, 50-54,

Project #604-5-76, A Study of the Effect of Nucleic Acid Upon memory Impairment in the Aged, \$18,000, 59-63,

Project #604-5-432, A Study of Factors Which Promote or Retard Personality Change in Individuals Exposed to Prolonged Repetition of Verbal Signals, \$57,750, 61-64, see Collins, Anne. *In the Sleep Room. The Story of CIA Brainwashing in Canada*. Ken Porter Books, 1988, pg. 189.

[38] Collins, Anne. *In the Sleep Room. The Story of CIA Brainwashing in Canada*. Ken Porter Books, 1988, 258.

[39] Cameron, D.E. Production of differential amnesia as a factor in the treatment of schizophrenia. *Comprehensive Psychiatry*, 1, 26-34, 1960.

[40] Cameron, D.E., Levy, L. Rubenstein, L., & Malmo, R.B. Repetition of verbal signals: Behavioral and physiological changes. *American Journal of Psychiatry*, 115, 985-991, 1959.

[41] Cameron, D.E., Lohrenz, J.G., & Handcock, K.A. The depatterning treatment of schizophrenia. *Comprehensive Psychiatry*, 3, 65-76, 1962.

[Note:4] CIA papers describe electroshock techniques for behavior control, e.g., CIA MORI ID 146342, pp. 1, 2, 12/3/1951: “[The doctor] ... is reported to be an authority on electric shock. He is a professor ... a psychiatrist ... a fully cleared Agency consultant.

He stated that the standard electric-shock machine (Reiter) could be used in two ways. One setting of this machine produced the normal electric-shock treatment (including convulsions) with amnesia ... he could guarantee amnesia for certain periods of time and particularly he could guarantee amnesia for any knowledge of use of the convulsive shock.

He said ... that when this lower current type of shock was applied without convulsion, it had the effect of making men talk. He said ... it produced in the individual excruciating pain ... The writer asked [the doctor] whether or not in the “groggy” condition follow-

KILL SWITCH

ing the convulsion by the electric-shock machine anyone had attempted to obtain hypnotic control over the patient, since it occurred to the writer that it would be a good time to attempt to obtain hypnotic control. [The doctor] ... stated that, to his knowledge, it had never been done, but he could make this attempt in the near future ... and he would see whether or not this could be done. ...

It was [the doctor's] ... opinion that an individual could gradually be reduced through the use of electric-shock treatment to the vegetable level. He stated that ... amnesia could be guaranteed relative [to] the actual use of the shock and the time element surrounding it.

[The doctor] ... said that [another doctor] ... has perfected a battery-driven shock machine which ... is portable. ...

[The doctor] ... stated also that there would be no way of detecting that an individual had been given electro-shock treatments except through the use of the electro-encephalograph and then only if the individual who had been given the electro-shock treatment were placed on the encephalograph within two weeks after the shocks had been given."

[42] Tyner, Arlene. Mind-Control Part 1: Canadian and US Survivors Seek Justice, *PROBE Magazine*, March-April, 2000.

[43] Fisher, S. An Investigation of Alleged Conditioning Phenomena Under Hypnosis. *Journal of Clinical Experimental Hypnosis*, 1955, 3, pp. 71-103.

[44] Rowland, L.W., Will Hypnotized Persons Try to Harm Themselves or Others? *Journal of Abnormal Social Psychology*, 1939, 34, pp. 114-117.

[45] Estabrooks, G.H. *Spiritism*. New York: E.M Dutton, 1947.

[46] Harriman, P.L. The experimental induction of a multiple personality. *Psychiatry*, 5, 179-186, 1942.

[47] Harriman, P.L. The experimental production of some phenomena related to multiple personality. *Journal of Abnormal and Social Psychology*, 37, 244-255, 1942.

[48] Estabrooks, G.H. *Hypnotism*. New York: E.M Dutton, 1943.

[49] Estabrooks, G.H. Hypnosis comes of age. *Science Digest*, April, 1971, 44-50.

[50] Okita, G.T., Plotz, E.J., & Davis, M.E. Placental Transfer of Radioactive Digitoxin in Pregnant Women and its Fetal Distribution. Semiannual Reports to the US Atomic Energy Commission, Vol. 1, Parts 1 6, 1954 to 1956.

[51] *New York Times*, Feb. 10, 1995 reported that "about 9,000 Americans including children and newborns were used in 154 human radiation tests" sponsored by the Atomic Energy Commission.

[52] Welsome, Eileen. *The Plutonium Files, America's Secret Medical Experiments in the Cold War*. New York: Dial Press, 220-221.

[53] Church Committee Report, book 1 p. 395, states that one of the three principal functions of the Special Operations Division (SOD) of the US Army Biological Center at Fort Detrick was to conduct "biological research for the CIA." In early 1952, SOD agreed "to assist CIA in developing, testing, and maintaining biological agents delivery systems. By this agreement, CIA acquired the knowledge, skill, and facilities of the Army to develop biological weapons suited for the CIA's use." Church Committee Report, Book 1, p. 389. Many of the early CIA LSD tests were conducted at Fort Detrick.

[Note:5] CIA documents specify drugs, materials, and methods for behavior control, e.g., CIA MORI ID 190090, p. 27, 1/1/1976 (June 9, 1953). Stated goals include: Disturbance

KILL SWITCH

of Memory; Discrediting by Aberrant Behavior; Alteration of Sex Patterns; Eliciting of Information; Suggestibility; and Creation of Dependence.

CIA MORI ID 17432, pp. 5, 6, 7, 10/5/1954 (May 5, 1955). Declared objectives include: Promote Illogical Thinking and Impulsiveness to Discredit; Increase Efficiency of Mentation and Perception; Counteract Intoxicating Effect of Alcohol; Promote Intoxicating Effect of Alcohol; Produce Symptoms of Diseases; Enhance Hypnosis; Enhance Ability to Withstand Privation, Torture, Coercion, Interrogation, and Brainwashing; Produce Amnesia; Produce Shock and Confusion; Produce Physical Disablement Such As Paralysis; Produce "Pure" Euphoria; Alter Personality Structure and Enhance Dependence Upon Another Person; Cause Mental Confusion; Lower Ambition and Working Efficiency; Promote Weakness or Distortion of Eyesight or Hearing; Knockout Pill with Maximum Amnesia; and Make Physical Activity Impossible.

[54] USAINTC Letter to ACSI, DA. Subject: Staff Study: Material Testing Program EA1279, dated 15 October 1959. (Includes a reference to ACSI-SC letter, 27 July 1959, requesting study).

[55] Dowling, Kevin. The Olsen File: A Secret that Could Destroy the CIA. *Mail On Sunday*. 23 August 1998.

[56] 'Matador' With a Radio Stops Wired Bull, John A. Osmundsen, *New York Times*, May 17, 1965, pp. 1, 20.

[57] Delgado, J.M.R. Evaluation of permanent implantation of electrodes within the brain. *Electroencephalography and Clinical Neurophysiology*, 7, 637-644, 1955.

[58] Delgado, J.M.R. Prolonged stimulation of brain in awake monkeys. *Journal of Neurophysiology*, 22, 458-475, 1959.

[59] Delgado, J.M.R. Emotional behavior in animals and humans. *Psychiatric Research Reports*, 12, 259-266, 1960.

[60] Delgado, J.M.R. Social rank and radio-stimulated aggressiveness in monkeys. *Journal of Nervous and Mental Disease*, 144, 383-390, 1967.

[61] Delgado, J.M.R. *Physical Control of the Mind*. New York: Harper & Row, 1969.

[62] Rosvold, H.E., & Delgado, J.M.R. The effect of delayed-alternation test performance of stimulating or destroying electrical structures within the frontal lobes of the monkey's brain. *Journal of Comparative and Physiological Psychology*, 49, 365-372, 1956.

[63] Kreech, David. Controlling the Mind Controllers. *THINK* 32, July/August 1966.

[64] Delgado, J.M., Mark, V., Sweet, W., Ervin, F., Weiss, G., Bach-Y-Rita, G., & Hagiwara, R. Intracerebral Radio Stimulation and Recording in Completely Free Patients. *Journal of Nervous and Mental Disease*, 147, 329-340, 1968.

[Note:6] The case is actually from *Physical Control of the Mind*. J.M.R. Delgado. New York: Harper & Row, 1969, pp. 145-147.

[65] Mark, V.H., Ervin, F.R. *Violence and the Brain*. New York: Harper & Row, 1970.

[66] Heath, R.G. Electrical self-stimulation of the brain in man. *American Journal of Psychiatry*, 120, 571-577, 1963.

[67] Heath, R.G. Pleasure and brain activity in man. Deep and surface electroencephalograms during orgasm. *Journal of Nervous and Mental Disease*, 151, 3-18, 1972.

KILL SWITCH

[68] Heath, R.G., John, S.B. & Fontana, C.J. Stereotaxic implantation of electrodes in the human brain: A method for long-term study and treatment. *IEEE Transactions on Bio-medical Engineering*, 23, 296-304, 1976.

[69] Moan, C.E., & Heath, R.G. Septal stimulation for the initiation of heterosexual activity in a homosexual male. *Journal of Behavior Therapy and Experimental Psychiatry*, 3, 23-30, 1972.

[70] Lilly, John. *The Scientist, A Metaphysical Autobiography*. Revised 1988. Dr. Lilly was not the only one experimenting with this technique. In 1955, he and Dr. J. Roe, B. Mountcastle, and L. Kurger, Johns Hopkins Medical School; Drs. C. Woolsey and J. Hind, University of Wisconsin; Dr. Karl Pribram, Institute of Living, Hartford Conn.; Dr. Leonard Malis, Mt. Sinai Hospital, New York City experimented on dolphins at Marineland.

[71] The USGSC (US Global Strategy Council) has issued a wide variety of papers on the nonlethal weapons concept. For example: "In Search of Nonlethal Strategy," Janet Morris; "Nonlethality: A Global Strategy – White paper"; "Nonlethality Briefing Supplement No. 1"; and "Nonlethality in Operational Continuum."

[72] *Wall Street Journal*, Jan. 4, 1993.

[73] Morris, Janet. In Search of a Non-lethal Strategy. USGSC (US Global Strategy Council), p. 14.

[74] Baldwin, M., Bach, S.A., & Lewis, S.Z. Effects of radio-frequency energy on primate cerebral activity. *Neurology*, 10, 178-187, 1960. This publication was a result of MKULTRA Subproject 62.

[75] An Infrasonic System, US Army Mobility Equipment Research and Development Center, Fort Bellever, VA, 1969. See section on "Effects-Human." In a forthcoming book, *The Future War*, John Alexander, one of the supporters, forerunners and founding fathers of the non-lethal weapons concept, tries to legitimize the acquisition and deployment of these destructive weapons.

[76] *Electronics Today*, Dec. 1985.

[77] Method and System for Altering Consciousness, Patent 5,123,899, US Patent Office, June 23 1992.

[78] Letter from Edward Tilton, Dec. 13, 1996.

[79] Microwave US-USSR, Vol VI, July-Dec. 1976, p. 4, Office of Security, US Dept. of State.

[80] Mind-Reading Computer. *Time*, July 1, 1974, p. 67. See also Rorvik, David M. *As Man Becomes Machine*. London: Sphere Books, 1979.

[81] Ordering instructions for the declassified mind-control documents are at the end of the summary, above these footnotes. We received the CDs approximately two weeks after we ordered them.

† http://www.foia.cia.gov/sample_request_letter.asp

‡ See "MKULTRA Collection" with Internet search.

§ <http://www.wanttoknow.info/resources#mindcontrol>

** <http://www.wanttoknow.info/resources#summaries>

†† <http://www.wanttoknow.info/emailmk>

KILL SWITCH

THE MIND STEALERS PSYCHOSURGERY AND MIND CONTROL

“For many years, neurologists have measured the electrical activity of the brain with electrodes attached to the scalp . . . Now by implanting tiny electrodes deep within the brain, electrical activity can be followed in areas that cannot be measured from the surface of the scalp.” ...

Dr. West declared, “It is even possible to record bioelectrical changes in the brains of freely moving subjects, through the use of remote monitoring techniques.” ... [p. 98]

The man sitting next to you at a lunch counter ... is under constant surveillance—24 hours a day—even though there is no policeman outside eying him through the window and no informant huddling in a doorway ready to shadow him the moment he leaves the restaurant. His every move within a radius of twenty miles is known to the authorities. And a lot more than that is known to them: for instance, his respiration rate, his adrenal output, his heart rate. Thanks to the latest developments relating to psychosurgery, even his brain wave activity can be monitored by remote control.

This combined intelligence, when relayed to a central computer, will enable it to ... his whereabouts are automatically flashed to the computer. ... [p. 139]

But the technology is here and the possibility of implementing such surveillance is at hand. As far back as nine years ago, a dress rehearsal of sorts, on a very limited basis, was tried in Boston with sixteen volunteers, several of them borderline juvenile delinquents. Each was equipped with two boxes, roughly the size and shape of a paperback book, which were strapped to their chests underneath their shirts. One box contained a set of batteries and the other a transmitter that sent out signals coded to each individual wearer.

Repeater stations on rooftops or in places where these volunteers were employed picked up the signals, which were conveyed to a central console at a frequency range from 90 seconds to half an hour or more. Each signal, visualized on a televisionlike screen, indicated the exact location of one of the volunteers. ...

The concept of tracking parolees via telemetry basically originates with Dr. Ralph K. Schwitzgebel, who designed the Boston experiment and who has devoted much of his adult life to the study of behavior technology ... He has taught at Harvard Law School, but he also holds a degree in psychology and is currently teaching that subject at California Lutheran College. ... [p. 140]

For the parolee, as unattractive as the prospect is—being under constant vigil, with the police monitoring his every breath and thought—Dr. Schwitzgebel contends that it is

KILL SWITCH

still a more desirable alternative than confinement in what are admittedly some of the worst prisons in the world.

Dr. Schwitzgebel concedes that the danger that telemetric surveillance could be abused is always present. ...

These devices would no longer be as cumbersome as those used in Dr. Schwitzgebel's early experiments in Boston. ... [p. 141]

For instance, Dr. D. N. Michael, testifying before a congressional subcommittee investigating the perils of "Computer Invasion of Privacy," envisaged a surveillance system that would control mental patients when released from an institution:

It is not impossible to imagine that parolees will check in and be monitored by transmitters embedded in their flesh, reporting their whereabouts in code and automatically as they pass receiving stations (perhaps like fireboxes) systematically deployed over the country as part of one computer-monitored network. We may well reach the point where it will be permissible to allow some emotionally ill people the freedom of the streets, providing they are effectively "defused" through chemical agents. The task, then, for the computer-linked sensors would be to telemeter, not their emotional states, but simply the sufficiency of concentration of the chemical agent to insure an acceptable emotional state . . . I am not prepared to speculate whether such a situation would increase or decrease the personal freedom of the emotionally ill person.

The most far-reaching proposals for surveillance and behavior control may come out of the laboratories of such neurophysiologists as Dr. José M. R. Delgado, for many years professor of physiology at Yale.

Dr. Delgado, ... is now involved in the development of so-called brain pacemakers that on radio command will stimulate certain sections of the brain to bring about a predetermined pattern of behavior. ...

The famous neurophysiologist, who is frequently at the center of controversy because of his somewhat sensational ideas for the manipulation of brain function and his innovative electronic instruments with which to do the manipulation, spoke with quiet conviction as he pointed to a small object in the palm of his right hand. The size of a thick, fifty-cent piece, it was imprinted with purplish red circuitry. He describes the device as a "radio link for wireless communication between the brain and a computer." He named it "stimoceiver" because it can stimulate certain sections of the brain when it receives radio signals of what the targets should be. [pp. 144-145]

He told me that once the stimoceiver is embedded under the scalp, with tiny electrodes extending from it into the limbic system of the brain, it will go into action on radio command. This device, he said, now has four channels, which means that it could reach out to that many sections of the brain. "Sometime soon," he said, "we shall have maybe twenty such channels." Eventually "these appliances could remain implanted in the person's head forever—he could carry this instrument for life, if necessary." The energy to activate this device would be supplied by radio frequency externally and therefore there would be no need for batteries.

The purpose of all this? Dr. Delgado feels this development represents a great breakthrough in the treatment of a variety of conditions, such as pain, emotional illness, and epilepsy. It is based on the principle of having one section of the brain "counter" the activity of another section. "We know that perception, decision making, learning, and other activities

KILL SWITCH

may be accompanied by detectable electrical phenomena," he recently wrote. "We also know that electrical stimulation of the brain may induce or modify a variety of autonomic, somatic and mental manifestations." So why not apply this knowledge in controlling brain phenomena at will? By way of example, Delgado cites a situation in which an epileptic attack is about to begin. A spindling pattern of electroencephalograms is fired off by a defective amygdala nucleus of the brain, presumed to be the augury for such an attack. These EEG signals are picked up by the in-dwelling electrodes and fed into the stimulator, which in turn signals the programmed computer. The computer then orders the stimulator to stimulate the anterior lobe of the cerebellum, which apparently inhibits such an attack. All this takes place within fractions of seconds.

Following this logic, and accepting the technological feasibility of programming behavioral patterns, it becomes entirely possible for the computer to be used to stymie any kind of behavior not consistent with norms set by legislators or law-enforcement authorities. ... [p. 146]

Professor Fried says, "the subject *appears* free to perform the same actions as others and to enter the same relations, but in fact an important element of autonomy, of control over his environment is missing: he cannot be private." ...

There is another aspect to electronic monitoring which intensifies the insidiousness of this technique—it forces an individual to betray others with whom he or she may become intimate. Unaware of the continuous surveillance, they may find themselves confiding in the parolee certain information about themselves which automatically becomes part of the police record, once again in violation of constitutional safeguards to privacy. [pp. 151-152]

The People Shapers

The central figure was David Krech, a witty scientist who, until his recent death, cruised the hills of Berkeley in a Citroën. Krech first aroused my interest after World War II, when it was disclosed that he had helped run a supersecret training and screening program for would-be United States spies. Some were European refugees. All were stripped of identity. They were subjected to fiendish psychological and physical stresses. And at the end they were required to develop cover stories that would withstand Krech's ingenious, slashing interrogation. ... [p. 95]

Military planners have long been intrigued by the possibility of getting warriors, via some form of hypnosis, to perform with extraordinary strength and endurance in times of battle. The American military have experimented successfully with using "hypnotic couriers." The psychologist G. H. Estabrooks, a Rhodes Scholar who obtained his Ph.D. from Harvard, revealed that he was involved in preparing many such couriers during World War II. Codes can be broken. Captured couriers can be tortured into revealing their messages. But a hypnotized courier is virtually unbreakable. ...

For at least twenty years the CIA has been testing and using many types of behavior control. Hypnosis apparently has been included, sometimes in combination with drugs. *The Control of Candy Jones* by Donald Bain, which was published in 1976, is based on the CIA's alleged combining of hypnosis and drugs. Herbert Spiegel wrote a favorable introduction.[Note:1]

The beautiful Candy Jones, a former model who is now a radio personality, apparently served without her conscious knowledge as a CIA courier to various nations for a number of years. Spiegel ranks her as extraordinarily high in hypnotizability, so much so

KILL SWITCH

that she inadvertently goes into a trance on cue, such as seeing a flickering light. And her trances can be so deep that amnesia results.

According to Bain's account, she was friendly with a CIA agent whom she had known as a medic during the war. He became an expert in mind control. During a chat with him she complained of certain ailments. He gave her shots of "vitamins." While she was under the influence of drugs and hypnosis he reportedly split her personality. The second personality, Arlene, was a much tougher person than Candy. She was named after a childhood playmate. It was Arlene who served as courier, complete with wigs and passport. This second personality, according to the account, was discovered accidentally when Candy's husband, who was trained in hypnosis, tried to ease her acute insomnia by subjecting her to hypnosis himself. ... [pp. 170-171]

If the stimulation Delgado plans to administer is electric, the shaft is an exceedingly thin steel-wire electrode coated with insulation except at the tip.[Note:2] Dozens of such needlelike wires may be inserted from one opening and can be attached to the same socket on top of the skull, or eventually inside it. ...

Delgado has pioneered in the remote control of electrical stimulation. He began shaping the behavior of subjects while he was in a nearby room manning a push-button radio device. Now he can do this from thousands of feet away.

At first the sockets he was using to receive radio messages were outside the scalp. Now the equipment, built under a microscope, is the size of a coin and can be planted under the scalp and so is unnoticeable in a free-moving subject. Also, the device not only receives instructions but broadcasts back the subject's reactions. Delgado calls it a transdermal stimoceiver.

A very recent refinement, still being perfected, is for the information being received back from inside the brain to go to a tiny computer. This computer is being programmed to recognize abnormal brain-wave activity. ... [pp. 42-43]

With humans he and his associates have stimulated several areas involved in motor activity. ... He caused one woman patient in his group, when she was alone in her own room, to turn her head and move her body as if she were looking for something. This was repeated. When she was asked what she was doing, the woman always had a plausible explanation. Apparently, she had no idea she was responding to the electrical stimulation of her brain. ... [p. 55]

Lawrence R. Pinneo, a ... neurophysiologist ... at the Stanford Research Institute, ... has proved that you can think into a computer, and that the instructions you think can cause the computer to activate and move remote-control cameras and other machines. In short, the machines obey your mental instructions.

Pinneo started with the motor theory of thought. This holds that verbal thinking is nothing more than subvocal speech. With a number of subjects he attached electrodes to the area of the scalp near the region where speech originates. On command they were to think of a word, such as "schoolboy" or "start" or "left." They were to repeat the word in their minds ten times. All this thinking of words was being registered by a computer. It averaged out a recognition pattern for each word. He proceeded to build up a vocabulary of fifteen unspoken English words that the computer could recognize. He trained the computer to recognize actually spoken words (overt speech) as well as think words (covert speech). They came out much alike in the word patterns that the computer stored away. ...

KILL SWITCH

In his preliminary report Pinneo stated: "We conclude that it is feasible for a human verbally to communicate both overtly and covertly with a computer using biological information [EEG] alone, with a high degree of accuracy and reliability, at least with a small vocabulary." ...

This is interesting as an exercise in scientific versatility. But what would the practical applications be, assuming that 100 percent accuracy is achieved with a much larger vocabulary of words that were only thought, not spoken? ...

Perhaps the best practical use would be in surreptitious situations. [pp. 285-286]

[Note:1] Herbert Spiegel, M.D., was a U.S. Army psychiatrist, a professor at the Columbia University College of Physicians and Surgeons, and an expert on hypnosis.

[Note:2] José M.R. Delgado, M.D., was a neurophysiologist at the Yale University School of Medicine.

Such Things Are Known

How do you explain an invasion of privacy that is cleverly designed to sound like a common psychological disturbance? How do you explain to people without an understanding of human physiology that body movement can only occur when energy is converted to an electrical charge?

When you turn on a light, electrons cross a gap. When you start your car, an electric spark crosses a gap. While doing this you are totally unaware that in your own body the common dollar exchange of the human energy system, ATP (adenosine triphosphate), is releasing electrons and thus being converted into physical energy for all bodily processes and movement throughout the electron transport system. Every time you move or think, electrons stream across a gap between neurons called a synapse. This stream is like an electrical current and can be measured in the laboratory. The electrical field that you generate is very weak and is measured in millivolts and gauss.

The recent interest in Oriental acupuncture to prevent pain has helped lead to the use of electronic devices to aid the healing of bone with electrical current and to interrupt electrical signals that would cause pain if transmitted. The courts have defined death as the absence of electrical activity in the brain. Electronics, which has made this kind of monitoring possible, is the science of the development and application of devices and systems involving the flow of electrons in gaseous media and in semiconductors.

It is very hard to imagine life, any kind of life, as simply an electrical system. Kirlian photography shows the electrical aura around a leaf. Children are being trained by physicists and psychologists to see electrical fields around people. When we speak of people as magnetic we may be speaking a scientific truth. The magnetoencephalogram (MEG) is used in the laboratory to measure the magnetic field in gauss given off by the cortex of the brain.

No motion is made by the human body without raising the so-called resting potential of nerve cells to an action potential voltage causing work. Stored in the double phosphate high energy bond of ATP, electrons are released to travel through the nervous system to activate muscles and are measured in millivolts, 1/1000 of a volt. ATP is what makes fireflies light up at night and accounts for the well-known shocking behavior of the electric eel.

The electroencephalogram (EEG) and the electrocardiogram (EKG) are graphic representations of the brain and heart making waves. Recently in sports medicine, athletes have had their body patterns recorded photographically to show their muscular strengths

KILL SWITCH

or weaknesses and predict their probable degree of success. This method has also been used to predict the performance of race horses.

Laser, a gas medium, is a natural extension of electronics. It is used in industry, acoustical recording, message transmission, and to read fingerprints even years after they have been left on a page. It is also used to identify horses from their chestnuts, the callosities on their legs. As an example of a technology that has been under development for some time we have to give credit for laser to Uncle Sam and you, the taxpayer. The National Standards Laboratory is busy making accurate new measurements because modern laser techniques are so precise that they have made the old ones obsolete. Laser is so fine-tuned that it is used for eye surgery.

The brain has been under investigation since the 1800s and earlier, and its activity recorded since the 1900s. It should not be too surprising that all brain tissue is simply a transmitter of electrical activity and a resonator that receives vibrations. With the computer, different areas of the brain can be displayed on a TV screen and the various activities under study displayed in an assortment of colors. The nerve impulses themselves can be converted into digital code so that the computer can identify their source, and from the source determine which part of the human nervous system is involved.

You cannot see human brain waves by looking at a human head. If that head, however, is attached in some way to a computer, you can look at the visual display and see the waves. Large, fast computers like the Cray outrace the mind of man when it comes to making concise, accurate, instantaneous measurements. Remote-sensing and over-the-horizon radars are commonplace. Remote sensing of animals without hurting the animal has been done. A powerful laser scanning can measure acoustics, density and the sound of electrical activity including the broadcast coming from the human ear. The human ear not only receives, but also sends out its own signals which can be picked up by a sensitive listening device like the laser. Once sounds enter the ear they interfere with each other and set up harmonic tones.

The range of human behavior is almost unquantifiable but attempts have been made. The basic areas, according to Maslow, that must be taken care of first are sleep, food and sex and I would add to this the need for emotional security. You are most likely to be stressed when these areas are attacked.

The effects of radio or microwaves of various kinds have been reported in scientific and lay literature. It is known that they can affect blood pressure, body temperature and mental states by reaching the hypothalamus through the eardrum which is in the closest contact to this master gland. We also know that astronauts can be monitored in space. We have already invented lenses that see in the dark and penetrate foliage and walls. Suppose that from a distance you could be influenced by electromagnetic or microwaves and be stressed by electrical shock, unexpected muscle spasms or contractions which could be made to occur in both voluntary and the involuntary muscles of your viscera. Suppose also that the intensity could be orchestrated to produce sensations from pleasure through pain. Suppose additionally that the stress is augmented by the surprise element and through subliminal, that is unconsciously heard, vocal suggestion. You, the subject, are in your own home, very possibly totally unaware of any kind of outside interference, until you are spoken to via laser.[Note:1] You might suddenly realize that you, a human being, had become an instrument.

KILL SWITCH

This type of operation, under development for some time by American intelligence, is called mind control. It is more ghastly than George Orwell could possibly have conceived because he never experienced it.

Only a few people understand the interrelationships between our magnificent technological and medical accomplishments and the military-industrial complex. These few are hampered in their attempts at communication by involvement in their own fields and by security requirements. Knowledge proliferates at a doubling rate greater than every two years. What is currently known is quickly dated. If you are working you are running to catch up. If you are not working you may be bogged down in family and community affairs.

We exist in our complexity, psyching ourselves with pseudoscientific games, psychological hype and a couple-of-hundred-years-old love affair with snake oil and cures from the fountain of youth. It is both the best of times and the worst of times. Our so-called freedom is mired down in bureaucracy, ruled by dated old men, and clutched by inertia, boredom and fatigue.

When I started building by case, I only wanted to prove that what was happening to me was technologically possible. Although my proof is mainly circumstantial evidence, it is known that anything which appears in the marketplace has usually been under government development for quite a long time before it filters into public consciousness.

Suppose you were motivated by a combination mind/body attack and suppose also that you were lucky enough or unlucky enough to have the intelligence and kind of background to sort the whole thing out. What would you do?

This book is an attempt to explain what I believe has happened to me. Others will attribute my account to many other things. From my point of view this is a true story no matter how ridiculous or neurotically distorted it may seem. I know that it can be used against me. I believe that the story line was designed by the intelligence community to fit their disinformation program. The purpose of the book is simply to present the possibilities. Perhaps the computer-age youngsters who will have to cope with these futuristic developments will not be as upset as I was.

Reading minds at a distance by deciphering the brain's magnetic waves has been a project of the Advanced Research Projects Agency [DARPA] of the Defense Department for some time. Many educational and research institutions have contributed to its success with government funding.

Published information indicates that DARPA scientists have learned to identify specific thought patterns through the interpretation of brain waves. These patterns reveal with up to ninety percent accuracy whether a person is: (1) puzzled or uncertain, (2) has made a decision, (3) is paying attention, (4) is observing colors or patterns, or (5) has lost concentration due to fatigue or boredom.

Thought processes have been linked to the computer through Artificial Intelligence [AI]. The autocorrelated Cray, which does one hundred million calculations a second, is specifically designed for problem solving and can carry out biomedical experiments with the computer simulating the human effects. It takes only fifty billionths of a second for an element of data to enter and leave its memory.

Using psychological interviewing techniques. AI has come up with programs which lead the intelligent human to believe that he is talking to another person, when he is actually carrying on a dialogue with a computer. Properly programmed, computers have the

KILL SWITCH

capacity to make judgments based on previous performance or experience, predict observed behavior, speech patterns and idiosyncrasies of thought. Computers also convert many types of signals to signs, codes, sound, music and video. Twenty years were spent by Russell Kirsch at the National Bureau of Standards' Artificial Intelligence Laboratory teaching machines to make judgments called "image pattern recognition." A well-instructed machine can look at variegated images like brain waves and make decisions concerning them. The marriage of computer programming and brain mapping has been published. To accomplish the wiring and plotting of the functions of the human brain was an incredibly complex task that could only have been accomplished by the invention of the computer itself.

It is known that enough work has been done with large computers and wave averaging on the transmission of neural messages in the brain so that neural activity associated with the word "no" and the word "yes" can be identified whether it is said aloud or not. Near the speech center in the brain is an area that prepares neural messages that drive the muscles associated with speech. Actions of the tongue and mouth and other muscles involved in speech are quite different for these two words. The patterns of nerve signals that go out to make these two words are also unlike. The patterns are formed long before words reach the vocalizing level, and can be read and interpreted in advance of speech by a computer. Pattern recognition computers will read an answer even in a completely uncooperative subject, or specifically read his mind if the thought is mentally put into unspoken words.

Speech is a motor activity which creates electrical signals traveling along neurons. With a computer, these weak signals can be read at a distance by a superconducting quantum interference device (SQUID), which almost completely eliminates environmental noise while magnifying the signal one thousand times over that read by previous technology.

To read the mind, wave analyzers must deal with the complex oscillations of the brain in somewhat the same way that a prism separates the colors of a beam of light. The components of this complex wave are isolated by electronic circuits tuned to several frequencies. Statistical averages can be determined from many readings of the mind under investigation. From this information its versatility and repertoire of adaptive stratagems can be assessed and plotted. This frequency analysis of tactics can now be instantly known and evaluated by computer faster than men can think.

Optical and electronic subsystems for spacecraft and artificial intelligence have been under development since 1955. Sophisticated biomedical sensors have been developed to use on animals at a distance without physical contact. The same equipment has been used to test environmental factors on human sensory organs. Laser is used in biomedical displays to pick up brain signals and convert them to sound and color or even music. With current laser techniques verbal and aural communication is possible between any two points on earth with video and via satellite.

The human head is a target which gives off a magnetic field. Suppose that it is capable of being picked up and locked onto at a distance by a supersensitive sensor many times amplified by optics. Depending upon the kind of ray directed at the head the symptoms and sensations of the subject will vary.

The carotid artery and the hypothalamus are easily reached through the thin wall of the ear drum by sonic and ultrasonic radio waves. Stimuli to this area can raise and lower blood pressure and body temperature. Sensations in other parts of the anatomy are similar

KILL SWITCH

to those caused by diathermy depending upon which brain signals are played upon. The subject is literally an instrument who may experience numbness, pain, pleasure, muscle jerks, spasm and stimulation of the sympathetic and parasympathetic nervous system.

It is known that thoughts can be pulsed into the mind through the nervous system by microwaves. This has nothing to do with the auditory nerves. Scientists who have submitted themselves to this process report temporary loss of memory and disorganization of thinking processes.

A subtle method of communication, laser, is used to deliver messages unheard by those close to the receiver. Depending upon the verbal messages received concurrently with physical stimulation, these technological developments become powerful tools combined with psychological techniques to shape, modify, direct, prevent and control human thought and behavior through interference with all known diurnal physiological patterns. Additionally, verbal messages may be delivered at the subliminal level during consciousness and during sleep, so that the subject is unaware that he is receiving them or that his dream sleep is being influenced. Words are emotional triggers. When the subject's emotional triggers are analyzed he is put in the position of having his thoughts and actions controlled by other individuals. This is mind control.

For at least the last four years every minute of my conscious and unconscious life had been invaded by investigators using state of the art technology. Recently on the "Today Show," William Colby said that the CIA investigated a device which could read Brezhnev's mind on his way to work. It is my contention that they not only investigated it but that they made it work.

People have asked me, "What do these voices say?" They say, "We want to be your friends." As in brainwashing they confuse the issue, and truth becomes obscure. Falsehoods seem reasonable. Indoctrination techniques resemble some techniques used in hypnosis. Like hypnosis they have a soporific effect, reiterating and repeating the same monotonous phrases.

"What you do is up to you. You've got to believe in yourself." This remark is made until you are not really certain whether you know what you want or can rely upon your own opinion.

Pavlov said that a conditioned reflex can be worked out for every stimulus. In brainwashing, brain-changing results. Damage is done to the mind through drugs, hypnotism and other means, so that a memory of what actually happened can be wiped out and a new memory of what never happened inserted. The Voices, by interfering with sleep in a subliminal mode are able to stir up old memories and influence REM Sleep by vocal suggestion. They interfere with normal sleep patterns by inducing physical symptoms which result in jerks, cramps, irritation of the intestinal tract and skin, and in sexual arousal or sudden and unwanted awakening when rest is needed. All the subject is aware of is pain, discomfort, nightmares, unaccountable physical symptoms, fatigue and depression. At other times, he is euphoric with relief.

As in brainwashing, the Voices try to install a feeling of personal satisfaction by making the individual feel that he is needed in some way. The message is combined with physical reinforcement.

"We want you to feel good about yourself." They specialize in uncertainty. You are always on an up staircase that is going down.

KILL SWITCH

“Dorothy, we don’t know what we are going to do with you.” This comes after occasions of rebuttal, rebellion and general recalcitrance. It may be accompanied by good humor or very unpleasant remarks and physical symptoms.

In the beginning, although one is not incarcerated except mentally and environmentally, the subject feels dreadfully tired and worn out. Returning POWs describe it as being like an automaton or going about in a daze.

The Voices use suggestive interrogation with desired answers implied in the wording. They alternate this with a barrage of denunciation and accusation to make you cringe. The more tired you are, the more it upsets you. They excavate the psyche for areas of sensitivity involving social attitudes, sex, marital and family relationships and feelings about self. Any vulnerability will do, and all the time, fatigue both physical and mental, is working for them. The more sensitive and reasonable the individual, the more vulnerable they are. Pushovers for indoctrinators are very intelligent but uneducated, especially the indecisive minds that always see some valid point in the other side’s argument.

The victim’s feeling is that his thinking is being directed. The brainwasher has been called a corticovisceral psychiatrist, able to interfere with the normal path that every human follows in life. Such a Voice directs or suggests to the subject a new route leading off in an entirely new direction. Conflicts arise in anyone between known emotional responses and those of which he is unaware and which are suppressed. No one actually knows or realizes what is going on in his own subconscious mind. The Brainwasher Voice is trained to increase such conflict and to manipulate these responses.

A great effort is made to arouse guilt feelings. Failures to meet a standard of achievement or conduct are used frequently as guilt stimuli. A decided effort is made to uncover normal failings and to take advantage of them in order to hammer them into a guilt complex. No matter how guilt arises, it is necessary to the Voice Indoctrinator for projection purposes.

The Brainwasher Voice continually attempts to sow doubt in the mind of the subject. Regardless of the strength of conviction of the individual so attacked, the moment doubt clouds the mind, it leads to tension. Tension is related to fear, and guilt also produces fear.

They asked me, “What do you want to do?” My answer was that I wanted to survive. Fear itself is an expression of unsatisfied need for survival and security. First reactions are nervousness, tension, apprehension and depression. They make the need for security and self-protection even more acutely felt.

Fortunately for me none of this was done in a really controlled environment, yet my privacy in all things was gone and I was isolated from human intercourse because nobody could believe that the Voices I heard were anything but inventions of my subconscious.

As a result of these artificially induced pressures including chronic fatigue, I was deprived of strength to combat repetitious suggestions and started to doubt my own thoughts and convictions.

Suppose in this condition that ideas are suggested at a subconscious level, not positive suggestions used in department store tapes to prevent stealing, but destructive behavioral ideas that will result in a poorer self-image, lowered confidence, both physical and mental, and atypical behavior. The suggestions assume a symbolic significance to the individual. Suppose the assault on the mind, body and nervous system is continual over a twenty-four hour period seven days a week. In this state one begins to live in a realm of fantasies

KILL SWITCH

and false beliefs. In the hands of Brainwasher Voices and technologists with Space Age Tools, anyone is malleable. An illusory, surreal, invisible environment is created, real only to the victim.

In a prison camp one can make up one's mind not to listen. There are other prisoners. As a laser receiving station in your own home and environment one has to listen involuntarily and still try to act normally, perform tasks, drive a car and do routine things as much as possible. The incarceration is real, but unseen.

The tools of mind attack include suggestion, mockery, fear, fatigue, deception and manipulation. As in brainwashing, the Voice sometimes begins with ideas and ideals with which the recipient can agree. The only relief from tension in this insidious process is laughter or drugs like sleeping pills and alcohol. The receiver forgets that he is the one who is suffering from fear, uncertainty, browbeating and the invasion of privacy in sex, toilet and social relationships. When he most fears for public performance and they let up, he feels grateful for no reason at all.

All these things are known to government psychiatrists and psychologists. The government in question is the government of the United States of America. The events I recount began on a May weekend in 1978. ...

Recently, through TV and the news media, there has been an effort toward making parapsychology respectable. A university in Great Britain gives a Ph.D. in the subject. The CIA has a program of "disinformation" which may be a convenient cover for scientists working on programs which seem to the uninformed to border on the occult, such as bioplasma research and Kirlian photography. Children are being trained to see auras when exposed to a box containing electrodes. As the voltage increases they see auras not generally visible to less sensitive adults. The auras can be photographed using Kirlian photography. Kirlian photography reveals electrochemiluminescence which surrounds all living matter. It is named for the Russian electrical engineer, Semyon Kirlian, who passed his hand through a high energy, high frequency electromagnetic field and saw an aura around it. Kirlian produced the first high-energy cameras that could photograph these auras. British biologist, Harvey Oldfield, has produced a radio device that displays the phenomena on a screen. British researchers are reported to be using high energy, high frequency beam of radio signals to monitor organic diseases. Hearts respond with radio signals in harmonic resonance which are picked up by the Kirlian "gun" and displayed on an oscilloscope screen. This instrumentation transposed to space could read vital signs at a distance. The U.S. government had information on this process in 1950 and released it to the CIA, Rand, the Air Force and other government agencies.

The CIA has advertised for people in psychological services and they are known to do other things besides prepare statistics. The combination of psychology, the basis for brainwashing, and human behavior modification, known as conditioning, and electric shock has long been a treatment for experimental animals and the mentally ill humans.

Various branches of the U.S. government are spending millions of dollars to finance Mankind Research Unlimited, Inc. (MRU). The goal of this corporation is mind control. MRU has done investigations of high frequency Kirlian effect photography, thought-controlled devices and psychokinetic switches. This is the device which permits a pilot to fire a missile by simply thinking "fire." Computers can be linked to the brain to recognize electrical patterns in the cortex word for word.

KILL SWITCH

MRU has a brochure describing its interests in the fields of biophysics including "Geopathic Efforts on Living Organisms," which are attempts to induce illness by changing the magnetic nature of animal magnetic field geography. Another MRU field of interest is behavioral science which includes the analysis and measurement of human subjective states by computer analyzed EEGs and biofeedback. MRU's pioneering use of computer analyzed EEG probably led to CIA-sponsored Brain Research Labs at San Diego Hospital, Columbia, Stanford and New York Universities.

MRU has investigated the computer analysis of psychophysical recordings including data obtained from EKG, EEG, GSR (galvanic skin response) and the plethysmography used to measure blood volume changes in the capillaries of fingers. These measurements would be supplemented with a recently developed apparatus for measuring electric field radiations from living bodies (System Research Laboratories of Dayton, Ohio, patent No. 3,555,529; 12 January 71).

MRU facilities are located in seven states. In Mountain View of Los Altos, California, MRU scientists have tested psychoacoustical transmitters that produce sound patterns termed "infra and ultra-sonic" that interact with brain cells and erase information. Studies have been done to develop software systems to record and evaluate biological effects of special environmental factors on plants, animals and humans.

Extensive studies have been conducted in sleep research of human unconscious behavior patterns with sensors to determine the effects of external phenomena on dreams. Interesting features of this research are the use of electromagnetic recordings of EEGs, ultraviolet and infrared sensors, precise weight analysis, and the correlation of these technical factors with electromagnetic fields, moon and planetary positions, and barometric changes.

C.G. Jung connected depth psychology with theoretical physics and the natural sciences. An examination of what he and others have had to say about "synchronicity" leads the scientifically trained mind to the conclusion that synchronicity is a trickster. The clown theme appears in the folklore of many cultures and is generally connected to a belief in the occult or supernatural forces.

UFO activity, analyzed by computer, seems to be some kind of scheduled reinforcement. If it is scheduled reinforcement who is causing it? Such reinforcement may have been the purpose of the odd aircraft activity which I observed, or it may have been to make me sure that humans only were involved. Most likely they were relay stations which have to get close enough to read the electromagnetic field given off by the human brain and body. When the CIA says that they cannot read Russian minds, it may be because they can't get near enough to do so. "UFOs" may act as relay stations by getting close enough to a position of the subject, then read signals and transmit them.

Left to himself, an individual may truly be said to be free except for his early childhood conditioning, and the values of his own which he has developed through trial and error which either negatively or positively reinforce his beliefs and behavior. Panic or emotionally upsetting conflicts can be evoked by stimulating conflicting drives. Under ordinary conditions, when two drives are unequal, the stronger suppresses the weaker. The manipulation of living creatures becomes possible when the means exists to activate and combine two different drives or cause confusion. Ordinary stimuli might be music and alcohol, and the added artificially-induced drive might be sexual stimulation with high frequency mi-

KILL SWITCH

crowave energy. The automobile and the home can be invaded with messages from phone or satellite. Traffic control by aircraft is common. Why not mind control or directed thinking?

Laser-projected Voices tell me, "You are doing what you want to do," but I am never free of their broadcast stimuli which I can feel, and microwave or ultrasonic frequencies of which I may be totally unaware. I cannot be sure that I am not really in pain due to natural causes. I only feel unaccountable changes in mood such a depression, euphoria or relief.

As long as I was unaware of what was going on, I could delude myself that my spontaneous activity was the result of the continual shifting and interplay of forces and ideas in my central nervous system. When I became aware that my environment was partially controlled, there were a whole new set of variables with which to cope. For me the price has been a complete turn-off of sexual fantasy affecting my sex life, and heightened, unpleasant nervous tension. I cannot pray, dream or aspire privately. There is no escape from the mundane, continuously present flat line of controlled or directed thinking. It gives me present and an unpleasant, nightmarish, repellent, at times falsely seductive, intimate, existentialist quality. One is traveling mentally from no-where to no-where. You exist in a funny house world with distorting mirrors. The reflections are partly real, partly exaggerated and partly transitional. My greatest strength has been a sense of humor and proportion. To fall below the flat line of directed thinking results in depression.

The physical pain which can be inflicted, and the depression evoked are the greatest strengths of the operators at the other end of the beam. I cannot quite imagine how they measure the distortion they cause except from a reading of verbal thought, spoken words and unusual physical actions. At the very least they can immobilize or neutralize to the point of death through the inhibition of natural physical processes, the use of pain, and disruption of mental activity. The amount of mental activity blocked by depression is hard to gage. Since the process began I have not often had a free choice about what I wanted to think, and even when I did, I was aware that someone was reading my thoughts either directly through computer printout or indirectly at a later time and doing programmed bugging. In any case, the human urge to think, dream, love and create have been frustrated.

One of the beauties of the situation for the perpetrators is that the victim has no records, tapes or pictures except those subjectively stored, written or spoken. The subject is in a classical neurotic, no-win situation. There are few dates, people or facts to report. Only a limited number of people in electronics, and our Federal government, can fit the fragments of circumstantial evidence together. Those who monitor equipment, simply monitor equipment. The blips, numbers, tapes and film clips that might result, are too removed from the flesh and blood, and transmitted over too great a distance to have any emotional meaning for the operators. They may not even know what they are transmitting. The only individuals to whom the object might be at all human would be a psychological behavioral result.

If my premises are true, the United States government is involved in a program to control behavior through biophysics and electrochemical control. In July 1977, *The New York Times* reported a fourteen-year program by the CIA intelligence services to control human behavior with drugs, electric shock, radiation, ultrasonics, psychology and psychosurgery. As reported in *Time*, August 17, 1977, Admiral Stansfield Turner, testifying on CIA activity said that there had been no drug testing since 1973. He did not say that the use of

KILL SWITCH

ultrasonics, microwave and electrochemical energy had been discontinued. It never will be, because it is the technology of both now and the future.

It is encouraging that there were difficulties finding psychiatrists to conduct experiments for the CIA. One memorandum reported that a particular psychiatrist might not care to cooperate in certain more "revolutionary" phases of the project. Another psychiatrist was described as having no ethical compunctions about being completely cooperative in the program regardless of how bizarre it might be.

The CIA investigated bioplasma fields or weak electromagnetic fields surrounding both human and inanimate objects and monitored the bioplasma fields of agents, according to *The New York Times*. I am inclined to think that they were training agents in receiving laser messages and trying out the reading of unspoken thoughts formulated into words mentally. They also worked with trained seals and otters in the well-researched field of ultrasonics. Humans hear in a range of 15 - 20,000 cycles per second or hertz. Any frequency higher than this is ultrasonic, and cannot be consciously perceived.

Newspaper accounts based on actual occurrences of unethical experiments show a procession of unpalatable events, exposed due to the persistence of individuals in freedom-loving organizations. Attempts have been made to present human experiments in a favorable light. Our scientific journals are replete with limited, but existing tales of experiments in which the individual was too incompetent due to mental incapacity or age to protest being used as a human guinea pig. The fact is that there are people in this country who have been subjected to experimentation both willingly and inadvertently.

In 1950, Army reports show that a cloud of bacteria was sprayed over the San Francisco Bay area resulting in cases of pneumonia. In 1956, the CIA and the Army sprayed an unknown substance in New York City streets and the Holland and Lincoln Tunnels as part of their MK-Ultra program. Between 1949 and 1969, a period of twenty years, tests were carried out with simulated bacteriological substances in the United States, Alaska and Hawaii. These are facts, not fiction involving Dr. Strangelove.

Under the Freedom of Information Act, a Church of Scientology group uncovered documents released by the CIA which showed that someone in this agency signed out a specimen of whooping-cough bacteria, *Hemophilus pertussis*, from the Army's biological warfare center in Fort Deterick, Maryland, on January 26, 1955 for testing. Florida state medical records show that the whooping cough outbreak killed twelve persons in the mid-1950s. The whooping cough bacteria was used in tests in Tampa Bay and near Sebring, Florida. Records show that whooping cough cases jumped in 1954 from 339 with one death, to 1,080 with twelve deaths in 1955, an increase of over two hundred percent. Tampa Bay was one of the three places that showed a sharp increase. The CIA now says that most of its chemical and biological files were destroyed in 1973 by order of Director Richard Helms.

In December 1980, the wife of a member of the Canadian Parliament and four other Canadians sued the U.S. government for five million dollars in U.S. District Court, charging that a Montreal psychiatrist conducted CIA-financed brainwashing experiments on them between 1957 and 1963. During this time they were given LSD and massive electroshock treatments to wipe out past behavior patterns. (The government track record on LSD is well-known through the publicized suicide of a U.S. government scientist, and the ensuing successful suit of his family twenty years later.) The Canadians were subjected to continuously played tape messages to induce new brain patterns. The plaintiffs contended that their mental

KILL SWITCH

health remains impaired as a result.

During Project Dork, the Army released a powerful hallucinogenic drug, BZ, ten to one hundred times more potent than LSD, in clouds during tests in Utah in 1964. Between 1960 and 1969, 362 people were involved. The tests were supposed to prove that enemy soldiers could be incapacitated by inducing delirium. The effects were measured at a distance of a thousand yards. The "volunteer" subjects experienced an increase in heart rate and blood pressure, increased blood flow or flushing, dry mouth and loss of appetite, hyperactive peristaltic sounds, weakness or tightness in legs, persistent blurred vision and urinary frequency. Except for the visual difficulties, the other symptoms were at least found to be reversible with adequate physostigmine treatment. Three-dozen individuals who underwent the tests still complain of aftereffects including the birth of abnormal children who are mentally deficient. The volunteers themselves suffer memory lapses, hallucinations and, not surprisingly, emotional problems.

Federal snoops have used one-way mirrors to investigate and record sexual activity in San Francisco. Both the FBI and the CIA have been used in covering up and disseminating false information.

Functions of the FBI or the local police who are responsible for protecting all Federal installations have been performed by the CIA, a violation of their CIA charter and resulting in actions against American citizens. CIA directors have always worn two hats as heads of the intelligence community and as heads of their own agency. The supra-directorship of the American Intelligence Community was enhanced by President Ford on paper when he made the CIA Director overall head of the intelligence community. At that time the Director would tell the Secretary of Defense what to do with his intelligence agencies. Military intelligence, including the Defense Intelligence Agency, the National Security Agency and the intelligence arms of the three services have more than five times as many people, and more than ten times the budget of the CIA and State Department intelligence service combined.

You should not delude yourself that Cabinet Officers appointed by the President have any real power. Commenting on his official title as Assistant Secretary for Defense for Public Affairs, Thomas B. Ross said, "I'm in charge of 300-plus people inside the building (Pentagon) and 3,000 public information people worldwide and a budget of \$50 million, yet I can fire exactly two people, my civilian deputy and my secretary." What we get for \$50 million is debatable.

The CIA's Science and Technology Directorate's annual budget was one hundred million dollars per year. The Directorate of Science and Technology of the CIA includes the Office of Electronics, the Office of Special Projects, and the Office of Computer Services. Overruns are funded largely by the Air Force which underwrites the national overhead reconnaissance effort for the entire U.S. intelligence community. The projected FY '81 budget included a research and development figure for the Department of Defense of \$16.565 billion, forty-six percent of the total national Research and Development budget. Obviously with this kind of funding, many universities and industrial scientists work for the Department of Defense. Many of our officer cadre have Ph.D.'s. They represent a technological-military elite and work with the university, industry, and think tank personnel; many of them who have security clearance are not allowed to talk to you or me. Our armed services have sufficient money and instrumentation for national defense, and unlimited snooping, at home and abroad.

KILL SWITCH

Several hundred satellites in space give us most of our early-warning detection of an enemy attack. Much of our communications intercept capabilities, our ability to intercept exotic new radars in space are also relayed by satellite. A hundred percent of our ability to predict the weather is now in space. Most of our ability to navigate submarines and ships and aircraft will soon be based there. Theoretically the satellites make it almost impossible for secret war preparations and thus keep the peace. This lack of privacy between nations extends to individuals.

The U.S. has more than a dozen satellites watching the Soviet activities, taking high resolution pictures, collecting communications signals and penetrating darkness and camouflage sensing heat and color variations. A worldwide network of antennae eavesdrops on Russian communications ranging from telephone calls to sensitive military radio messages. Giant radars follow test flights of missiles and photograph reentry vehicles as they land in the Pacific or on the Kamchatka Peninsula.

It has become difficult to know whether national defense is a defense or an offense. The National Reconnaissance Office, one of our country's most expensive and sensitive intelligence organizations, is likely to be reviewed by the Reagan administration. NRO is known as a black organization; that is, none of its work is subject to public scrutiny.

Despite a program lasting many years, U.S. intelligence complains that the Soviet Union might be ahead technologically and that the Soviets already have land-based laser capable of shooting down low-orbiting U.S. spy satellites. They fear that if the Soviets get their projected 11-ton space station aloft that they could put such a weapon in space.

As a result of this the Defense Department awarded a \$58.7 million contract for its own ASAT program to Vought Corporation of Dallas. The U.S. plan was not to use anything so crude as radar or infrared, but to put into space hunter-killer satellites by the mid-1980s armed with lasers that could vaporize metal in twenty billionths of a second.

Navstar Global Positioning Systems (GPS) will tell anyone who tunes in exactly where he is anywhere in the world. It has been speculated that GPS can eventually be used on anything that floats, flies, runs, walks, crawls, or slithers. This is a method which could be used now by any intelligence agency to bug an individual.

Another method of person-to-person communications through space without any intervening wires became possible when Elliot Gruenberg at IBM came up with a retro-directive oscillating loop for communications instead of a conventional transmitter-receiver. Called Synapz and manufactured by Broad-Com, Inc. of Cos Cob, Connecticut, its electronic mirrors in the form of antennas send a microwave signal back where it came from and leads to two-way TV without cable. Retro-directive arrays across the country would use atmospheric electronic noise to maintain a radio link with each other and to send messages from any point in the system to any other. Such a system, fixed on a human MEG could account for automatic feedback, plus visualization of any kind. Engineers reviewing Synapz for NASA say that it appears promising, and claim that even the experts are not entirely sure how it works. It was demonstrated to the Department of Defense and is to be used as a space link and alternative to the technology proposed by the Bell System to expand use of mobile telephone service nationwide. Somebody evidently understands very well how it works.

At one time radio telescopes and optical telescopes were not the same thing. Now we have optical interferometers using laser which combine listening and optical ability,

KILL SWITCH

plus lenses that see any wave length of the electromagnetic spectrum including infrared for night vision and smog, gamma rays, ultraviolet, etc.

Honeywell advertises their manufacture of everything from thermographic (meaning heat sensitive) body scanners to optical interferometers. The use of halogen compounds which have broad transmission capabilities for all types of things, from satellite weather monitoring to infrared night-vision systems through laser-assisted nuclear fusion for the conversion of energy. Honeywell's research is partially funded by the Department of Energy and the Department of Defense. Honeywell advertises that their scientists worked with both university and commercial instrumentation experts to develop a holographic and shearing interferometer system. They say that combined with their previously developed video digitization/fringe analysis system this new interferometer provides a unique system for non-contact optical evaluation.

Using an electronically powered radio telescope you have a machine optimized to detect extremely weak signals. Recently GEODSS (ground based electro-optical deep space surveillance) was completed two years ahead of schedule. GEODSS uses three powerful, miniaturized telescopes to scan the skies. The images they convey are focused onto sensitive photoimaging tubes rather than film. Using an outgrowth of military night-vision devices, these tubes convert the faintest flickers of light into electronic impulses fed into computers. GEODSS photographs rapidly several electronic snapshots. Moving objects between exposures are recorded by computer. Images that remain the same are erased. The information can be relayed by microwave and satellite to NORAD's master computers. GEODSS is an optical digital computer using laser, not integrated circuits, to carry and process signals. It performs in microseconds tasks that occupied photogrammetricians for hours, and can spot a soccer ball 25,000 miles up.

Magnetic observations by the Stanford Solar Observatory can detect magnetic intensities to a few hundredths of a gauss. The MEG (magnetoencephalogram) which records the magnetic field surrounding the human head is measured in gauss. It is not too hard to imagine that somewhere there exists a holographic interferometer specially developed to read the magnetic waves of the human brain at a distance.

Since 1973, the Advanced Research Projects Agency of the Defense Department has utilized the combined efforts of the Massachusetts Institute of Technology, New York University, the University of California at Los Angeles, and the National Aeronautics and Space Administration's Ames Research Center at Moffett Field in California to read minds at a distance by deciphering the brain's magnetic waves. The Pentagon denied the project was secret although a reporter was ousted from a meeting on the subject by someone identified as a member of the CIA.

The MEG (magnetoencephalogram) is many times more sensitive than EEG (electroencephalogram). MEG was originally reported in 1968. A computer search of the current literature reveals little published on MEG because it is undoubtedly classified in ARPA's (Advanced Research Projects Agency) computer network. ARPA controls and funds a computer network, ARPANET, which connects various educational and research institutions across the country. In 1972, twenty-seven institutions were joined by leased lines capable of handling data at a rate of fifty kilobits a second.

Searching for help and information, I approached an acquaintance who unknown to me had been a former member of RAND and a designer of ARPANET. He represented to me

KILL SWITCH

that ARPANET was a benign activity. He even has a computer terminal in his house connected to it. ARPA research information is stored in this "locked computer" and unavailable. Access to "Host" computers is controlled by an IMP (interface message processor). ARPANET is also linked to NORSAR (Norwegian Seismic Array) and SDAC (Seismic Data Analysis Center) in Alexandria, Virginia. A satellite link transmits NORSTAR real-time data to SDAC. There it is combined and correlated with data from other non-secret global arrays to achieve a composite picture and made available to selected ARPANET users, including the NSA (National Security Agency) with whom it maintains a direct link. Somehow "benign" is not a word I would use to describe the activity of this computer network.

All graduations of feelings and actions of which we are capable are provided by variations in the frequencies of nerve impulses and by the number of nerve cells stimulated. The brain signal is even simpler than Morse code because it uses only dots. All information can be translated by the number of dots, and the manner in which they are grouped. Communications engineers call this system pulse frequency modulation. The cerebral cortex is a resonator that encodes frequencies. To convert measurable brain signals or nerve signals to digital code for computer is extremely easy.

The computer can recognize approximately sixty-four phonemes into which the English language has been divided. It is reasonable to deduce that the computer is capable of recognizing the patterns these phonemes produce in any human brain.

Unlike the EEG, the MEG records signals primarily from a small area of the cortex free of the smearing effects of bone. This helps scientists pinpoint the source of electrical signals from the brain and to study the activities of the cortex. The MEG reads only the magnetic fields produced by nerve fibers close to the skull which are in the cortex. Any difference between EEG and MEG signals means that the source is deep in the brain and not cortical in nature. Both are necessary for the interpretation of thought and action of the human being. The MEG provides a map of the sensory homunculus or Brodmann's cortical areas through which the human anatomy can be targeted. All parts of the face, hands, legs, foot, trunk, shoulder, mouth and intra-abdominal area can be stimulated by electrical contact with the cortex.

Under ordinary conditions nobody around you is able to hear or understand your thoughts, but unbeknownst to you, every action, thought, and emotion, can result in the driving of the muscles involved in vocalization. The nerve impulses that activate them produce paths of electric potentials in the brain and muscles. The nerve impulse or electric potential is a miniature electrochemical explosion that travels along outside the nerve fiber as a vortex ring of negative ions.

The Departments of Neurometrics at Stanford and New York University have brought the EEG to a new degree of sophistication by using computers to remove artifacts, such as sixty cycle hum and eye and body movements, to compute the wave shape of the AER (average evoked response) to a particular stimulus.

Brain waves of volunteers have been analyzed as they look at photographs and are presented with true or false questions. The computer attempts to determine if the volunteer recognizes a specific photograph or is thinking true or false. Researchers claim they can determine when a volunteer recognizes another face by analyzing that volunteer's brain waves.

At Stanford, scientists are attempting to reverse this process and are attempting to

KILL SWITCH

transmit thoughts and instructions by playing previously recorded brain waves; thus, "You are programming yourself." The human brain and eye are also being studied with computers so that photographic process can be understood. "We are seeing through your eyes."

The difficulties involved in reading these microwaves became surmountable with the deployment of SQUID (super conducting quantum interference device) which uses niobium coils in liquid helium. It is a circuit capable of measuring minute quantities of magnetic field or flux, quantum by quantum. It makes possible the measurement of the smallest magnetic fields. With modern electronic techniques, environmental magnetic noise is almost completely eliminated. By using a holographic interferometer (acoustic telescope) optimized to detect weak signals it would be possible to read the microvolt print of any human brain, since brain prints are as distinctive as fingerprints. Each individual has his own characteristic pattern of shifts in frequency and size. Thus brain waves of one individual can be distinguished from those of another.

Electronic devices use ultrasonic waves to store and recognize electronic signals for use at a later time, perform operations that usually require a computer, and separate one signal from another. They also amplify weak electrical signals using ultrasonic waves. It is possible to do things with acoustic surface waves that are difficult to do with simple electronic components, i.e., recognize a signal of known form. Laser is so sensitive that it can actually "hear" and record the electrical potentials of nerves as they are transmitted.

The interdigital transducer converts the electrical signal into an acoustic surface wave and reconverts the acoustic wave back into an electrical signal. Acoustic surface wave devices can be made precisely and uniformly by photolithographic reproduction techniques and are programmable. Such a device recognizes any desired code or signal from among other digital codes even in the presence of considerable "noise," responding strongly to the programmed signal and weakly to all others. This kind of device is used in radar technology enabling air-traffic controllers to accurately pick out the unique identification signal of each aircraft as it comes within range.

Another silicon chip, IOSA (integrated optic spectrum analyzer) uses surface acoustic waves to convert processed radar signals into sound waves. The sound waves interact with light from a tiny solid-state laser and cause the beam to bend toward a detector array made of charged coupled devices. This amount of deflection indicates the frequency of the radar signal. This device is part of a telemetry or remote measuring system which involves picking up signals, transmitting them to a distant location for conversion into displays, recordings or comparisons with other data. Automated reactions to information received directly or indirectly may be programmed.

Wave analyzers deal with the complex oscillations of the brain in somewhat the same way that a prism separates the colors of a beam of light. The components of this complex wave are isolated by electronic circuits tuned to several frequencies. A statistical average can be determined from many readings. From this information, the versatility of the brain under investigation can be assessed, as well as its repertoire of adaptive stratagems.

If mind reading is to take place, this technique must be applied to all parts of the brain at once involving many analyzers. Problems for researchers used to be found in the fact that frequency analysis of tactics might come too late to be of immediate value. In the past, frequency analysis did not give information on how rapidly changing signals from different parts of the brain related, or which of suggested meanings would be the correct

KILL SWITCH

choice. Now, via computer, all this can be instantly known.

Suppose it is true, as some officials insist, that the MEG cannot really be read at a distance. What would make one believe that one's mind was read? Artificial Intelligence (AI) has been developing over a period of at least twenty years. Many scientists have been engaged in making it seem that the computer can think. At a 1980 meeting of the American Association for the Advancement of Science, Robert Wilensky of the University of California at Berkeley was asked if his program, PAM, had intelligence. PAM incorporates a sense of how people analyze and reason.

Does the computer augment human intelligence instead of interpreting and repeating it? To do this the computer must deal with a massive volume of data and requires selectivity or the ability to decide what is or is not relevant. To the group of programmers at the meeting, the human brain is theoretically existent proof against computers. Perhaps they do not talk to bioengineers.

The Cray, a large computer, has twenty to one hundred times the capacity of the smaller ones. It is different from machines that simply keep track of facts. It is specially designed for problem solving and can carry out biomedical experiments with the computer simulating the human effects. The Cray does one hundred million calculations a second. The human brain can only process five thousand bits of information per second. What kind of match for the Cray would you be?

The computer works by using an acoustic processor to sample the wave patterns of the speaker's voice at least 20,000 times a second. The information in the sample is digitized. A thousand samples are collected at a time and put through the procedure called discrete Fourier transform, which involves adding, subtracting and integrating waveforms to produce a useful synthesis of the information over time. This yields characteristic patterns known as spectral time samples, one hundred of them every second. The computer compares these with prototypes stored in the processor's memory. The processor classifies the time samples according to the sounds of the original word. As the acoustic processor puts them out, a linguistic decoder matches the sound patterns to the most probable sentence pattern they seem to fit.

Current "injection logic" circuits, (Josephson junctions) operate at temperatures so low that metal loses resistance to electric current. The less resistance, the faster the current flows and the faster the computer works. Invented by Tushar Gheewals at IBM, the circuits operate in as little as 13 picoseconds, or trillionth of a second. Roughly, a picosecond is to a second what a second is to thirty years. This is about the same as the speed of light.

Suppose you are observed over a long enough period of time for analysis of your thoughts, speech, prejudices, view-points, sexual peculiarities, and likes or dislikes of both people and things. What kinds of words would make you happy or unhappy if they were programmed by an artificial intelligence expert with the help of a psychologist or psychiatrist? "Bizarre," you say. "Possible," I say, psychological analysis has been a hobby for a long time.

Let's take it a little further, and let's assume the computer program is out to make you as uncomfortable as possible in the privacy of your own home or anyplace else. "Really, impossible," you say. Stop and think a while. It takes a little getting used to. There will be many things in your life that upset you or make you unhappy. You may have expressed yourself aloud to close friends in person or on the phone. You may have blown your stack at

KILL SWITCH

work or been talked about. In our society the walls literally have ears. Anything that vibrates can be read at a distance, even your vocal cords. Assume that for some reason you come to the attention of someone in security, either national or international. You could do this very easily by making an overseas phone call or a trip, or you could have a relative who is involved with someone in whom the U.S. government is interested.

Originally, when the harassment began, I wondered if the repetition of my thoughts were bounced back by a tape recorder. Later I realized that only a fast computer could transmit them back, and that no human could read it back so quickly over space. Human comment, however, might be inserted by an observer reading some kind of visual display if he was close enough.

Properly programmed, the Cray can project to you in any voice selection on the basis of the structure of your sentenced thought, which will reach it before you have really formulated it, and select either a suitable programmed answer or read back to you what you have been thinking. Thus, you may really be programming yourself. It may even seem to anticipate your answers.

What I am saying is that you have to transform the thoughts in your mind verbally but silently. Although they are unspoken, the muscles that drive speech formulate the words in advance, and can form an electric potential track in your brain that can be read at a distance by telemetry. Each nerve impulse causes a sound imperceptible to the human ear which can be picked up by laser.

A trained observer or observers can insert speech if they read what you are about to think or say. There is a lag time between the formation of the words in your brain and the formed thought, which gives the computer time to read part or all, or guess to a fair degree of accuracy what you think, and return an appropriate or inappropriate answer depending upon how you feel about it. At times they may even seem funny. Your electric potentials will always anticipate you a little.

The feeling that your mind is being read can be produced by a thought being verbally introduced at a subliminal level. At that threshold you are not aware that it is presented, but because your brain resonates, the thought is received and you become "conscious" of it. It is designed to be intense enough to influence the mental processes or behavior of the individual. It literally "crosses your mind." Next, at a higher sound level a Voice repeats the thought you just received without knowing it, thus consciously producing the sensation of mind reading in the receiver. You think, "they must be reading my mind!" What they are really doing is presenting an acceptable idea in your phraseology that you are most likely to be thinking while you are involved in a particular kind of activity.

Subliminal aural suggestion presented in a manner typical of your habits of thought and speech is hard for the receiver to distinguish from the original thought, original in that it really started in the mind of the receiver and wasn't suggested to him. Just how hard is it to differentiate between the two, the original idea and the suggested idea, is hard to estimate. You really have to be paying strict attention to yourself and what you are doing. You still might not be certain, because the presented idea might be typical of your mind set so that you could accept or go along with it. Should the idea just "pop" into your head and not be part of a train of thought you might be suspicious. Unfortunately, with this kind of thing, an idea can be "slipped" in. If it seems logical or fits your mood or mode of thought, you would not question it. Often it would not matter, but while using machinery, driving a car, or pilot-

KILL SWITCH

ing a plane it could become fatal.

Suppose you forget something and suddenly were reminded at a subliminal level. You could not be sure that you yourself remembered or whether it was called to your attention by an outside mind keeping track of your activity. You could be writing something and thinking as you write and suddenly write the wrong word. On re-reading it, you would realize that as you wrote it, it was "introduced." You might misdial a phone number and not be sure whether you made a natural mistake or one that was inflicted at a subliminal level.

When you finally realize what is really going on you are certainly going to be upset, at the very least. High "verbals" are natural prey for this kind of situation, especially if they can be observed. They express themselves well, often aloud in writing. Their thought patterns and methods of arriving at conclusions or solutions, their *modi operandi*, can be predicted if they are observed over time.

It is an extremely debilitating, nightmarish situation to be in. For instance, during REM (rapid eye movement) sleep when you are dreaming, ideas are verbally suggested to you at a subliminal level thus controlling or influencing your dream content. With a combination of subliminal, aural presentation of ideas plus the introduction or infliction of bizarre physical effects, real hallucinatory images and effects could be produced. The more emotionally upset you are, the more effective this kind of psychological technique is likely to be.

We used to worry about just being observed in our homes. In George Orwell's *1984*, every home had a watching monitor. It is now only 1981. The monitor has been around since the fifties in one form or another. The ultimate in mind control has become possible. We have the technology, the psychological techniques and the people willing to use them. It is not preventable at present. Fortunately, we still have time to protect ourselves from government experimentation if we are aware of it, because only the U.S. government has the technology, manpower and material to mount such an effort.

Once you are a victim you become aware of the possibility of suggestions to people; who you meet casually, or your friends, or relatives, or your immediate family. There is no one who cannot be reached in this way. You are never absolutely positive that what they say or do is suggested, but you may have strong suspicions when something they do seems atypical, or out of context, or something is said you have been forced to listen to before involuntarily.

In the future we may all have to go around wearing some protective device on our heads to prevent our resonating cortexes from receiving unwanted messages. My brother's suggestion of putting a bucket over my head was not too far off. The only problem with his suggestion was that a bucket is not sophisticated enough.

You know your cortical signals are read, because you receive obnoxious stimuli to various parts of your anatomy through the electrical stimulation of the cortical layer or your brain. The cortex has been mapped, and stimulation of the proper section of cortex will make you salivate, sneeze or jump with muscle spasms, twitch or jerk. This sounds like a grade B movie, but the script is programmed by the U.S. intelligence service with your tax money.

Cray II was in the works in early 1979, and the prediction was that it would do 500 million calculations a second, not just 100 million. A third, even faster computer, was taking shape in Seymour Cray's mind beyond this. At Livermore's fusion computer center a scien-

KILL SWITCH

tist said, "There's no machine that Seymour Cray can conceive that would be too fast for us." When it comes through his bedroom door some night he may change his mind. Perhaps with his security clearance he won't have to worry, and will be able to ask it to leave, with the people who are operating it.

Now, I know from talking to others that you are going to say, "But, it would take an awful lot of money and manpower to mount such an effort. Who would be interested in you, or me, or anyone?" The other, very human reaction is, "Who would be so mean that they would do such a thing to you?"

Both of these arguments ignore the facts. We have unlimited material and manpower on duty twenty-four hours a day. The second response about mean people, is the most naive. Read the newspapers about what we still do to our Black People; the reactions of Blacks and Chicanos to unresponsive government; or the treatment of women by the military when they have the temerity to enlist. You can still read about WW II concentration camp victims and operators. Current European court cases are testimony forty years later to just how "mean" mankind can be.

You should not be optimistic about civil liberties in an age when you are carefully examined by the Department of Education, the Social Security Administration, the Internal Revenue Service, the Department of Motor Vehicles, labor unions, medical insurance companies, credit companies, banks, employers, and all these facts are carefully stored in some computer to be regurgitated either by accident, or on purpose, when you least expect it and for the flimsiest of excuses. Add to this, money from the LEAA (Law Enforcement Assistance Administration) for police enforcement, intelligence, and so-called crime fighting; and you will find that it is only a short step from your police department to your bedroom, if some nosy Nellie of either sex decides to make life hot for you! Our society isn't open, it is wide open. If anything else is to be done about harassment and the preservation of privacy, then people must be made aware of what is possible now, incredible though as the facts may seem.

Among acknowledged gadgets are a police crowd control device consisting of a high frequency sound generator which produces about twenty-five to thirty-five kilohertz, coupled to a high efficiency tweeter and some concentrating baffles. This machine is something like a bullhorn. The beam produces severe nausea, pain, the desire to urinate and defecate, but more especially to get out of range. There is no reason why these symptoms cannot be produced from space.

In the home, sonic cushions that contain transducers which emit low frequency musical vibrations directly into the body of the person sitting against them are becoming familiar. The cushion has a separate power amplifier that hooks to any music system. Recently a popular magazine suggested that sitting upon such a cushion produced pleasurable sexual sensations. Teddy bears similarly equipped are used to lull babies to sleep.

Hearing aids are available which fit eyeglass frames to send vibrating waves through the bone structure at the back of the ear so that the deaf may hear. This hearing aid is the result of miniaturization involving an ultra-small microphone and amplifier. It contains transducers that transmit vibrations directly into the body of the person in contact with it. The whole device fits into the stem of the eyeglass frame.

Such microminiaturization in which a microscope has to be used to etch or photograph a circuit on a silicon chip is relatively easy for the layperson to grasp. Not so easy is

KILL SWITCH

micromasurement and sensing. One type of light sensor or photosensitive matrix is a composite of 10,000 minute silicon light sensors on a chip about a quarter of an inch square. Reflected light is focused onto the matrix. The resultant pattern of lighted and unlighted sensors is fed into circuitry for conversion into measurements of area, height, width, etc., which in turn are converted into a seven digit code. Field effect transistors calibrate to infinitesimal accuracy. Small built-in computers convert data into an audio signal or print. Recorded data can then be transmitted over ordinary telephone lines to a computer bank. Some TVs are equipped with a decoder to convert sound to print for the deaf.

Much of the technology that we are now using has been under development over a long period of time. The prototype of the modern mind-reader was developed in 1947 and called the Toposcope. It was similar to twenty-two small television or radar sets.

Research on the human brain has been made possible by some of the newer machines. The Sono Chromoscope is currently being evaluated at the National Institutes of Health to identify tumors and abnormalities. Cheaper than x-ray, it is absolutely safe and permits continuous recording of tissue at work. Computer technology converts one kind of signal into another to produce an accurate diagnostic color picture of the human interior. High frequency sonar is transmitted in blue, while low frequency may be a red dot.

NMR (nuclear magnetic resonance) tomography can map the progress of chemicals injected into the brain. The Gamma Ray camera, consisting of 254 scintillation detectors, each collimated to scan approximately one square centimeter of brain cortex is connected to a small digital computer. This, in turn, is connected to a TV where the blood flow level is shown in specific colors indicating what areas of the brain are active.

The whole body can be placed in a magnetic field of 450 gauss exciting body atoms with radio waves. Subsequent measurement of the intensity of the waves emitted over time gives information about the chemical composition of the subject's tissues. The time it takes for the atoms to "relax" after radio wave bombardment gives some indication of the cell's general nature. NMR employs no ionizing radiation and therefore seems safer than conventional techniques like x-ray.

The PETT (position electron tracking tomogram) tracks radioactive chemicals and forms a computerized image, providing the first direct glimpse of the brain at work, plus a more superior estimate of its condition than CAT (computer assisted tomography). The computer reconstructs abstract measurements into images played out in color on a TV screen. PETT scan can be photographed or videotaped while an individual is walking, talking, reading or thinking.

FOCUS (flexible optical control unit simulator) projects hallucinatory images directly on the retina of the eye. When the images are projected the subjects show the same bodily responses that they would by taking a drug. The subjects cannot tell the machine images from reality. FOCUS was developed at UCLA's Neuropsychiatric Institute by Ron Siegel, an experimental psychologist, who eventually hopes to control retrieval of imagery information at will, including that of daydreams, sleep, and hallucinations.

There is a common wiring and a correspondence of chemical and electrical properties in the human brain. Fever, delirium, epilepsy, syphilis, photostimulation, sensory deprivation, extreme hunger, cold, thirst, crystal gazing, swinging in the witch's cradle, hypoglycemia, and a variety of drug intoxications make the brain respond in patterns that are definable, predictable and explainable in terms of where they come from and how they

KILL SWITCH

were produced. This universal experience is probably what Jung meant by the “collective unconscious” and typified by symbols like the mandala.

Body functions tend to synchronize around stimuli that match them in frequency. Baselines from normal individuals have been established through measurements with the EEG (electroencephalogram). The EEG shows brain waves in both periodic and pulse mode. At normal frequencies, eight to twelve alpha waves occur per second. Breathing, heart rate, and the rhythm of alpha waves can be controlled to some extent both by the individual himself and the external stimuli such as lights and microwaves.

Radio-scientist Anthony Fraser-Smith has shown that the third rail of San Francisco’s Bay Area Rapid Transit and Washington D.C.’s Metro expose people up to 160 kilometers away to broadcasts of ultra-low frequency radiation from ten hertz to .001 hertz. Studies have shown that human reaction time increases at 0.2 hertz. These frequencies make people feel drowsy and produce changes in their blood.

With this in mind it is easier to comprehend that brain control by electronic stimulation is possible in much the same way that a heart pacer is used to regulate the heart beat. Both seen and unseen, heard and unheard wave frequencies can affect the brain and nervous system.

Some researchers show that theta waves predominate when an individual is involved in memory storage and learning. They also seem to occur in times of reverie, annoyance or anxiety. Animals which retain training best, show the highest levels of theta waves during training. Ross Adey, however, has shown that he can increase the rate of learning and memory retention in primates and cats by using a frequency range similar to the alpha and beta waves of the brain.

During hypnotism, synchronization of breathing, heartbeat and alpha waves takes about ten minutes in a willing subject, and is associated with feelings of well being. A simple gadget like a hypnotism wheel with a special strobe pattern produces a falling illusion and produces a so-called trance state. These can also be produced by sound waves. Frequency rates of these biological signals are reduced during a trance-inducing procedure. As the mind becomes fixed it becomes more susceptible to suggestion. Relaxation, resting and sleep are also helpful in inducing a hypnotic trance. While hypnosis can be a helpful technique, it is also part of mind control.

Other brain waves have individual, identifiable frequencies. Beta, delta, and theta brain waves can be separated in any brain reading because they all have different frequencies. Recently an N400 wave has been identified, so named because it occurs 400 milliseconds after a sentence had been heard in which there is a high level of expectancy about its completion, and this expectancy is violated. The P300 wave occurs in response to a sudden alarm or flashing light, and occurs 300 milliseconds after the stimulus. A P300 wave comes not from the cortex, but from the limbic system where feelings originate and occurs only as an emotional response.

It is my belief that all these brain waves or electrical signals can be read at a distance, and that the human brain can be both a resonating transmitter and receiver. Further, I am saying that I am being harassed by unknown parties with whom I have been in constant contact for about three years consciously, and I am not sure how long before that, while base lines of various kinds were being established.

I have chosen a time in our national history to protest that the National Security Agency

KILL SWITCH

is undoubtedly experimenting with some of its more exotic toys on an unsuspecting civilian population, when we are in the process of giving back to the CIA and similar agencies some of the powers that had temporarily been taken away from them due to Watergate. Our Congress is in disarray, revealed by the FBI to be both gullible and venal. Our country's petrochemical supply is being threatened by communist, and in the mist of all this, I come up with the idea that civil liberties and individual privacy are at stake in ways that seem inconceivable. Even in the best of times I would have difficulty getting a hearing for this kind of story.

Our present electronic laws are constructed to prosecute after the fact. There seems to be no successful method of proving harassment with this type of technology because there is no hard evidence. One of the reasons that it is impossible at present to prove, is that no one will admit publicly that the possibility exists. Despite the fact that William Colby mentions it on a TV show, and that a newspaper reporter was thrown out of a meeting in which well known Ph.D.'s from UCLA, MIT, NYU, NASA, and ARPA were specifically discussing a machine to read minds from a distance by deciphering the brain's magnetic waves; and the specific goal of which is to exercise control over the brain. Nobody will admit that it can be done. The so-called experts have their jobs and families to protect. Security agency employees are bound by secrecy oaths, as are many academicians. The professors say, "That's an area outside my expertise." Paul said, "I am not into lasers." Very few people have the kind of education necessary to understand the innate possibilities and dangers of current technology.

Anonymous phone calls are something for which we are beginning to find a cure. Anonymous broadcasts are something else, especially if only one person hears it. This is possible via laser. It is so precise that a whole new body of measurements is mandatory and possible.

Your most private and intimate bodily routines become forced performances and are commented on as they unfold. Your mentally verbalized fantasies become public property. You can be questioned at the subliminal level and started on a whole new train of thought. Thus the inserter of the question would have a very good clue as to what you were thinking about. You could also be made to change or modify your course of action, in other words "your mind."

The worst element in all of this is subliminal suggestion, with its inherent capability of conditioning and directing thinking; and through this, control or direction of individual behavior both now and in the future. Young and unformed minds are going to be most susceptible. The emotionally upset and unstable will be next. Americans need education and information to defend against this kind of technocracy. Most of all they need to be told the truth.

I can keep silent and avoid embarrassment, ridicule and disbelief. A policeman told me to ignore it. A security man told me that my life could be made hell on earth. The main inventor, a physicist, told me it was impossible. The whole thing may be simply a combination of laser communication and AI, which I doubt. Regardless of what it is, all Americans can be reached, anywhere at anytime doing anything, without attachments and wires. Communications have come at least that far.

Currently on planet Earth stone-age man and spaceman coexist. We have been coming out of an ancient jungle and have stumbled into a technological battle zone. What man

KILL SWITCH

imagines, he will develop and continue to develop.

Although you cannot see them, only sense them, the largest unseen monsters are unchanged. They are ignorance, fear and superstition. The biggest question for our time is: How do we best adapt to this recent step in communications, and at the same time preserve the values we cherish?

[Note:1] There were probably additional methods and instruments. Sources familiar with the situation indicated that the author was implanted with devices and was unaware of it.

BLUEBIRD: Deliberate Creation of Multiple Personality by Psychiatrists

Overview

BLUEBIRD is the cryptonym for a CIA mind control program that ran from 1951 to 1953. Other mind control programs include ARTICHOKE, MKULTRA, and MKSEARCH. The purpose of the book *BLUEBIRD* is to prove that the military and the CIA have been creating "Manchurian Candidates" for operational use since the second world war. This fact is described repeatedly by G.H. Estabrooks and in CIA documents on BLUEBIRD and ARTICHOKE obtained through the Freedom of Information Act.

By research at the medical school library, ordering out-of-print books, and requests filed through the Freedom of Information Act, Dr. Ross has built up *compelling* documentation of the fact that the CIA and military intelligence agencies have been creating multiple personality experimentally, and using these subjects in courier and infiltration operations.

The Appendices to *BLUEBIRD* provide full proof of the fact that the "Manchurian Candidate" is real, and has been created by the CIA and military. The documented mind control research includes putting brain electrodes in children as young as 11 years old and controlling their behavior from remote transmitters; giving 150 mcg of LSD per day to children age 7-11 for weeks and months at a time; building safe houses where CIA personnel watched prostitutes turn tricks with customers — the prostitutes gave their customers LSD without the customers' knowledge; wiping out memories with electric shock, and using animals with implanted brain electrodes as delivery systems for chemical and biological weapons.

A complete listing of MKULTRA Subprojects, correspondence between Estabrooks and J. Edgar Hoover and other documents are included in the Appendices to *BLUEBIRD*. [Note:1]

Synopsis

In *BLUEBIRD: Deliberate Creation of Multiple Personality by Psychiatrists*, Dr. Ross provides proof, based on 15,000 pages of documents obtained from the CIA under the Freedom of Information Act, that the "Manchurian Candidate" is fact, not fiction. He describes the experiments conducted by psychiatrists to create amnesia, new identities, hypnotic access codes, and new memories in the minds of experimental subjects.

The funding of the experiments by the CIA, Army, Navy, and Air Force is proven from CIA documents and the doctors' own publications. *BLUEBIRD* proves that there was extensive political abuse of psychiatry in North America throughout the second half of the twentieth century, perpetrated not by a few renegade doctors, but by leading psychiatrists, psychologists, pharmacologists, neurosurgeons and medical schools. [Note:2]

KILL SWITCH

BLUEBIRD and ARTICHOKE

BLUEBIRD was approved by Roscoe Hillenkoetter, Director of the CIA, on April 20, 1950. In August 1951, the Project was renamed ARTICHOKE. The Korean War began in June, 1950. The CIA already had mind control programs in operation prior to the Korean War, therefore such programs were not a defensive reaction to the activities of the North Koreans, Russians, or Communist Chinese during the Korean War, as claimed by CIA career officer Edward Hunter.¹³⁶ BLUEBIRD and ARTICHOKE included a great deal of work on the creation of amnesia, hypnotic couriers and the Manchurian Candidate.⁶⁶ 184

The Manchurian Candidate is generally regarded as fiction. However, ARTICHOKE documents prove that hypnotic couriers functioned effectively in real-life simulations conducted by the CIA in the early 1950's. The degree to which such individuals were used in actual operations is still classified. Physicians were an integral part of the ARTICHOKE Team that conducted interrogations on U.S. soil. These interrogations were in part designed to detect mind-controlled agents of other Agencies and governments. The documents establish that Manchurian Candidate-related methods were part of CIA counter-intelligence work in the 1950's.

The basic premise of the book *The Manchurian Candidate*⁶⁶ is that a group of American POWs in the Korean War is brainwashed while crossing through Manchuria to freedom. They arrive back in the U.S. amnesic for the period of brainwashing and one of them has been programmed to be an assassin. His target is a candidate for President of the United States. His handlers at home control him with a hypnotically implanted trigger, a particular playing card.

A MEMORANDUM dated 15 July 1953 from the Chief, Bio-Chemistry & Pharmacology Branch, Medicine Division OSI [Office of Scientific Intelligence] to the Chief, Technical Branch, SO [Special Operations] includes a paragraph summarizing discussions about recently returned Korean War POWs who had been brainwashed:

Following this [whited out] commented on the very interesting angle that interrogations of the individuals who had come out of North Korea across the Soviet Union to freedom recently had apparently had a "blank" period or period of disorientation while passing through a special zone in Manchuria. [Whited out] pointed out that this had occurred in all individuals in the party after they had had their first full meal and their first coffee on the way to freedom. [Whited out] pointed out that [whited out] was attempting to secure further confirmatory facts in this matter since drugging was indicated.

In another memo dated 17 September 1953 the Scientific Adviser, Scientific Intelligence states that, "Detailed and valuable information has been obtained by [whited out] on "Big Switch" as a result of his interrogations of POW's on the return voyage from Korea." "Big Switch" was the code name for a prisoner exchange program during the Korean War; repatriated American prisoners of war released in Big Switch were interviewed by American psychiatrists including Robert Lifton,¹⁶³ Lifton writes:

... I arrived in Hong Kong in late January, 1954. Just a few months before, I had taken part in the psychiatric evaluation of repatriated American prisoners of war during the exchange operations in Korea known as Big Switch: I had then accompanied a group of these men on the troopship back to the United States.

It appears that American psychiatrists including or known to Robert Lifton, Louis Jolyon West and Margaret Singer must have been knowledgeable about the Chinese Man-

KILL SWITCH

Manchurian Candidate program by 1953.

According to my definition, the Manchurian Candidate is an experimentally created dissociative identity disorder that meets the following four criteria:

- Created deliberately
- A new identity is implanted
- Amnesia barriers are created
- Used in simulated or actual operations

BLUEBIRD and ARTICHOKE were administered in a compartmented fashion. The details of the Programs were kept secret even from other personnel within the CIA. When asked why LSD research done under ARTICHOKE was hidden from the CIA Committee in charge of ARTICHOKE, Sydney Gottlieb, 1977, (page 410), Chief, Medical Staff, Technical Services Division, CIA responded, "I imagine the only reason would have been concern for broadening awareness of its existence."

The creation of Manchurian Candidates by the CIA was probably not subject to the usual chain of operational command. Such breaches in the chain of command are an inherent structural risk of the compartmented nature of intelligence agencies. For security reasons, CIA operations including internal counter-intelligence investigations¹⁸² are routinely kept secret from other divisions of the CIA. Although effective intelligence work could not be carried out without compartmentation, the structure makes it easier for CIA officers in charge of mind control to contract with unethical doctors.

Loss of central control occurred in the CIA's OPERATION CHAOS and probably in BLUEBIRD and ARTICHOKE. OPERATION CHAOS was a CIA program designed to collect information on foreign influence on student and civil unrest in the United States. It was created by the Director of the CIA in 1967 and ran until 1974. CHAOS developed files on 7,200 American citizens, and the files included mention of a total of 300,000 named U.S. citizens and organizations, all of which were entered into a computerized index (Rockefeller, 1975).

CHAOS intelligence generated 3,500 internal CIA memoranda, 3,000 memoranda for the FBI, and 37 for distribution to the White House and other top levels of government. The maximum CHAOS staff was 52 persons in 1971. Informants were recruited from student and dissident groups, and were instructed to infiltrate such groups in the United States.

According to the Report to the President by the Commission on CIA Activities (Rockefeller, 1975):

The isolation of Operation CHAOS within the CIA and its independence from supervision by the regular chain of command within the clandestine services made it possible for the activities of the Operation to stray over the bounds of the Agency's authority without the knowledge of senior officials. The absence of any regular review of these activities prevented timely correction of such missteps as did occur:

In other instances, senior administrators within the CIA participated in plausible denial and other disinformation and cover-up strategies concerning CIA operations run on U.S. soil. Like the activities of the ARTICHOKE Team within the United States, such operations had to be kept secret because the CIA was prohibited by its Charter from carrying out operations in the United States.

In 1952, the CIA began to survey mail between the U.S. and the Soviet Union at a New York postal facility. In 1953 it began to open and read mail (Rockefeller, 1975). The Program

KILL SWITCH

was approved by the Director of the CIA and at least three Postmasters General, Summerfield, Day, and Blount, as well as by Attorney General Mitchell. From 1958 to 1973, the FBI received 57,000 pieces of mail from the CIA in this Program. In the final year of the operation, out of 4,350,000 pieces of mail between the U.S. and Soviet Union, the CIA examined the outside of 2,300,000 pieces, photographed 33,000 and opened 8,700.

Smaller mail intercept operations were run in San Francisco from 1969 to 1971, in Hawaii from 1954 to 1955, and in New Orleans in 1957. The CIA's strategy for dealing with leaks about the Program is described in a February 1, 1962 memo sent from the Deputy Chief of Counterintelligence to the Director of Security:

Unless the charge is supported by the presentation of interior items from the project, it should be relatively easy to "hush up" the entire affair; or to explain that it consists of legal mail cover activities conducted by the Post Office at the request of authorized Federal Agencies. Under the most unfavorable circumstances, including the support of charges with interior items from the project it might become necessary, after the matter has cooled off during an extended period of investigation, to find a scapegoat to blame for unauthorized tampering with the mails.

The BLUEBIRD and ARTICHOKE documents available through the Freedom of Information Act, like all such documents, are heavily redacted. A great deal of text has been whited out, and other documents must still be entirely classified. Nevertheless, the available documents prove that ARTICHOKE operations involving physicians were carried out on U.S. soil at least until the mid-1950's.

A memo to the Director of Security of the CIA is entitled a "report of ARTICHOKE Operations, 20 to 23 January, 1955" (see Appendix B). Paragraph two of the memo states that "these operations were the first ARTICHOKE operations undertaken in the United States."

The operation described in the memo involved the interrogation of a foreign national CIA agent who "speaks and understands English quite well." The Subject had previously provided high quality intelligence through penetration actions carried out in an unspecified country. The purpose of the ARTICHOKE Team's interrogation was to provide confirmation that the Subject was not a double agent.

The ARTICHOKE Team must have been under the command of James Angleton, who was Chief of the CIA Counterintelligence Staff from December 1954, until 1974. Angleton was also involved in MKULTRA, as described in an article in the February 18, 1979 Wilmington Sunday News Journal entitled "UD prof helps concoct 'mind control' potions." The article focuses on MKULTRA Subproject 51 contractor James Moore, a chemistry professor at the University of Delaware, but mentions Angleton's involvement in MKULTRA. Angleton's name appears in "a list of all persons who have been briefed on "Bluebird"," in a 2 July 1951 MEMORANDUM; the list also identifies three future Directors of the CIA, Allen Dulles, Richard Helms and William Webster.

The ARTICHOKE interrogation was conducted in a safe house in the remote countryside staffed by security-cleared personnel. It was conducted under medical cover of a routine physical and psychological assessment. The Subject was transported to the safe house in a "covert car" which picked him up at a secure location. At the safe house he was given a conventional interrogation and then some whiskey. This was followed by two grams of phenobarbital, which put him to sleep.

The next day a lie detector test was given, and the Subject was given intravenous

KILL SWITCH

chemicals. Following the chemically-assisted interrogation, according to CIA terminology, the "ARTICHOKE techniques were applied" in three stages:

A false memory was introduced into the Subject's mind without his conscious control of the process, which took 15 to 20 minutes. The procedure was repeated, this time taking 40 to 45 minutes. The procedure was repeated again with interrogation added.

The ARTICHOKE Team used medications including barbiturates, amphetamines and scopolamine, hypnosis, interrogation, and the deliberate introduction of false memories of the procedure. The Subject was told that part of what he remembered was actually a dream. The ARTICHOKE Team concluded that the procedure was successful; "the subject, although not having specific amnesia for the ARTICHOKE treatment, nevertheless was completely confused and memory was vague and faulty."

CIA career officer Edward Hunter¹³⁶ described the implantation of false memories by Chinese intelligence agencies in his book *Brain-Washing in Red China*. He wrote (page 11):

The Chinese masses were right in coining the phrases brain-washing and brain-changing. There is a difference between the two. Brain-washing is indoctrination, a comparatively simple procedure, but brain-changing is immeasurably more sinister and complicated. Whereas you merely have to undergo a brain-cleansing to rid yourself of "imperialist poisons," in order to have a brain changing you must empty your mind of old ideas and recollections... in a brain-changing, a person's specific recollections of some past period in his life are wiped away, as completely as if they never happened. Then, to fill these gaps in memory, the ideas which the authorities want this person to "remember" are put into his brain. Hypnotism and drugs and cunning pressures that plague the body and do not necessarily require marked physical violence are required for a brain-changing. China evidently was not so "advanced" as yet. She was using brain-washing, and when that didn't work, resorted to the simpler purge system. But in time she will use the brain-changing system too.

Since, according to Hunter, the Communist Chinese had not yet perfected the methods used by the CIA's ARTICHOKE Team, it is evident that his knowledge of these methods was derived from their use by American doctors.

An interrogation involving ARTICHOKE techniques and physicians was conducted on Russian defector Yuriy Nosenko under James Angleton's administration.¹⁸² Angleton suspected Nosenko of being a triple agent. A triple agent is someone who pretends to be a defector or double agent but is actually working for his original, native country.

Nosenko was born in Nikolayev, Ukraine in 1927. He was trained by Russian Naval Intelligence before being transferred to MVD, the precursor of the KGB, in 1953. On June 5, 1962 Nosenko made secret contact with a U.S. State Department official in Geneva, a meeting which resulted in his being recruited by the CIA as a mole. Nosenko provided a rich fund of intelligence information to the CIA until he defected in February, 1964.

Angleton thought that Nosenko had been feeding the CIA a little bit of real information in order to cover up the fact that he was a triple agent. In late March, 1964 a decision was made to apply ARTICHOKE-like techniques to him. Whether these were administered under ARTICHOKE or some other still-classified cryptonym is unknown.

Nosenko was strip-searched, given a lie detector test and then placed in solitary confinement in a 10 foot by 10 foot cell in a safe house in Washington for sixteen months.

KILL SWITCH

One of his interrogators was Dr. John Gittinger, the lead psychologist for MKULTRA, who describes taking LSD himself in a documentary film.²¹⁰ From April 4, 1964 to August 13, 1965, Nosenko was held at the safe house and subjected to repeated interrogations.

From August 14, 1965 to October 28, 1967 Nosenko was held in solitary confinement in a tiny, windowless concrete cell at the CIA's training facility at Camp Peary, Virginia. He was subjected to sleep and food deprivation and there was neither heat nor air conditioning in his cell. He was monitored by closed-circuit television 24 hours a day.

In an interview with Tom Mangold¹⁷⁷ on June 12, 1990, John Gittinger described being asked by CIA personnel to administer LSD to Nosenko. Gittinger claimed he did not do so. Nosenko, however, described being drugged on a number of occasions at Camp Peary. Due to administrative changes inside the CIA, Nosenko was released from confinement in 1967 and later became a U.S. citizen.

Whoever the Nosenko interrogators were, and whatever cryptonym they worked under, it is clear that physicians and mind control specialists were directly involved. It is also clear that the actions of these physicians were unethical and inhumane. The BLUEBIRD and ARTICHOKE documents prove that the Nosenko interrogation was not an isolated incident. If such an interrogation was conducted by physicians in a third world country it would be decried as a human rights violation and a political abuse of psychiatry. We have been lax as a medical profession in applying the same standards at home.

The need for applying the ARTICHOKE technique to Nosenko can be inferred from an undated document entitled, "IMPLICATIONS OF SOVIET SUPPLEMENTS TO STANDARD PSYCHIATRIC INTERROGATION", which includes the statement that:

Hypnotism appears to have been used in some cases by the Soviets. It has the possibilities of (a) lowering resistance against telling the truth and (b) inducing specific action or behavior in the subject. In certain cases it would be possible for a skilled Russian operator to bring about condition (a) yet leave the subject with no specific recollection of having been interrogated. Under condition (b) it would be possible to brief an American, other prisoner or person, subsequently dispatch him on a mission, and successfully debrief him upon return home without his recollection of the briefing or debriefing.

Another undated document entitled, "DEFENSE AGAINST SOVIET MEDICAL INTERROGATION AND ESPIONAGE TECHNIQUES" echoes this point:

This proposed investigation appears to be more essential when documentary evidence leads to the belief that Russia has been conducting medical research on the subject, has actually used various techniques, and has made provision for large scale production of uncommon special drugs for their speech-producing effects on prisoners of war.

Adequate evidence is available to indicate that the Soviet has used physical duress and/or a large number of different drugs in their attempts to enhance results of standard psychiatric interrogation.

Evidence of subconscious isolation, amnesia, and destruction of mental function have been noted in some of the victims of Soviet methods.

All of these methods were also employed in experiments conducted under BLUEBIRD, ARTICHOKE, MKULTRA, MKSEARCH, MKNAOMI and other Programs.

ARTICHOKE operations involved detailed, systematic creation of specific amnesia barriers, new identities and hypnotically implanted codes and triggers. An untitled ARTI-

KILL SWITCH

CHOKO document dated 7 January 1953 with a section heading Outline of Special H Cases describes the experimental creation of multiple personality in two nineteen-year old girls by the CIA, in an extended series of hypnotic sessions beginning on January 9, 1952. "H" is used as shorthand for hypnotic, hypnotized or hypnotism in these documents:

In all of these cases, these subjects have clearly demonstrated that they can pass from a fully awake state to a deep H controlled state via the telephone, via some very subtle signal that cannot be detected by other persons in the room and without the other individual being able to note the change. It has been clearly shown that physically individuals can be induced into H by telephone, by receiving written matter, or by the use of code, signal, or words and that control of those hypnotized can be passed from one individual to another without great difficulty. It has also been shown by experimentation with these girls that they can act as unwilling couriers for information purposes and that they can be conditioned to a point where they believe a change in identity on their part even on the polygraph.

Another untitled ARTICHOKE document describes a series of cases of which the following, called "Analogous Case #3," is most compelling:

A CIA Security Office employee was hypnotized and given a false identity. She defended it hotly, denying her true name and rationalizing with conviction the possession of identity cards made out to her real self. Later, having had the false identity erased by suggestion, she was asked if she had ever heard of the name she had been defending as her own five minutes before. She thought, shook her head and said, "That's a pseudo if I ever heard one." Apparently she had a true amnesia for the entire episode.

The creation of new identities and the detection of foreign agents with hypnotically programmed new identities is mentioned in various locations in the BLUEBIRD and ARTICHOKE documents. As well, deconditioning of subjects is addressed. For instance, one document entitled, "CONDITIONING (& Deconditioning)" states:

Jones learns to respond to stimuli intended for a Smith, as though he were that Smith. He has been "conditioned" to Smith, "deconditioned" to Jones.

Such trainings are integrated on all levels, conscious and subconscious. Hypnosis can assist in establishing the desired conditioned responses.

A C.R. (condit. resp.) is meant to stick. It can be interfered with, or abolished, by new training in another direction, or back to the earlier state.

Deconditioning can probably be expedited by hypnotizing procedures. Also, a C.R. can be interfered with or abolished by violent physical shocks (e.g., electric shocks to the brain) although this reporter has not found a specific electric-shock procedure that would assuredly decondition any particular kind or number of C.R.'s.

Still problematic is the use of drugs for deconditioning. Chlorpromazine ought theoretically to have some value, and some deconditioning effect has been produced in laboratory animals. However, hospitalized patients taking daily doses of this drug seem to have been deconditioned only selectively; against certain psychotic behavior. It may be that this property is exactly what we are looking for; perhaps it could decondition an enemy agent out of his simulated personality and back to his real one.

It is evident from this passage that the CIA was seeking to improve its techniques for detecting and successfully penetrating the amnesia barriers of enemy Manchurian Candidates over five years before the book *The Manchurian Candidate*⁶⁶ was written.

KILL SWITCH

A MEMORANDUM dated 25 January 1952 describes another case in which problems of reconditioning and the disposal of subjects arose:

On Friday, 25 January 1952, the writer was called to the office [whited out] for the purpose of a conference with one [whited out] concerning the instant case.

[Whited out] explained in substance the [whited out] case as follows: [whited out] (whose real name is [whited out], is a 29-year old [whited out] and was the head of a small political party based in [whited out] and ostensibly working for [whited out] independence. [Whited out] was described by [whited out] as being young, ambitious, bright (elementary college education), a sort of "man-on-a-horse" type but a typical [whited out] politician. According to [whited out] our people discovered that [whited out] Intelligence Service were attempting to bribe [whited out] and make him a double agent and [whited out] was looking with favor upon the [whited out] offers. Accordingly, a plot was rigged in which [whited out] was told he was going to be assassinated and as a "protection", he was placed in custody of the [whited out] Police who threw [whited out] into a [whited out] prison. [Whited out] was held in the [whited out] prison for six months until the [whited out] authorities decided that [whited out] was a nuisance and they told our people to take him back. Since our people were unable to dispose of [whited out] they flew him to [whited out] where, through arrangement, he was placed in a [whited out] as a psychopathic patient. [Whited out] now has been in the [whited out] hospital for several months and the hospital authorities now want to get him out since he is causing a considerable trouble, bothering other patients, etc. [Whited out] is not a psychopathic personality.

[Whited out] explained that they can dispose of [whited out] by the simple process of sending him to a friend of his in [whited out], and as far as they are concerned, that type of disposal is perfectly o.k. However, because of his confinement in [whited out] prison and his stay in [whited out] hospital, [whited out] has become very hostile toward the [whited out] and our intelligence operations in particular. Hence [whited out] considering an "Artichoke" approach to [whited out] to see if it would be possible to reorient [whited out] favorably toward us. This operation, which will necessarily involve the use of drugs is being considered by [whited out] with a possibility that [whited out] will carry out the operation presumably at the [whited out] hospital in [whited out] Also involved in this would be a [whited out] interpreter who is a consultant to this Agency since neither [whited out]

[Whited out] pointed out to [whited out] that this type of operation could only be carried out with the authorization of Security and that, under no circumstances whatsoever, could anyone but an authorized M.D. administer drugs to any subject of this Agency of any type. [Whited out] pointed out that there was a strong possibility that the military authorities would not permit their hospital to be used for this type of work and also that a re-conditioning operation of this type might take 30-60 days. [Whited out] further pointed out that if such an operation were carried on, Security would have to be cognizant of it, would have to be co-ordinated into the organization and would possibly take over and run the operation themselves since this type of work is one which Security handles.

It was agreed between [whited out] and the writer that a conference would be laid on Monday afternoon when [whited out] representatives and the [whited out] interpreter return from [whited out] and their talk with [whited out] At which time, the angles would be explored and a dispatch would be forwarded to our people in [whited out] directing them to find out whether the [whited out] would permit such an operation and whether the [whited

KILL SWITCH

out] would allow the Agency to have the use of the necessary rooms, medical facilities, etc. as would be required for this type of operation. At this time, it was also to be determined whether the disposal of [whited out] could in fact be laid on.

Comment:

This particular operation was mentioned in general terms to the writer by [whited out] approximately thirty days ago on an informal basis but no significant details were given at this time.

While the technique that [whited out] are considering for use in this case is not known to the writer, the writer believes the approach will be made through the standard narco-hypnosis technique. Re-conditioning and re-orienting an individual in such a matter, in the opinion of the writer, cannot be accomplished easily and will require a great deal of time and the fact that an interpreter is necessary in the case complicates it considerably more. It is also believed that with our present knowledge, we would have no absolute guarantee that the subject in this case would maintain a positive friendly attitude toward us even though there is apparently a successful response to the treatment. The writer did not suggest to [whited out] that perhaps a total amnesia could be created by a series of electric shocks, but merely indicated that amnesias under drug treatments were not certain.

A document entitled, "Hypnotic Experimentation and Research, 10 February 1954" describes a simulation experiment of relevance to the creation of Manchurian Candidate assassins:

Miss [whited out] was then instructed (having previously expressed a fear of firearms in any fashion) that she would use every method at her disposal to awaken Miss [whited out] (now in a deep hypnotic sleep) and failing in this, she would pick up a pistol nearby and fire it at Miss [whited out]. She was instructed that her rage would be so great that she would not hesitate to "kill" [whited out] for failing to awaken. Miss [whited out] carried out these suggestions to the letter including firing the (unloaded pneumatic pistol) gun at [whited out] and then proceeding to fall into a deep sleep. After proper suggestions were made, both were awakened and expressed complete amnesia for the entire sequence. Miss [whited out] was again handed the gun, which she refused (in an awakened state) to pick up or accept from the operator. She expressed absolute denial that the foregoing sequence had happened.

In another experiment described in a document entitled "SI and H Experimentation (25 September 1951)," two of the female subjects took part in an exercise involving the planting of a bomb. SI means "Special Interrogations." [Note:3] Both Subjects performed perfectly and were fully amnesic for the exercise:

[Whited out] was instructed that upon awakening, she would proceed to [whited out] room where she would wait at the desk for a telephone call. Upon receiving the call, a person known as "Jim" would engage her in normal conversation. During the course of the conversation, this individual would mention a code word to [whited out]. When she heard this code word she would pass into a SI trance state, but would not close her eyes and remain perfectly normal and continue the telephone conversation. She was told that thereafter upon conclusion of the telephone conversation, she would then carry out the following instructions:

[Whited out] being in a complete SI state at this time, was then told to open her eyes and was shown an electric timing device. She was informed that this timing device was an

KILL SWITCH

incendiary bomb and was then instructed how to attach and set the device. After [whited out] had indicated that she had learned how to set and attach the device, she was told to return to a sleep state and further instructed that upon concluding of the aforementioned conversation, she would take the timing device which was in a briefcase and proceed to the ladies room. In the ladies room, she would be met by a girl whom she had never seen who would identify herself by the code word "New York". After identifying herself, [whited out] was then to show this individual how to attach and set the timing device and further instructions would be given the individual by [whited out] that the timing device was to be carried in the briefcase to [whited out] room, placed in the nearest empty electric-light plug and concealed in the bottom, left-hand drawer of [whited out] desk, with the device set for 82 seconds and turned on. [Whited out] was further instructed to tell this other girl that as soon as the device had been set and turned on, she was to take the briefcase, leave [whited out] room, go to the operations room and go to the sofa and enter a deep sleep state. [Whited out] was further instructed that after completion of instructing the other girl and the transferring to the other girl of the incendiary bomb, she was to return at once to the operations room, sit on the sofa, and go into a deep sleep state.

Hypnosis was not the mind control doctors' only method for creation of controlled amnesia, however. Drugs, magnetic fields, sound waves, sleep deprivation, solitary confinement and many other methods were studied under BLUEBIRD and ARTICHOKE. The amnesia was often tested through memorization tasks of various kinds, and experiments were conducted to amplify subjects' memory for information hidden behind amnesia barriers. As well as being potential couriers and infiltration agents, the subjects could function in effect as hypnotically controlled cameras. They could enter a room or building, memorize materials quickly, leave the building, and then be amnesic for the entire episode. The memorized material could then be retrieved by a handler using a previously implanted code or signal, without the amnesia being disturbed. The research and its applications were both offensive and defensive, as evidenced by the following untitled and undated passage from the documents:

For instance, Metrozal, which has been very useful in shock therapy, is no longer popular because, for one thing it produces feelings of overwhelming terror and doom prior to the convulsion.

But terror, anxiety, worry would be valuable for many purposes from our point of view. We have some information (not in detail and not confirmed) that the Soviets and their satellites have used drugs which work along these lines. Therefore, this should be studied both from our use offensively and defensively and to find antidotes or counteracting agents.

The many different physical means for assisting interrogators were often combined with or amplified by hypnosis:

Quite often amnesia occurs for events just prior to the convulsion, during the convulsion and during the post seizure state. It is possible that hypnosis or hypnotic activity induced during the post-seizure state might be lost in amnesia. This would be very valuable.

The fact that complex Manchurian Candidate experiments were conducted can be inferred from an untitled February 6, 1957 document in which the writer states that:

Since the international situation is in its present state, I feel the need for positive action in the military application of hypnosis is imperative. In a field such as this you need an individual, such as myself, who has lived with the problems of hypnotism and its military

KILL SWITCH

applications for many years...

Please look over the enclosed proposal and give me your reaction. The hypnotic messenger technique is relatively uncomplicated. There are several other projects which I could submit to you for consideration which are, in my opinion, even more important than this but involve much more complicated techniques.

Similarly, a MEMORANDUM from the Chief, Security Research Staff to the Chief, Technical Branch dated 15 July 1954 states that:

The idea of a courier that has been hypnotized is not new and I am absolutely certain that [whited out] did not invent this idea. We ourselves have carried out much more complex problems than this and in a general sense I will agree that it is feasible...

[Whited out] proposal about using hypnotized individuals as counteragents is also not new and we, of course, have discussed this many times. Whether in fact it can be demonstrated we are not sure and it is hoped that the field tests we are working on may help us along these lines.

Yet another document entitled "STUDIES IN THE MILITARY APPLICATION OF HYPNOTISM: I. The Hypnotic Messenger" is a proposal for a grant of \$10,000.00 to create hypnotic messengers out of twenty selected highly hypnotizable military personnel. The subjects would be sent to foreign countries to deliver their messages and then would be interrogated to determine if the amnesia barriers could be breached. Interrogation methods were to include "use of his wife, girl friend, alcohol, amytal or even physical duress."

Another prospective mind control doctor wrote a handwritten note to the CIA on a ruled notepad that has been labeled "A/B 5, 264/1" by hand by someone responsible for filing the document. "A/B" stands for ARTICHOKE/BLUEBIRD. The document reads:

I have developed a technic which is safe and secure (free from international censorship). It has to do with the conditioning of our own people. I can accomplish this as a one man job.

The method is the production of hypnosis by means of simple oral medication. Then (with no further medication) the hypnosis is re-enforced daily during the following three or four days.

Each individual is conditioned against revealing any information to an enemy, even though subjected to hypnosis or drugging. If preferable, he may be conditioned to give false information rather than no information.

This should be repeated every six months in each case, in order to be sure that the suggestions established have not "worn off."

I would be glad to go anywhere in the world (including Korea) to accomplish this for you. I think that the greatest security would be in my travelling as a naval flight surgeon doing research in aviation medicine, especially with the project of "motion sickness" in mind.

Of course I would be willing to undertake more hazardous investigative methods if you should deem them advisable.

Another problem addressed repeatedly in the documents is called "The Problem of Disposal of Subjects." Several personnel recommended the use of lobotomies for this purpose, but according to the documents this was rejected as too unethical and too high a negative publicity risk for the CIA. Another document describes an alternative strategy for

KILL SWITCH

disposing of ARTICHOKE subjects:

Among the important security problems, which will be discussed in detail later and which are mentioned only briefly now for a matter of record, were the problems of disposal of subjects after Artichoke treatment and the important questions as to whether or not amnesias had been obtained. In connection with Case #1, in the professional opinion of [whited out] and as far as the writer is able to determine, a total amnesia was produced. Disposal of Case #1 (which was not a problem of the Artichoke team) was apparently handled as follows: Since the Artichoke technique had shown that, from an operational point of view the subject had no further value to the Agency, the subject was to be returned to [whited out] and after a period of time, removed from solitary and gradually permitted to mingle with larger and larger prison groups. Ultimately, and after a considerable lapse of time (perhaps as much as two years), the subject would be released. The Artichoke Team recommended some observation in this case with a later recheck on the amnesia, if possible.

In Case #2 on the first test, an almost total amnesia was reached with the exception of the last ten or twelve minutes of interrogation under the hypnotic technique. In the opinion of [whited out] and as far as the writer was able to determine, a total amnesia was produced at the end of the test on the second day after the Artichoke treatment of sodium pentothal and Desoxyyn (full medication without hypnosis).

Again in so far as disposal of Case #2 was concerned (which was not a problem of the Artichoke Team), disposition was apparently to be made as follows: it had been decided that the subject would be moved as a prisoner to some place in [whited out] and held there until any possible usefulness to anyone had completely disappeared.

As noted above, both of the subjects were [whited out] speaking only and neither subject had any working knowledge of the English language. This, of course, involved the use of an interpreter and, in both cases, [whited out] the case officer involved in Case #1, acted as a general interpreter and [whited out] acted as a specific interpreter in the application of the hypnotic technique (under the direct guidance of [whited out] in hypnotic matters) and also acted as general interpreter in both cases.

Physicians including psychiatrists were directly involved in all of the ARTICHOKE team operations. Documents refer to psychiatrists "of considerable note" who were professors at prominent medical schools, who had TOP SECRET CIA clearance and who were involved as consultants on the development of the ARTICHOKE techniques. In summarizing the role of physicians in providing cover for ARTICHOKE interrogations, a writer stated that:

At the present time, the use of a carefully laid on medical cover to obtain either a narco-interrogation or narco-hypnotic interrogation appears to be the best weapon presently available. It is not necessary to go into detail as to how this is done but experience indicates it is our best technique.

The use of electric shock to the brain for creation of amnesia, and amplification of the amnesia with hypnosis were discussed by the author of an ARTICHOKE document dated 3 December 1951:

Immediately after the conference on Friday, 30 November 1951, [whited out] succeeded in finding [whited out] and [whited out], and the writer discussed electric-shock devices and certain related matters from about 3:30 to 4:45 with [whited out].

[Whited out] is reported to be an authority on electric shock. He is a professor at the

KILL SWITCH

Medical School of the [whited out] and, in addition, is a psychiatrist of considerable note. Pro-[whited out] is, in addition, a fully cleared Agency consultant.

[Whited out] explained that he felt that electric shock might be of considerable interest to the "Artichoke" type of work. He stated that the standard electric-shock machine (Reiter) could be used in two ways. One setting of this machine produced the normal electric-shock treatment (including convulsion) with amnesia after a number of treatments. He stated that using this machine as an electro-shock device with the convulsive treatment, he felt that he could guarantee amnesia for certain periods of time and particularly he could guarantee amnesia for any knowledge of use of the convulsive shock.

[Whited out] stated that the other or lower setting of the machine produced a different type of shock. He said that he could not explain it, but knew that when this lower current type of shock was applied without convulsion, it had the effect of making a man talk. He said, however, that the use of this type of shock was prohibited because it produced in the individual excruciating pain and he stated that there would be no question in his mind that the individual would be quite willing to give information if threatened with the use of this machine. He stated that this was a third-degree method but, undoubtedly, would be effective. [Whited out] stated that he had never had the device applied to himself, but he had talked with people who had been shocked in this manner and stated that they complained that their whole head was on fire and it was much too painful a treatment for any medical practice. He stated that the only way it was ever used was in connection with sedatives and even then it was extremely painful. The writer asked [whited out] whether or not in the "groggy" condition following the convulsion by the electro-shock machine anyone had attempted to obtain hypnotic control over the patient, since it occurred to the writer that it would be a good time to attempt to obtain hypnotic control. [Whited out] stated that, to his knowledge, it had never been done, but he could make this attempt in the near future at the [whited out] and he would see whether or not this could be done.

[Whited out] and [whited out], as well as all others present, discussed the use of electro-shock at considerable length and it was [whited out] opinion that an individual could gradually be reduced through the use of electro-shock treatment to the vegetable level. He stated that, whereas amnesia could be guaranteed relative [to] the actual use of the shock and the time element surrounding it, he said it would obtain perfect amnesia for periods further back. He stated several instances in which people who had been given the electro-shock treatment remembered some details of certain things and complete blanks in other ways.

[Whited out] said that a [whited out], who is practicing in [whited out] has perfected a battery-driven machine which, according to [whited out] is portable. [Whited out] said that the standard electro-shock machine is a very common machine in medical offices and in the major cities there must be several hundred of them in use at all times.

The use of electro-shock to produce amnesia was subsequently successfully demonstrated in a series of cases by Dr. Ewen Cameron at McGill, who received CIA money through MKULTRA Subproject 68 in 1957. Many of the discussions, literature reviews and experiments conducted under BLUEBIRD and ARTICHOKE were followed up on in MKULTRA and MKSEARCH.

The involvement of physicians including psychiatrists in BLUEBIRD and ARTICHOKE was extensive, systematic and fundamental to the Programs. The involvement included con-

KILL SWITCH

sultation, literature reviews, experimentation and direct participation in field operations. The full extent of this involvement is unknown because the names of the mind control doctors who built Manchurian Candidates are redacted from documents provided under the Freedom of Information Act, and because there are undoubtedly other documents which are still classified.

[Note:1] Overview from Colin A. Ross Institute, 2001.

[Note:2] Synopsis from BLUEBIRD: Deliberate Creation of Multiple Personality by Psychiatrists, Colin A. Ross, M.D., Richardson, Texas: Manitou Communications, 2000.

136 Hunter, E. Brain-Washing in Red China. The Calculated Destruction of Men's Minds. New York: Vanguard Press, 1951.

66 Condon, R. The Manchurian Candidate. New York: Jove Books, 1959/1988.

184 Marks, J. The Search for the Manchurian Candidate. New York: W.W. Norton, 1988. [New York: Times Books, 1979.]

66 Condon, op. cit.

163 Lifton, R.J. Thought Reform of Chinese Intellectuals: A Psychiatric Evaluation. Journal of Social Issues, 3, 5-20, 1957.

182 Mangold, T. Cold Warrior: James Jesus Angleton: The CIA's Master Spy Hunter. New York: Simon & Schuster, 1991.

136 Hunter, op. cit.

182 Mangold, op. cit.

210 Naylor, D. Mind Control. Los Angeles: ZM Productions, 1998.

177 Malitz, S. The Role of Mescaline and DO Lysergic Acid in Psychiatric Treatment. Diseases of the Nervous System, 27, 39-42, 1966.

66 Condon, op. cit.

[Note:3] CIA files confirm that SI is "Subconscious Isolation" or a dissociative state. See, e.g., CIA MORI ID 144823, pp. 1-5, circa 1951. SI involves procedures that create dissociation or a split personality to interrogate and control individuals outside their normal consciousness.

Operation Mind Control

Please keep fearfully in mind that the astonishing information published in this seminal work of investigative reporting, concerning avenues taken to decision and execution by our secret police to fracture or dissolve human minds, then to operate those minds as a small boy might operate a Yo-Yo, for purposes of counter-intelligence military "efficiency," and the destruction of democratic institutions, was drawn directly from federal records and from official laboratory archives of the highest educational purpose—as well as from the reviving memories of those who had already undergone the dehumanizing process. ... [p. 14]

Zombie is a quaint, old-fashioned folklore word but its meaning becomes obscene when our children's minds are being controlled ... [p. 17][Note:1]

It may have been the biggest story since the atom bomb. The headline, however, was small and ignored the larger issue. "Drug Tests by CIA Held More Extensive Than Reported in '75," said the *New York Times* on July 16, 1977. ...

The testing of drugs by the CIA was just a part of the United States government's top-

KILL SWITCH

secret mind-control project, a project which had spanned thirty-five years and had involved tens of thousands of individuals. It involved techniques of hypnosis, narco-hypnosis, electronic brain stimulation, behavioral effects of ultrasonic, microwave, and low-frequency sound, aversive and other behavior modification therapies. In fact, there was virtually no aspect of human behavioral control that was not explored in their search for the means to control the memory and will of both individuals and whole masses of people.

The CIA succeeded in developing a whole range of psycho-weapons to expand its already ominous psychological warfare arsenal. With these capabilities, it was now possible to wage a new kind of war—a war which would take place invisibly, upon the battlefield of the human mind. ... [p. 19]

The psychological techniques described in *The Manchurian Candidate* were to become a reality less than a decade after Condon saw his story set in type. As if Condon's fiction had been used as the blueprint, a group of hypno-programmed "zombies" were created. Some were assassins prepared to kill on cue. Others were informers, made to remember minute details under hypnosis. Couriers carried illegal messages outside the chain of command, their secrets secured behind posthypnotic blocks. Knowledge of secret information was removed from the minds of those who no longer had the "need to know"—they were given posthypnotic amnesia. ... [p. 21]

The objective of Operation Mind Control during this period has been to take human beings, both citizens of the United States and citizens of friendly and unfriendly nations, and transform them into unthinking, subconsciously programmed "zombies," motivated without their knowledge and against their wills to perform in a variety of ways in which they would not otherwise willingly perform. This is accomplished through the use of various techniques called by various names, including brainwashing, thought reform, behavior modification, hypnosis, and conditioned reflex therapy. For the purpose of this book the term "mind control" will be used to describe these techniques generically.*

Mind control is the most terrible imaginable crime because it is committed not against the body, but against the mind and the soul. Dr. Joost A. M. Meerloo expresses the attitude of the majority of psychologists in calling it "mind rape," and warns that it poses a great "danger of destruction of the spirit" which can be "compared to the threat of total physical destruction . . ." ... [p. 23]

"I can hypnotize a man—*without his knowledge or consent*—into committing treason against the United States," boasted Dr. George Estabrooks in the early 1940s.

Estabrooks, chairman of the Department of Psychology at Colgate University, ... [p. 58]

From one such think tank, the Rand Corporation, came a report [1949] ... [p. 67]

"... a hypnotized subject will often accept and confess to an implanted memory as a real event in his own past life." ...

A number of experienced hypnotists had been able to train their subjects to perform "in such a way that observers could not tell that the subject was in a trance or that he was acting under hypnotic suggestions." ... [p. 69]

To induce hypnosis in an unwilling subject, the report suggested any of three possibilities which were then well supported by research findings:

1. As part of a medical examination, talk relaxation to the subject, thus disguising

KILL SWITCH

the hypnotic induction. For example, the person could be given a blood pressure test, told that he must relax completely in order to give an adequate test record, and then be given suggestions to go to sleep which would result in a hypnotic trance.

2. Induce hypnosis while the person is actually asleep from normal fatigue. This could be done by simply talking softly into the sleeper's ear.

3. Use injections of drugs to induce hypnosis. The hypnotic drugs would relax the subject and put him in a "twilight state" where the subconscious mind is very susceptible to suggestion.

Subjects who refuse or resist the simple "talking" methods of hypnotic induction could be given a few grams of paraldehyde or an intravenous injection of sodium pentothal or sodium amytal. ... Subsequently the subject could be allowed to practice carrying out posthypnotic suggestions. He could then be rehypnotized, still without his conscious cooperation, but this time without the use of drugs. ...

Another important use of hypnosis ... the report said, would be the induction of amnesia: "Once a deep hypnotic trance is achieved, it is possible to introduce posthypnotic amnesia so that [a subject] . . . would not know . . . that he had been subjected to hypnosis, to drugs, or to any other treatment." ...

The report then said, "Conceivably, electroshock convulsions might be used as an adjunctive device to achieve somnambulism in a very high percentage of the cases. ... It is conceivable, therefore, that electroshock treatments might be used to weaken difficult cases in order to produce a hypnotic trance of great depth."

In 1958 the Bureau of Social Science Research (BSSR), a subcontractor to the Rand Corporation, issued a "technical report" on hypnosis to the air force ...

"it is conceivable . . . that these techniques could have been used and covered up so successfully that they might be *impossible* to recognize . . ." ...

All of these techniques, involving drug-induced hypnosis and electroshock convulsions, were eventually developed and used to reduce some of our own citizens to a zombie state in which they would blindly serve the government. Regardless of the Constitution and the laws which supposedly protect the individual against government coercion, "zombies" were covertly created to do the government's more unsavory bidding. Such "zombies" asked no questions about the legality of their assignments. Often their assignments were never consciously known. And if they were ever questioned about their own actions, amnesia protected them from self-incrimination. ... [pp. 70-73]

In 1951, a former naval officer described "a secret" of certain military and intelligence organizations. He called it "Pain-Drug-Hypnosis" and said it "is a vicious war weapon ... The extensiveness of the use of this form of hypnotism in espionage work is now so widespread that it is long past the time when people should have become alarmed about it . . ." ... [p. 75]

Mind control arranges that "slaves" of the intelligence community—witnesses, couriers, and assassins—are "protected" from their own memories and guilt by amnesia. These "slaves" may be left alive, but the knowledge they possess is buried deep within the tombs of their own minds by techniques which can keep the truth hidden even from those who have witnessed it. It is the ultimate debriefing, the final security measure short of assassination. ... [p. 148]

KILL SWITCH

José Delgado was a neurophysiologist at the Yale University School of Medicine. By 1964, ... he had already been experimenting with electronic stimulation of the brain (ESB) for nearly two decades. His work, supported by the Office of Naval Research, ... [p. 250]

A number of government agencies were actually at work on projects similar to Delgado's, and through these projects the cryptocracy had gained the technology for direct access to the control of the brain and through it, the mind. ... [p. 251]

ESB, however, used in conjunction with psycho-surgery and behavior modification, offered unlimited possibilities. After experiments on laboratory animals met with success, human experimentation was enthusiastically undertaken in quest of the most reliable and absolute method of *remote* control of the mind. ... [p. 253]

ESB has, meanwhile, been strikingly successful in other areas. It has been used to modify mental mechanisms, to produce changes in mood and feelings, to reinforce behavior both positively and negatively. It has been used to activate sensory and motor regions of the brain in order to produce elementary or complex experiences or movements, to summon memories, and to induce hallucinations. It also has been used to suppress or inhibit behavior and experience and memory—outside of the conscious control of the owner of the brain. ... [p. 256]

And, in 1974, the first victim of Parkinson's disease treated by ESB walked gracefully out of a San Francisco hospital under his own power, thanks to portable ESB. He had a "stimoceiver" implanted in his brain ... The "stimoceiver" which weighed only a few grams and was small enough to implant under his scalp, permitted both remote stimulation of his brain and the instantaneous telemetric recording of his brain waves. ... [pp. 256-257]

And by the late 1960s, the "remote control" of the human brain—accomplished without the implantation of electrodes—was well on its way to being realized.

A research and development team at the Space and Biology Laboratory of the University of California at the Los Angeles Brain Research Institute found a way to stimulate the brain by creating an electrical field completely outside the head. Dr. W. Ross Adey stimulated the brain with electric pulse levels which were far below those thought to be effectual in the old implanting technique. ... [p. 257]

In 1975 a primitive "mind reading machine" was tested at the Stanford Research Institute. The machine is a computer which can recognize a limited amount of words by monitoring a person's *silent thoughts*. This technique relies upon the discovery that brain wave tracings taken with an electroencephalograph (EEG) show distinctive patterns that correlate with individual words—whether the words are spoken aloud or merely subvocalized (thought of).

The computer initially used audio equipment to listen to the words the subject spoke. (At first the vocabulary was limited to "up," "down," "left," and "right.") At the same time the computer heard the words, it monitored the EEG impulses coming from electrodes pasted to the subject's head and responded by turning a camera in the direction indicated. After a few repetitions of the procedure, the computer's hearing was turned off and it responded solely to the EEG "thoughts." It moved a television camera in the directions ordered by the subject's thoughts alone! ... [p. 258]

While Dr. Reed conceded that it was "conceivable that thoughts could be injected" into a person's mind by the government, he indicated that he did not believe it had already been done. ... [p. 259]

KILL SWITCH

Typically, the scientists have not been vigilant enough, for the cryptocracy already has developed remote-controlled men who can be used for political assassination and other dangerous work, ... [p. 260]

In 1967 a writer named Lincoln Lawrence published a book ... [*Were We Controlled?* presented] a sophisticated technique known as RHIC-EDOM ... Radio Hypnotic Intra-Cerebral Control-Electronic Dissolution of Memory. ...

“Under RHIC, a ‘sleeper’ can be used years later with no realization that the ‘sleeper’ is even being controlled! He can be made to perform acts that he will have no memory of ever having carried out. In a manipulated kind of kamikaze operation where the life of the ‘sleeper’ is dispensable, RHIC processing makes him particularly valuable because if he is detected and caught before he performs the act specified . . . nothing he says will implicate the group or government which processed and controlled him.” ...

What really happened, according to Lawrence, was that during the operation a small electrode was implanted inside Oswald’s mastoid sinus. The electrode responded to a radio signal which would make audible, inside Oswald’s head, certain electronic commands to which he had already been posthypnotically conditioned to respond. ...

In 1975 the RHIC-EDOM story surfaced again. ... The journalist, James L. Moore, said that the papers in his possession described the details of “a military technique of mind-control called Radio-Hypnotic Intra-Cerebral Control-Electronic Dissolution of Memory.” ...

According to Moore, in the initial (RHIC) stage of programming the ... [person] is put into a deep hypnotic trance, and conditioned to go into trance at the sound of a specific tone. “A person may be placed under this control with or without his knowledge, programmed to perform certain actions and maintain certain attitudes” whenever he hears the tone. ...

The second part of the process, electronic dissolution of memory (EDOM), Moore said, “... By electronically jamming the brain, acetylcholine creates static which blocks out sights and sounds. You would then have no memory of what you saw or heard; your mind would be a blank.” ...

The claims of James L. Moore would sound fantastic were it not for the abundance of information to support the possibility of their validity. ... [pp. 261-264]

The cryptocracy has gone to absurd lengths to develop remote-controlled beings. Victor Marchetti revealed that the CIA had once tried to create a cyborg cat. He said that the Agency wired a live feline for sound in an attempt to use the pet for eavesdropping purposes. The cat was first altered electronically so that it would function as a listening device in areas where potential enemy agents would be discussing covert plots.[Note:2] ...

After the electronic feline was at last ready for its assignment, it was turned loose on the street and was followed by a CIA support van loaded with electronic monitoring gear. ... [p. 273]

The cryptocracy has used mind control for the past thirty years. It has used it on its own agents and employees, on enemies and friends alike. It has used it on thousands of Americans without their knowledge or consent. The CIA has programmed assassins and couriers by it. The CIA has even openly confessed to its conspiracy of mind control.

Many people will believe that since the CIA has publicly disclosed its interest in mind control, it has now ceased its activities. The earlier CIA records, however, contain a

KILL SWITCH

number of termination dates for aspects of Operation Mind Control, yet evidence clearly suggests that it continued past those dates.

In 1975, following the release of the Rockefeller Commission Report and the subsequent investigations by Senator Church's and Congressman Pike's committees, a public accounting was given and apologies were made. The intelligence community was reprimanded and small changes made. ... [p. 275]

Recent history documents the fact that the CIA, as the whipping boy of the cryptocracy, covers up and routinely lies about its activities, heaping one lie on another, in a labyrinthine network of falsehood. It stretches credibility to believe, therefore, that the CIA and especially lower-profile members of the cryptocracy have terminated the mind-control research and development that has been going on for thirty years. ... If it has ceased, it has ceased only because it is obsolete and the new technology of radiation and electronic brain stimulation has given the cryptocracy a more powerful form of control. ... [p. 276]

With advancements in electronic technology—increasingly sophisticated microphones, transmitters, and surveillance devices—the erosion of privacy becomes a mudslide. ... [p. 280]

Mind control remains above United States law, making it a most attractive tool for clandestine operators. [p. 281]

[Note:1] Forward by Richard Condon, author of *The Manchurian Candidate* (1958).

* ... The mind control examined in this book is the control of one individual's mind by another.

[Note:2] José Delgado, M.D., conducted experiments (circa 1961) that attached an electrode to the eardrum (middle ear) of a cat. The device picked-up people's whispered conversations and transmitted them to a receiver for monitoring. The CIA attached their tiny radio implant to the cat's cochlea (inner ear).

Mind-Control Projects

Contents

1. Mind Control in California
2. Prisoners and War
3. Drugs and the Mafia
4. LEAA and Funding for Experiments
5. Reagan Era—Violence Center
6. More on the Violence Center
7. More on Drugs
8. Psychosurgery, Black Ops
9. Navy School for Assassins
10. Soviets, U.S. Both Using Mind-Control Methods
11. Electronic Weapons
12. Mind-Control Origins Found in Nazi Germany
13. America Made It To the Moon with Dachau Research

Bibliography

KILL SWITCH

Part 1 of Mind-Control Series

Mind Control in California

There was just a small news announcement on the radio in early July after a short heat wave, three inmates of Vacaville Medical Facility had died in non-air conditioned cells. Two of those prisoners, the announcement said, may have died as a result of medical treatment. No media inquiries were made, no major news stories developed because of these deaths.

But what was the medical treatment that may have caused their deaths? The Medical Facility indicates they were mind control or behavior modification treatments. A deeper probe into the death of these two inmates unravels a mind-boggling tale of horror that has been part of California penal history for a long time, and one that caused national outcries two decades ago.

Mind-control experiments have been part of California for decades and permeate mental institutions and prisons. But, it is not just in the penal society that mind-control measures have been used. Minority children were subjected to experimentation at abandoned Nike Missile Sites, veterans who fought for American freedom were also subjected to the programs. Funding and experimentations of mind control have been part of the U.S. Health, Education and Welfare Department, the Department of Veterans Affairs, the Central Intelligence Agency through the Phoenix Program, the Stanford Research Institute, the Agency for International Development, the Department of Defense, the Department of Labor, the National Institute of Mental Health, the Law Enforcement Assistance Administration, and the National Science Foundation.

California has been in the forefront of mind-control experimentation. Government experiments also were conducted in the Haight-Ashbury District in San Francisco at the height of the Hippy reign. In 1974, Senator Sam Ervin, of Watergate fame, headed a U.S. Senate Subcommittee on Constitutional Rights studying the subject of "Individual rights and the Federal role in behavior modification." Though little publicity was given to this committee's investigation, Senator Ervin issued a strong condemnation of the federal role in mind control. That condemnation, however, did not halt mind-control experiments, they just received more circuitous funding.

Many of the case histories concerning individuals of whom the mind-control experiments were used, show a strange concept in the minds of those seeking guinea pigs. Those subject to the mind-control experiments would be given indefinite sentences, his freedom was dependent upon how well the experiment went. One individual, for example, was arrested for joyriding, given a two-year sentence and held for mind-control experiments. He was held for 18 years.

Here are just a few experiments used in the mind-control program:

- A naked inmate is strapped down on a board. His wrists and ankles are cuffed to the board and his head is rigidly held in place by a strap around his neck and a helmet on his head. He is left in a darkened cell, unable to remove his body wastes. When a meal is delivered, one wrist is unlocked so he could feel around in the dark for his food and attempt to pour liquid down his throat without being able to lift his head.

- Another experiment creates a muscle relaxant. Within 30 to 40 seconds paralysis begins to invade the small muscles of the fingers, toes, and eyes and then the intercostal muscles and diaphragm. The heart slows down to about 60 beats per minute. This condi-

KILL SWITCH

tion, together with respiratory arrests, sets in for as long as two to five minutes before the drug begins to wear off. The individual remains fully conscious and is gasping for breath. It is “likened to dying, it is almost like drowning” the experiment states.

- Another drug induces vomiting and was administered to prisoners who didn't get up on time or caught swearing or lying, or even not greeting their guards formally. The treatment brings about uncontrolled vomiting that lasts from 15 minutes to an hour, accompanied by a temporary cardiovascular effect involving changes in the blood pressure.

- Another deals with creating body rigidity, aching restlessness, blurred vision, severe muscular pain, trembling and fogged cognition.

The Department of Health, Education and Welfare and the U.S. Army have admitted mind-control experiments. Many deaths have occurred.

In tracing the steps of government mind-control experiments, the trail leads to legal and illegal usages, usage for covert intelligence operations, and experiments on innocent people who were unaware that they were being used.

Prisoners and War

In July, two inmates died at the Vacaville Medical Facility. According to prison officials at the time, the two may have died as a result of medical treatment, that treatment was the use of mind control or behavior modification drugs. A deeper study into the deaths of the two inmates has unraveled a mind-boggling tale of horror that has been part of California penal history for a long time, and one that caused national outcries years ago.

In the August article, the *Sentinel* presented a graphic portrait of some of the mind-control experiments that have been allowed to continue in the United States. In November 1974 a U.S. Senate Subcommittee on Constitutional Rights investigated federally-funded behavior modification programs, with emphasis on federal involvement in, and the possible threat to individual constitutional rights of behavior modification, especially involving inmates in prisons and mental institutions.

The Senate committee was appalled after reviewing documents from the following sources:

- Neuro-Research Foundation's study entitled “The Medical Epidemiology of Criminals.”
- The Center for the Study and Reduction of Violence from UCLA.
- The closed adolescent treatment center.

A national uproar was created by various articles in 1974, which prompted the Senate investigation. But after all these years, the news that two inmates at Vacaville may have died from these same experiments indicates that though a nation was shocked in 1974, little was done to correct the experimentations. In 1977, a Senate subcommittee on Health and Scientific Research, chaired by Senator Ted Kennedy, focused on the CIA's testing of LSD on unwitting citizens. Only a mere handful of people within the CIA knew about the scope and details of the program.

To understand the full scope of the problem, it is important to study its origins. The Kennedy subcommittee learned about the CIA Operation M.K.-Ultra (MKULTRA) through the testimony of Dr. Sidney Gottlieb. The purpose of the program, according to his testimony, was to “investigate whether and how it was possible to modify an individual's behavior by covert means.” Claiming the protection of the National Security Act, Dr. Gottlieb was

KILL SWITCH

unwilling to tell the Senate subcommittee what had been learned or gained by these experiments.

He did state, however, that the program was initially engendered by a concern that the Soviets and other enemies of the United States would get ahead of the U.S. in this field. Through the Freedom of Information Act, researchers are now able to obtain documents detailing the M.K.-Ultra program and other CIA behavior modification projects in a special reading room located on the bottom floor of the Hyatt Regency in Rosslyn, VA.

The most daring phase of the M.K.-Ultra program involved slipping unwitting American citizens LSD in real life situations. The idea for the series of experiments originated in November 1941, when William Donovan, founder and director of the Office of Strategic Services (OSS), the forerunner of the CIA during World War Two. At that time the intelligence agency invested \$5000 for the "truth drug" program. Experiments with scopolamine and morphine proved both unfruitful and very dangerous. The program tested scores of other drugs, including mescaline, barbiturates, benzedrine, cannabis indica, to name a few.

The U.S. was highly concerned over the heavy losses of freighters and other ships in the North Atlantic, all victims of German U-boats. Information about German U-boat strategy was desperately needed and it was believed that the information could be obtained through drug-influenced interrogations of German naval P.O.W.s, in violation of the Geneva Accords.

Tetrahydrocannabinol acetate, a colorless, odorless marijuana extract, was used to lace a cigarette or food substance without detection. Initially, the experiments were done on volunteer U.S. Army and OSS personnel, and testing was also disguised as a remedy for shell shock. The volunteers became known as "Donovan's Dreamers." The experiments were so hush-hush, that only a few top officials knew about them. President Franklin Roosevelt was aware of the experiments. The "truth drug" achieved mixed success.

The experiments were halted when a memo was written: "The drug defies all but the most expert and search analysis, and for all practical purposes can be considered beyond analysis." The OSS did not, however, halt the program. In 1943 field tests of the extract were being conducted, despite the order to halt them. The most celebrated test was conducted by Captain George Hunter White, an OSS agent and ex-law enforcement official, on August Del Grazio, a.k.a. Augie Dallas, a.k.a. Dell, a.k.a. Little Augie, a New York gangster. Cigarettes laced with the acetate were offered to Augie without his knowledge of the content. Augie, who had served time in prison for assault and murder, had been one of the world's most notorious drug dealers and smugglers. He operated an opium alkaloid factory in Turkey and he was a leader in the Italian underworld on the Lower East Side of New York. Under the influence of the drug, Augie revealed volumes of information about the underworld operations, including the names of high ranking officials who took bribes from the mob. These experiments led to the encouragement of Donovan. A new memo was issued: "Cigarette experiments indicated that we had a mechanism which offered promise in relaxing prisoners to be interrogated."

When the OSS was disbanded after the war, Captain White continued to administer behavior-modifying drugs. In 1947, the CIA replaced the OSS. White's service record indicates that he worked with the OSS, and by 1954 he was a high-ranking Federal Narcotics Bureau officer who had been loaned to the CIA on a part-time basis.

White rented an apartment in Greenwich Village equipped with one-way mirrors,

KILL SWITCH

surveillance gadgets and disguised himself as a seaman. White drugged his acquaintances with LSD and brought them back to his apartment. In 1955, the operation shifted to San Francisco. In San Francisco, "safehouses" were established under the code name Operation Midnight Climax. Midnight Climax hired prostitute addicts who lured men from bars back to the safehouses after their drinks had been spiked with LSD. White filmed the events in the safehouses. The purpose of these "national security brothels" was to enable the CIA to experiment with the act of lovemaking for extracting information from men. The safehouse experiments continued until 1963 until CIA Inspector General John Earman criticized Richard Helms, the director of the CIA and father of the M.K.-Ultra project. Earman charged the new director John McCone had not been fully briefed on the M.K.-Ultra Project when he took office and that "the concepts involved in manipulating human behavior are found by many people within and outside the Agency to be distasteful and unethical." He stated that "the rights and interest of U.S. citizens are placed in jeopardy." The Inspector General stated that LSD had been tested on individuals at all social levels, high and low, native American and foreign."

Earman's criticisms were rebuffed by Helms, who warned, "Positive operation capacity to use drugs is diminishing owing to a lack of realistic testing. Tests were necessary to keep up with the Soviets." But in 1964, Helms had testified before the Warren Commission investigating the assassination of President John Kennedy, that "Soviet research has consistently lagged five years behind Western research."

Upon leaving government service in 1966, Captain White wrote a startling letter to his superior. In the letter to Dr. Gottlieb, Captain White reminisced about his work in the safehouses with LSD. His comments were frightening. "I was a very minor missionary, actually a heretic, but I toiled wholeheartedly in the vineyards because it was fun, fun, fun," White wrote. "Where else could a red-blooded American boy lie, kill, cheat, steal, rape and pillage with the sanction and blessing of the all-highest?"

Drugs and the Mafia

Though the CIA continued to maintain drug experiments in the streets of America after the program was officially cancelled, the United States reaped tremendous value from it. With George Hunter White's connection to underworld figure Little Augie, connections were made with Mafia kingpin Lucky Luciano, who was in Dannemore Prison.

Luciano wanted freedom, the Mafia wanted drugs, and the United States wanted Sicily. The date was 1943. Augie was the go-between between Luciano and the United States War Department.

Luciano was transferred to a less harsh prison and began to be visited by representatives of the Office of Naval Intelligence and from underworld figures, such as Meyer Lansky. A strange alliance was formed between the U.S. Intelligence agencies and the Mafia, who controlled the West Side docks in New York. Luciano regained active leadership in organized crime in America.

The U.S. Intelligence community utilized Luciano's underworld connections in Italy. In July of 1943, Allied forces launched their invasion of Sicily, the beginning push into occupied Europe. General George Patton's Seventh Army advanced through hundreds of miles of territory that was fraught with difficulty, booby-trapped roads, snipers, confusing mountain topography, all within close range of 60,000 hostile Italian troops. All this was accomplished in four days, a military "miracle" even for Patton.

KILL SWITCH

Senate Estes Kefauver's Senate Subcommittee on Organized Crime asked, in 1951, how all this was possible. The answer was that the Mafia had helped to protect roads from Italian snipers, served as guides through treacherous mountain terrain, and provided needed intelligence to Patton's army. The part of Sicily which Patton's forces traversed had at one time been completely controlled by the Sicilian Mafia, until Benito Mussolini smashed it through the use of police repression.

Just prior to the invasion, it was hardly even able to continue shaking down farmers and shepherds for protection money. But the invasion changed all this, and the Mafia went on to play a very prominent and well-documented role in the American military occupation of Italy.

The expedience of war opened the doors to American drug traffic and Mafia domination. This was the beginning of the Mafia-U.S. Intelligence alliance, an alliance that lasts to this day and helped to support the covert operations of the CIA, such as the Iran-Contra operations. In these covert operations, the CIA would obtain drugs from South America and Southeast Asia, sell them to the Mafia and use the money for the covert purchase of military equipment. These operations accelerated when Congress cut off military funding for the Contras.

One of the Allies top occupation priorities was to liberate as many of their own soldiers from garrison duties so that they could participate in the military offensive. In order to accomplish this, Don Calogero's Mafia were pressed into service, and in July of 1943, the Civil Affairs Control Office of the U.S. Army appointed him mayor of Villalba and other Mafia officials as mayors of other towns in Sicily.

As the northern Italian offensive continued, Allied intelligence became very concerned over the extent to which the Italian Communists resistance to Mussolini had driven Italian politics to the left. Communist Party membership had doubled between 1943 and 1944, huge leftist strikes had shut down factories and the Italian underground fighting Mussolini had risen to almost 150,000 men. By mid-1944, the situation came to a head and the U.S. Army terminated arms drops to the Italian Resistance, and started appointing Mafia officials to occupation administration posts. Mafia groups broke up leftists' rallies and reactivated black market operations throughout southern Italy.

Lucky Luciano was released from prison in 1946 and deported to Italy, where he rebuilt the heroin trade. The court's decision to release him was made possible by the testimony of intelligence agents at his hearing, and a letter written by a naval officer reciting what Luciano had done for the Navy. Luciano was supposed to have served from 30 to 50 years in prison. Over 100 Mafia members were similarly deported within a couple of years.

Luciano set up a syndicate which transported morphine base from the Middle East to Europe, refined it into heroin, and then shipped it into the United States via Cuba. During the 1950s, Marseilles, in Southern France, became a major city for the heroin labs and the Corsican syndicate began to actively cooperate with the Mafia in the heroin trade. Those became popularly known as the French Connection.

In 1948, Captain White visited Luciano and his narcotics associate Nick Gentile in Europe. Gentile was a former American gangster who had worked for the Allied Military Government in Sicily. By this time, the CIA was already subsidizing Corsican and Italian gangsters to oust Communist unions from the Port of Marseilles. American strategic planners saw Italy and southern France as extremely important for their Naval bases as a coun-

KILL SWITCH

terbalance to the growing naval forces of the Soviet Union. CIO/AFL organizer Irving Brown testified that by the time the CIA subsidies were terminated in 1953, U.S. support was no longer needed because the profits from the heroin traffic was sufficient to sustain operations.

When Luciano was originally jailed, the U.S. felt it had eliminated the world's most effective underworld leader and the activities of the Mafia were seriously damaged. Mussolini had been waging a war since 1924 to rid the world of the Sicilian Mafia. Thousands of Mafia members were convicted of crimes and forced to leave the cities and hide out in the mountains.

Mussolini's reign of terror had virtually eradicated the international drug syndicates. Combined with the shipping surveillance during the war years, heroin trafficking had become almost nil. Drug use in the United States, before Luciano's release from prison, was on the verge of being entirely wiped out.

LEAA and Funding for Experiments

The U.S. government has conducted three types of mind-control experiments:

- Real life experiences, such as those used on Little Augie and the LSD experiments in the safehouses of San Francisco and Greenwich Village.
- Experiments on prisoners, such as in the California Medical Facility at Vacaville.
- Experiments conducted in both mental hospitals and the Veterans Administration hospitals.

Such experimentation requires money, and the United States government has funneled funds for drug experiments through different agencies, both overtly and covertly.

One of the funding agencies to contribute to the experimentation is the Law Enforcement Assistance Administration (LEAA), a unit of the U.S. Justice Department and one of President Richard Nixon's favorite pet agencies. The Nixon Administration was, at one time, putting together a program for detaining youngsters who showed a tendency toward violence in "concentration" camps. According to the *Washington Post*, the plan was authored by Dr. Arnold Hutschnecker. Health, Education and Welfare Secretary Robert Finch was told by John Erlichman, Chief of Staff for the Nixon White House, to implement the program. He proposed the screening of children of six years of age for tendencies toward criminality. Those who failed these tests were to be destined to be sent to the camps. The program was never implemented.

LEAA came into existence in 1968 with a huge budget to assist various U.S. law enforcement agencies. Its effectiveness, however, was not considered too great. After spending \$6 billion, the F.B.I. reports general crime rose 31 percent and violent crime rose 50 percent. But little accountability was required of LEAA on how it spent its funds.

LEAA's role in the behavior modification research began at a meeting held in 1970 in Colorado Springs. Attending that meeting were Richard Nixon, Attorney General John Mitchell, John Erlichman, H.R. Haldemann and other White House staffers. They met with Dr. Bertram Brown, director of the National Institute of Mental Health, and forged a close collaboration between LEAA and the Institute. LEAA was a product of the Justice Department and the Institute was a product of HEW.

LEAA funded 350 projects involving medical procedures, behavior modification and drugs for delinquency control. Money from the Criminal Justice System was being used to

KILL SWITCH

fundamental health projects and vice versa. Eventually, the leadership responsibility and control of the Institute began to deteriorate and their scientists began to answer to LEAA alone.

The National Institute of Mental Health went on to become one of the greatest supporters of behavior modification research. Throughout the 1960s, court calendars became blighted with lawsuits on the part of "human guinea pigs" who had been experimented upon in prisons and mental institutions. It was these lawsuits which triggered the Senate Subcommittee on Constitutional Rights investigation, headed by Senator Sam Ervin. The subcommittee's harrowing report was virtually ignored by the news media.

Thirteen behavior modification programs were conducted by the Department of Defense. The Department of Labor had also conducted several experiments, as well as the National Science Foundation. The Veterans' Administration was also deeply involved in behavior modification and mind control. Each of these agencies, including LEAA, and the Institute, were named in secret CIA documents as those who provided research cover for the MK-ULTRA program.

Eventually, LEAA was using much of its budget to fund experiments, including aversive techniques and psychosurgery, which involved, in some cases, irreversible brain surgery on normal brain tissue for the purpose of changing or controlling behavior and/or emotions.

Senator Ervin questioned the head of LEAA concerning ethical standards of the behavior modification projects which LEAA had been funding. Ervin was extremely dubious about the idea of the government spending money on this kind of project without strict guidelines and reasonable research supervision in order to protect the human subjects. After Senator Ervin's denunciation of the funding policies, LEAA announced that it would no longer fund medical research into behavior modification and psychosurgery. Despite the pledge by LEAA's director, Donald E. Santarelli, LEAA ended up funding 537 research projects dealing with behavior modification. There is strong evidence to indicate psychosurgery was still being used in prisons in the 1980s. Immediately after the funding announcement by LEAA, there were 50 psychosurgical operations at Atmore State Prison in Alabama. The inmates became virtual zombies. The operations, according to Dr. Swan of Fisk University, were done on black prisoners who were considered politically active.

The Veterans' Administration openly admitted that psychosurgery was a standard procedure for treatment and not used just in experiments. The VA Hospitals in Durham, Long Beach, New York, Syracuse and Minneapolis were known to employ these methods on a regular basis. VA clients could typically be subject to these behavior alteration procedures against their will. The Ervin subcommittee concluded that the rights of VA clients had been violated.

LEAA also subsidized the research and development of gadgets and techniques useful to behavior modification. Much of the technology, whose perfection LEAA funded, had originally been developed and made operational for use in the Vietnam War. Companies like Bangor Punta Corporation and Walter Kidde and Co., through its subsidiary Globe Security System, adapted these devices to domestic use in the U.S. ITT was another company that domesticated the warfare technology for potential use on U.S. citizens. Rand Corporation executive Paul Baran warned that the influx back to the United States of the Vietnam War surveillance gadgets alone, not to mention the behavior modification hardware, could bring

KILL SWITCH

about “the most effective, oppressive police state ever created.”

Reagan Era—Violence Center

One of the fascinating aspects of the scandals that plague the U.S. Government is the fact that so often the same names appear from scandal to scandal. From the origins of Ronald Reagan’s political career, as Governor of California, Dr. Earl Brian and Edward Meese played key advisory roles.

Dr. Brian’s name has been linked to the October Surprise and is a central figure in the government’s theft of PROMIS software from INSLAW. Brian’s role touches from the Cabazon Indian scandals to United Press International. He is one of those low-profile key figures.

And, alas, his name appears again in the nation’s behavior modification and mind-control experiments. Dr. Brian was Reagan’s Secretary of Health when Reagan was Governor. Dr. Brian was an advocate of state subsidies for a research center for the study of violent behavior. The center was to begin operations by mid-1975, and its research was intended to shed light on why people murder or rape, or hijack aircraft. The center was to be operated by the University of California at Los Angeles, and its primary purpose, according to Dr. Brian, was to unify scattered studies on anti-social violence and possibly even touch on socially tolerated violence, such as football or war. Dr. Brian sought \$1.3 million for the center.

It certainly was possible that prison inmates might be used as volunteer subjects at the center to discover the unknowns which triggered their violent behavior. Dr. Brian’s quest for the center came at the same time Governor Reagan concluded his plans to phase the state of California out of the mental hospital business by 1982. Reagan’s plan is echoed by Governor Pete Wilson today, to place the responsibility of rehabilitating young offenders squarely on the shoulders of local communities.

But as the proposal became known more publicly, a swell of controversy surrounded it. It ended in a fiasco. The inspiration for the violence center came from three doctors in 1967, five years before Dr. Brian and Governor Reagan unveiled their plans. Amidst urban rioting and civil protest, Doctors Sweet, Mark and Ervin of Harvard put forward the thesis that individuals who engage in civil disobedience possess defective or damaged brain cells. If this conclusion were applied to the American Revolution or the Women’s Rights Movement, a good portion of American society would be labeled as having brain damage.

In a letter to the Journal of the American Medical Association, they stated: “That poverty, unemployment, slum housing, and inadequate education underlie the nation’s urban riots is well known, but the obviousness of these causes may have blinded us to the more subtle role of other possible factors, including brain dysfunction in the rioters who engaged in arson, sniping and physical assault.

“There is evidence from several sources that brain dysfunction related to a focal lesion plays a significant role in the violent and assaultive behavior of thoroughly studied patients. Individuals with electroencephalographic abnormalities in the temporal region have been found to have a much greater frequency of behavioral abnormalities (such as poor impulse control, assaultiveness, and psychosis) than is present in people with a normal brain wave pattern.”

Soon after the publication in the Journal, Dr. Ervin and Dr. Mark published their book *Violence and the Brain*, which included the claim that there were as many as 10 million indi-

KILL SWITCH

viduals in the United States “who suffer from obvious brain disease.” They argued that the data of their book provided a strong reason for starting a program of mass screening of Americans.

“Our greatest danger no longer comes from famine or communicable disease. Our greatest danger lies in ourselves and in our fellow humans...we need to develop an ‘early warning test’ of limbic brain function to detect those humans who have a low threshold for impulsive violence...Violence is a public health problem, and the major thrust of any program dealing with violence must be toward its prevention,” they wrote.

The Law Enforcement Assistance Administration funded the doctors \$108,000 and the National Institute of Mental Health kicked in another \$500,000, under pressure from Congress. They believed that psychosurgery would inevitably be performed in connection with the program, and that, since it irreversibly impaired people’s emotional and intellectual capacities, it could be used as an instrument of repression and social control.

The doctors wanted screening centers established throughout the nation. In California, the publicity associated with the doctors’ report, aided in the development of The Center for the Study and Reduction of Violence. Both the state and LEAA provided the funding. The center was to serve as a model for future facilities to be set up throughout the United States.

The Director of the Neuropsychiatric Institute and chairman of the Department of Psychiatry at UCLA, Dr. Louis Jolyon West was selected to run the center. Dr. West is alleged to have been a contract agent for the CIA, who, as part of a network of doctors and scientists, gathered intelligence on hallucinogenic drugs, including LSD, for the super-secret MK-ULTRA program. Like Captain White (see part three of the series), West conducted LSD experiments for the CIA on unwitting citizens in the safehouses of San Francisco. He achieved notoriety for his injection of a massive dose of LSD into an elephant at the Oklahoma Zoo, the elephant died when West tried to revive it by administering a combination of drugs.

Dr. West was further known as the psychiatrist who was called upon to examine Jack Ruby, Lee Harvey Oswald’s assassin. It was on the basis of West’s diagnosis that Ruby was compelled to be treated for mental disorders and put on happy pills. The West examination was ordered after Ruby began to say that he was part of a right-wing conspiracy to kill President John Kennedy. Two years after the commencement of treatment for mental disorder, Ruby died of cancer in prison.

After January 11, 1973, when Governor Reagan announced plans for the Violence Center, West wrote a letter to the then Director of Health for California, J. M. Stubblebine:

“Dear Stub:

“I am in possession of confidential information that the Army is prepared to turn over Nike missile bases to state and local agencies for non-military purposes. They may look with special favor on health-related applications.

“Such a Nike missile base is located in the Santa Monica Mountains, within a half-hour’s drive of the Neuropsychiatric Institute. It is accessible, but relatively remote. The site is securely fenced, and includes various buildings and improvements, making it suitable for prompt occupancy.

“If this site were made available to the Neuropsychiatric Institute as a research facility, perhaps initially as an adjunct to the new Center for the Prevention of Violence, we

KILL SWITCH

could put it to very good use. Comparative studies could be carried out there, in an isolated but convenient location, of experimental or model programs for the alteration of undesirable behavior.

“Such programs might include control of drug or alcohol abuse, modification of chronic anti-social or impulsive aggressiveness, etc. The site could also accommodate conferences or retreats for instruction of selected groups of mental-health related professionals and of others (e.g., law enforcement personnel, parole officers, special educators) for whom both demonstration and participation would be effective modes of instruction.

“My understanding is that a direct request by the Governor, or other appropriate officers of the State, to the Secretary of Defense (or, of course, the President), could be most likely to produce prompt results.”

Some of the planned areas of study for the Center included:

- Studies of violent individuals.
- Experiments on prisoners from Vacaville and Atascadero, and hyperkinetic children.
- Experiments with violence-producing and violent inhibiting drugs.
- Hormonal aspects of passivity and aggressiveness in boys.
- Studies to discover and compare norms of violence among various ethnic groups.
- Studies of pre-delinquent children.

It would also encourage law enforcement to keep computer files on pre-delinquent children, which would make possible the treatment of children before they became delinquents.

The purpose of the Violence Center was not just research. The staff was to include sociologists, lawyers, police officers, clergymen and probation officers. With the backing of Governor Reagan and Dr. Brian, West had secured guarantees of prisoner volunteers from several California correctional institutions, including Vacaville. Vacaville and Atascadero were chosen as the primary sources for the human guinea pigs. These institutions had established a reputation, by that time, of committing some of the worst atrocities in West Coast history. Some of the experimentations differed little from what the Nazis did in the death camps.

More on the Violence Center

Dr. Earl Brian, Governor Ronald Reagan's Secretary of Health, was adamant about his support for mind-control centers in California. He felt the behavior modification plan of the Violence Control Centers was important in the prevention of crime.

The Violence Control Center was actually the brainchild of William Herrmann as part of a pacification plan for California. A counter insurgency expert for Systems Development Corporation and an advisor to Governor Reagan, Herrmann worked with the Standford Research Institute, the RAND Corporation, and the Hoover Center on Violence. Herrman was also a CIA agent who is now serving an eight-year prison sentence for his role in a CIA counterfeiting operation. He was also directly linked with the Iran-Contra affair according to government records and Herrmann's own testimony.

In 1970, Herrmann worked with Colston Westbrook as his CIA control officer when Westbrook formed and implemented the Black Cultural Association at the Vacaville Medical Facility, a facility which in July experienced the death of three inmates who were forc-

KILL SWITCH

ibly subjected to behavior modification drugs. The Black Cultural Association was ostensibly an education program designed to instill black pride identity in prisons, the Association was really a cover for an experimental behavior modification pilot project designed to test the feasibility of programming unstable prisoners to become more manageable.

Westbrook worked for the CIA in Vietnam as a psychological warfare expert, and as an advisor to the Korean equivalent of the CIA and for the Lon Nol regime in Cambodia. Between 1966 and 1969, he was an advisor to the Vietnamese Police Special Branch under the cover of working as an employee of Pacific Architects and Engineers.

His "firm" contracted the building of the interrogation/torture centers in every province of South Vietnam as part of the CIA's Phoenix Program. The program was centered around behavior modification experiments to learn how to extract information from prisoners of war, a direct violation of the Geneva Accords.

Westbrook's most prominent client at Vacaville was Donald Defreeze, who between 1967 and 1969, had worked for the Los Angeles Police Department's Public Disorder Intelligence unit and later became the leader of the Symbionese Liberation Army. Many authorities now believe that the Black Cultural Association at Vacaville was the seedling of the SLA. Westbrook even designed the SLA logo, the cobra with seven heads, and gave Defreeze his African name of Cinque. The SLA was responsible for the assassination of Marcus Foster, Superintendent of Schools in Oakland and the kidnapping of Patty Hearst.

As a counterinsurgency consultant for Systems Development Corporation, a security firm, Herrmann told the *Los Angeles Times* that a good computer intelligence system "would separate out the activist bent on destroying the system" and then develop a master plan "to win the hearts and minds of the people." The San Francisco-based *Bay Guardian*, recently identified Herrmann as an international arms dealer working with Iran in 1980, and possibly involved in the October Surprise. Herrmann is in an English prison for counterfeiting. He allegedly met with Iranian officials to ascertain whether the Iranians would trade arms for hostages held in Lebanon.

The *London Sunday Telegraph* confirmed Herrmann's CIA connections, tracing them from 1976 to 1986. He also worked for the FBI. This information was revealed in his London trial.

In the 1970s, Dr. Brian and Herrmann worked together under Governor Reagan on the Center for the Study and Reduction of Violence, and then, a decade later, again worked under Reagan. Both men have been identified as working for Reagan with the Iranians.

The Violence Center, however, died an agonizing death. Despite the Ervin Senate Committee investigation and chastation of mind control, the experiments continued. But when the Watergate scandal broke in the early 1970s, Washington felt it was too politically risky to continue to push for mind-control centers.

Top doctors began to withdraw from the proposal because they felt that there were not enough safeguards. Even the Law Enforcement Assistance Agency, which funded the program, backed out, stating, the proposal showed "little evidence of established research ability of the kind of level necessary for a study of this scope."

Eventually it became known that control of the Violence Center was not going to rest with the University of California, but instead with the Department of Corrections and other law enforcement officials. This information was released publicly by the Committee Opposed to Psychiatric Abuse of Prisoners. The disclosure of the letter resulted in the main

KILL SWITCH

backers of the program bowing out and the eventual demise of the center.

Dr. Brian's final public statement on the matter was that the decision to cut off funding represented "a callous disregard for public safety." Though the Center was not built, the mind-control experiments continue to this day.

More on Drugs

The Central Intelligence Agency held two major interests in use of LSD to alter normal behavior patterns. The first interest centered around obtaining information from prisoners of war and enemy agents, in contravention of the Geneva Accords. The second was to deter the effectiveness of drugs used by the enemy on the battlefield.

The MK-ULTRA program was originally run by a small number of people within the CIA known as the Technical Services Staff (TSS). Another CIA department, the Office of Security, also began its own testing program. Friction arose and then infighting broke out when the Office of Security commenced to spy on TSS people after it was learned that LSD was being tested on unwitting Americans.

Not only did the two branches disagree over the issue of testing the drug on the unwitting, they also disagreed over the issue of how the drug was actually to be used by the CIA. The office of Security envisioned the drug as an interrogation weapon. But the TSS group thought the drug could be used to help destabilize another country, it could be slipped into the food or beverage of a public official in order to make him behave foolishly or oddly in public. One CIA document reveals that LSD could be administered right before an official was to make a public speech.

Realizing that gaining information about the drug in real life situations was crucial to exploiting the drug to its fullest, TSS started conducting experiments on its own people. There was an extensive amount of self-experimentation. The Office of Security felt the TSS group was playing with fire, especially when it was learned that TSS was prepared to spike an annual office Christmas party punch with LSD, the Christmas party of the CIA. LSD could produce serious insanity for periods of eight to 18 hours and possibly longer.

One of the "victims" of the punch was agent Frank Olson. Having never had drugs before, LSD took its toll on Olson. He reported that, every automobile that came by was a terrible monster with fantastic eyes, out to get him personally. Each time a car passed he would huddle down against a parapet, terribly frightened. Olson began to behave erratically. The CIA made preparation to treat Olson at Chestnut Lodge, but before they could, Olson checked into a New York hotel and threw himself out from his tenth story room. The CIA was ordered to cease all drug testing.

Mind-control drugs and experiments were torturous to the victims. One of three inmates who died in Vacaville Prison in July was scheduled to appear in court in an attempt to stop forced administration of a drug, the very drug that may have played a role in his death.

Joseph Cannata believed he was making progress and did not need forced dosages of the drug Haldol. The Solano County Coroner's Office said that Cannata and two other inmates died of hyperthermia, extremely elevated body temperature. Their bodies all had at least 108 degrees temperature when they died. The psychotropic drugs they were being forced to take will elevate body temperature.

Dr. Ewen Cameron, working at McGill University in Montreal, used a variety of experimental techniques, including keeping subjects unconscious for months at a time, administering huge electroshocks and continual doses of LSD.

KILL SWITCH

Massive lawsuits developed as a result of this testing, and many of the subjects who suffered trauma had never agreed to participate in the experiments. Such CIA experiments infringed upon the much-honored Nuremberg Code concerning medical ethics. Dr. Cameron was one of the members of the Nuremberg Tribunal.

LSD research was also conducted at the Addiction Research Center of the U.S. Public Health Service in Lexington, Kentucky. This institution was one of several used by the CIA. The National Institute of Mental Health and the U.S. Navy funded this operation. Vast supplies of LSD and other hallucinogenic drugs were required to keep the experiments going. Dr. Harris Isbell ran the program. He was a member of the Food and Drug Administration's Advisory Committee on the Abuse of Depressant and Stimulant Drugs. Almost all of the inmates were black. In many cases, LSD dosage was increased daily for 75 days.

Some 1500 U.S. soldiers were also victims of drug experimentation. Some claimed they had agreed to become guinea pigs only through pressure from their superior officers. Many claimed they suffered from severe depression and other psychological stress.

One such soldier was Master Sergeant Jim Stanley. LSD was put in Stanley's drinking water and he freaked out. Stanley's hallucinations continued even after he returned to his regular duties. His service record suffered, his marriage went on the rocks and he ended up beating his wife and children. It wasn't until 17 years later that Stanley was informed by the military that he had been an LSD experiment. He sued the government, but the Supreme Court ruled no soldier could sue the Army for the LSD experiments. Justice William Brennan disagreed with the Court decision. He wrote, "Experimentation with unknowing human subjects is morally and legally unacceptable."

Private James Thornwell was given LSD in a military test in 1961. For the next 23 years he lived in a mental fog, eventually drowning in a Vallejo swimming pool in 1984. Congress had set up a \$625,000 trust fund for him. Large-scale LSD tests on American soldiers were conducted at Aberdeen Proving Ground in Maryland; Fort Benning, Georgia; Fort Leavenworth, Kansas; Dugway Proving Ground, Utah; and in Europe and the Pacific. The Army conducted a series of LSD tests at Fort Bragg in North Carolina. The purpose of the tests were to ascertain how well soldiers could perform their tasks on the battlefield while under the influence of LSD. At Fort McClellan, Alabama, 200 officers in the Chemical Corps were given LSD in order to familiarize them with the drug's effects. At Edgewood Arsenal, soldiers were given LSD and then confined to sensory deprivation chambers and later exposed to harsh interrogation sessions by intelligence people. In these sessions, it was discovered that soldiers would cooperate if promised they would be allowed to get off the LSD.

In Operation Derby Hat, foreign nationals accused of drug trafficking were given LSD by the Special Purpose Team, with one subject begging to be killed in order to end his ordeal. Such experiments were also conducted in Saigon on Viet Cong POWs. One of the most potent drugs in the U.S. arsenal is called BZ or quinuclidinyl benzilate. It is a long-lasting drug and brings on a litany of psychotic experiences and almost completely isolates any person from his environment. The main effects of BZ last up to 80 hours compared to eight hours for LSD. Negative after-effects may persist for up to six weeks.

The BZ experiments were conducted on soldiers at Edgewood Arsenal for 16 years. Many of the "victims" claim that the drug permanently affected their lives in a negative way. It so disorientated one paratrooper that he was found taking a shower in his uniform and

KILL SWITCH

smoking a cigar. BZ was eventually put in hand grenades and a 750-pound cluster bomb. Other configurations were made for mortars, artillery and missiles. The bomb was tested in Vietnam and CIA documents indicate it was prepared for use by the U.S. in the event of large-scale civilian uprisings.

In Vacaville, psychosurgery has long been a policy. In one set of cases, experimental psychosurgery was conducted on three inmates, a black, a Chicano and a white person. This involved the procedure of pushing electrodes deep into the brain in order to determine the position of defective brain cells, and then shooting enough voltage into the suspected area to kill the defective cells. One prisoner, who appeared to be improving after surgery, was released on parole, but ended up back in prison. The second inmate became violent and there is no information on the third inmate.

Vacaville also administered a "terror drug" Anectine as a way of "suppressing hazardous behavior." In small doses, Anectine serves as a muscle relaxant; in huge doses, it produces prolonged seizure of the respiratory system and a sensation "worse than dying." The drug goes to work within 30 to 40 seconds by paralyzing the small muscles of the fingers, toes, and eyes, and then moves into the intercostal muscles and the diaphragm. The heart rate subsides to 60 beats per minute, respiratory arrest sets in and the patient remains completely conscious throughout the ordeal, which lasts two to five minutes. The experiments were also used at Atascadero.

Several mind-altering drugs were originally developed for non-psychoactive purposes. Some of these drugs are Phenothiazine and Thorazine. The side effects of these drugs can be a living hell. The impact includes the feeling of drowsiness, disorientation, shakiness, dry mouth, blurred vision and an inability to concentrate. Drugs like Prolixin are described by users as "sheer torture" and "becoming a zombie."

The Veterans Administration Hospital has been shown by the General Accounting Office to apply heavy dosages of psychotherapeutic drugs. One patient was taking eight different drugs, three anti-psychotic, two anti-anxiety, one anti-depressant, one sedative and one anti-Parkinson. Three of these drugs were being given in dosages equal to the maximum recommended. Another patient was taking seven different drugs. One report tells of a patient who refused to take the drug. "I told them I don't want the drug to start with, they grabbed me and strapped me down and gave me a forced intramuscular shot of Prolixin. They gave me Artane to counteract the Prolixin and they gave me Sinequan, which is a kind of tranquilizer to make me calm down, which over calmed me, so rather than letting up on the medication, they then gave me Ritalin to pep me up."

Prolixin lasts for two weeks. One patient describes how the drug does not calm or sedate nerves, but instead attacks from so deep inside you, you cannot locate the source of the pain. "The drugs turn your nerves in upon yourself. Against your will, your resistance, your resolve, are directed at your own tissues, your own muscles, reflexes, etc." The patient continues, "The pain grinds into your fiber, your vision is so blurred you cannot read. You ache with restlessness, so that you feel you have to walk, to pace. And then as soon as you start pacing, the opposite occurs to you, you must sit and rest. Back and forth, up and down, you go in pain you cannot locate. In such wretched anxiety you are overwhelmed because you cannot get relief even in breathing."

Psychosurgery, Black Ops

"We need a program of psychosurgery for political control of our society. The pur-

KILL SWITCH

pose is physical control of the mind. Everyone who deviates from the given norm can be surgically mutilated.

“The individual may think that the most important reality is his own existence, but this is only his personal point of view. This lacks historical perspective.

“Man does not have the right to develop his own mind. This kind of liberal orientation has great appeal. We must electrically control the brain. Some day armies and generals will be controlled by electric stimulation of the brain.” These were the remarks of Dr. José Delgado as they appeared in the February 24, 1974 edition of the Congressional Record, No. 26, Vol. 118.

Despite Dr. Delgado’s outlandish statements before Congress, his work was financed by grants from the Office of Naval Research, the Air Force Aero-Medical Research Laboratory, and the Public Health Foundation of Boston.

Dr. Delgado was a pioneer of the technology of Electrical Stimulation of the Brain (ESB). The *New York Times* ran an article on May 17, 1965 entitled “Matador With a Radio Stops Wild Bull.” The story details Dr. Delgado’s experiments at Yale University School of Medicine and work in the field at Cordova, Spain. The *New York Times* stated:

“Afternoon sunlight poured over the high wooden barriers into the ring, as the brave bull bore down on the unarmed matador, a scientist who had never faced a fighting bull. But the charging animal’s horn never reached the man behind the heavy red cape. Moments before that could happen, Dr. Delgado pressed a button on a small radio transmitter in his hand and the bull braked to a halt. Then he pressed another button on the transmitter, and the bull obediently turned to the right and trotted away. The bull was obeying commands in his brain that were being called forth by electrical stimulation by the radio signals to certain regions in which fine wires had been painlessly planted the day before.”

According to Dr. Delgado, experiments of this type have also been performed on humans. While giving a lecture on the Brain in 1965, Dr. Delgado said, “Science has developed a new methodology for the study and control of cerebral function in animals and humans.”

The late L.L. Vasiliev, professor of physiology at the University of Leningrad wrote in a paper about hypnotism: “As a control of the subject’s condition, when she was outside the laboratory in another set of experiments, a radio set was used. The results obtained indicate that the method of using radio signals substantially enhances the experimental possibilities.” The professor continued to write, “I.F. Tomashevsky (a Russian physiologist) carried out the first experiments with this subject at a distance of one or two rooms, and under conditions that the participant would not know or suspect that she would be experimented with. In other cases, the sender was not in the same house, and someone else observed the subject’s behavior. Subsequent experiments at considerable distances were successful. One such experiment was carried out in a park at a distance. Mental suggestions to go to sleep were complied with within a minute.”

The Russian experiments in the control of a person’s mind through hypnosis and radio waves were conducted in the 1930s, some 30 years before Dr. Delgado’s bull experiment. Dr. Vasiliev definitely demonstrated that radio transmission can produce stimulation of the brain. It is not a complex process. In fact, it need not be implanted within the skull or be productive of stimulation of the brain, itself. All that is needed to accomplish the radio control of the brain is a twitching muscle. The subject becomes hypnotized and a muscle

KILL SWITCH

stimulant is implanted. The subject, while still under hypnosis, is commanded to respond when the muscle stimulant is activated, in this case by radio transmission.

Lincoln Lawrence wrote a book entitled *Were We Controlled?* Lawrence wrote, "If the subject is placed under hypnosis and mentally programmed to maintain a determination eventually to perform one specific act, perhaps to shoot someone, it is suggested thereafter, each time a particular muscle twitches in a certain manner, which is then demonstrated by using the transmitter, he will increase this determination even more strongly. As the hypnotic spell is renewed again and again, he makes it his life's purpose to carry out this act until it is finally achieved. Thus are the two complementary aspects of Radio-Hypnotic Intracerebral Control (RHIC) joined to reinforce each other, and perpetuate the control, until such time as the controlled behavior is called for. This is done by a second session with the hypnotist giving final instructions. These might be reinforced with radio stimulation in more frequent cycles. They could even carry over the moments after the act to reassure calm behavior during the escape period, or to assure that one conspirator would not indicate that he was aware of the co-conspirator's role, or that he was even acquainted with him."

RHIC constitutes the joining of two well-known tools, the radio part and the hypnotism part. People have found it difficult to accept that an individual can be hypnotized to perform an act which is against his moral principles. Some experiments have been conducted by the U.S. Army which show that this popular perception is untrue. The chairman of the Department of Psychology at Colgate University, Dr. Estabrooks, has stated, "I can hypnotize a man without his knowledge or consent into committing treason against the United States." Estabrooks was one of the nation's most authoritative sources in the hypnotic field. The psychologist told officials in Washington that a mere 200 well-trained hypnotists could develop an army of mind-controlled sixth columnists in wartime United States. He laid out a scenario of an enemy doctor placing thousands of patients under hypnotic mind control, and eventually programming key military officers to follow his assignment. Through such maneuvers, he said, the entire U.S. Army could be taken over. Large numbers of saboteurs could also be created using hypnotism through the work of a doctor practicing in a neighborhood or foreign-born nationals with close cultural ties with an enemy power.

Dr. Estabrooks actually conducted experiments on U.S. soldiers to prove his point. Soldiers of low rank and little formal education were placed under hypnotism and their memories tested. Surprisingly, hypnotists were able to control the subjects' ability to retain complicated verbal information. J. G. Watkins followed in Estabrooks steps and induced soldiers of lower rank to commit acts which conflicted not only with their moral code, but also the military code which they had come to accept through their basic training. One of the experiments involved placing a normal, stable army private in a deep trance. Watkins was trying to see if he could get the private to attack a superior officer, a cardinal sin in the military. While the private was in a deep trance, Watkins told him that the officer sitting across from him was an enemy soldier who was going to attempt to kill him. In the private's mind, it was a kill or be killed situation. The private immediately jumped up and grabbed the officer by the throat. The experiment was repeated several times, and in one case the man who was hypnotized and the man who was attacked were very close friends. The results were always the same. In one experiment, the hypnotized subject pulled out a knife and nearly stabbed another person.

Watkins concluded that people could be induced to commit acts contrary to their

KILL SWITCH

morality if their reality was distorted by the hypnotism. Similar experiments were conducted by Watkins using WACs exploring the possibility of making military personnel divulge military secrets. A related experiment had to be discontinued because a researcher, who had been one of the subjects, was exposing numerous top-secret projects to his hypnotist, who did not have the proper security clearance for such information. The information was divulged before an audience of 200 military personnel.

Navy School for Assassins

In man's quest to control the behavior of humans, there was a great breakthrough established by Pavlov, who devised a way to make dogs salivate on cue. He perfected his conditioning response technique by cutting holes in the cheeks of dogs and measured the amount they salivated in response to different stimuli. Pavlov verified that "quality, rate and frequency of the salivation changed depending upon the quality, rate and frequency of the stimuli."

Though Pavlov's work falls far short of human mind control, it did lay the groundwork for future studies in mind and behavior control of humans. John B. Watson conducted experiments in the United States on an 11-month-old infant. After allowing the infant to establish a rapport with a white rat, Watson began to beat on the floor with an iron bar every time the infant came in contact with the rat. After a time, the infant made the association between the appearance of the rat and the frightening sound, and began to cry every time the rat came into view. Eventually, the infant developed a fear of any type of small animal. Watson was the founder of the behaviorist school of psychology.

"Give me the baby, and I'll make it climb and use its hands in constructing buildings of stone or wood. I'll make it a thief, a gunman or a dope fiend. The possibilities of shaping in any direction are almost endless. Even gross differences in anatomical structure limits are far less than you may think. Make him a deaf mute, and I will build you a Helen Keller. Men are built, not born," Watson proclaimed. His psychology did not recognize inner feelings and thoughts as legitimate objects of scientific study, he was only interested in overt behavior.

Though Watson's work was the beginning of man's attempts to control human actions, the real work was done by B.F. Skinner, the high priest of the behaviorists movement. The key to Skinner's work was the concept of operant conditioning, which relied on the notion of reinforcement, all behavior which is learned is rooted in either a positive or negative response to that action. There are two corollaries of operant conditioning, Aversion therapy and Desensitization.

Aversion therapy uses unpleasant reinforcement to a response which is undesirable. This can take the form of electric shock, exposing the subject to fear producing situations, and the infliction of pain in general. It has been used as a way of "curing" homosexuality, alcoholism and stuttering. Desensitization involves forcing the subject to view disturbing images over and over again until they no longer produce any anxiety, then moving on to more extreme images, and repeating the process over again until no anxiety is produced. Eventually, the subject becomes immune to even the most extreme images. This technique is typically used to treat people's phobias. Thus, the violence shown on T.V. could be said to have the unsystematic and unintended effect of desensitization.

Skinnerian behaviorism has been accused of attempting to deprive man of his free will, his dignity and his autonomy. It is said to be intolerant of uncertainty in human behav-

KILL SWITCH

ior, and refuses to recognize the private, the ineffable, and the unpredictable. It sees the individual merely as a medical, chemical and mechanistic entity which has no comprehension of its real interests.

Skinner believed that people are going to be manipulated. "I just want them to be manipulated effectively," he said. He measured his success by the absence of resistance and counter control on the part of the person he was manipulating. He thought that his techniques could be perfected to the point that the subject would not even suspect that he was being manipulated.

Dr. James V. McConnel, head of the Department of Mental Health Research at the University of Michigan, said, "The day has come when we can combine sensory deprivation with the use of drugs, hypnosis, and the astute manipulation of reward and punishment to gain almost absolute control over an individual's behavior. We want to reshape our society drastically."

A U.S. Navy psychologist claimed that the Office of Naval Intelligence had taken convicted murderers from military prisons, used behavior modification techniques on them, and then relocated them in American embassies throughout the world. Just prior to that time, the U.S. Senate Intelligence Committee had censured the CIA for its global political assassination plots, including plots against Fidel Castro. The Navy psychologist was Lt. Commander Thomas Narut of the U.S. Regional Medical Center in Naples, Italy. The information was divulged at an Oslo NATO conference of 120 psychologists from the eleven-nation alliance. According to Dr. Narut, the U.S. Navy was an excellent place for a researcher to find "captive personnel" whom they could use as guinea pigs in experiments. The Navy provided all the funding necessary, according to Narut.

Dr. Narut, in a question and answer session with reporters from many nations, revealed how the Navy was secretly programming large numbers of assassins. He said that the men he had worked with for the Navy were being prepared for commando-type operations, as well as covert operations in U.S. embassies worldwide. He described the men who went through his program as "hit men and assassins" who could kill on command.

Careful screening of the subjects was accomplished by Navy psychologists through the military records, and those who actually received assignments where their training could be utilized, were drawn mainly from submarine crews, the paratroops, and many were convicted murderers serving military prison sentences. Several men who had been awarded medals for bravery were drafted into the program.

The assassins were conditioned through "audio-visual desensitization." The process involved the showing of films of people being injured or killed in a variety of ways, starting with very mild depictions, leading up to the more extreme forms of mayhem. Eventually, the subjects would be able to detach their feelings even when viewing the most horrible of films. The conditioning was most successful when applied to "passive-aggressive" types, and most of these ended up being able to kill without any regrets. The prime indicator of violent tendencies was the Minnesota Multiphasic Personality Inventory (MMPI). Dr. Narut knew of two Navy programming centers, the neuropsychiatric laboratory in San Diego and the U.S. Regional Medical Center in Italy, where he worked.

During the audio-visual desensitization programming, restraints were used to force the subject to view the films. A device was used on the subject's eyelids to prevent him from blinking. Typically, the preliminary film was on an African youth being ritualistically cir-

KILL SWITCH

cumcised with a dull knife and without any anesthetic. The second film showed a sawmill scene in which a man accidentally cut off his fingers.

In addition to the desensitization films, the potential assassins underwent programming to create prejudicial attitude in the men, to think of their future enemies, especially the leaders of these countries, as sub-human. Films and lectures were presented demeaning the culture and habits of the people of the countries where it had been decided they would be sent.

After his NATO lecture, Dr. Narut disappeared. He could not be located. Within a week or so after the lecture, the Pentagon issued an emphatic denial that the U.S. Navy had "engaged in psychological training or other types of training of personnel as assassins." They disavowed the programming centers in San Diego and Naples and stated they were unable to locate Narut, but did provide confirmation that he was a staff member of the U.S. Regional Medical Center in Naples.

Dr. Alfred Zitani, an American delegate to the Oslo conference, did verify Narut's remarks and they were published in the *Sunday Times*.

Sometime later, Dr. Narut surfaced again in London and recanted his remarks, stating that he was "talking in theoretical and not practical terms." Shortly thereafter, the U.S. Naval headquarters in London issued a statement indicating that Dr. Narut's remarks at the NATO conference should be discounted because he had "personal problems." Dr. Narut never made any further public statements about the program.

During the NATO conference in Oslo, Dr. Narut had remarked that the reason he was divulging the information was because he believed that the information was coming out anyway. The doctor was referring to the disclosure by a Congressional subcommittee which were then appearing in the press concerning various CIA assassination plots. However, what Dr. Narut had failed to realize at the time, was that the Navy's assassination plots were not destined to be revealed to the public at that time.

Soviets, U.S. Both Using Mind-Control Methods

There were three scientists who pioneered the work of using an electromagnetic field to control human behavior. Their work began 25 years ago. These three were Dr. José Delgado, psychology professor at Yale University; Dr. W. Ross Adey, a physiologist at the Brain Research Institute at UCLA; and Dr. Wilder Penfield, a Canadian.

Dr. Penfield's experiments consisted of the implantation of electrodes deep into the cortexes of epilepsy patients who were to undergo surgery; he was able to drastically improve the memories of these patients through electrical stimulation. Dr. Adey implanted transmitters in the brains of cats and chimpanzees that could send signals to a receiver regarding the electrical activity of the brain; additional radio signals were sent back into the brains of the animals which modified their behavior at the direction of the doctor. Dr. Delgado was able to stop and turn a charging bull through the use of an implanted radio receiver.

Other experiments using platinum, gold and stainless steel electrode implants enabled researchers to induce total madness in cats, put monkeys into a stupor, or to set human beings jerking their arms up and down. Much of Delgado's work was financed by the CIA through phony funding conduits masking themselves as charitable organizations.

Following the successes of Delgado's work, the CIA set up their own research program in the field of electromagnetic behavior modification under the code name Sleeping

KILL SWITCH

Beauty. With the guidance of Dr. Ivor Browning, a laboratory was set up in New Mexico, specializing in working with the hypothalamus or "sweet spot" of the brain. Here it was found that stimulating this area could produce intense euphoria.

Dr. Browning was able to wire a radio receiver-amplifier into the "sweet spot" of a donkey which picked up a five-micro-amp signal, such that he could create intense happiness in the animal. Using the jolts of happiness as an "electronic carrot," Browning was able to send the donkey up a 2000 foot New Mexico mountain and back to its point of origin. When the donkey was proceeding up the path toward its destination, it was rewarded; when it deviated, the signal stopped. "You've never seen a donkey so eager to keep on course in your whole life," Dr. Browning exclaimed.

The CIA utilized the electronic carrot technique in getting trained pigeons to fly miniature microphone-transmitters to the ledge of a KGB safehouse where the devices monitored conversations for months. There was a move within the CIA to conduct further experiments on humans, foreigners and prisoners, but officially the White House vetoed the idea as being unethical.

In May 1989, it was learned by the CIA that the KGB was subjecting people undergoing interrogation to electromagnetic fields, which produced a panic reaction, thereby bringing them closer to breaking down under questioning. The subjects were not told that they were being placed under the influence of these beams. A few years earlier, Dr. Ross Adey released photographs and a fact sheet concerning what he called the Russian Lida machine. This consisted of a small transmitter emitting 10-hertz waves which makes the subject susceptible to hypnotic suggestion. The device utilized the outmoded vacuum-tube design. American POWs in Korea have indicated that similar devices had been used for interrogation purposes in POW camps.

The general, long term goal of the CIA was to find out whether or not mind control could be achieved through the use of a precise, external, electromagnetic beam. The electrical activity of the brain operates within the range of 100-hertz frequency. This spectrum is called ELF or Extremely Low Frequency range. ELF waves carry very little ionizing radiation and very low heat, and therefore do not manifest gross, observable physical effects on living organisms. Published Soviet experiments with ELFs reveal that there was a marked increase in psychiatric and central nervous system disorders and symptoms of stress for sailors working close to ELF generators.

In the mid-1970s, American interest in combining EMR techniques with hypnosis was very prominent. Plans were on file to develop these techniques through experiments on human volunteers. The spoken word of the hypnotist could be conveyed by modulated electromagnetic energy directly into the subconscious parts of the human brain without employing any technical devices for receiving or transacting the messages and without the person exposed to such influence having a chance to control the information input consciously.

In California, it was discovered by Dr. Adey that animal brain waves could be altered directly by ELF fields. It was found that monkey brains would fall in phase with ELF waves. These waves could easily pass through the skull, which normally protected the central nervous system from outside influence.

In San Leandro, Dr. Elizabeth Rauscher, director of Technical Research Laboratory, has been doing ELF/brain research with human subjects for some time. One of the frequen-

KILL SWITCH

cies produces nausea for more than an hour. Another frequency, she calls it the marijuana frequency, gets people laughing. "Give me the money and three months," she says, "and I'll be able to affect the behavior of eighty percent of the people in this town without their knowing it."

In the past, the Soviet Union has invested large sums of time and money investigating microwaves. In 1952, while the Cold War was showing no signs of thawing, there was a secret meeting at the Sandia Corporation in New Mexico between U.S. and Soviet scientists involving the exchange of information regarding the biological hazards and safety levels of EMR. The Soviets possessed the greater preponderance of information, and the American scientists were unwilling to take it seriously. In subsequent meetings, the Soviet scientists continued to stress the seriousness of the risks, while American scientists downplayed their importance. Shortly after the last Sandia meeting, the Soviets began directing a microwave beam at the U.S. embassy in Moscow, using embassy workers as guinea pigs for low-level EMR experiments. Washington, D.C. was oddly quiescent, regarding the Moscow embassy bombardment. Discovered in 1962, the Moscow signal was investigated by the CIA, which hired a consultant, Milton Zaret, and code named the research Project Pandora. According to Zaret, the Moscow signal was composed of several frequencies, and was focused precisely upon the Ambassador's office. The intensity of the bombardment was not made public, but when the State Department finally admitted the existence of the signal, it announced that it was fairly low.

There was consensus among Soviet EMR researchers that a beam such as the Moscow signal was destined to produce blurred vision and loss of mental concentration. The *Boston Globe* reported that the American ambassador had not only developed a leukemia-like blood disease, but also suffered from bleeding eyes and chronic headaches. Under the CIA's Project Pandora, monkeys were brought into the embassy and exposed to the Moscow signal; they were found to have developed blood composition anomalies and unusual chromosome counts. Embassy personnel were found to have a 40 percent higher than average white blood cell count. While Operation Pandora's data gathering proceeded, embassy personnel continued working in the facility and were not informed of the bombardment until 10 years later. Embassy employees were eventually granted a 20 percent hardship allowance for their service in an unhealthy post. Throughout the period of bombardment, the CIA used the opportunity to gather data on psychological and biological effects of the beam on American personnel.

The U.S. government began to examine the affects of the Moscow signal. The job was turned over to the Defense Advanced Research Projects Agency (DARPA). DARPA is now developing electromagnetic weaponry. The man in charge of the DARPA program, Dr. Jack Verona, is so important and so secretive that he doesn't even return President George Bush's telephone calls.

Electronic Weapons

The American public was never informed that the military had planned to develop electromagnetic weapons until 1982, when the revelation appeared in a technical Air Force magazine.

The magazine article stated, "...specifically generated radio-frequency radiation (RFR) fields may pose powerful and revolutionary anti-personnel military trends." The article indicated that that it would be very easy to use electromagnetic fields to disrupt the

KILL SWITCH

human brain because the brain, itself, was an electrically mediated organ. It further indicated that a rapidly scanning RFR system would have a stunning or killing capability over a large area. The system was developable.

Navy Captain Dr. Paul E. Taylor read a paper at the Air University Center for Aerospace Doctrine, Research and Education, at Maxwell Air Force Base, Alabama. Dr. Taylor was responsible for the Navy's Radiation Laboratory and had been studying radiation effects on humans. In his paper, Dr. Taylor stated, "The ability of individuals to function (as soldiers) could be degraded to such a point that would be combat ineffective." The system was so sophisticated that it employed microwaves and millimeter waves and was transportable by a large truck.

Lawrence Livermore National Laboratory in the South Bay, is working on the development of a "brain bomb." A bomb could be dropped in the middle of a battlefield which would produce microwaves, incapacitating the minds of soldiers within a circumscribed area.

Applications of microwave technology in espionage were available for over 25 years. In a meeting in Berkeley of the American Association for the Advancement of Science as early as 1965, Professor J. Anthony Deutsch of New York University, provided an important segment of research in the field of memory control. In layman terms, Professor Deutsch indicated that the mind is a transmitter and if too much information is received, like too many vehicles on a crowded freeway, the brain ceases to transmit. The Professor indicated that an excess of acetylcholine in the brain can interfere with the memory process and control. He indicated excess amounts of acetylcholine can be artificially produced, through both the administration of drugs or through the use of radio waves. The process is called Electronic Dissolution of Memory (EDOM). The memory transmission can be stopped for as long as the radio signal continues.

As a result, the awareness of the person skips over those minutes during which he is subjected to the radio signal. Memory is distorted, and time-orientation is destroyed.

According to Lincoln Lawrence, author of *Were We Controlled?*, EDOM is now operational. "There is already in use a small EDOM generator/transmitter which can be concealed on the body of the person. Contact with this person, a casual handshake or even just a touch, transmits a tiny electronic charge plus an ultra-sonic signal tone which for a short period will disturb the time-orientation of the person affected.... it can be a potent weapon for hopelessly confusing evidence in the investigation of a crime."

Thirty years ago, Allen Frey discovered that microwaves of 300 to 3000 megahertz could be "heard" by people, even if they were deaf, if pulsed at a certain rate. Appearing to be originating just in back of the head, the sound boomed, clicked, hissed or buzzed, depending upon the frequency. Later research has shown that the perception of the waves takes place just in front of the ears. The microwaves causes pressure waves in the brain tissue, and this phenomenon vibrates the sound receptors in the inner ear through the bone structure. Some microwaves are capable of directly stimulating the nerve cells of the auditory pathways. This has been confirmed with experiments with rats, in which the sound registers 120 decibels, which is equal to the volume of a nearby jet during takeoff. Aside from having the capability of causing pain and preventing auditory communication, a more subtle effect was demonstrated at the Walter Reed Army Institute of Research by Dr. Joseph C. Sharp. Dr. Sharp, himself, was the subject of an experiment in which pulsed microwave

KILL SWITCH

audiograms, or the microwave analog of the sound vibrations of spoken words, were delivered to his brain in such a way that he was able to understand the words that were spoken. Military and undercover uses of such a device might include driving a subject crazy with inner voices in order to discredit him, or conveying undetectable instructions to a programmed assassin.

But the technology has been carried even a step further. It has been demonstrated by Dr. Ross Adey that microwaves can be used to directly bring about changes in the electrical patterns of different parts of the brain. His experiments showed that he could achieve the same mind control over animals as Dr. Delgado did in the bull incident. Dr. Delgado used brain implants in his animals, Dr. Adey used microwave devices without pre-conditioning. He made animals act and look like electronic toys.

Mind-Control Origins Found in Nazi Germany

At the conclusion of World War Two, American investigators learned that Nazi doctors at the Dachau concentration camp in Germany had been conducting mind-control experiments on inmates. They experimented with hypnosis and with the drug mescaline.

Mescaline is a quasi-synthetic extract of the peyote cactus, and is very similar to LSD in the hallucinations which it produces. Though they did not achieve the degree of success they had desired, the SS interrogators in conjunction with the Dachau doctors were able to extract the most intimate secrets from the prisoners when the inmates were given very high doses of mescaline.

There were fatal mind-control experiments conducted at Auschwitz. The experiments there were described by one informant as "brainwashing with chemicals." The informant said the Gestapo wasn't satisfied with extracting information by torture. "So the next question was, why don't we do it like the Russians, who have been able to get confessions of guilt at their show trials?" They tried various barbiturates and morphine derivatives. After prisoners were fed a coffee-like substance, two of them died in the night and others died later.

The Dachau mescaline experiments were written up in a lengthy report issued by the U.S. Naval Technical Mission, whose job it was at the conclusion of the war to scour all of Europe for every shred of industrial and scientific material that had been produced by the Third Reich. It was as a result of this report that the U.S. Navy became interested in mescaline as an interrogation tool. The Navy initiated Project Chatter in 1947, the same year the Central Intelligence Agency was formed. The Chatter format included developing methods for acquiring information from people against their will, but without inflicting harm or pain.

At the conclusion of the war, the OSS was designated as the investigative unit for the International Military Tribunal, which was to become known as the Nuremberg Trials. The purpose of Nuremberg was to try the principal Nazi leaders. Some Nazis were on trial for their experiments, and the U.S. was using its own "truth drugs" on these principal Nazi prisoners, namely Goring, Ribbentrop, Speer and eight others. The Justice in charge of the tribunal had given the OSS permission to use the drugs.

The Dachau doctors who performed the mescaline experiments also were involved in aviation medicine. The aviation experiments at Dachau fascinated Heinrich Himmler. Himmler followed the progress of the tests, studied their findings and often suggested improvements. The Germans had a keen interest in several medical problems in the field of flying, they were interested in preventing pilots from slowly becoming unconscious as a

KILL SWITCH

result of breathing the thin air of the high altitudes and there was interest in enhancing night vision.

The main research in this area was at the Institute of Aviation in Munich, which had excellent laboratories. The experiments in relationship to the Institute were conducted at Dachau. Inmates had been immersed in tubs of ice water with instruments placed in their orifices in order to monitor their painful deaths. Dr. Hubertus Strughold, who ran the German aviation medicine team, confirmed that he had heard humans were used for the Dachau experiments. Hidden in a cave in Hallein were files recording the Dachau experiments.

On May 15, 1941, Dr. Sigmund Rascher wrote a letter to Himmler requesting permission to use the Dachau inmates for experiments on the physiology of high altitudes. Rascher lamented the fact that no such experiments have been done using human subjects. "The experiments are very dangerous and we cannot attract volunteers," he told Himmler. His request was approved.

Dachau was filled with Communists and Social Democrats, Jews, Jehovah's Witnesses, Gypsies, clergymen, homosexuals, and people critical of the Nazi government. Upon entering Dachau, prisoners lost all legal status, their hair was shaved off, all their possessions confiscated, they were poorly fed, and they were used as slaves for both the corporations and the government. The SS guards were brutal and sadistic. The idea to test subjects at Dachau was really the brain child of Erich Hippke, chief surgeon of the Luftwaffe.

Between March and August of 1942 extensive experiments were conducted at Dachau regarding the limits of human endurance at high altitudes. These experiments were conducted for the benefit of the German Air Force. The experiments took place in a low-pressure chamber in which altitudes of up to 68,000 feet could be simulated. The subjects were placed in the chamber and the altitude was raised, many inmates died as a result. The survivors often suffered serious injury. One witness at the Nuremberg trials, Anton Pacholegg, who was sent to Dachau in 1942, gave an eyewitness account of the typical pressure test:

"The Luftwaffe delivered a cabinet constructed of wood and metal. It was possible in the cabinet to either decrease or increase the air pressure. You could observe through a little window the reaction of the subject inside the chamber. The purpose of these experiments was to test human energy and the subject's capacity...to take large amounts of pure oxygen, and then to test his reaction to a gradual decrease in oxygen. I have personally seen through the observation window of the chamber when a prisoner inside would stand a vacuum until his lungs ruptured. Some experiments gave men such pressure in their heads that they would go mad and pull out their hair in an effort to relieve the pressure. They would tear their heads and face with their fingers and nails in an attempt to maim themselves in their madness. They would beat the walls with their hands and head and scream in an effort to relieve pressure in their eardrums. These cases of extreme vacuums generally ended in the death of the subjects."

The former prisoner also testified, "An extreme experiment was so certain to result in death that in many instances the chamber was used for routine execution purposes rather than an experiment." A minimum 200 prisoners were known to have died in these experiments.

The doctors directly involved with the research held very high positions: Karl Brandt was Hitler's personal doctor; Oskar Schroeder was the Chief of the Medical Services of the

KILL SWITCH

Luftwaffe; Karl Gebhardt was Chief Surgeon on the Staff of the Reich Physician SS and Police, and German Red Cross President; Joachim Mrugowsky was Chief of the Hygienic Institute of the Waffen SS; Helmut Poppendick was a senior colonel in the SS and Chief of the Personal Staff of the Reich Physicians SS and Police; Siegfried Ruff was Director of the Department of Aviation Medicine.

The first human guinea pig was a 37-year-old Jew in good health. Himmler invited 40 top Luftwaffe officers to view a movie of an inmate dying in the pressure chamber. After the pressure chamber tests, the cold treatment experiments began. The experiments consisted of immersing inmates in freezing water while their vital signs were monitored. The goal was to discover the cause of death. Heart failure was the answer. An inmate described the procedures:

“The basins were filled with water and ice was added until the water measured 37.4 F and the experimental subjects were either dressed in a flying suit or were placed in the water naked. The temperature was measured rectally and through the stomach. The lowering of the body temperature to 32 degrees was terrible for experimental subjects. At 32 degrees the subject lost consciousness. They were frozen to 25 degrees. The worst experiment was performed on two Russian officer POWs. They were placed in the basin naked. Hour after hour passed, and while usually after a short time, 60 minutes, freezing had set in, these two Russians were still conscious after two hours. After the third hour one Russian told the other, ‘Comrade, tell that officer to shoot us.’ The other replied, ‘Don’t expect any mercy from this Fascist dog.’ Then they shook hands and said goodbye. The experiment lasted at least five hours until death occurred.

Dry freezing experiments were also carried out at Dachau. One subject was put outdoors on a stretcher at night when it was extremely cold. While covered with a linen sheet, a bucket of cold water was poured over him every hour. He was kept outdoors under sub-freezing conditions. In subsequent experiments, subjects were simply left outside naked in a court under freezing conditions for hours. Himmler gave permission to move the experiments to Auschwitz, because it was more private and because the subjects of the experiment would howl all night as they froze. The physical pain of freezing was terrible. The subjects died by inches, heartbeat became totally irregular, breathing difficulties and lung edema resulted, hands and feet became frozen white.”

As the Germans began to lose the war, the aviation doctors began to keep their names from appearing in Himmler’s files for fear of future recriminations.

America Made It To the Moon with Dachau Research

The Nazi doctors who experimented on the inmates of prison camps during World War Two were tried for murder at the Nuremberg Tribunal. The accused were educated, trained physicians, they did not kill in anger or in malice, they were creating a science of death.

Ironically, in 1933, the Nazi’s passed a law for the protection of animals. The law cited the prevention of cruelty and indifference to animals as one of the highest moral values of a people, animal experimentation was unthinkable, but human experimentations were acceptable. The victims of the crime of these doctors numbered into the thousands.

In 1953, while the Central Intelligence Agency was still conducting mind control and behavior modification on unwitting humans in this country, the United States signed the Nuremberg Code, a code born out of the ashes of war and human suffering. The document

KILL SWITCH

was a solemn promise never to tolerate such human atrocities again. The Code maintains three fundamental principles:

- The subjects of any experimentation must be volunteers who thoroughly understand the purpose and the dangers of the experiments. They must be free to give consent and the consent must be without pressure and they must be free to quit the experiments at any time.
- The experiments must be likely to yield knowledge which is valuable to everyone. The knowledge must be such that it could not be gained in any other way.
- The experiments must be conducted by only the most competent doctors, and they must exercise extreme care.

The Nazi aviation experiments met none of these conditions. Most inmates at Dachau knew that the experiments in the pressure chamber were fatal. From the very beginning, control of the experiments was largely in the hands of the SS, which was later judged to be a criminal organization by the Nuremberg Tribunal.

Despite our lessons from Nuremberg and the death camps, the CIA, U.S. Navy and the U.S. Army Chemical Corps targeted specific groups of people for experimentation who were not able to resist; prisoners, mental patients, foreigners, ethnic minorities, sex deviants, the terminally ill, children and U.S. military personnel and prisoners of war. They violated the Nuremberg Code for conducting and subsidizing experiments on unwitting citizens. The CIA began its mind-control projects in 1953, the very year that the U.S. signed the Nuremberg Code and pledged with the international community of nations to respect basic human rights and to prohibit experimentation on captive populations without full and free consent.

Dr. Cameron, a CIA operative, was one of the worst offenders against the Code, yet he was a member of the Nuremberg Tribunal, with full knowledge of its testimony. In 1973, a three judge court in Michigan ruled, "...experimental psychosurgery, which is irreversible and intrusive, often leads to the blunting of emotions, the deadening of memory, the reduction of affect, and limits the ability to generate new ideas. Its potential for injury to the creativity of the individual is great and can infringe on the right of the individual to be free from interference with his mental process.

"The state's interest in performing psychosurgery and the legal ability of the involuntarily detained mental patient to give consent, must bow to the First Amendment, which protects the generation and free flow of ideas from unwarranted interference with one's mental processes." Citing the Nuremberg Code, the court found that "the very nature of the subject's incarceration diminishes the capacity to consent to psychosurgery." In 1973, the Commonwealth of Massachusetts enacted regulations which would require informed written consent from voluntary patients before electroshock treatment could be performed.

Senator Sam Ervin's Committee lashed out bitterly at the mind control and behavior modification experiments and ordered them discontinued, they were not. But the New England Journal of Medicine states, that the consent provisions are "no more than an elaborate ritual." They called it "a device that when the subject is uneducated and uncomprehending, confers no more than a semblance of propriety on human experimentation."

The Nuremberg Tribunal brought to light that some of the most respected figures in the medical profession were involved in the vast crime network of the SS. Only 23 persons

KILL SWITCH

were charged with criminal activity in this area, despite the fact that hundreds of medical personnel were involved. The defendants were charged with crimes against humanity. They were found guilty of planning and executing experiments on humans without their consent, in a cruel and brutal manner which involved severe torture, deliberate murder and with the full knowledge of the gravity of their deeds. Only seven of the defendants were sentenced to death and hanged, others received life sentences. Five who were involved in the experiments were not tried. Ernest Grawitz committed suicide, Carl Clauberg was tried in the Soviet Union, Josef Mengele escaped to South America and was later captured by Israeli agents, Horst Schumann disappeared and Siegmund Rascher was executed by Himmler.

There were 200 German medical doctors conducting these medical experiments. Most of these doctors were friends of the United States before the war, and despite their inhuman experiments, the U.S. attempted to rebuild a relationship with them after the war. The knowledge the Germans had accumulated at the expense of human life and suffering, was considered a "booty of war," by the Americans and the Russians. The Americans tracked down Dr. Strughold, the aviation doctor who was in charge of the Dachau experiments. With full knowledge that the experiments were conducted on captive humans, the U.S. recruited the doctors to work for them. General Dwight D. Eisenhower gave his personal approval to exploit the work and research of the Nazi's in the death camps.

Within weeks of Eisenhower's order, many of these notorious doctors were working for the U.S. Army at Heidelberg. Army teams scoured Europe for scientific experimental apparatus such as pressure chambers, compressors, G-force machines, giant centrifuges, and electron microscopes. These doctors were wined and dined by the U.S. Army while most of Germany's post-war citizens virtually starved.

The German doctors were brought to the U.S. and went to work for Project Paperclip. All these doctors had been insulated against war crime charges. The Nuremberg prosecutors were shocked that U.S. authorities were using the German doctors despite their criminal past.

Under the leadership of Strughold, 34 scientists accepted contracts from Project Paperclip, and were moved to Randolph Air Force Base at San Antonio, Texas. The authorization to hire these Nazi scientists came directly from the Joint Chiefs of Staff. The top military brass stated that they wished to exploit these rare minds. Project Paperclip, ironically, would use Nazi doctors to develop methods of interrogating German prisoners of war.

As hostilities began to build after the war between the Americans and the Russians, the U.S. imported as many as 1000 former Nazi scientists.

In 1969, Americans landed on the moon, and two groups of scientist in the control center shared the credit, the rocket team from Peenemunde, Germany, under the leadership of Werner von Braun, these men had perfected the V-2s which were built in the Nordhausen caves where 20,000 slave laborers from prison camp Dora had been worked to death. The second group were the space doctors, lead by 71-year-old Dr. Hubertus Strughold, whose work was pioneered in Experimental Block No. 5 of the Dachau concentration camp and the torture and death of hundreds of inmates. The torture chambers that were used to slowly kill the prisoners of the Nazi's were the test beds for the apparatus that protected Neil Armstrong from harm, from lack of oxygen, and pressure, when he walked on the moon.

KILL SWITCH

Bibliography

The *Napa Sentinel* would like to acknowledge the exceptional contribution of radio commentator David Emory and his extensive archives. Other source material included:

Acid Dreams by Martin Lee & Bruce Shclain

From the Belly of the Beast, Jack Henry Abbott

Congressional Record, No. 26, Vol. 118, Feb. 24, 1974, testimony of José Delgado

The Glass House Tapes, by Louis Tackwood

The Great Heroin Coup, by Henrik Kruger

“Individual Rights and the Federal Role in Behavior Modification,” 93rd Congress, 2nd Session, 1974. *Sam Ervin Senate Subcommittee on Constitutional Rights*

The Last Hero, Wild Bill Donovan, by Anthony Cave Brown

Mind Control, by Peter Schrag

The Mind Stealers, by Samuel Chavkin

“Matador with a Radio Stops Wild Bull,” *New York Times*, May 17, 1965

Operation Mind Control, Walter Bowart

The Phoenix Program, Douglas Valentine

The Physical Control of the Mind, José M. R. Delgado, MD

The Politics of Heroin in Southeast Asia, Alfred McCoy

“Role of Brain Disease in Riots and Urban Violence,” by Vernon H. Mark, Frank R. Ervin, and William H. Sweet. *Journal of the American Medical Association*, September 11, 1967

San Francisco Bay Guardian, August 28, 1991

“Convict Talks of 1984 Arms Talks with Iran,” *San Francisco Chronicle*, December 29, 1986

San Francisco Chronicle, January 13, 1973

Guy Wright column, *San Francisco Chronicle*, July 5, 1987

Sunday Times, July 1975

Violence and the Brain, by Vernon H. Mark and Frank R. Ervin

War on the Mind: The Military Uses and Abuses of Psychology, by Peter Watson

Were We Controlled? - by Lincoln Lawrence

“Why was Patricia Hearst Kidnapped?” - by Mae Brussell, *The Realist*

And other select readings.

Remote-Controlled Man

X-ray shows bottle-shaped object behind his left ear. A former pilot closely linked to the CIA charges the agency tried to force him to do its bidding—by stealing his brain. ...

[He is] ... James Petit, 39.

The adventurer and soldier of fortune says that he has lived a chilling real-life version of the movie *The Manchurian Candidate*—in which a man is turned into a mindless robot who instantly obeys all orders and kills on command. ...

But while the Red Chinese in the 1962 film used brainwashing and torture to create

KILL SWITCH

their puppet, Petit claims the CIA made a robot out of him by inserting receivers in his brain. ...

Petit had trouble getting anyone to believe his incredible story—until court-ordered X-rays of his skull revealed a strange, bottle-shaped object.

Implants

“The quartz implants are like little radio receivers,” declared Petit, a Texan.[Note:2]

“I think the CIA was going to use me in a program to assassinate someone.”[Note:3]

Confirmed his lawyer, Roy Gelber:

“There are definitely foreign objects behind his left ear near the neck which radiologists conclude have no physical reason for being there.” ...

Amazingly, even though they were in the middle of nowhere, his girlfriend—who Petit later accused of being a CIA plant—suddenly turned up. ...

His sweetheart, he says, arranged for him to be taken to the burn center at the U.S. Army Institute of Surgical Research in San Antonio, Texas.

Hospital spokesman Ray Dery confirmed that Petit was treated there until July 2, 1982.

Petit insists that it was while he was a patient there that doctors placed the implants in his neck, face, arms, and ears—and he saw them do it. ...

“I saw this doctor working on my ear—with a drill in his hand, like you would drill a tooth with.”

When he asked another doctor why he was putting wires in his arm with a long needle, “he got red and blurted out it was only antibiotics,” Petit said.

“But they were wire implants.” ...[Note:4] [Note:5]

And, he charges, he’s by far not the only man surgically tampered with by the CIA. ...

Confirmed

Kathy Hamilton, Petit’s former attorney, has been quoted as saying he definitely worked for the CIA.

“That has been confirmed,” she said in an interview.

And attorney Alexander Martone, ... added: “I have direct confirmation that Jim Petit has flown for the CIA.”

[Note:1] Excerpts from *Operation Crystal Ball*, Jim Leggett, 1992, page 308. See articles about Petit in the *Miami Herald* on May 28, 1984 and in *The National Examiner* on April 30, 1985.

[Note:2] There are similar methods: “Engineers ... have eliminated the amplifier and replaced the speaker with a magnet that is only two millimeters [.08 inch] in diameter. “The magnet is mounted on a silicone disc, similar to a contact lens, which rests right on the eardrum, held in place by a thin film of oil.’ ... a wireless microphone ... will pick up sounds and convert them into magnetic signals that make the magnet vibrate. ... At the University of Virginia, Jonathan Spindel is bypassing the eardrum and middle ear by implanting magnets about 0.6 millimeters [.02 inch] diameter in the inner ear. ... Spindel’s device uses an electromagnetic coil to vibrate the implanted magnet.” – *Popular Science*, “Magnetic Implants Aid Hearing,” November 1994, page 38.

[Note:3] Sources revealed that individuals are conditioned to obey commands and speak words received by radio implants that they don’t know exist. The sound is calibrated

KILL SWITCH

to a low-volume that is experienced as their thoughts and it is not perceived as external input.

[Note:4] There are similar devices: “The purpose of this subproject is to ... evaluate the possibility of altering the properties of various interfaces (space-human tissue, etc.) involved in biological systems of interest in ways that will facilitate remote measurement ... of interest in connection with the problem of body antennas, personnel tagging, polygraphy and other areas. ... The investigation will be of ... materials and phenomena which could perform useful functions in miniature bio-medical sensors. ... Their fine dimension should enable filaments to faithfully transmit mechanical stress or pressure pulses of even high frequency with a minimum of distortion. Micro-filaments can penetrate tissue without surgery ...” – Project MKULTRA, Subproject 138, 11 October 1961, CIA MORI DocID: 17397.

[Note:5] Reports indicate that micro-filaments are injected next to people’s eardrums under anesthesia and serve as hidden microphone-transmitters. The electrodes broadcast nearby sounds, self-talk, and conversations without the implanted individuals’ knowledge.

U.S. Explores Russian Mind-Control Technology

Washington—The Russian government is perfecting mind-control technology developed in the 1970s that could be used to hone fighting capabilities of friendly forces while demoralizing and disabling opposing troops.

Known as acoustic psycho-correction, the capability to control minds and alter behavior of civilians and soldiers may soon be shared with U.S. military, medical and political officials, according to U.S. and Russian sources.

The sources say the Russian government, in the spirit of improved U.S.-Russian relations, is beginning to lift the veil of secrecy surrounding the technology.

The Russian capability, demonstrated in a series of laboratory experiments dating back to the mid-1970s, could be used to suppress riots, control dissidents, demoralize or disable opposing forces and enhance the performance of friendly special operations teams, sources say.

Pioneered by the government funded Department of Psycho-Correction at the Moscow Medical Academy, acoustic psycho-correction involves the transmission of specific commands via static or white noise bands into the human subconscious without upsetting other intellectual functions. Experts said laboratory demonstrations have shown encouraging results after exposure of less than one minute.

Moreover, decades of research and investment of untold millions of rubles in the process of psycho-correction has produced the ability to alter behavior on willing and unwilling subjects, the experts add.

In an effort to restrict potential misuse of this capability, Russian senior research scientists, diplomats, military officers and officials of the Russian Ministry of Higher Education, Science & Technology Policy are beginning to provide limited demonstrations for their U.S. counter parts.

Further evaluations of key technologies in the United States are being planned, as are discussions aimed at creating a framework for bringing the issue under bilateral or multilateral controls, U.S. and Russian sources said.

An undated paper by the Psychor Center, a Moscow-based group affiliated with the Department of Psycho-Correction at the Moscow Medical Academy, acknowledges the po-

KILL SWITCH

tential danger of this capability. The Russian experts, including George Kotov, a former KGB general now serving in a senior government ministry post, present in their report a list of software and hardware associated with their psycho-correction program that could be procured for as little as \$80,000.

“As far as it has become possible to probe and correct psychic contents of human beings despite their will and consciousness by instrumental means... results having been achieved can get out of [our] control and be used with inhumane purposes of manipulating psyche,” the paper states.

The Russian authors note that “World opinion is not ready for dealing appropriately with the problems coming from the possibility of direct access to the human mind.” Therefore, the Russian authors have proposed a bilateral Center for Psycho-technologies where U.S. and Russian authorities could monitor and restrict the emerging capabilities.

Janet Morris of the Global Strategy Council, a Washington-based think tank established by Ray Cline, former Central Intelligence Agency deputy director, is a key U.S. liaison between Russian and U.S. officials.

In a Dec. 15 interview, Morris said she and the Richmond, Va.-based International Healthline Corp. have briefed senior U.S. intelligence and Army officials about the Russian capabilities, which Morris said could include hand-held devices for purposes of special operations, crowd control and antipersonnel actions. Healthline Corp. is evaluating Russian health care technologies and will underwrite Russian demonstrations in the United States.

“We talked about using this to screen and prepare special operations personnel for extremely difficult missions and ways in which this could be integrated into doctrine for [psychological operations],” Morris said.

She said Army officials were concerned about the capability being directed against armored systems and personnel through electronic communications links. Ground troops, she said, risk exposure to bone-conducting sound waves that cannot be offset by earplugs or other current protective gear. Morris added that U.S. countermeasures could include sound cancellations, a complex process that involves broadcasting oppositely phased wave forms in precisely matched frequencies.

Maj. Pete Keating, a U.S. Army spokesman, said senior Army officials had expressed interest in reviewing Russian capabilities but that repeated plans to schedule visits to the former Soviet Union were rejected by Donald Atwood, deputy secretary of defense. Keating said he was unfamiliar with the mind-control technology and could not discuss specific details.

U.S. sources said government officials and leaders from the business and medical communities will consider Russian offers to place the mind-control capabilities under bilateral controls.

At least one senior U.S. senator, government intelligence officials and the U.S. Army's Office for Operations, Plans and Force Development are interested in reviewing the Russian capabilities, U.S. sources said.

In addition, International Healthline Corp. is planning to bring a team of Russian specialists here within the next couple of months to demonstrate the capability, company President Jim Hovis said in a Dec. 2 interview.

KILL SWITCH

Meanwhile, the U.S. Army's Armament Research, Development & Engineering Center is conducting a one-year study of acoustic beam technology that may mirror some of the effects reported by the Russians.

Army spokesman Bill Harris said Dec. 3 the command awarded the one-year study contract to Scientific Applications & Research Associates of Huntington Beach, Calif. Related research is being conducted at the Moscow-based Andreev Institute, U.S. and Russian sources said.

Despite the growing interest in a capability traditionally reserved for science fiction novels and cinema, industry and academic experts are cautious and skeptical about its potential battlefield use.

"This is not something that strikes me as requiring high-level attention," Raymond Garthoff, a defense and intelligence analyst at the Washington-based Brookings Institution, said in a Dec. 2 interview.

Morris contends that the capability has been demonstrated in the laboratory in Russia and should be placed under international restrictions at the earliest possible opportunity.

Hearing "Voices"

The Hidden History of the CIA's Electromagnetic Mind-Control Experiments

Controlling human behavior by remote radio transmission isn't science fiction—it's a fact. After years of secret experiments, the U.S. government has achieved its goal: Breaking and entering American minds at will. At Bien Hoa Hospital, SEI teams had implanted electrodes in the skulls of Vietcong prisoners of war in experimental attempts to direct the behavior of brain-wired subjects by remote control.

"Man Hallucinates, Says Microwaves Are Murdering Him," reported the March 21, 1979, edition of the Los Angeles *Herald Examiner*. The subject of the article, electronics engineer Leonard Kille, claimed his brain had been destroyed in mind-control experiments by CIA-sponsored psychiatrists Vernon Mark of Boston City Hospital and UCLA's Frank Ervin.

Kille was a co-inventor of the Land camera, named for Edwin Land of the Polaroid Corporation. A veteran researcher in government-sponsored mind-control programs, Land had founded the Scientific Engineering Institute (SEI) on behalf of the CIA. In July 1968 at South Vietnam's Bien Hoa Hospital, SEI teams had implanted electrodes in the skulls of Vietcong prisoners of war in experimental attempts to direct the behavior of brain-wired subjects by remote control. Upon completion of the experiments, the POWs were shot and cremated by a company of Green Berets.

In 1966 Kille suspected that his wife was having an affair. She denied it; he flew into rages. A psychiatrist interpreted Kille's anger as a "personality pattern disturbance" and referred him to Mark and Ervin for neurological tests. Although Mark and Ervin described Kille's behavior as "dangerous," Kille's most violent outburst consisted of throwing tin cans at his wife (he missed). Hospitalized by order of the psychiatrists, Kille was involuntarily subjected to experimental brain surgery.

During the touch-and-go operation, electrical strands were implanted in Kille's brain. Each strand was studded with approximately 20 electrodes. Only after installation of the apparatus was Kille enlisted to sign his official consent to the procedure; the electrodes were already in place, zapping his brain.

KILL SWITCH

Following the nightmarish operation, Dr. Peter Breggin of the Center to Study Psychiatry, an ombudsman of psychiatric abuses, investigated Kille's case and found—despite Mark's and Ervin's reports of therapeutic success—that the post-op patient was “totally disabled and subject to nightmarish terrors that he will be caught and operated on again at the Massachusetts General Hospital.”

In 1971, a hospital attendant discovered Kille holding a metal wastebasket over his head to “stop the microwaves.” A sympathetic doctor at Boston's VA hospital, where Kille was transferred, ordered for him “a large sheet of aluminum foil so he may fashion a protective helmet for himself.” Uninformed that Kille had been fitted with electrodes, the VA doctors diagnosed him as a delusional paranoiac.

According to Kille, Mark and Ervin controlled his moods by remote electronic stimulation. “They turn me up or turn me down,” Kille insisted.

***In the 1920s, the development of the electroencephalograph (EEG)—an apparatus for detecting and recording brain waves—offered brain physiologists the key to unlock the mysteries of the body's pivotal organ of thought, intellect and personality. While giving hope for a specific means of mapping mental-health ailments, the newfound electrical pattern to brain function also opened a monstrous Pandora's box: possible radio control of the mind. In 1934 Doctors E. L. Chaffee and R. U. Light published “A Method for Remote Control of Electrical Stimulation of the Nervous System,” an introductory monograph on electromagnetic mind-control methodology. In 1964, [Note:2] electromagnetic-response (EMR) researcher Dr. José Delgado of Cordoba, Spain, climbed into a bullring and, with the push of a button, triggered an electrode implanted in the brain tissue of a charging bull, halting the beast in its tracks.

Also in 1934, Russian physiologist L. L. Vasiliev published “Critical Evaluation of the Hypnogenic Method,” an article detailing the experiments of Dr. I. F. Tomashevsky in remote-radio control of the human brain “at a distance of one or more rooms and under conditions where the participant would not know or suspect that she would be experimented upon.” Reported Vasiliev, “One such experiment was carried out in a park with the subject at a distance. A post-hypnotic mental suggestion to go to sleep was complied with within a minute.”

The CIA created an EMR laboratory at Allan Memorial, a Montreal, Canada, research facility created in 1943. The heart of Allan Memorial's Radio Telemetry Laboratory (a tele-meter is an electrical apparatus for measuring a quantity, transmitting the result by radio to a distant station, and there indicating or recording it) was called the Grid Room. In the Grid Room, an involuntary subject would be strapped into a chair, by force if necessary. Violent resistance was quelled with curare, the powerful plant extract used in arrow poisons by South American Indians and in medicine to produce muscular paralysis. From a head bristling with electrodes and transducers, the subdued subject's brain waves would be beamed to a nearby reception room crammed with voice analyzers and radio receivers cobbled together by laboratory assistant Leonard Rubenstein. Rubenstein, a man who lacked professional medical credentials, believed passionately in the political uses of mind control. Experiments at Allan Memorial's telemetry lab, he declared, would one day help governments “keep tabs on people without their knowing.”

KILL SWITCH

“De-patterning” was accomplished with heavy doses of LSD, barbiturate-induced comas, and electroconvulsive therapy administered at 75 times the normal dose for psychiatric therapy.

“De-patterning”—the systematic annihilation of a subject’s mind and memory—was accomplished at Allan Memorial with heavy doses of LSD, barbiturate-induced comas lasting up to 65 days and electroconvulsive therapy administered at 75 times the customary dose for psychiatric therapy. Following depatterning, “psychic driving”—the repetition of a recorded message for 16 hours a day—programmed the freshly emptied mind.

In 1965 the *New York Times* reported obscure EMR experiments secretly funded by the government under the front-page headline: “Mind Control Coming, Scientist Warns.” Quoted in the article, University of California psychology professor Dr. David Krech cautioned, “EMR research may carry with it even more serious implications than the achievements of the atomic physicists.”

Earlier, a 1963 CIA-issued manual prepared on the study of Radio-Hypnotic Intra-Cerebral Control (RHIC) explained: “When a part of your brain receives a tiny electrical impulse from outside sources, such as vision, hearing, etc., an emotion is produced—anger at the sight of a gang of boys beating an old woman, for example. The same emotions of anger can be created by artificial radio signals sent to your brain by a controller. You could instantly feel the same white hot anger without any apparent reason.”

Richard Helms, Plans Director for the CIA, oversaw military-oriented EMR research pursuing the possible transmission of strategic subliminal messages into the aggregate minds of enemy populations. In a 1964 memo to the Warren Commission regarding the possibility that Lee Harvey Oswald had been a mind-controlled assassin, Helms outlined the existence of “biological radio communication.”

“Cybernetics [the science of communication and control theory that is concerned with the study of automatic control systems, such as the brain and mechanical-electrical communications],” Helms admitted, “can be used in molding of a child’s character, the inculcation of knowledge and techniques, the amassing of experience, the establishment of social behavior patterns ... all functions which can be summarized as control of the growth processes of the individual.”

A subsequent CIA directive, summarized in a brochure on “cybernetic technique” distributed by Mankind Research Unlimited, an EMR study facility in Washington, D.C., detailed the CIA’s development of a “means by which information of modest rate can be fed to humans utilizing other senses than sight or hearing.” According to the brochure, the CIA’s cybernetic technique, “based on Eastern European research,” involved beaming information via radio frequencies to individual human nerve cells. The purpose, the directive stated, was “the enhancement of a subject’s mental and physical performance.”

***In 1965, the Department of Defense (DOD) discovered that the American embassy in Moscow was being purposely irradiated by the Russians with massive levels of microwaves. By that time, the DOD’s secretive Advance Research Projects Agency (ARPA) at the Walter Reed Army Institute of Research in the nation’s capital had itself developed a prodigious arsenal of electromagnetic weapons. Doctor José Delgado—whose current work with radio waves was underwritten by the CIA and Navy—believed scientists could transform, shape, direct and robotize humankind. “The great danger of the future,” Delgado warned, “is that we will have robotized human beings who are not aware that they have

KILL SWITCH

been robotized.”

Baffled by the cause and intent of the microwave saturation at the embassy in Moscow, officials of the American intelligence community consulted experts on the biological effects of the radiation. Recalls Dr. Milton Zaret, a leading microwave scientist later recruited by “Pandora,” a code-named CIA project for the study of radio-frequency-directed brain response, “The CIA inquired whether I thought electromagnetic radiation beamed at the brain from a distance could affect the way a person might act, and if microwaves could be used to facilitate brainwashing or to break down prisoners under investigation.” The State Department elected to keep the so-called Moscow Signal a secret from American Embassy employees—and studied the side-effects of the radiation instead. Ambassador Walter J. Stoessel Jr., a long-time American diplomat in the Soviet Union, whose office was situated in the magnetic beam’s center, succumbed by stages to blood disease, bleeding eyes, nausea and lymphoma. State Department employees Charles Bohlen and Llewellyn Thompson fell prey to cancer. The existence of the Soviet beam was finally acknowledged by the U.S. in 1976, in response to a report by syndicated columnist Jack Anderson. Officially, the State Department concluded that the microwave saturation of the embassy served not to brainwash, but to activate bugging devices in the walls. However, Dr. Zaret, after conducting his own tests, deduced that the Moscow Signal was psychoactive. “Whatever other reasons the Russians may have had [for irradiating the American embassy],” posits Zaret, “they believed the beam would modify the behavior of personnel.”

***Back in 1956, geophysicists R. E. Holzer and O. E. Deal, detected naturally occurring electromagnetic signals in the auditory range that were produced by thunderstorms. With little variation, most of the electromagnetic bursts were metered at 25 to 130 cycles per second, with a very low attenuation rate. In other words, lightning discharges could be picked up anywhere in the world as “magnetic noise” on the extremely low frequency (ELF) radio dial.

RF-mind-control testing became a military priority—a simple, pulsed microwave beam outperformed drugs, ECT, torture and brain surgery as a means of behavior modification.

Two years later, Dr. Allan Frey, a bio-physics researcher conducting studies at General Electric’s Advanced Electronics Center at Cornell University (and a contractor for the U.S. Office of Naval Research), published a “technical note” in *Aerospace Medicine* reporting that the human auditory system responds “to electromagnetic energy in at least a portion of the radio frequency (RF) spectrum. Further, this response is instantaneous and occurs at low-power densities ... well below that necessary for biological damage.” Frey’s subjects “heard” buzzes and knocks when exposed to low-frequency radio emissions. In one experiment, Frey swept a radio beam over a subject. With each sweep, the subject heard the radio frequency sound for a few seconds and reported it. When Frey modulated power densities, he discovered that even clinically deaf subjects perceived RF sounds. Experiments with transmitter settings proved that radio beams could induce the perception of severe buffeting of the head or prick the skin like needles.

Frey concluded that the brain is a powerful receiver of electromagnetic rays, and the “vocabulary” of RF noises could be expanded by modulating the pulse of the charge, which would be perceived by the subject as originating from within or slightly behind the head.

KILL SWITCH

Among practical applications of auditory stimulation, Frey proposed “stimulating the nervous system without the damage caused by electrodes.” Attracting the attention of CIA and DOD officials, Frey’s work with microwaves had obvious uses in covert military operations. In one experiment, for instance, he synchronized pulsed microwaves with the myocardial rhythm of a frog, whereupon its heart stopped. Stimulating the hypothalamus of cats and dogs with microwaves powerfully effected emotions.

Frey was reluctant to experiment on humans for ethical reasons. But Pandora operatives did not balk at irradiating human subjects. Under CIA auspices, Dr. Dietrich Beischer exposed approximately 7,000 naval crewmen to dangerous levels of microwaves at the Naval Aerospace Research Laboratory in Pensacola, Florida. Data on exposure limits, Beischer justified, could be obtained in no other way, given the “exquisitely complex and dynamic nature of the human organism.”

An “official” halt to Pandora was called in 1970, but classified, RF-mind-control testing had become a military priority. A simple, pulsed microwave beam outperformed drugs, ECT, torture and brain surgery as a means of behavior modification. By the late 1960s, CIA scientists had achieved direct communication between brain and computer, and had demonstrated in the laboratory that computer-assisted automatic learning was possible by pinpointing neuron clusters in the brain with radio signals. Microwaves easily penetrated the brain’s protective shields of bone, ligament and membrane. Brain waves could be unscrambled and deciphered, recorded and beamed to another person—creating artificial two-way mental communication.

At Walter Reed Army Hospital of Research in 1973, Dr. Joseph Sharp, strapped inside an isolation chamber, heard “words” beamed at him in a pulsed-microwave audiogram. (An audiogram is a computerized analog of the spoken voice.) ARPA’s Robert O. Becker foresaw in the experiment “obvious applications in covert operations.” Becker imagined a barrage of “voices” driving an enemy insane, and post-hypnotic suggestion radioed to a programmed assassin, directing him to kill.

According to Naval Captain Paul Tyler in a 1976 essay, “The Electromagnetic Spectrum in Low-Intensity Conflict,” a “speed-of-light weapons effect” could be achieved with “the passage of approximately 100 milliamperes [of directed frequency] through the myocardium, [leading] to cardiac standstill and death.” In other words, electromagnetic devices with stun or kill settings could theoretically wipe out entire armies—and cities. The patent for just such a “death-ray” device, according to officials of the McFarlane Corporation, an independent research and development firm, was pirated from them in 1965 by NASA. The theft was reported in hearings before the House subcommittee on DOD appropriations, chaired by Representative George Mahon (D-Texas). According to McFarlane company literature, the invention—termed a Modulated Electron-Gun X-Ray Nuclear Booster—could be adapted to “communications, remote control and guidance systems, electromagnetic radiation telemetering and death-ray applications.”

Was the technology tested at home on private citizens? In March 1978, the city of Eugene, Oregon, found itself inundated with microwave radiation. The *Oregon Journal* reported: “Mysterious Radio Signals Causing Concern in Oregon.” Federal government specialists blamed the Soviets, but the Federal Communications Commission concluded that the signal—recorded throughout the state of Oregon—came from a Navy transmitter in California.

KILL SWITCH

Oregonians statewide complained of headaches, fatigue, inability to sleep, reddening of the skin, anxiety, “clicks” in the head and a “buzz” harmonizing with a high-pitched wail. Canadian researcher Andrew Michrowski wrote to Prime Minister Pierre Trudeau on September 19, 1978, citing a Pacific Northwest Center for Non-Ionizing Radiation study that found the signals “psychoactive” and “very strongly suggestive of achieving the objective of brain control.”

***Clearly, breaching the ultimate stronghold of privacy—the mind—has been accomplished. If the U.S. government plans to do the thinking for all Americans, the days of *freedom, liberty* and *justice*—and human identity itself—appear to be numbered.

[Note:1] “Hearing ‘Voices’,” Alex Constantine, *Hustler*, January 1995. For references see *Psychic Dictatorship in the U.S.A.*, Alex Constantine, Portland, OR: Feral House, 1995.

[Note:2] Erratum corrected.

Secret, Don't Tell

The Encyclopedia of Hypnotism

Svengali: Unethical Stage Hypnosis in Literature and Life

Mind-Control Research: Goals and Methods

Physical Methods of Psychiatry

The History of Deliberate Personality Splitting

Brainwashing: The Technology

Svengali: Unethical Stage Hypnosis in Literature and Life

The hypnotist can be erotically fascinated by the sight of his inanimate, plastic, unresisting subject. In this, hypnotists share a dream world with undertakers.

– Robert Marks, p. 119

An Englishman with a French name, George Du Maurier (1834-1896), wrote his last and most famous novel, *Trilby*, about hypno-control. It was the first “best seller.”

Du Maurier got the idea for his tale of Svengali's cruel domination of his hapless hypnotic subject from viewing a demonstration of a subject's complete, amnesic **dissociation** in a hypnotist's office. In the late 19th century, both natural split personalities and artificial personality splitting (by suggested amnesia under hypnosis) were hot new items in psychological research.[1] The young female whose hypnotic submission was demonstrated to Du Maurier was an unknowing, chronic, hypnotic subject, an artificially-split personality.

The novelist watched her be hypnotized, made to obey commands under trance, then awakened. He saw her obedience to posthypnotic commands and her rationalization of them as being freely willed choices. He observed her total unawareness of the previous trance state. He realized the tragic potential for abuse of such a long-term, unknowing, hypnotic subject.

Svengali and Trilby

The novel, *Trilby*, published in 1894, contained some minor technical errors. Nevertheless, it introduced the basic, sordid facts of hypnotic exploitation to a mass readership.[2] By the vehicle of fiction, it presented important facts about abusive hypnosis. Du Maurier's tale of poor Trilby stimulated a much needed public awareness, and discussion, of unethi-

KILL SWITCH

cal hypnosis. What Svengali did to Trilby has never quite been forgotten, despite ceaseless efforts by the hypnosis lobby to discredit the basic facts.

In the novel, Svengali, a middle-aged, unsuccessful musician, captured Trilby by a disguised induction, then hypno-trained her into a split personality (and a brilliant singer). Thereafter, she kept her puppet master, Svengali, living in luxury, supported by her concert performances. She always sang in an amnesic trance.[3]

He began Trilby's conditioning by persuading her to agree to a Mesmer-style induction by passes:

Svengali told her to sit down on the divan, and sat opposite to her, and bade her look him well in the white of the eyes.

“Recartez-moi bien tans le planc tes yeaux.”

(lit:) Remove me in the plane of your eyes.

Then he made little passes and counterpasses on her forehead and temples and down her cheek and neck. Soon her eyes closed and her face grew placid. (Du Maurier, p. 69)

In the novel, as with real-life subjects, Trilby did not understand how a seemingly harmless first submission to hypnosis can develop into a terrible long-term mind slavery. Svengali gradually transformed her from a proud, independent person into an obedient hypno-tool. Now she lived a cruel, secret life in addition to the “real” life that she consciously lived.

Conceited, derisive, and malicious, he alternately bullies and fawns in a harsh, croaking voice...Though Trilby is repelled at first by his greasy, dirty appearance and regards him as a spidery demon or incubus, she becomes completely his creature under his hypnosis....Gecko...[is] a young fiddler, small, swarthy, shabby, brown-eyed, and pock-marked; a nail-biter. Though he loves Trilby he helps Svengali train her...so that Svengali may exploit her. (Magill, Masterplots, p. 1158)

At the story's end, foul Svengali dies. Trilby dies a few hours after. (Du Maurier's presumption that a mind-controlled victim cannot survive without the puppet master is false.) The novel concludes with Gecko, Svengali's assistant, trying to explain to Trilby's grieving former friends what happened to her—and how a hypnotic split personality functions:

Gecko sat and smoked and pondered for a while, and looked from one to the other. Then he pulled himself together with an effort, so to speak, and said, “Monsieur, she never went mad—not for one moment!...She had forgotten—voila tout!”

“But hang it all, my friend, one doesn't forget such a...”

“...I will tell you a secret. There were two Trilbys. There was the Trilby you knew...But all at once—pr-r-r-out! presto! augenblick!...with one wave of his hand over her—with one look of his eye—with a word—Svengali could turn her into the other Trilby, his Trilby, and make her do whatever he liked...you might have run a red-hot needle into her and she would not have felt it...”

“He had but to say ‘Dors!’ and she suddenly became an unconscious Trilby of marble, who could...think his thoughts and wish his wishes—and love him at his bidding with a strange unreal factitious love...When Svengali's Trilby was singing—or seemed to you as if she were singing—our Trilby was fast asleep...in fact, our Trilby was dead...and then, suddenly, our Trilby woke up and wondered what it was all about...” (Du Maurier, pp. 456-459)

Trilby is now back in print (Everyman, 1994), an old fable that refuses to be forgot-

KILL SWITCH

ten. Svengali, the name that Du Maurier gave to Trilby's evil hypnotist, is the author's best-known character. The mere word is resonant with sinister implications. A **Svengali** is "one who attempts, usually with evil intentions, to persuade or force another to do his bidding." (*Webster's Ninth New Collegiate Dictionary*)

Exploitation of Female Stage Mediums

The publication of Du Maurier's novel wound up a century of European hypno-abuse of genetically susceptible persons, especially young women. *Trilby* spotlighted the specific problem of hypnotic exploitation of women (and men) in the theater world.

The use of somnambulist (highly-conditioned) mediums on stage, or in **séances** serving smaller audiences, was common in that era. The **medium** tended to be young, female, and attractive. She was a highly susceptible hypnotic subject, of course—and not protected by strong and prosperous family connections.

The use of hypnotized women on stage for entertainment emerged from eighteenth century scientific demonstrations of trance and medical hypnosis. Scientific researchers regarded their subjects as means to an end, as useful objects whom they manipulated like laboratory rats to prove, or disprove, their competing hypotheses. Medical hypnotists who were followers of Charcot viewed their patients being treated by hypnosis as disgusting neurotics. Their mechanistic mind manipulations respected only the knowledge and will of the operator. Unethical hypnotists viewed subjects as possessions destined by inborn genetic susceptibility to be ruled by the power of any master who made the effort to acquire and manipulate them. Most hypnotists scorned their subjects for the very quality they worked hardest to develop in them: mindless obedience.

Du Maurier may also have read the autobiography of Charles Lafontaine before he wrote *Trilby*. Lafontaine failed as an actor, but then became wealthy as a stage hypnotist. The secret of his success on stage was not his own talent, but that of his female hypnotic subject. Lafontaine...*taught her a theatrical role that she then performed beautifully on the stage before a large audience and of which she could remember nothing in her waking state.* (Ellenberger, *The Discovery of the Unconscious*, p. 157)

He might have read Auguste Lassaigne's autobiography. Lassaigne was French, born in 1819. He was just a touring solo juggler the day he watched an 18-year-old girl named Prudence receive treatment from a magnetizer. Observing her somnambulist behavior, he became fascinated with the possibilities of hypnosis. Perhaps, he also suddenly envisioned a more prosperous professional future for himself. He courted and married Prudence. Thereafter, she traveled with Auguste, and his act became a stage show in which he hypnotized her.

Offstage, Auguste used hypnotic suggestions to sexually arouse Prudence, which produced "heavenly voluptuousness." His control, however, was imperfect; an angry Prudence could resist induction! (Ibid.)

In 1894, the same year that *Trilby* was published, a legal case involving a disreputable psychic healer, Ceslav Lubicz-Czynski, was reported. He had a chronically abused medium:

He made use above all of a method which nowadays is hardly ever applied and which was called "Psychic Transfer." He hypnotized a female employee who served him as a medium (and at the same time as a lover) and suggested to the patient sitting nearby that his pains and sufferings would be transferred to the medium. (Hammerschlag, p. 35)

KILL SWITCH

In deep trance, the young woman was caused to experience other people's ailments, daily acquiring her mental version of their pains and suffering. How cruel! The sexual exploitation was also objectionable, for Czynski was at that time pursuing a rich aristocratic client, the Baroness Hedwig von Zedlitz, with the hope of marriage to her. He conducted his "courtship" during his hypnotic services to her. That is what caused the legal case (not his psychological and sexual abuse of the medium), for the Baroness said "Yes" under hypnosis—and her relatives reported the matter to the police.

"Voodoo Death" on Stage

In 1894, another hypnotist, Franz Neukomm, also made European news. Ella first was hypnotized by two doctors who were hired by a "relative" to treat her for a "nervous ailment." Their power of suggestion temporarily suppressed the symptoms, but then she got even worse. Neukomm happened to be passing through, and her relative took Ella to be mesmerized by him. He also achieved an effective cure of her problem. Neukomm then saw opportunity knocking. He convinced Ella's relative that the somnambulist girl might again relapse in the absence of his hypnotic influence and therefore should remain in his care. He would look after her without charge. Her relative then abandoned Ella to Neukomm. Thereafter, she traveled with the hypnotist as his medium. Neukomm was "effective," to say the least. One day, he suggested to Ella that a cold needle, which he placed on her hand, was red-hot. Its touch then produced a real burn on her hand (a known somnambulist phenomenon).

During each show, Neukomm invited an ailing volunteer from the audience up on stage. Then he would hypnotize Ella and give her a suggestion to place herself in the mind of the patient and provide information about his or her state of health. The night that Ella died, Neukomm, to increase the audience's sense of drama, had changed his hypnotic instructions in a small, but significant way. He told Ella, "Your soul will leave your body in order to enter that of the patient."

Ella showed an uncharacteristic, strong resistance to that hypnotic suggestion. She tried to deny it.

Imperious master Neukomm deepened her trance, and firmly repeated the "leave your body" command. Once more, she resisted. He further deepened the trance and repeated the command again.

Ella Salamon died. The postmortem stated that heart failure, caused by Neukomm's hypnotic suggestion, was the probable cause of her death. Neukomm was charged with manslaughter and found guilty. (Schrenck-Notzing, 1902) Ella's death was similar to what anthropologists call "voodoo" death, death by suggestion.[4]

Hypnotic Subject Killed on Stage

In another case of that era, a stage hypnotist named Flint was performing in Switzerland, when his program went terribly wrong:

One of his acts was to lead on to the stage his wife, who was his partner in the show, and bring her to a state of rigidity. He would then place a heavy piece of rock on her stomach and invite volunteers from the audience to come and smash the rock with a hammer. One night a member of the audience misjudged his blow with the hammer and, instead of smashing the rock, he hit the performer's wife and caused internal injuries from which she died shortly afterwards. (Magonet, pp. 19-20)

KILL SWITCH

Abusive Hypnosis in Literature

When novelists write about unethical hypnosis, they deal with issues of dominance versus submission, the predator's technical expertise versus the subject's ignorance, and betrayal versus trustworthiness. In storyland, however, the mind-controlling villain never enjoys a final victory.

In the late 1800s, the subject of hypnosis dominated in French nonfiction publishing. Some years, every book published in France was about hypnosis. French fiction writers also wrote about it. Alexander Dumas, author of *The Three Musketeers*, wrote six novels which involved mesmerism, "The Marie Antoinette Series." De Maupassant's last short story, "Le Horla," featured a man who realizes he is a victim of predatory hypnosis. E.T.A. Hoffman was another European writer who was fascinated by hypnosis. His fiction is saturated with every aspect of it. He viewed deep trance as true penetration of the hypnotist's mind into the subject's mind. Hoffman said that hypnotism

...can be either good or evil. The evil magnetizer is a kind of moral vampire who destroys his subject...Therefore, the magnetic relationship can be either good (friendly, fatherly), or evil (demoniacal). (quoted in Ellenberger, p. 160)

Thomas Mann's 1931 story, "Mario and the Magician," sees hypnotism as an over-throwing of a person's normal duality and balance of surrender and control tendencies:

...the capacity for self-surrender,... for becoming a tool, for the most...utter self-abnegation, was but the reverse side of that other power to will and to command. Commanding and obeying formed together one single principle, one indissoluble unity.

Mann ended that story by letting the hypnotist's insulted subject hit back. Dr. George Estabrooks observed a similar incident in real life. He...

...attended a stage exhibition and arrived late. He was horrified to see a respectable acquaintance stripped to his underwear with a broom handle for a flute gamboling around the stage under the delusion that he was a Greek faun. Highly gratified also to see the faun knock the hypnotist flat the moment the trance was removed. (Young, in LeCron, p. 385)

Mind-Control Research: Goals and Methods

- **Terminal Experiments**
- **Mind-Control Research Goals**
- **Personality Restructuring**

In working on this book I have had to come to terms with my own emotions—disbelief, bewilderment, disgust, and anger and, more than once in the early stages, a feeling that the subject was simply too evil to cope with. Nothing I had researched before could have prepared me...

– Gordon Thomas, *Journey into Madness*, p. 8

In a stream of memos during the 1950s, the CIA laid out an ambitious array of mind-control research goals. Even unlikely-sounding paths of inquiry were eventually crafted into operational technologies by throwing enough time, money, and brain power into the process.

Terminal Experiments

[They wanted]...reliable results relevant to operations. In documents and conversation, Allen and his coworkers called such realistic tests "terminal experiments"—terminal in the sense that the experiment would be carried through to completion. It

KILL SWITCH

would not end when the subject felt like going home or when he or his best interest was about to be harmed....By definition, terminal experiments went beyond conventional ethical and legal limits.

– John Marks, *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate*, p. 32

When Morse Allen was directing BLUEBIRD (the first CIA hypnosis project), he first performed hypnosis experiments on agency secretaries and office staff. Soon, however, he needed subjects with whom the CIA could take more risks.

Hypnosis skeptics, for years, had been rebuking experimenters in the field of **anti-social hypnosis**. The skeptics said that experiments proved nothing when the volunteers had knowingly agreed to participate. They argued that those subjects were unconsciously confident that their professor, or boss, or officer was not really going to hurt them or make them do something wrong. Morse Allen agreed. He wanted to test subjects for whom the stakes were completely real—even to the point of life or death.

For how could researchers learn to make permanent changes in the way a person's brain works without making permanent changes in the way the experimental subject's brain works? How could they research techniques that might—or would—cause brain damage? Or death? To solve this dilemma, a dual policy for secret government experimentation developed: a classic double standard.

For such subjects, called **terminal subjects**, all risks were permissible, even long-term changes in personality, even risks to life and sanity. And all those risks could be taken without the subject's pre-knowledge or permission. Because asking permission or providing pre-knowledge could negate the experiment.

For persons in the research bureaucracy and experimenters, however, no risk was acceptable. These morally questionable terminal experiments were labeled “top secret,” deliberately keeping the information and results from the public. The top-secret label was also a “license to kill” for research bureaucrats and technicians, absolving them of accountability for their actions.

Morse Allen approved the use of **terminal experiments** in 1950. From then on, subjects were entrapped, used, and permanently changed by CIA experimentation. They were discarded when the experimenter had no more use for them. The CIA, however, still felt that a frustrating atmosphere of moral inhibition was impeding their research. A 1950 memo said:

We shall continually strive to attain more knowledge and better techniques. In the meantime, my general feeling is that because we have accomplished things which seem almost impossible, the authorities concerned almost believe that nothing is impossible. As you know, there are definite limitations, especially since we are so greatly handicapped by popular and official prejudice against some of our methods. (quoted in Schefflin & Opton, p. 114)

The CIA began researching brainwashing techniques in 1953, *...the very year that the United States government signed the Nuremberg Code that prohibits human experimentation on captive populations, such as prisoners, or anybody else for that matter, unless the person is fully informed on the nature of the experiment and freely gives his or her consent.* (Chavkin, *The Mind Stealers*)

Wolff, a CIA brainwash researcher, told his superiors:

Where any of the studies involve potential harm to the subject, we expect the Agency to

KILL SWITCH

make available suitable subjects and a proper place for the performance of necessary experiments. (quoted in Weinstein, 1988, p. 133)

The CIA's last policy restraints on terminal experiments vanished in 1954. That was the year a Russian defector, Vladimir Petrov, revealed that the May 1951 disappearance of two British intelligence agents had been staged by the KGB because it knew that the two (who were double agents also working for the KGB) were suspected and were under investigation by superiors. A very disturbed U.S. Joint Chief's officer wrote:

It would appear that very nearly all U.S./U.K. high-level planning information prior to 25 May 1951...must be considered compromised.... (Martin, p. 61)

President Eisenhower instructed Lieutenant General James Doolittle to make recommendations for improved CIA operations to prevent another such Soviet intelligence coup in the future. Sixty days later, Doolittle turned in recommendations to pursue...*"every possible scientific and technical avenue of approach to the intelligence problem"...* he urged the CIA to become *"more ruthless" than the KGB. "If the United States is to survive, longstanding American concepts of 'fair play' must be reconsidered...We must learn to subvert, sabotage and destroy our enemies by more clever, more sophisticated and more effective methods than those used against us."* (Martin, p. 62)

Doolittle's recommendations were followed. In 1959, a hypnotist, writing of "hypnosis in war," said: "It is relevant to note that an individual who was concerned with this type of work described it as 'unethical' and a 'dirty mess.'" (Marcuse, *Hypnosis: Fact and Fiction*, p. 204).

In that same decade, Alden Sears ran a University of Denver study for MKULTRA, using students as hypnotic subjects. He researched the "building blocks" that make an **unknowing hypnotic subject**: "Could a hypnotist induce a totally separate personality? Could a subject be sent on missions he would not remember unless cued by the hypnotist?" In 1957, Sears wrote that the next experiments, on methods "to build second identities [artificial personality splitting]...could not be handled in the University situation." (John Marks, 1979, pp. 186-7)

Sears refused to participate in that ugly second generation of experiments. He became a minister instead. Afterwards, he would never talk about the hypnosis experiments he had done.

Where Terminal Research Was Done

In the 60s, MKULTRA directors kicked mind-control experimentation into high gear. Their investigations had three experimental levels: 1) basic research, 2) clinical testing, and 3) testing in operational situations. Richard Helms was "the driving force behind this." (Weinstein, p. 129). Various chunks of research were...*conducted at industrial facilities, academic centers, hospitals, government research sites and state and federal correctional and mental health institutions...MKULTRA's funding bypassed normal channels...its full scope was known to only a handful of people.* (Schefflin and Opton, p. 132)

Fifteen penal, or mental, institutions were used by the CIA for secret research on their inmates. The Addiction Research Center of the U.S. Public Health Service Hospital, Lexington, Kentucky, was one such institution. The Federal Narcotics Bureau, the Food and Drug Administration, and possibly certain defense contractors, were also involved in mind experiments.

For example, in one typical LSD experiment, the CIA enlisted the aid of the Navy and

KILL SWITCH

also that of the National Institute of Mental Health (NIMH). Both served as false-front conduits for CIA money. A typical CIA document states that the directors of NIMH and the National Institutes of Health fully recognized the CIA's "interest" and had offered the Agency "full support and protection." (Lee and Schlain, p. 24)

CIA mind-control researchers also worked, and were based, in educational institutions. They involved "at least 185 scientists and some eighty institutions: prisons, pharmaceutical companies, hospitals, and forty-four medical colleges and universities" in this type of study. (Chavkin, p. 12) Those facilities were...*all over the United States, at the great research centers like Boston Psychopathic, the University of Illinois Medical School, Mount Sinai, Columbia University, the University of Oklahoma, the Addiction Research Center at Lexington, Kentucky, the University of Chicago, and the University of Rochester, and still other centers, researchers had begun projects funded by the Agency through intermediaries.* (Thomas, pp. 156-157)

Ivy League colleges, especially, became centers for defense and CIA contracts. At Harvard, "students and professors had for years served as guinea pigs for CIA- and military-funded" experiments (Lee and Schlain, p. 73). A professor later recalled that *Princeton was crawling with agents. They came courting everyone. It was obvious. They would give us whatever we wanted...We realized we were being recruited, but at that time we were flattered that such a prestigious government agency was interested in us.* (Ibid., footnote, p. 46)

In New York, MKULTRA researched in a very different social atmosphere—a **safehouse** disguised as a brothel. Although listed under the Federal Bureau of Narcotics, the safehouses were actually managed and funded by the CIA. George White organized the first one in a Greenwich Village apartment. He equipped it with a stable of prostitutes. He observed their interactions with customers through a special two-way glass, which functioned as a mirror on the brothel side and as a clear observation glass on the researcher's side.

The CIA was studying the use of "lovemaking" for espionage purposes and analyzing the sexual behavior of johns—especially of certain targeted individuals. White also tested experimental drugs, administered by experimental covert means, to the unknowing patrons. In 1955, White was transferred to San Francisco where he set up two more safehouses doing similar experiments. The safehouse experiments went on into the 60s.

After retiring, White wrote in a personal letter:

I was a very minor missionary, actually a heretic, but I toiled wholeheartedly in the vineyards because it was fun, fun, fun. Where else could a red blooded American boy lie, kill, cheat, steal, rape, and pillage with the sanction and blessing of the All-Highest? (quoted in John Marks, 1979, p. 101)[5]

Cameron's Patients

Cameron's patients are the best-known individual victims of CIA-supported mind-control experiments. The patients and their presenting symptoms when they arrived at Dr. Cameron's office at McGill University in Canada for psychiatric help were not unusual: unhappy wife, middle-aged businessman with a holocaust flashback, hypochondria, arthritis, and menopause. Once they fell into Cameron's trap, however, they became humanoid white rats expended in extreme, ruthless, and brain-damaging experiments on mind control.[6]

Cameron was working on a new mind-control technique. One patient, Mr. Weinstein, was a middle-aged Canadian businessman who owned a prosperous clothing manufactur-

KILL SWITCH

ing company. Weinstein made the mistake of asking Cameron for help to overcome an occasional phantom choking sensation. After years of Cameron's bizarre, destructive experimentation, Weinstein acquired severe mental damage. His son, Harvey, grew up and became a psychiatrist out of a burning need to understand what happened to his father's mind.[7]

Why did Cameron entrap normal people (with minor problems) to use in his experiments? He did that because both brainwashing and hypno-programming work best on normal persons. Dr. Sargant, an English psychiatrist, expert on brainwashing, and a personal friend of both Dr. Cameron and CIA Director Dulles explained:

...the really crucial point which the whole history of hypnotism demonstrates is that the people most susceptible to hypnotic states are normal people. Hypnotism has never been very successful in treating the severely mentally ill...Many normal people, on the other hand, become hysterical under stress, and, when they do, they become amenable to hypnotism and to techniques which depend on the same brain mechanisms.

*It is not the mentally ill but ordinary normal people who are most susceptible... (Sargant, *The Mind Possessed*, p. 31)*

The people most susceptible to brain changing are stressed, normal people. So, Cameron captured normal people for his experiments. They did not stay normal. They became stressed. Funded, in part, by the Society for the Investigation of Human Ecology, he experimented with conditioning (building unconscious reflex habits), hypnosis (using a Sodium Amytal induction), other drugs, electroshock, and psychic driving. He analyzed the three stages of electroshock amnesia. He studied the retroactive amnesia for recent events which electroshockings can cause.

Cameron worked on two major CIA goals. One was the creation of irresistibly powerful remembering. His technique was forced listening to a short, taped message played over and over. He called that **psychic driving**. The other goal was its opposite: the causing of irresistibly powerful forgetting. Cameron's method to accomplish that was a large amount of electroshock. The amount was called **regressive** because subjects lost their bladder control.

CIA Settles with Canadian Nine

In the spring of 1988, the CIA was on the brink of going to court because of a years-long lawsuit against it. The lawsuit was filed by Dr. Ewen Cameron's nine surviving mind-control research subjects. The Canadian government had already made compensatory payments to them, acknowledging its role in looking the other way and allowing them to be used in U.S. research. The now elderly Canadians were represented by a pair of Washington, D.C. lawyers, Turner and Rauh. The U.S. Justice Department was defending the CIA: "not guilty."

Abruptly, the Justice Department made the Canadians a cash offer. The U.S. would pay \$750,000 total to the nine survivors if they would drop their case with a) no admission of guilt from the CIA, b) no trial, and c) their agreement never to publicly discuss the matter again.

They agreed, got the money, and never gave another interview. The CIA avoided a prolonged court battle which would have resulted in glaring publicity and the possible coming forward of more victims of their mind-control research, or more revelations about those experiments. The Company also avoided being found guilty, for the paper trail in this

KILL SWITCH

case was wide and clear indeed.

Medical Ethics

Henry K. Beecher, a medical ethicist studying publicly available statistics, was astonished and disturbed by the steady increase, after World War II, in experimentation on unknowing subjects:

...they would not have been available if they had been truly aware of the uses that would be made of them...many of the patients in the examples to follow never had the risk satisfactorily explained to them, and it seems obvious that further hundreds have not known that they were the subjects of an experiment although grave consequences have been suffered as a direct result of experiments... There is a belief prevalent in some sophisticated circles that attention to these matters would "block progress." But, according to Pope Pius XII, "...science is not the highest value to which all other orders of values... should be submitted." (Beecher "Ethics and Clinical Research," 1966)

Beecher said that ethical errors were increasing not only in numbers, but also in variety. Above all, he was dismayed by the ballooning government budget for research on human beings.

Since World War II the annual expenditure for research (in large part on man)...in the Massachusetts General Hospital has increased a remarkable 17-fold. At the National Institutes of Health, the increase has been a gigantic 624-fold...Medical schools and university hospitals are increasingly dominated by investigators. (Ibid.)

That was just NIH funding. What would the numbers have looked like to Beecher if military, think tank, NIMH, CIA, and NSA fundings for human research were added in?

What exactly were they doing to all those people?

Mind-Control Research Goals

Can we get control of an individual to the point where he will do our bidding against his will and even against such fundamental laws of nature such as self-preservation?

– 1952 ARTICHOKE memo, quoted in Chavkin, p. 13

In 1950, the CIA's BLUEBIRD program began to target specific hypnotism goals. At first, the research goals were all defensive: to identify disloyal persons, establish a defector's legitimacy, make CIA agents able to resist hostile interrogation, and strengthen interrogation methods used on captured enemies. The list of goals soon changed, however, to include offensive uses of hypnosis. Hypnotism would make it...*possible to brief a prisoner or other individual, subsequently dispatch him on a mission and successfully debrief him on his return without his recollection of the whole proceeding.* (CIA memo, "Defense Against Soviet Medical Interrogation and Espionage Techniques," quoted in Schefflin & Opton, p. 114)

They also targeted the basic goal of getting absolute control, in absolute secrecy, over another person. The victim would become an unknowing hypno-puppet who would obey any command:

The support program will consist of both fundamental and applied research studying all means through which control of an individual may be attained. (CIA memo quoted in Schefflin & Opton, p. 116)

They preferred the method of disguised hypnotic induction over nondisguised. Disguised induction would help achieve an...*absence of resistance and counter-control: ideally, the technique will be so elegant, so smooth, that the manipulated will not suspect, let alone*

KILL SWITCH

object, that someone or something is trying to shape their behavior. (Schrag, *Mind Control*, p. 10)

One author wrote of a military scenario in which hypnosis is used...*to obtain the services of an apprehended spy, obtain all the knowledge he might have by use of an involuntary technique and send him back out as a double agent.* (Teitlebaum, *Hypnosis Induction Techniques*, p. 172)

In 1960, the CIA's Technology and Science Director, who was in charge of operational experiments in hypnosis, began an aggressive, new, enlarged program which he called "field experimentation" in the "counterintelligence program." There were...*three goals: (1) to induce hypnosis very rapidly in unwitting subjects; (2) to create durable amnesia; and (3) to implant durable and operationally useful posthypnotic suggestion.* (John Marks, 1979, p. 189).

An outline of ARTICHOKE research targets listed further goals in the hypnosis area: development of techniques for disguised induction, hypnotic memory training, and sealing.

Disguised Induction

They were "investigating the possibility of obtaining control of an individual by application of special interrogation techniques" (Schefflin & Opton, p. 116). "Special interrogation techniques" was a euphemism for methods of disguised induction. The ARTICHOKE research program subdivided that research into experiments on how to cause an unknowing person to become hypnotized using polygraphs, drugs, hypnosis, subconscious isolation, or electroshock.

Hypnotic Memory Training

They called hypnotic memory training **memory enhancement**. Hypnosis definitely improves memory. If a person's memory is good to start with, hypnosis makes it even better. Hypnotic memory training had at least two intelligence and military applications: a) couriers bearing unconsciously remembered messages and b) subjects used as human tape recorders where no mechanical recording of speech was possible or permitted. In 1962, a research hypnotist issued a lyric call to use hypnosis to...*produce synthetic genius, emergent genius...in ordinary mortals...phenomenal memory...we are convinced that synthetic genius lies within the grasp of the human, but it will take long and patient research to activate this dream.* (Wright, in Estabrooks, Ed., *Hypnosis: Current Problems*, p. 235)

Dr. Gindes studied rote memory in hypnotized persons for the Army.

...five soldiers were hypnotized...and given a jumbled "code"...they were allowed sixty seconds to commit the list to memory. In the waking state, each man was asked to repeat the code; this none of them could do...During rehypnotization, they were individually able to recall the exact content of the code message. (Gindes, pp. 33-34)

The men had learned to spell "ordinary" as "sɔɪcnrbc," "tendency" as "tmslnfsk," and so on. (Gindes, pp. 53-54)

Hypnocouriers

In 1500 B.C., the Egyptians were using a hypnocourier system. Programmed virgins served the Pharaoh as royal "message bearers from the gods." The women were sent under military escort to distant dignitaries who knew the cue which would unlock the messenger's lips and release the consciously unknown secret message locked in her un-

KILL SWITCH

conscious. At journey's end, when presented to the dignitary and cued, the words of her message would miraculously form themselves at her lips and speak themselves. She had no conscious knowledge from where those words came. She had no foreknowledge what words it was that her mouth would speak.

Modern hypnocouriers are described in a 1963 text on clinical and experimental hypnosis:

*Hypnosis is assuming an ever-increasing role in the psychological aspects of warfare. For instance, a good subject can be hypnotized to deliver secret information. The memory of this message could be covered by an artificially induced amnesia. In the event that he should be captured, he naturally could not remember that he had ever been given the message. He would not remember the message. However, since he had been given a posthypnotic suggestion, the message would be subject to recall through a specific cue, this having been given to him in the form of a posthypnotic suggestion. (William Kroger, *Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis in Medicine, Psychology, and Dentistry*, p. 299)*

The basic system was to read or tell a message to a hypnotized subject, who then was instructed to remember the message and speak it on cue. It could be long and complicated. The courier did not consciously know the message, or even the fact that he carried a message. The message's intended recipient, who knew the cue, would speak or act it out when ready. After perceiving that cue, the courier would go into a posthypnotic trance and speak the message—like a human tape recorder on “play.” A supplementary hypnotic suggestion could cause the courier to be amnesic for the meaning of the words he was speaking. (Bewart, in *Operation Mind Control*, reported the case of a military man trained in this way.)

Estabrooks promoted the use of consciously unknowing hypno-messengers by government agencies:

If one expert can build up a code, another can break it down...a code must be printed somewhere...And human nature is weak. With hypnotism we can be sure of our private messenger. We hypnotize our man in, say, Washington...give him the message. That message, may we add, can be both long and intricate. An intelligent individual can memorize a whole book if necessary. Then we start him out for Australia by plane with the instructions that no one can hypnotize him...except Colonel Brown in Melbourne...It is useless to intercept this messenger. He has no documents and no amount of “third degreeing” can extract the information, for the information is not in the conscious mind to extract... (Hypnotism, 1944 edition, pp. 210-211)

Sealing

An early CIA memo described **sealing** as “establishing defensive means for preventing hostile control.” In civilian language it means that sealing the programmed mind blocks it from attempts by other hypnotists to put that person into trance. Sealing was another CIA hypno-programming goal:

Can we prevent any unauthorized source or enemy from gaining control of the future activities (physical and mental) of agency personnel (or persons of interest to this agency) by any known means? (CIA memo quoted in Schefflin & Opton, pp. 116-117)

The usual method of sealing was, and is, simply a hypnotic suggestion that the subject cannot be hypnotized by any unauthorized person.

KILL SWITCH

1950s CIA HYPNOGOALS, AND PROBABLE OUTCOMES

In a chapter called “Tampering with the Mind: I,” Schefflin and Opton included a long list of hypno-programming goals obtained from a CIA memo written in the 1950s. Here are thirteen of those goals, and my opinion of their probable research outcomes:

(1) Identify Hypnotically Susceptible Personality—The CIA wanted to know “the types of personalities which could or could not be controlled.” Since the 1950s, many studies, both military and nonmilitary, have sought ways to covertly recognize hypnotizability. Some systems are based on personality and behavior traits. A hysteric is always a good hypnotic subject. Compulsives are the hardest personality type to either hypnotize or to control by hypnosis, because they are going to be, and do, what they are going to be and do. Psychotics are categorically considered impossible to hypnotize, but there have been exceptions.

In some research, women were easier to hypnotize than men, but only by a small percentage. In both sexes, the higher the IQ, the greater the hypnotic susceptibility. In one study, bright female introverts were most susceptible. Extroverts forget more over time than introverts, but they are better at retrieving information from deeply buried memory, especially if it’s relatively inaccessible. Introverts are more affected by punishment, extroverts by reward.

That data could be interpreted to make introverts preferred candidates for hypno-programming. They have better memory for unconscious instructions, less ability to recover repressed memory, and are more controllable by suggested suffering.

More formal evaluations of hypnotizability are derived from Rorschach or TAT tests and from brainwave patterns (more alpha indicates more susceptibility). If the subject had an imaginary playmate in childhood, that also indicates susceptibility.[8]

(2) Which Mind Control Method for Each Personality?—The CIA list included the goal of knowing “the methods which would or would not work on those personality types.” Therefore, they studied every conceivable induction method: open or disguised. That included study of hypnotic induction hardware of every sort, including instruments for electronic induction by brainwave manipulation and post-electroshock induction. They studied the inductive effects of fatigue and stress, visualization, relaxation, narcohypnosis, repetition, disorientation, sensory deprivation, extrasensory (mind-to-mind, psychic) induction, and combinations of those. (Research knowledge in these areas is covered in Part IV of this book.)

(3) Time Needed to Establish Mind Control?—The CIA wanted to know “the amount of time needed for ‘alteration of personality’ with each technique.” How much time does the operator need to take control of a subject’s mind? Using verbal techniques only? Using narcohypnosis? Electroshock? How long is it from the beginning of the process to the end—when the subject emerges as a controlled person, totally amnesic for all time spent under hypnosis?

Candy and Palle were trained for years. Estabrooks said that the essentials could be accomplished in ten days, but he recommended ten months for complete training. Bowart’s military interviewees and the *Operation Mind Control* subject reported that their operators spent six to eight weeks setting up basic programming, including their final electroshock series to reinforce amnesia.

4) Is the Conditioning Permanent?—The CIA also listed the goal of learning “the

KILL SWITCH

duration of the change.” Would the personality splitting and hypno-programming be per-manent? In most cases, it would. However, time could have some weakening effect. Unconscious knowledge of safe distance or isolation from the operator can be even more helpful to a subject who unconsciously wants to escape and heal. If a victim becomes consciously aware that this technology exists, he may realize his situation, stop making excuses for the hypnotist, and start wresting his mind FREE.

(5) Can the Conditioning Be Reversed?—Early CIA euphemisms for hypno-programming were “brain changing” and “personality restructuring.” The hypno-programming technology indeed could profoundly change a subject’s personality. This goal on the list asked about “the ability to restore the original personality.” In plain English, the question was: Could anybody undo their hypno-programming (conditioning)?

If the subject can get himself out of reach of all induction cues, and if he can avoid triggering any pre-existing check-in cues, his operator cannot reinforce old conditioning and cannot lay on new conditioning. In the absence of reinforcement, time may gradually loosen the hold of unwelcome conditioning. If that subject-in-hiding obtains the help of a skilled trance manipulator, more of the damage can be undone. Some—or all—of the old conditioning suggestions can be reversed. How much is reversed depends on how deep the changes were etched in the subject’s brain, how much time and effort is spent on the healing process, if the subject has a safe place to hide from the hypnotist while healing, and if the healer has a clear understanding of this technology. (But then the subject will be in rapport with the new helper. This may or may not be a problem, depending...)

Humpty-Dumpty is easier to break than to put back together. And when Humpty-Dumpty is back together, he will not look exactly like the egg he was because the experience of being hypno-programmed and then overcoming it is going to deeply affect that personality. Some amnesia can be overcome, however. Perhaps old induction cues can be blocked. (Or the subject can live in hiding from those cues.) The best-case scenario probably will result in a sadder-but-wiser, more comfortable, more functional, and somewhat reintegrated, personality who is relatively safe from the abusive former operator. (See Part V, therapy topics, for more on this.)

(6) What Could Go Wrong During the Conditioning?—The CIA wanted to know “the adverse side effects” of conditioning. The answer is that subjects may die if given a miscalculated dose of narcohypnotic drug. Some may be pushed into psychosis, temporarily, or permanently. Some may develop long-term neurotic symptoms reflecting unwholesome hypnotic repressions: rationalizations, hypochondria, phobias, compulsions, nightmares, etc. Some may have their body, relationships, or life damaged by thoughtless, or abusive, suggestions.

In general, the more stable the person is to start with, the more effectively their programming will implant, the better their unconscious will compensate for unconscious burdens with defense mechanisms, and the better their cover personality will function.[9]

(7) How Complete Will the Control Be?—The CIA wanted to know “the extent to which the new personality could be controlled.” They learned that a mind-controlled person makes a better patsy than assassin because the unconscious retains some capacity to influence outcomes and sidestep the most unthinkable commands. For example, Zebediah shot his elbow instead of his hand. Mrs. E. tended to fail at murder and suicide instructions. Candy obeyed all the preceding orders, but she converted her suicide instruction into a

KILL SWITCH

break for freedom.

Nevertheless, obedience potential caused by hypno-programming is far greater than is generally recognized by the public. The assertion that “you can’t be made to do anything under hypnosis that you don’t want to” is FALSE. Great effort was made to train a subject to give reflexive responses, to be totally unconscious, mechanical, automatistic, and absolute in obedience. With ruthless training, involving techniques from the physical methods of psychiatry, a close approximation of robotic response was possible—including some criminal and self-destructive actions.[10]

(8) Complex Conduct Be Hypno-controlled?— The CIA wanted evidence as to “the complexity of the conduct which could be commanded of the controlled personality.” Research described in psychiatric case studies, and other research reports, makes it clear that direct commands (“suggestions”), indirect commands, and specific commands are all possible. So, also, are complex commands such as: “join it, believe in it, participate in it, but be unconsciously loyal to us and report back weekly.”

Any variety of neurosis or psychosis can be suggested under hypnosis. The resulting performance can fool even an expert. A love attachment can be suggested (Nielsen caused Palle to love Bente). A loving relationship can also be terribly harmed by hypnotic suggestion. A subject could be caused to not pay bills, sending all surplus money to one or more designated persons instead.

(9) Are Personality Changes Caused by Hypnotic Suggestion Detectable?— The CIA list targeted research into “changes in attitude of the person whose personality had been altered.” Would the victim’s family realize what had happened to their loved one? Would the neighbors catch on? The answer is that changes may be observable, but they are unlikely to be correctly interpreted unless observers understand that unethical hypnosis is possible and how it works.

(10) Can Preconditioning Be Detected?—The CIA listed “the ability to detect preconditioning and to determine the method used and the purpose to be accomplished by the conditioning” as a goal. **Preconditioning** has two meanings. It is, technically, the first stage of hypnosis, the period during which a subject becomes willing to be hypnotized by an operator, but has not yet been hypnotized.

The other meaning of “preconditioning” is probably the one which the CIA had in mind, however. This goal sought a method to detect if a person of interest to them was already somebody’s unknowing hypnotic subject—a previously conditioned (“preconditioned”) subject.[11] They wanted not only to be able to identify that preconditioning, but also to be able to detect the operator’s method of conditioning the subject—and the operator’s motive for that preconditioning.

The method could be tough to find out. Only the subject’s unconscious knows, and his sealing would have to be broken to access that information. If the subject doesn’t know his operator’s motive, consciously or unconsciously, there is no way to find out—unless the CIA also has physical custody of the subject’s operator, and probes his mind.

(11) Can a Preconditioned Subject Be Reprogrammed?—The CIA listed “the ability to **recondition** a preconditioned person” as a research goal. If a person of interest to them was already somebody’s hypnotic subject, could they undo (“recondition”) his previous programming, and then implant their own? Or simply implant their own and make it dominant over the previous programming? Since it was on their list, the CIA probably did

KILL SWITCH

try reconditioning and probably came up with some answers. I don't know what those might be, but I feel sorry for their victims.

(12) Can We Reprogram a Reprogrammed Hypno-programmed Person?—The CIA put “the possibilities of multiple conditioning” of an agent on their research list. If a hypno-programmed enemy agent was captured by the CIA, could he be reprogrammed into a double agent? If a hypno-programmed CIA agent was apprehended by the enemy and reprogrammed by the enemy to be their own agent, could the CIA then **reprogram** that person back to being loyal to them? In the case of a double agent, the original operator would imagine that he still had an effective agent, when actually another **unconscious isolate** of the poor victim's unconscious mind reports to yet another master, without either the subject's conscious mind, or the original hypnotic operator knowing it.

I suppose the CIA carried out this experiment, too. I feel great sorrow and sympathy for the subjects who suffered such mental abuse. The reprogramming of a reprogrammed subject who was hypno-programmed before is an even more horrific concept.

Reprogramming could also be applied to somebody, who was originally programmed by the agency, and then managed to (partially or entirely) deprogram themselves. The reconditioning would, theoretically, restore the unconscious automatism of a balking subject. I also pity any victim who went through a first conditioning, got free, and then was subjected to yet another (probably far more brutal) conditioning period in order to enslave him again.

However, “reprogramming” is a mechanical concept. NO HUMAN IS TRULY A MACHINE. A living brain accumulates data, changes and adapts. It can develop an intense dislike for the condition of mind-slavery—even, or especially, at the unconscious level. It may look for loopholes in its programming which will support that person's survivability by enhancing his freedom. It may even find ways to avoid, even defy, the master.

(13) Perfect Amnesia?—The CIA also listed “the ability to induce states of amnesia so that the conditioned person is unaware of the conditioning” as a research goal. Posthypnotic amnesia is the foundation of all the previous scenarios. The person who knows what happened will take measures to protect himself from another hit. The CIA and the military wanted dependable ways to cause effective amnesia which would conceal the hypnotic conditioning—and all future episodes of hypnotic suggestion—from the subject's conscious mind.

The verbal (left) hemisphere can be silenced or made to lie. But, short of brain damage, the imaging (right) brain is very hard to silence. **Projective techniques** that involve imagery are likely to reveal the truth.

Personality Restructuring

...the day has come when we can combine sensory deprivation with drugs, hypnosis and astute manipulation of rewards and punishment to gain almost absolute control over an individual's behavior...a very rapid and highly effective type of positive brainwashing that would allow us to make dramatic changes in a person's behavior and personality...[in] a few months—or perhaps even less than that..

The techniques of behavioral control make even the hydrogen bomb look like a child's toy, and, of course, they can be used for good or evil. But we can no more prevent the development of this new psychological methodology than we could have prevented the development of atomic energy..

– McConnell, *Psychology Today*, April 1970

KILL SWITCH

When James V. McConnell announced the new method of **positive brainwashing** in the article quoted above, he was a famous Michigan behaviorist. In the early 1970s, he trained flatworms by electric shocks to prefer the lighted tunnel to the dark one. He edited and published both *The Journal of Biological Psychology* and the *Worm Runner's Digest*, a radical behaviorist periodical. If anybody outside the Company knew what happened when you put all the MKULTRA research together and applied it with the goal of **personality restructuring** to a single subject, it would be McConnell. In that article, he urged readers to adopt...*a revolutionary viewpoint toward society and its problems. Today's behavioral psychologists are the architects and engineers of the Brave New World...* (Ibid., p. 74)

He suggested temporary incarceration for antisocial persons while they were being “cured” by means of this new technology. The subject would be housed in a “rehabilitation center” while experts “restructure his entire personality.” McConnell argued:

No one owns his own personality. Your ego, or individuality, was forced on you by your genetic constitution and by the society into which you were born. You had no say about what kind of personality you acquired, and there's no reason to believe you should have the right to refuse to acquire a new personality if your old one is antisocial... (Ibid.)

His words set off a furor. Who would have the right to define “antisocial”? How would they define it? (Was it “antisocial” of me to write and publish this book?) People asked for more information which McConnell declined to provide. Instead, he expressed regret for saying what he had said. He never again discussed the technology of “positive brainwashing.”

Related CIA and psychiatric research, however, provides further insight.

Research Personality Restructuring

The CIA used language derived from research on artificial neurosis to describe the creation of an unknowing hypnotic subject—often with a new opinion, behavior, or loyalty. Sometimes they called it **giving somebody a new personality**; sometimes it was called **personality restructuring**. Whatever its name, the process could, they hoped, covertly and permanently change a subject's beliefs and behaviors. (If they became an unknowing hypno-robot in the process, that would not be seen as a problem.)

In the 50s and 60s, U.S. brainwash specialists studied the phenomenon of Christian conversion, and also why some Americans turned Communist in Chinese POW camps. They contemplated the history of heiress Patricia Hearst who was kidnapped by revolutionaries, became a gun-shooting revolutionary, then was captured by police, and became a law-abiding heiress again. They studied how meat-eaters become vegetarians; and how vegetarians become meat-eaters, and so on.

They must have also wondered if restructuring the personality might secretly convert a Communist follower, or leader, into a staunch advocate of free elections, free enterprise, demilitarization, dismantling of the Russian empire, and economic integration of the Soviet areas with the U.S. and Europe. What an achievement it would be if an important political opponent could be covertly hypnotized and given a new personality—one that took orders from the CIA and had a Western political philosophy.

Hypnosis, voluntary or involuntary (drug or disguised induction), was the key to restructuring an old personality into a new one. After induction would come training for depth, obedience, and amnesia—and then the personality restructuring, the mental reprogramming.

KILL SWITCH

Hypno-conversions

Dr. Cook, a University of Chicago professor, hypnotist, and author, described his process of hypno-transformation in a 1927 book. After he “treated” a daughter, whose father objected to her love for a “worthless suitor,” her feelings changed to “abhorrence.” (She then became infatuated with the hypnotist!)

In another case, a jealous Miss Edith thought her fiancée too attentive to a lovely cousin. She explained her problem to Dr. Cook, hired him, and together they hatched a plot. Edith then dared her fiancée to be hypnotized by Cook. The young man accepted her dare. Cook hypnotized him and gave a posthypnotic suggestion that he would visit the cousin and scold her severely for some imagined neglect until she became angry. After that, Miss Edith had no competition.

Cook freed an Iowa man of tobacco chewing:

...hypnotized him twelve times in four weeks. Before he left the city he was entirely cured of the tobacco habit, although he had no recollection of his experience while in the hypnotic state. (Cook, Practical Lessons in Hypnotism and Autosuggestion, pp. 160-1)

A father, worried about his son’s choice of companions, brought the young man to Cook’s office. The son...*was willing...to test the power of hypnotism...and placed in the somnambulistic state. He was then told that it would be impossible for him to be induced to accompany his friends to any questionable places, and that whenever they met him he would treat them civilly, but would no longer make companions of them. Over and over again these suggestions were emphatically repeated to him before he was awakened, and this was repeated daily for twelve days, during which time he had no communication with any of his companions, as his father had brought him quite a distance...* (Ibid., pp. 225-6)

Cook suggested amnesia to the son for all the implanted suggestions. He was “cured” and avoided those unwholesome companions in the future.

Like Cook, another hypnotist, Marcuse, reported changing a person’s convictions by hypnosis, obtaining a religious conversion. A “vehemently atheistic” subject lived in a boarding house. Marcuse enlisted one of his fellow boarders to report developments. The professor hypnotized the atheist in his office, read him a list of reasons for belief, and then suggested amnesia for the hypnosis. Marcuse soon exactly repeated the treatment. His dinner-table spy reported that other dining room guests were astonished at the sudden reversal of the subject’s opinions on religion. For the first time, he began to attend church services. (Marcuse, *Hypnosis*, p. 228)

Reprogramming by simple hypnosis is not a sure thing. If it were, there would be no failures in stop-smoking clinics (most of which use hypnosis). But, what if the subject is an artificially-created split personality who was programmed using narcohypnosis and other physical methods of psychiatry? That makes the outcome more predictable.

Physical Methods of Psychiatry

- Narcohypnosis
- Electroshock

[There were]... CIA documents describing experiments in sensory deprivation, sleep teaching, ESP, subliminal projection, electronic brain stimulation...Another document mentioned “hypnotically-induced anxieties” and “induced pain as a form of physical and psychological control.”...Deadly chemicals were concocted for the sole purpose

KILL SWITCH

of inducing a heart attack or cancer without leaving a clue as to the actual source of the disease. CIA specialists also studied the effects of magnetic fields, ultrasonic vibrations, and other forms of radiant energy on the brain.

– Lee and Schlain, *Acid Dreams*, xx

After World War II, advocates of physical methods of psychiatry argued for “practical” (**physical**) therapies. They downgraded the “philosophical” approaches to healing, meaning the Freudian and Jungian methods.

The physical treatments offered, as of 1944, were narcohypnosis and drug abreaction sessions, electroshock, insulin shock, continuous sleep maintained by drugging, new vitamins, endocrine supplements, stimulants, anticonvulsants, and lobotomy. Advocates of physical psychiatry were hopeful that yet more and better electrical, chemical, and surgical treatments for the brain would soon be discovered.

The Rockefeller Foundation, CIA, National Institutes of Health, and others, lavishly funded that research. The following, 1950s, list of CIA mind-control research areas included physical methods of psychiatry and psychoanalytic methods:

- (a) *Psychosurgery.*
- (b) *Shock method:*
 - (1) *electrical.*
 - (2) *drug: metrazol, cannabis indica, insulin, cocaine.*
- (c) *Psychoanalytic methods:*
 - (1) *psychoanalysis.*
 - (2) *narcoanalysis and synthesis.*
 - (3) *hypnoanalysis and synthesis.*
- (d) *Combinations of the foregoing.*

Other CIA documents from the 1950s list their goals in ultrasonics and “enhanced” polygraph techniques. For example, tests were done using an EEG as a polygraph. The question was “Do you masturbate?” Lobotomy was recommended in one document as a “solution” to neutralize a person “from a security point of view.” (Lee and Schlain) Another document discussed a covert procedure in which the operator used electroshock to cause anesthesia, then lobotomized the subject with an icepick.[12]

Amnesia Research

The CIA was always interested in methods to cause amnesia. July 15, 1953, after an employee who knew much sensitive information left the Agency, operations people told superiors in ARTICHOKE that they needed a drug which would cause amnesia. The bosses replied that work was constantly in progress on causing predictable amnesias by a variety of means.

What predictably causes predictable amnesias? Repeated suggestions to not remember (taped or oral) given to a hypnotized person? Amnesia suggestions given to a narcohypnotized person? An electroshock series? Artificial personality splitting by means of an artificial neurosis? The answer is YES. To ALL of them. Those methods can be used singly—or in COMBINATION.

Hypno-programming Uses for Amnesia

Here follow reasons why amnesia is advantageous for a hypno-programmer:

KILL SWITCH

· **Broken Feedback Circuit—Amnesia** hides the problem from the subject's conscious mind. If a subject remembers being hypnotized and remembers being given the hypnotic suggestions, he may resist them. Amnesia, however, produces a person who does not know that he has been hypnotized and given suggestions. An amnesic person makes no effort to overcome hypnotic conditioning or to avoid contact from the hypnotist. He is not consciously aware that there is a problem.

· **Secret Will Rule**—An amnesic brain programming overpowers a competing conscious willing. What is secret in your mind automatically overrules that which is not secret. The secret will rule.

· **One-Way Amnesia**—Both natural and artificial multiple personalities are usually **one-way amnesic**. That means that the original self, "A," knows nothing about the split self, "B," but B knows all about A. The knowing goes one way but not the other. B sees, hears, and knows all that A experiences. A, the original personality, neither sees, hears, nor knows what the split does during a **fugue**. [13] The split, however, is aware and critical of all the original personality's acts, thoughts, and feelings.

For this reason, Arlene had all the information possessed by Candy, plus her own. However, until Arlene revolted and informed John (who enlightened Candy), Candy knew nothing about Arlene's life. Candy's mental access to what Arlene knew had been blocked by Dr. Jensen. Arlene referred to her own life as a split-off, hidden observer when she said, "...I'll go along tomorrow. I'll sit there and I'll watch...Where she goes, I go." (Bain, p. 99)

Amnesia suggestions given to a narcohypnotized person were an especially promising area for research and operations.

Narcohypnosis

The question may be raised whether in narcohypnosis we are not dealing simply with sleep only instead of actual hypnosis. Anyone who has practiced narcohypnosis will have to answer this question in the negative, since the patients carry out suggestions and in every other way conduct themselves like deeply hypnotized subjects.

– Schilder and Kauders, *Hypnosis*

Hyperventilation

Hyperventilation is a chemical induction technique. It can be a method of disguised induction. If you breathe as rapidly as possible (hyperventilation) for two to four minutes, you will have some degree of gaseous alkalosis. You will feel dizzy and confused. You will also be in a state of light trance. Changes in blood acidosis/alkalosis relate to changes in state of consciousness.

Hard, prolonged crying causes hyperventilation. (Hyperventilation induction is the key to Arthur Janov's Primal Therapy. Over-breathing lowers consciousness. In that state, a subject is encouraged to relive past traumas and to access and express deep emotion. You need a strong heart and lungs to undertake this stressful "scream" therapy.)

Barbiturates

Narcotic trance induction goes back to prehistory. Narcohypnosis began shortly after chemical anesthesia for surgery was discovered in 1846. Hypnotists experimented, testing to see if there were hypnotic effects associated with use of alcohol, ether, chloroform, scopolamine, and chlorpromazine. In the 1920s, Pavlov put dogs into a narcotic trance by injecting **barbiturate**. Again and again, doctors observed significant spontaneous hypnotic

KILL SWITCH

responses after barbiturate injection. The chemicals of choice for trance induction were eventually narrowed to two fast-acting barbiturates, oral or injected: Sodium Pentothal and Sodium Amytal (called “Evipan,” in Europe). (I recently saw Trilene and Propofol also recommended for this use.)

Barbiturates are a class of **hypnoid chemicals** (chemical trance inducers). They have been around since the 1930s, widely used both as surgical anesthetics and hypnotics. Operating personnel must be careful what they say because their patients are in deep trance and are highly suggestible!

In 1936, Horsley began using Sodium Pentothal as a narcohypnotic entryway to repressed thoughts and emotions. His procedure was a rapid psychoanalysis done with a narcohypnotized subject. His 1943 book on that technique, *Narco-Analysis*, became a standard text on barbiturate use in hypnotherapy. During World War II, American and English doctors used narcohypnosis to treat combat-traumatized veterans.[14]

Roy P. Grinker and John P. Spiegel published *War Neuroses in North Africa* in 1943, and *Special Report: Conference on Narcosis, Hypnosis, and War Neuroses*, in 1944.[15] Grinker and Spiegel published another book in 1945, *War Neuroses*. J.G. Watkins was an American who first researched hypnotic coercion as a military hypnotist. His 1949 book, *The Hypnotherapy of War Neuroses*, pioneered use of barbiturate drugging as a direct route to the unconscious in America.[16]

Police Use of Barbiturates—Police investigators at first called the barbiturates “truth serum.” In the 1930s, they used them in interrogations or to elicit confessions. They gradually learned, however, that an operator could accidentally (or deliberately) suggest false guilt under those drugs because they enhanced suggestibility. Their popularity in police work then waned. Yet, as recently as 1979, B.L. Danto, who was both a doctor and a police officer, recommended “The Use of Brevital Sodium in Police Investigation” to overcome “unconscious resistance” and interrogate suspects. He argued that, whereas not everyone is susceptible to hypnotic induction, everybody is susceptible to Sodium Brevital.

Research on Narcohypnosis—During the Moscow show trials of 1937 and 1938, one by one, formerly strong, rational, and socially significant Communists (who had somehow gotten on Stalin’s black list) humbly and publicly confessed to unlikely crimes. A European OSS agent, Allen Dulles, interviewed German chemical company executives after World War II. They believed the confessions were achieved by drug-hypnosis.

In 1942, Donovan formed a committee of psychiatrists and biochemists to investigate the drugs that might be used to extract data from an unwilling person. The Germans were also researching narcohypnotic technology. In 1944, the Gestapo in Hungary, aided by a Hungarian hypnotist named Volgyesi, used a drug-hypnosis combination to create a suggestible state, then interrogate and “prepare” people for trial.

In 1947, special military investigation teams carefully sifted through the records at Dachau where the German mind-control experiments had been conducted. The teams sent their findings, including descriptions of Nazi **narcohypnotic** experiments, back to the CIA. “None of the German mind-control research was ever made public.” (John Marks, 1979, pp. 4-5)

After Dulles became head of the CIA, he created an elite team to research mind control, including every aspect of every hypnoid drug. RAND Corporation did a series of research reports for the government in the 1950s on methods to force persons (the “en-

KILL SWITCH

emy”) to do things against their will. They concluded:

The drug technique would probably turn out to be the simplest and most efficient...and would be the most likely candidate for...hypnotizing defendants against their will. (RAND quoted in Bowart, pp. 70-71)

The CIA studied the ability of barbiturates to quickly force deep trance on resistant subjects. They learned that a person could be first drugged, and then hypnotized. Or he could be first hypnotized, then drugged to push the trance even deeper. A 1950s Air Force report on the military uses of hypnosis pointed out that hypnotic drugs increased both induction speed and trance depth.

The Air Force tested whether narcohypnosis would increase the percentage of persons who could be made somnambulists. (Bowart, p. 71) Normally 10-20% of people, in a first induction, can be taken to somnambulist (amnesic) depth of hypnosis. With a series of inductions and intensive hypnotic training, it rises to 75%. A RAND report said about 90% of the population would become somnambulists if trained under narcohypnosis. (Bowart, p. 71) Other experts have said narcohypnosis could train 95%. Lindner said “all.”

Practitioners of narcohypnosis learned that injection works fastest. Oral doses take half an hour for full effect. Horsley compared oral and injected doses:

Any of the quick-acting barbiturates may be given by mouth, where they will produce a similar effect but of delayed and more gradual onset...[the] intravenous method possesses the considerable advantages of speed, accuracy of dose, and greater force of suggestibility. However...the oral administration of a rapidly acting barbiturate is a valuable aid to the induction of hypnosis. (Horsley, 1952, p. 149)

The CIA, therefore, spent years studying covert ways to dose unsuspecting victims with Sodium Amytal or Sodium Pentothal. Barbiturate powder *cannot be prepared in the necessary solution for injection (mixed with water) ahead of time.* It is unstable when exposed to air. Even in solution, it deteriorates within half an hour. Therefore, the barbiturate solution to be injected must be mixed right before injection. So the CIA experimented with barbiturate powder “mickeys” slipped into a drink, or delivered in aerosol sprays.

A CIA operation, targeting a Russian agent, involved both drugs and hypnosis. They were administered in a fake psychiatric-medical exam:

Afterward, the team reported to the CIA's Director that EXPLOSIVE had revealed “extremely valuable” information and that he had been made to forget his interrogation through a hypnotically induced amnesia. (John Marks, 1979, p. 42)

It can be assumed that the CIA investigators also learned that barbiturate is rapidly destroyed by a normally functioning liver. So its effect soon wears off. It is highly addictive. It cannot be given to a nursing mother, for it enters the breast milk and may overdose the baby, suppressing its respiration. A nursing baby would have to be taken from the mother (weaned) before a series of narcohypnotic immersions for her could begin.

The optimal amounts of drug, and the best timing of doses, would also have become apparent. Candy's barbiturate conditioning was done using an intravenous-drip to control the flow and thereby her depth of trance. Intravenous-drip could, theoretically, hold her at that depth. An IV could work for Jensen, in his hidden office across the continent from everybody in Candy's life.

It would not be suitable for clandestine drugging in a situation where unexpected

KILL SWITCH

company might show up and see the intravenous line. A covert drugging with any risk of exposure would use oral or injected barbiturate.

If a dose large enough to result in unconsciousness (and maximally deep trance) is given by injection, suggestions can be spoken which will stick at any stage—while the subject is unconscious or in the groggy semiconscious state as the drug wears off. If the operator wants the subject to talk back, however, there is only one period in the drug's cycle in which that is possible. Immediately following injection of a large dose, the subject is unconscious.

As the subject's liver gradually throws off the narcohypnotic poison, his level of consciousness gradually rises. In the stage of complete unconsciousness, the subject doesn't speak, or doesn't speak clearly (mumbles). But as the drug wears off there is a stage during which the subject can speak clearly and answer questions. After a while, the subject is waking up from the trance. He is no longer deeply narcohypnotized.

Interrogators were frustrated by that small window of opportunity to get answers from a narcohypnotized subject. Then somebody thought of combining a barbiturate with a stimulant.

Barbiturate Plus Stimulant—Before World War II, psychiatrists noted the possibility of using barbiturate plus **stimulant**. Barbiturate stripped away consciousness and exposed the unconscious mind to manipulation, but the subject was very groggy. Before World War II, European police tried a dose of chemical stimulant to recover some alertness. They used...*strychnine or vitamin B6, or methyl-amphetamine as an antidote. This more complex procedure gives some control of the degree of relaxation.* (Rolin, p. 36)

After the war, Horsley mentioned the concept of a barbiturate-stimulant combination:

This process of conditioning by large doses of drugs, counteracted by Methedrine if the patient becomes too drowsy to think clearly, is mainly of theoretical interest, but its possibilities are sinister. (Horsley, 1952, p. 146)

Government researchers, however, believed they had a mandate to think the unthinkable, and then to accomplish it. In February, 1951, the CIA ordered six "hyposprays" and inquired about the possibility of procuring a double-barreled hypospray that could fire both barrels at once. That order also included 300 ampules of Sodium Amytal, 100 of Caffeine Sodium-benzoate, and 100 of Caffeine Sodium. (Schefflin and Opton)

The ARTICHOKE program called the technique of barbiturate followed by stimulant the "A Treatment." They began with a large enough dose of a hypnoid drug to knock out the subject's conscious mind. The subject then lay there, unconscious and still. They gave a shot of stimulant. The conscious mind stayed off-line, but the stimulant roused the subject's unconscious enough to answer questions. "Described in CIA documents as 'the twilight zone,' this groggy condition was considered optimal for interrogation." (Lee & Schlain, p. 7)

Project CHATTER—In 1947, the Navy came aboard the mind-control effort with Project CHATTER. It was an offensive tactic research project seeking ways to extract information from persons against their will, but "without torture." CHATTER lasted until 1953. The program researched barbiturate-stimulant combinations. With drug induction alone, the subject had a tendency to just lie there unconscious, "sleeping," spoiling chances of interrogation.

In one CHATTER experiment, the subject was given an injection of Sodium Pentothal to induce a deep trance, then stimulated back to semi-consciousness by an injection of Ben-

KILL SWITCH

zedrine. The operator then regressed the subject to an earlier time and suggested that he was talking to his wife:

For roughly an hour, the subject seemed to have no idea he was not speaking with his wife but with CIA operatives trying to find out about his relationship with Soviet intelligence. (John Marks, 1979, p. 40)

In 1953, CHATTER ended. It was officially declared to have failed to reach its goal.

Barbiturate Forces Induction?

During WWII, the prestigious Menninger Clinic did much defense-oriented hypnosis research. Afterwards, however, it reported a new series of experiments, supposedly proving that Sodium Pentothal was useless to overcome the resistance of reluctant hypnotic subjects.

Since that drug is devastatingly effective at overcoming resistance, the Menninger experiments were obviously phony.[17] Perhaps the report was intended to nudge the private sector away from use of narcohypnosis and create public and professional ignorance about this technology. Indeed, in the years since then, this has largely taken place.

Back in the Real World—Medical recognition of forced induction and forced depth maintenance by means of narcohypnosis, however, goes back at least to Schilder and Kauders, two Austrian psychiatrists of the Freudian era.

The clinical textbook they wrote mentioned:

...the most effective means to induce deep hypnosis in persons who are otherwise refractory, namely, the use of narcotics and sedatives. (Schilder & Kauders, pp. 34-35)

L. R. Wolberg did narcohypnosis during World War II when young men with nervous breakdowns were available by the thousands, and quick cures were badly wanted by their superior officers. He later wrote that “supplementary hypnotic drugs” solved the problem of “definite resistances to trance depth...which cannot be overcome by ordinary training procedures...” (Wolberg, *Hypnoanalysis*, p. 50) Horsley wrote that...*in resistant patients it is sometimes useful to give a full narcotic dose and to induce hypnosis during the stage of confusion while the subject is still half-asleep.* (Horsley, in LeCron, *Experimental Hypnosis*, p. 146)

In 1949, Melvin Powers published instructions for both oral and injected barbiturate use under his chapter heading “How to Hypnotize Refractory Subjects”:

Under normal circumstances, a person cannot be hypnotized against his will by the power of suggestion. However, we can hypnotize a person by using drugs. (p. 24)...*The technique is not involved, and skill can be easily acquired...Sodium amytal and sodium pentothal are the most commonly used.* (Powers, *Hypnotism Revealed*, p. 52)

Narcoanalyst Lindner began with a drug induction, did hypnotic training of the narcohypnotized subject, then did a Freudian analysis under drug-hypnosis. He said that “With [narco-] hypnoanalysis it is as if surgical removal of such barriers and hazards (resistances and natural reluctances) has been accomplished.” He called narcohypnosis “a means to the dissolution of the resistance normally present when treatment begins...” (Lindner, *Rebel Without a Cause*, p. 19)

Marcuse’s authoritative and popular book on hypnosis (in print from 1959 to 1976) advised,

If the patient has tremors or agitation which make it difficult for him to relax or if the patient actively resists verbal induction, then both hypnosis and drugs are required. (Marcuse,

KILL SWITCH

Hypnosis, pp. 131-2)

A medical doctor who wrote directions for preparing and administering barbiturate in a psychiatric textbook stated:

The use of intravenous barbiturates...is more certain and requires less time than does hypnosis. It does not, moreover, involve the emotional dependence [trust?] often prerequisite to successful hypnosis... (Kolb, *Modern Clinical Psychiatry*, 1982)

T.O. Burgess (1956), an American doctor, also recommended narcohypnotic inductions for the “resistant or refractory patient”:

Refractory cases or unresponsive subjects can be made more receptive by light oral dosage of Sodium Amytal administered about half an hour before trance induction. (Burgess in LeCron, *Experimental Hypnosis*, p. 343)

The infamous medical ghoul, Dr. Ewen Cameron, also recommended barbiturate induction...*especially with apprehensive patients. This consists in the administration of a disinhibiting drug. Our preference is for intravenous sodium amytal. The use of this preparation allows one to maintain careful control over the state of the patient from minute to minute. If too little is given, then nothing is gained; if too much, then it becomes almost impossible to maintain the patient's attention at the level necessary for hypnosis...a well-developed hypnosis can be achieved by this means...Its main use is gradually to accustom the patient to the procedure of being hypnotized, so that ultimately he can be hypnotized without the use of such disinhibiting drugs.* (Cameron, *General Psychotherapy*, 1950, pp. 222-223)

A Summary of Mind-control Uses of Barbiturate

1) Amnesia—Deep narcohypnosis immediately and severely interferes with normal memory-forming capacity. The unconscious mind retains trance-period events in its memory, but the dissociated conscious mind may not be alert and focused enough to form memory links with that data. So the subject has difficulty remembering what happened.

2) Immobilization—A large dose of barbiturate makes the subject unconscious and thus physically immobilizes him. In smaller doses, it weakens and discoordinates the subject and makes it hard, or impossible, to think, run, or plan an escape. This provides time for an operator to implant long-term control conditioning.

3) Forced Trance Induction—A subject cannot resist trance induction once the barbiturate enters his bloodstream. He cannot wake himself up after the induction (as may be possible in non-narcotic trance), even if he finds the situation objectionable.

4) Opportunity to Carry Out Hypnosis Training—The drug speedily (oral) or instantly (injected) strips away consciousness and conscious control. It lowers consciousness and holds it down. During that period it eliminates the subject's power of will because his unconscious is exposed to a hypnotist's manipulations with no protective filtering, analyzing, and discriminating conscious layer. A drugged subject, if given no suggestions, is narcotized, but not hypnotized. He simply sleeps it off. He shows no signs of hypnosis except extreme, uncritical, suggestibility to speech heard while sleeping.

Hypnotic training is a standardized set of suggestions regarding a posthypnotic induction cue, etc. Hypnotic training can be done under regular hypnosis—or it can be done to a narcohypnotized person. Posthypnotic suggestions used to train a narcohypnotized subject are likely to include instructions to a) maintain trance at the deep level of the drug trance even after the drug has worn off; b) return to consciousness only when cued to do so

KILL SWITCH

by the hypnotist, rather than rising in consciousness naturally and gradually as the drug wears off; c) a re-induction cue to re-enter that same deep level trance state any time a designated (non-drug) entry cue is perceived.

5) Speed of Induction—Horsley wrote that *...the main advantage of narcotic hypnosis over verbally induced hypnosis is the speed...Most normal persons respond only gradually to verbally induced hypnosis, and, as a general rule, only a light degree of hypnosis is induced during the first session. In most normal persons the depth of hypnosis can be increased at subsequent sessions, but many hours of hard work are required to produce complete amnesia and somnambulism. Once this has been achieved, however, any normal person can be rehypnotized quickly and easily. The value of narcosis is, then, that it practically eliminates the necessity for hours of preliminary sessions of instruction in how to be hypnotized. And, after a single session of narcotic hypnosis, posthypnotic suggestion is effective for the subsequent induction of hypnosis by verbal methods alone.* (Horsley, 1952, pp. 148-9)

6) Depth-Conditioning—Drug induction can condition a subject for future hypnotizability and for increased trance depth. The more times that a person is hypnotized, the more easily that person can be hypnotized. The deeper a subject is pushed in one trance, the deeper that subject tends to go next time.

The rule that a deep hypnosis, once accomplished, will facilitate all subsequent hypnoses, applies also in this instance [narcohypnotic induction]. (Schilder and Kauders, pp. 34-35)

M.H. Erickson said that narcohypnosis made it possible for most subjects to be developed to a somnambulistic (amnesic) depth. (“Hypnosis in Medicine,” p. 643) Lindner said hypnotic drugs vastly increased the percentage of persons who could be trained to be somnambulists. He believed that anybody, by using drugs, could be turned into an amnesic, induction-conditioned hypnotic subject.

7) Rapport—The deeper the subject descends into a state of hypnosis (drug-induced or otherwise), the more the subject acquires the childlike characteristic attitude of exaggerated respect (awe) and unconscious obedience toward the hypnotist called **rapport**. Even drug-forced hypnosis causes that intense bonding, even under the cruelest circumstances.

8) Suggestibility—Drugging maximizes trance depth. Greater depth increases the strength of suggestions. Hypno-programming can thus be efficiently implanted. A Swiss expert on unethical hypnosis noted the dark possibilities of extremely deep trance:

In the first stages of hypnosis the subject can preserve his personal independence; he will not carry out any action in this state of mind which runs counter to his moral or ethical beliefs. This can change to an appreciable degree as soon as the hypnosis reaches a certain depth...the subject's capacity for judgment is more or less excluded. In this state of consciousness the subject is almost wholly exposed to the suggestions which the hypnotist gives to him. The danger that criminal advantage can be taken of hypnosis brought to such a depth has rightly been pointed out. (Hammerschlag, *Hypnotism and Crime*, pp. 29-30)

Christenson, a military research hypnotist, wrote:

In narcosynthesis the subject cannot readily inhibit expression of thoughts or behaviors which are suggested by the administrant, so that the subject is no longer a ‘free agent’ and the question of coercion is a legitimate issue. (“Dynamics in Hypnotic Induction,” in LeCron, ed., *Experimental Hypnosis*, p. 49)

KILL SWITCH

9) Addiction—The shift to lowered consciousness, whether from a drug or non-drug cause, is addictive. Induction is a “rush,” a moment of pleasurable and extreme brain excitation. Rushes are addictive. “...apart from the specific suggestions by the hypnotist of well-being, it [hypnosis] commonly causes euphoria and even elation.” (Horsley, p. 148) The euphoria is caused by chemical messengers settling into receptors in neurons of the brain’s bliss center. Brain chemistry makes people long to re-experience a remembered intense (lowered consciousness) experience such as childhood, falling in love, etc.

Repeated barbiturate induction soon creates an humbling, enticing addiction. It takes very few times. Barbara Noel believed that her psychiatrist deliberately addicted her to barbiturate to reinforce his control. He would make her beg for the injection, then finally give it to her. (Chemical addiction can be converted by suggestion into unconscious craving for induction—even by a non-drug, cued method.)

Rohypnol

Narcohypnosis is a century old. It is also the latest thing. During three weeks, in July 1995, 101,000 tablets of Rohypnol, the “date rape drug,” came into the U.S. at Laredo, Texas. Hoffmann-La Roche manufactures it in Mexico and also in South America, Europe, and Asia. Its U.S. street name is “roofies” or the “forget pill.” Ten times stronger than Valium, lasting up to eight hours, Rohypnol is a narcohypnotic that can be slipped into a beverage. As with the old barbiturates, a slight overdose can depress respiration and cause death.

Electroshock

[The shock voltage is]...about equivalent to that consumed [by]...a 100-watt light bulb. This much power applied continuously would soon be lethal, but the shock timer is usually set between one-half and one second, long enough to set off a grand mal epileptic convulsion, but not long enough to kill.

– Schefflin and Opton, p. 365

Electroshock has three effects which are of interest to mind controllers:

Increased suggestibility

Amnesia, even retroactive amnesia

Calming

Here is a detailed look at each of those three uses.

Shock to Increase Suggestibility

Shock is inductive. It literally can send a person into trance (a state of relaxed “sleep”). Induction by mild shocking is called **electronarcosis**. [18] More intense shocking will also cause convulsion. Electroshock is also known as **ECT (electroconvulsive therapy)**, or **ECS (electroconvulsive shock)**.

The treatment jolts 70 to 140 volts of electricity through the subject’s brain. That’s enough to cause convulsions as long as the shocking continues. Dr. Ugo Cerletti, the Italian psychiatrist who demonstrated the first experimental human convulsion was fascinated:

We observed...the onset of the classic epileptic convulsion. We were all breathless during the tonic [muscular contraction] phase of the attack, and really overwhelmed during the apnea [failure to breathe] as we watched the cadaverous cyanosis of the patient’s face; the apnea of the spontaneous epileptic convulsion is always impressive, but at that moment it seemed to all of us painfully endless. Finally, with the first stertorous breathing and the first clonic [alternating contractions and relaxations] spasm, the blood flowed better...we

KILL SWITCH

observed...the characteristic gradual awaking of the patient "by steps." He rose to sitting position and looked at us...We asked: "What happened to you?" He answered: "I don't know. Maybe I was asleep." (Cerletti quoted in Marti-Ibanez, et al, pp. 91-120)

A nonprofessional also wrote a clear description of an ECT convulsion:

The nurse at the patient's head took up two pencil-like electrodes with flat, flanged bases and smeared contact jelly on them; she and Dr. Rosen then pressed the electrodes against Mary's temples. Dr. Rosen set the dials quickly and pushed the button. At once, Mary grunted deeply, and her head jerked back...Her eyes were clenched shut, and her face was drawn into a tight, distorted mask. Her legs rose stiffly in the air, the toes and arches of her feet curled under, and her whole body now began spasmodically thrashing about. All three nurses kept hold of her, "riding," as Dr. Rosen said, with her motions to prevent self-damage. As far as I could tell, she stopped breathing. At last, after forty-five seconds...the convulsion subsided, a long gargling sound came from her throat, and as she sank down, her breathing began again. (Morton Hunt, *Mental Hospital*, p. 32)

CIA Researches Using Shock to Increase Suggestibility—In 1949, S. M. Korson reported "The Successful Treatment of an Obsessive-Compulsive Neurosis with Narcosynthesis Followed by Daily Electroshocks" in the *Journal of Nervous and Mental Disease*. Under a series of narcohypnotic inductions, Korson had developed the subject's hypnotic obedience. He then gave a series of electroshocks to cause retroactive amnesia which would prevent loss of conditioning. An obsessive-compulsive is the hardest kind of personality to hypnotize, the hardest to brainwash, the hardest to change. Any method that worked on that type patient would work on anybody. The CIA probably followed Korson's work with interest.

Dr. Irving Janis of the RAND Corporation delivered a study to the CIA, in 1949, which surveyed the research done on ECT to date. He said it caused "a temporary intellectual impairment, diffuse amnesia, and general 'weakening of the ego'" This effect of being made extra suggestible, extra hypnotizable, extra persuadable continues "during the period when a series of electroshock convulsions is being administered." (Janis quoted in Bowart, p. 251) Janis recommended that the CIA should research ECT's potential for mind control.

They did. The 1950 BLUEBIRD goals include research into the mind-control uses of electroshock. In a 1951 CIA memo, Morse Allen, head of the behavior-control research program,...asked if the psychiatrist had ever taken advantage of the "groggy" period that followed normal electroshock to gain hypnotic control of his patients. No, replied the psychiatrist, but he would try it in the near future and report back to the Agency. (J. Marks, 1979, pp. 25-6)

During the Korean Conflict, Dulles...discovered, talking to psychiatrists in *Scientific Intelligence*, that electroshock treatments not only produced amnesia in patients for nonspecific periods, but when their memories started to return...at that stage it would have been possible for the Chinese and North Korean doctors to implant anti-American values. (Thomas, pp. 97-8)

An agency report speculated:

Conceivably, electroshock convulsions might be used as an adjunctive device to achieve somnambulism in a very high percentage of the cases. ...From my own and others' investigations of the psychological effects of such treatments, I would suspect that they might tend to reduce resistance to hypnotic suggestions. It is conceivable, therefore, that electroshock treat-

KILL SWITCH

ments might be used to weaken difficult cases in order to produce a hypnotic trance of great depth. (CIA memo quoted in Bowart, p. 72)

A brainwashing specialist later summed it up:

The short-time memory losses and the confusion produced by the treatment may actually create a state of mind that makes it easier to become free of those ideational fixations that interfere with the restructuring of attitudes. (Valenstein, p. 161)

Tien Shocks Bad Wife into Good Wife

In Detroit, Michigan, in the early 1970s, “Laura” and her husband, Tom, “bickered constantly.” Laura wanted a divorce and custody of her three-year-old (hyperactive) son. A relative told the couple that Dr. Tien could save their failing marriage. Tom talked Laura into seeing Dr. Tien in one last try to save the marriage.

Dr. Tien diagnosed Laura as a “depressed, disturbed, emotionally unstable woman.” Laura agreed to become a changed woman by the electroshock method (which Tien called “psychosynthesis”). It worked. As Laura sucked on a baby bottle filled with chocolate milk during the suggestible period as she was coming to after her electro-jolt and the convulsion it caused, Tien talked her into a new set of beliefs. He gave her a new name, “Susan,” implanted a new self-definition, “good,” not “bad,” and provided her a fresh start on her married life.

Laura legally changed her name to Susan (Tien’s patients often did that). In a later check-in, Laura and Tom reported their marriage now worked well. Tien said Susan had become “a more stable, mature individual than Laura ever was.” Most of Tien’s patients, including Susan, were grateful for their cure, according to reporter Dolores Katz in the *Detroit Free Press* (Feb. 11, 1973). Tien’s method obviously derived from Cameron’s theory of “blinking” followed by building a new personality.

Tien was profitably mass-producing those “new personalities, new lives” using electro-induction and giving suggestions in the hypnotic period following the shock. He shocked hundreds of patients into new personalities—about twelve treatments a day. Tien’s system was a kinder, gentler version of Dr. Ewen Cameron’s shock system.

...the most controversial of his treatment methods is the wholesale use of electroconvulsive therapy, known to the layman as shock treatment. This is designed to ‘erase’ undesirable elements of an individual’s personality so he can be ‘reprogrammed’ to function in a more desirable manner... (Katz)

Not everybody was enthused. St. Lawrence Hospital had to hire special staff members to work with Tien because regular staff refused.

Susan and his other shock-list patients received a series of around twenty treatments at the hospital on an outpatient basis, three times a week. In her periods of post-shock susceptibility, she learned to fear and loathe and hide her “bad” past.

Tien and a nurse...place the electrodes that connect Laura to the shock treatment machine... The patient, Laura, talks of her childhood experiences while the electrodes are fitted to her head. (Ibid.)

Dr. Tien had Laura talk of running away and getting her longed for divorce at the moment he shocked her. That is the circuit he wanted to burn out. Right before the zap, Tien asked Laura a question about her childhood:

LAURA: ...I can’t remember.

KILL SWITCH

TIEN: No? You mean the bad times were so bad you got all mixed up? So now you want your husband to divorce you and take your son away?

LAURA: No. You're mixing me up[19]. I never wanted that. I want the divorce and I want my son with me.

TIEN: Yes, it is all mixed up, isn't it? Do you remember running away? Just like your father ran away? Just like your mother ran away, leaving you with your grandmother? Remember running away from the orphanage? Remember running away from the foster home? Is it all coming back? You are so desperate sometimes and you feel so depressed, Laura. You can't put up with this any more. And now you want to run away from Tom. (Ibid.)

At that moment, the nurse slipped a rubber mouthpiece into Laura's mouth and the doctor hit the switch. Tien "deliberately stimulates unpleasant memories immediately prior to the shock treatment so they can be erased." [20]

Laura's body briefly convulsed. A nurse wheeled the unconscious woman on a gurney into the next room where her husband Tom was waiting. When Laura started to wake up, Dr. Tien came in.

TIEN: Susan, your husband is here.

(Laura/Susan opens her eyes and looks submissively at Tom, who cuddles her in his arms and attempts to feed her from the baby bottle.)

TOM: Come on, Susan, drink your milk.

SUSAN (childishly): I don' wan' it.

TOM: It's good for you. You're a good girl, aren't you?

(Susan begins to drink from the bottle...) (Ibid.)

The nurse had handed Tom a baby bottle filled with chocolate milk. (Tien said adults liked chocolate milk better than plain in their bottle. He said the cuddling by husband or parent while giving the bottle "makes the individual receptive to new ideas.") [21]

As Susan sucked on the bottle, Dr. Tien commenced the reprogramming:

TIEN: Have you ever been a bad girl, Susan?

SUSAN: Yeah. Sure.

TOM: No. Susan has never been bad.

TIEN: Right, Tom. It's Laura who was bad, not Susan.

TOM: Susan's a good girl...(Ibid.)

Tien repeated that one over and over: "...the psychiatrist's voice croons, 'Susan is a good girl. She's never been bad, like Laura. Susan loves her husband. She's a good girl, Susan is.'" Then Tien moved on to specifics:

"Tell me, Susan, did your grandmother ever make you get in a doghouse?"

"W-h-a?" Susan mumbled.

"No," Dr. Tien categorically stated. "Susan's grandmother never did that. Laura's grandmother did it. You're a new person now. Have you ever been in an orphanage?" (Ibid.)

Susan catches on. "No, never," she says. Laura's real childhood with all its traumas, like her root self with all its rebelliousness, is being split away from her in this semi-conscious state. "Susan" is learning repression and denial, how to lie—even to herself—about her true past. That solves the problem. She was BAD but now she's GOOD.

"Susan is a good girl...Susan loves her husband," Tien urged again. Tien stressed to

KILL SWITCH

his patients that they were getting “new,” “good” personalities to replace “old,” “bad” ones. “Susan” had wanted to leave her husband: bad girl. Now she will stay with him: good girl, and grateful for her cure.

After the treatment, Laura switched to calling herself Susan all the time.

ECT for the purpose of solving marital problems has not always ended happily. Dr. Cameron’s patient named Lauren, in a similar situation, also agreed to take the ECT character cure. Her husband said she came out of her month of shockings much better. Lauren, however, believed the shockings did not improve her. Two years later she decided her misery was definitely caused by her husband. She divorced him and declares she’s been happy ever since.

Shock to Cause Retroactive Amnesia

The second mind-control use of electroshock is to erase the subject’s memory for what happened during the shock series, or in the weeks immediately before it. A little shock, as from a prod, will not accomplish this. A big shock from a big shocker, called “electroconvulsive treatment,” causes convulsions and memory loss. The memory loss from any series of shocks which are strong enough to cause convulsion can be retroactive. The current may be sent through both hemispheres of the brain using electrodes attached to the temples, or through only one hemisphere (right).

CIA Research on Using Shock to Cause Amnesia—In 1951, a famous psychiatrist, who was “a cleared Agency consultant,” told Morse Allen that electroshocking could cause amnesia. He added that, in “the stupor following shock treatments,” subjects were likely to be very loose-lipped about information. Allen was interested.

The psychiatrist also mentioned that...these treatments could not be detected unless the subject was given EEG tests within two weeks...Allen noted that portable battery-driven electroshock machines had come on the market...the Office of Scientific Intelligence recommended that this same psychiatrist be given \$100,000 in research funds “to develop electric shock and hypnotic techniques.” (J. Marks, 1979, pp. 25-26)

A severe series of electroconvulsive shocks will cause **retrograde amnesia**: an inability to remember not only the time of shocking, but also a period of time preceding the shocking.

There are clear memory losses for the events immediately surrounding the convulsions and with a prolonged treatment series the memory loss commonly extends further and further back in time... Most of the memories return within days or weeks, but some memory gaps persist for six months or longer and there may be permanent loss of recall of events that took place during the period of the treatment. (Valenstein, p. 159)

Dr. Ewen Cameron researched ECT extensively on his own, and for the CIA. (He hoped for a Nobel Prize. The man who invented the lobotomy had received one.) He tried to **depattern (blank)** patients’ minds by electroshocking. (Then he tried to program in new personalities by forcing the subject to listen to repeated suggestions played on an endless-loop tape—**psychic driving**— in a normal state or under hypnosis.)

Cameron wanted the subjects amnesic for the blanking and reprogramming. His research had shown that if “schizophrenics” remember their “symptoms,” those symptoms will return. If hypno-programmed persons remember being conditioned, they will fight it. So both he and the CIA wanted a method that would cause permanent, leak-proof, amnesia.

KILL SWITCH

Electroshock's ability to effectively erase memory of the time just before the shock greatly interested the CIA. Maybe somebody could be ordered to do something, then shocked and made to forget what they had done. Maybe an unwilling candidate could be narcohypnotized, hypno-programmed, and then shocked into retrograde amnesia—made unable to remember that they had been hypno-conditioned. The CIA hired researchers to find out what kinds of shocks best guarantee permanent loss of memory. Cameron received a grant.

Three Stages of ECT Amnesia

Dr. Cameron observed that his typical depatterning patient moved through three distinct amnesia stages. He named them the First, Second, and Third Electroshock Amnesia Stages (Cameron, "Production of Differential Amnesia as a Factor in the Treatment of Schizophrenia," 1960, pp. 26-33).

First Stage—In the First Stage of electroshock amnesia, the subject loses much of her recent memory, "yet she still knew where she was, why she was there, and who the people were who treated her." (J. Marks, p. 135). That is called keeping your "space-time image." The subject knows where she is, why she is there, and recognizes familiar faces. Names are harder.

Second Stage—In the Second Electroshock Amnesia Stage, the subject loses that space-time image and is aware of the loss. That awareness causes extreme anxiety. The subject wants to remember. At this stage the subject asks repeatedly, 'Where am I?', 'How did I get here?', 'What am I here for?'...

Third Stage—In this final stage, the subject becomes bizarrely calm. All the previous anxiety is gone. Cameron said this stage was:...an extremely interesting constriction of the range of recollections which one ordinarily brings in to modify and enrich one's statements. Hence, what the patient talks about are only his sensations of the moment, and he talks about them almost exclusively in highly concrete terms. His remarks are entirely uninfluenced by previous recollections—nor are they governed in any way by his forward anticipations. He lives in the immediate present. (Cameron, "Production of Differential Amnesia")

Regressive Shock

Cameron developed the policy of giving a **regressive** amount of ECT as the means to create an unbreachable amnesia. Regressive ECT is caused by so much shocking that the subject temporarily becomes infantile in behavior. Both regular and regressive ECT affect memory, but regressive ECT affects memory the most. Regressive ECT is caused by shocks given more frequently—as much as several times a day, or even several times an hour, or even several shocks given in rapid-fire sequence—sometimes at a stronger voltage than usual. The series of close, strong shocks is continued until regression occurred, defined as the point when the patient lost bladder control:

They were dazed, out of contact, and for the most part, helpless. All showed incontinence of urine, and incontinence of feces was not uncommon. Most of them were underactive and did not talk spontaneously...They appeared prostrated and apathetic. At the time most of them whined, whimpered and cried readily...They could usually be made to walk if led and supported, but their movements were slow, uncertain and clumsy...They could not dress themselves and none...could complete the task of extracting a match from a matchbox and lighting the match. (Rothschild, p. 148)

KILL SWITCH

Post-Shock Recovery—Schefflin and Opton compared the recovery of patients from ECT treatments to people who are very gradually...*coming out of a dead-drunken state, progressing back toward sobriety through the stages of blotto, soused, sodden, plain drunk and merely high...At first the patients do not know who they are, where they are, or what has happened to them...Gradually the world comes back into focus.* (Schefflin & Opton, p. 366)

It took seven to ten days free of shocks for the subjects to come out of their torpor. They came out of it missing time. They also under performed mentally, only gradually recovering over the next five years. (J. Marks, p. 107) Over time, the subject's amnesia gradually receded. However, in cases where a regressive amount of shocking had been given, Cameron wrote, "it is rare to find that any memories of the period of hospital treatment are brought back."

I once met a woman whose mother had briefly been hospitalized in the Deep South for a nervous breakdown. While in the hospital, this patient had been assaulted and raped by a black man, and had become pregnant as a result. The hospital forced her to endure an abortion, then electroshocked her into a condition of complete amnesia for what had happened, thus also erasing a source of potential liability.

In later years, the woman often complained to her daughter that, "There are patches in my memory that I just can't remember." It bothered her a lot, but she never overcame the amnesia. Her husband and pastor knew the truth about what had happened. It was from them that the daughter finally learned the full story, after her mother's death.

Shock to Cause "Calm"

An electroconvulsive shock series that reaches Cameron's Phase Three results in a temporarily emotionless, "calm," subject. Shocking has been, and still is, a treatment for depressed patients and for unmanageable ones because of this post-shock characteristic of being subdued and obedient. An English psychiatrist wrote, in 1947: "The quiet cooperation of the [electroshocked] patient will be appreciated by the nursing staff." (Thorpe, pp. 89-92) To manage "a patient in a state of wild excitement" he recommended

...“intensive therapy”...that which commences with several shocks daily until the excited state is suppressed, and by this method the most maniacal patient can be rapidly and dramatically brought under control. (Ibid.)

Anybody who is wildly and dramatically protesting the injustice of what is being done to him can also be brought under control. Because of the retroactive amnesia, he may then forget what the fuss was all about.

In 1993, I met a young woman who works as a nurse's aid in a downtown Seattle hospital which has a big mental ward. I mentioned that my college psychology professor had just told us that shock therapy was now outdated and seldom used.

The nurse's aid looked astonished. She said, "They use it lots." A few days later, I heard on the radio that electroshock is the single most common treatment for hospitalized mental patients.

The History of Deliberate Personality Splitting

History of Research on Artificial Neurosis

Focus Shifts to Child, Real or Suggested

Truth, crushed to earth, will rise again.

– William Cullen Bryant, *The Battlefield*

KILL SWITCH

George Estabrooks proposed, over and over, that superspies with **one-way amnesia** should be created by **deliberate personality splitting**. An absolutely dependable, unbreakable amnesia for all events under hypnosis is the most essential single element to create an unknowing, authority-controlled hypnotic subject. A split personality is a very hard form of amnesia to overcome.

Is artificial personality splitting possible? A college psychology text declares: “Multiple personality is a rare event and there are no experimental means for producing it.” (Coon, p. 38) That statement, however, is FALSE. The artificial creation of multiple personality was discussed for years in the psychological literature, and experiments were done—successfully.

We know a great deal about multiple personality... and can now produce the condition on demand through hypnosis. (M.E. Wright in Estabrooks, ed., *Hypnosis: Current Problems*, p. 234)

The “Dual I”

In the 1800s, the **hysterical disorders** (dissociation, amnesia, conversion reaction, and multiple personality, all symptoms of excessive repression) were becoming understood. Scholars observed that hypnosis sometimes resulted in the spontaneous appearance of another personality. And they noticed that the dissociation caused by hypnotism could result in an amnesia similar to the amnesia of a multiple personality.

The first person who deliberately tried to split a personality was a French doctor named Azam. In 1858, he tried “to bring about the phenomena of the dual ‘I’ artificially, by means of hypnosis.” (Hammerschlag, p. 14) The study of hypnotic dissociation and case descriptions of dual and multiple personalities were now underway. Hypnotists and psychiatrists (often the same persons), learned that dual, or multiple, personality could be cured by hypnotism—and caused by hypnotism.

Max Dessoir, around 1890, declared that everybody’s mind contained the potential of a second personality which could be hypnotically stimulated into such strength that it would put the original personality at risk. Pierre Janet described a theory of **dissociation** in 1889:

Things happen as if an idea, a partial system of thoughts, emancipated itself, became independent and developed itself on its own account. The result is, on the one hand, that it develops far too much, and, on the other hand, that consciousness appears no longer to control it. (Janet, *The Major Symptoms of Hysteria*, p. 42).

Dissociation was Janet’s explanation for hypnotic amnesia, split personalities, etc. He believed that a split personality was caused by the “overdevelopment” of a dissociated subsystem which, if large enough, could become a rival for selfhood.

In 1945, Dr. Wolberg wrote about creating “dual personality” in his psychiatric patients:

...dual personality may be created by a relatively simple technique...The patient is told while in deep hypnosis that the [designated] part of him...is another individual of whom he is unaware. This new personality, however, knows all about him. A name may be given to this alter ego, and it may then begin to function as a distinct entity, with wishes and attitudes of its own...With proper suggestions the analyst can take the second personality into his confidence as an ally... (Hypnoanalysis, p. 280)

KILL SWITCH

Speaking of the case history of Mrs. E., Dr. Reiter wrote: “Bit by bit he [Bergen] had built up a secondary personality within her, which it was extremely difficult to bring to light.” In analyzing Palle Hardwick’s case, the doctor referred again and again to

...the artificially produced splitting of H’s personality...(p. 7)...the prompt and automatic carrying out of the given suggestions and the subsequent loss of memory about what passed under the hypnosis, in other words a complete and artificial splitting into two separate personalities. (Reiter, p. 65)

How did the hypno-exploiters, Bergen and Nielsen, split the personalities of Mrs. E. and Palle? Dr. Reiter said it took two things to make a personality split: **automatic obedience** and **complete amnesia**. Automatic obedience makes the artificial shifting from one personality to another happen, on cue from the hypnotist. Complete amnesia keeps the subject ignorant of that shift. Then he does not try to fix it. A healthy person has been given a mental disease (split personality) and made to function like a sick one.

In 1968, H. D. Birns published a book on hypnosis that described personality splitting:

The starting place to deliberately create a manageable multiple personality is, of course, with a normal person who has a self-controlled conscious and a self-controlled unconscious. The next step is to displace the conscious will, substituting the will of the hypnotist. That goal would require achieving a very deep state of hypnosis with the subject...

The techniques, and modifications of techniques, used in hypnosis may be numerous, but their purpose is the same: to enable the hypnotist to unseat the conscious mind from its accustomed place of authority so that he can take over control of the body. (p. 29) ...a hypnotist who has complete control of a subject is like a driver operating an automobile. And while the likeness is true, it’s not really quite accurate because it doesn’t do justice to the awesome powers that the hypnotist possesses. (Birns, p. 39)

Birns said that the last step was to “...create a split in the subject’s unconscious that identifies with and acts in the place of the hypnotist—like the internalized parental figure in a normal subconscious.”

Dr. William Sargant, a British brainwashing expert, wrote about Pavlov’s technique for giving dogs nervous breakdowns:

Hypnoid, paradoxical and ultraparadoxical states of brain activity can also cause a splitting of the stream of consciousness, so that certain thoughts, memories, or patterns of behavior implanted in the brain somehow become isolated and totally divorced from the main stream of consciousness, memory and behavior (pp. 12-13) ...In the hypnoid phase of brain activity, the mind may also become split. Pavlov showed with his dogs how one small special area of cortical brain activity could be so specially excited that it resulted in reflex inhibition of much of the rest of the ordinary cortical activity. (Sargant, 1974, p. 34)

Sargant also wrote about research on human mindsplitting using verbal midbrain implants developed while the subject was hypnotized:

Pavlov thought that the alterations were sited in the cortex, but we now know that the process could easily be initiated by alterations in the other part of the brain, for example, the reticular area of the midbrain. (Ibid.)

CIA Researches Subconscious Isolation

The CIA also researched artificial personality splitting. In private memos, they called

KILL SWITCH

an artificially-created, new personality a **subconscious isolate**. The CIA goal was to create a split so deep, so wide, so complex, that reunification (and, therefore, conscious remembering) would be impossible. They sought permanent changes. They wanted to bury their secrets in a subconscious isolate that could never escape and tell.

The CIA called the process of creating an unknowing hypnotic subject the “application of SI.” One goalsetting memo asked: “Can we obtain control of the future activities (physical and mental) of any individual, willing or unwilling, by application of SI and H techniques?” (It can be assumed that SI stood for “subconscious isolation” and H meant “hypnotic.”)

A November 9, 1950, BLUEBIRD PROJECT memo repeated that SI goal:

...it is recommended that BLUEBIRD conduct experiments and develop techniques to determine the possibilities and the practicability of positive use of SI on willing and unwilling subjects for operational purposes. Positive use of SI would be for the purpose of operational control of individuals to perform specific tasks under post hypnotic suggestion...

After SI and H techniques were applied, the subject’s conscious mind did not know that it now contained a subconscious isolate which would robotically obey its operator’s hypnotic cues and instructions (and know everything the conscious mind did not know). Subconscious isolation created amnesia. That increased “compliance to suggested acts.” (Schefflin and Opton, p. 115).

After Condon’s novel came out in 1959, the term **Manchurian Candidate** became the popular name for an unknowing hypno-programmed person. Candy Jones was narcohypnotized into a “Candidate” in 1960.

History of Research on Artificial Neurosis

We undertook to produce synthetically a complete model of a stable neurosis...We took a model of neurosis because in it are found those properties of a stable conflict, of a prolonged affective disorganization of behavior...

– Luria, *The Nature of Human Conflicts*

An artificial neurosis is a conflict between an urge and an inhibition, which has been implanted in a person’s unconscious under hypnosis, and then hidden there by suggested amnesia. The hypnotist suggests the urge, the amnesia, and perhaps also the inhibition.

Pavlov Applies Freud

An artificial neurosis is created by applying Pavlovian methodology to Freudian theory. Freud determined that neurosis and its resulting symptoms may be caused by an unresolved, unconscious conflict (such as between an inappropriate sexual desire and conscience). That’s how natural repression causes natural neurosis. Freud used his understanding of this natural cause of neurosis to help the patient. Because, if the repressed memory can be remembered, the patient usually will deal with the conflict and cure himself.

Pavlov undertook to cause neurosis, instead of cure it. He defined **neurosis** as “a chronic deviation of the higher nervous activity, lasting weeks, months, and even years.” If he could experimentally cause neurosis, using Freud’s model, it would prove that particular theory correct. Pavlov’s experiments succeeded. He created **experimental neuroses** in animals by reversing Freud’s method of curing neurosis. Pavlov caused dogs to develop real neuroses. He thus demonstrated that learning can create emotional responses—and can cause one type of mental problem:

KILL SWITCH

We have definite experimental neuroses in our animals...what is analogous to human psychoses....This was the reason for my becoming thoroughly acquainted with psychiatry....(Pavlov, Lectures on Conditioned Reflexes, p. 39)

Pavlov could produce nervous breakdowns in dogs either by over-stimulating their excitatory system (stress) or their inhibitory system (repression). Or he did it by creating a **conflict between excitation and inhibition**. For example, he gave them severe electric shocks timed together with the arrival of food to set up a conflict between the avoidance of pain (fear) and the desire for nourishment. They were afraid to eat, but they needed food to live. They were now neurotic.

Luria Researches Artificial Neurosis

A.R. Luria continued Pavlov's research in his Soviet laboratory in the 1920s. Luria was a prominent Russian scientist: Professor of Psychology at the Academy of Communistic Education, and a Research Associate at the State Institute of Experimental Psychology in Moscow. Luria took Pavlov's research on creating artificial neurosis one step farther. Whereas Pavlov had experimented on dogs, Luria now experimented on human beings.

Luria wanted to create "a complete imperativeness of those tendencies in the area of which we provoked the conflict." (Luria, *The Nature of Human Conflicts*, p. 240) He wanted to be able to go into somebody's mind, tweak it a certain way, and overcome their natural will with his implanted "imperativeness." He worked for a government which liked the idea of control—of being able to change people in a specific, permanent, controlling way.

Failed Conditioning Method—Luria's first efforts to implant "imperativeness" failed. The method which had failed used a Pavlovian conditioning approach. Luria called it "a prolonged elaboration of an automatism." It failed because, after the conditioning treatment, all of his subjects remembered what had happened. Remembering, they rejected the implanted thoughts Luria was trying to drill into them. They rejected Luria's attempts to railroad their minds into "prolonged affective disorganization of behavior." Luria reported:

...many of our subjects were well able to adjust themselves to or correct the difficulties set before them...These results told us...that the disturbances we obtained were not of a stable and intensive character. (Ibid.)

Luria did not give up his quest to create such a complete imperativeness that the subject could not correct the difficulties. His goal was still to make a **stable** (permanent) and **intensive** (unconsciously powerful and dominant) implant in a subject's brain.

Success—To accomplish that, Luria had, somehow, to overcome the subject's natural feedback ability to observe what has happened in his mind and to self-heal by reprogramming himself.[22] So, Luria tried it again. This time he deeply hypnotized the subject and suggested amnesia. This time he succeeded. His subject's conscious mind did not reject the implanted thoughts because it didn't know they were there.

Luria never talks plainly. His book sounds like gibberish until you catch his meaning. Then you realize that Luria instructed his "technician" (a skilled hypnotist) to begin programming the subject with "a natural reaction of the personality" such as sexual desire or an aggressive impulse embodied in the emotion of anger. The hypnotist was to seek to "obtain a stable conflict of maximal strength, closely related in its structure to the more acute neurotic states."

Therefore, an imaginary incident which aroused a sexual or aggressive feeling which would predictably be opposed by conscience was suggested to the hypnotized subject.

KILL SWITCH

Luria found it easy to set up “a collision between our suggested activity and the natural... personality” (Luria, p. 241) when the subject was hypnotized.

Accordingly, the subject was programmed to unconsciously believe that he had sexual relations with his mother when he was a little boy, or some such. Luria thus successfully implanted into a hypnotized person “a conflict of fair stability and intensity...by direct suggestion...[to] provoke a tendency of undisputed imperativeness...” (Ibid, p. 140) The hypnotic implant set up a primitive unconscious conflict in the subject’s mind, such as between desire and fear/shame or between anger and fear/shame.

The conflict could not be resolved because it could not escape from its hole of suggested amnesia into the mind’s light of reason (where the subject’s conscious mind would identify it as garbage and toss it out). The implanted conflict (now permanently concealed in the subject’s unconscious by suggested amnesia) would be stable because it was insulated from the subject’s self-correcting mental feedback mechanism. The deep-level guilt, shame, or anger generated by that suggested fictional conflict could then be used to drive whatever “imperative” Luria wanted.

Luria had succeeded in causing the targeted **stable disorganization of personality**. He called that an “artificial neurosis.”[23]

Artificial Neurosis Comes to the U.S.

In 1932, Horsley Gantt published his English translation of Luria’s book. There were many psychoanalytically-trained medical hypnotists at that time. They were comfortable with both Freudian theory and with hypnosis. Some continued Luria’s research in the United States.

In 1934 and 1935, M.H. Erickson published his research on artificial neurosis. He said the implanted lie should be “a reproachable act committed by the subject—an act which would be contrary to the subject’s usual personality trends.” (Erickson, Huston, and Shakow, 1934, p. 66) In another Erickson experiment,

...hypnotized medical students were told they had illegally performed an abortion...he was able (in nine out of twelve subjects) to suggest the presence of conflict, to induce guilt feelings, and to proceed successfully with the experiment; that is, to obtain in six of his subjects both psychological and physiological disturbances. (Marcuse, Hypnosis: Fact and Fiction, p. 112)

In 1942, P. L. Harriman reported in an article called “The Experimental Production of Some Phenomena Related to the Multiple Personality” that he had implanted conflicts, under deep hypnosis, in ten subjects. Then he concealed the implants from the subjects’ conscious minds by suggested amnesia. He used automatic writing to test whether the implanted conflict was finding unconscious expression. The subjects were consciously unaware of their implanted conflicts (and of their automatic writing), but the writing which he suggested that they do while hypnotized showed that their conflicts were unconsciously active. Their “personalities had been changed.”

Jules H. Masserman was a University of Chicago psychiatrist who continued the work of integrating Pavlovian concepts of conditioning with Freudian concepts. In a 1943 book, *Behavior and Neuroses*, Masserman explained compulsions, obsessions, masochism, etc., in terms of the Pavlovian/Freudian linkage. His conditioning theories were based on animal research—experimental neuroses he created in cats and dogs.

Masserman taught animals to find food by opening a food box in their cage in re-

KILL SWITCH

sponse to a certain noise. Then, the moment the animal opened the box, he gave a severe electric shock, or a terrifying blast of air. It took only one or two such incidents to make the animals neurotic. Fear now was in conflict with hunger. Two powerful instinctual drives were in direct opposition. Eventually, fear won. The animals would no longer eat.

In 1945, a psychiatrist and narcohypnosis expert described solving a man's problem by giving him "an experimental conflict." His series of suggestions concluded:

You will not consciously know what it is, but it will nevertheless be on your mind. It will...govern your actions and speech, although you will not be aware that it is doing so. (Wolberg, *Hypnoanalysis*, p. 302)

By the late 1960s, hundreds of hypnotic experiments had been done on hypnotically-caused emotional states and shifts of state, such as depression, elation, and rage. For decades, researchers also studied repression, rationalization, and displacement using suggested unconscious conflicts. They established that:

With the aid of hypnotism it is possible to reproduce, artificially and temporarily, the diverse symptoms of hysteria, or with equal ease to make a manageable laboratory model of compulsion neurosis. By the same means, one can create an artificial "complex," making it effectively "unconscious," and, for the first time under controlled conditions with known antecedents, study the irruption of unconscious strivings into the normal stream of behavior and the methods of defense set up against them. (R. W. White quoted in Moss, *Hypnosis in Perspective*, p. 119)

Young's classic list of hypnotic techniques that can be used for unethical purposes ended with artificial neurosis. He explained that *...by means of illusions, delusions, age regression, transidentification, and other powerful devices available in hypnosis, the personality can be temporarily so altered as to circumvent the ego demands and implant complexes which are as bona fide as those of a neurosis or a psychosis...* (Young, 1952, pp. 406-7)

Focus Shifts to Child, Real or Suggested

Could they [adults] be returned to a state of neurologic and psychologic infancy for a short period, and then could new patterns of behavior be introduced?

– Ewen Cameron, quoted in John Marks, *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate*, p. 108

In the 1950s, research on methods of artificial personality splitting also began to make use of the Freudian views of early childhood development and the psychology of the hypnotic subject.

Freudian Hypnosis Researchers

Sandor Ferenczi was one of the first **psychoanalytic** (Freudian) hypnosis researchers. Writing between 1916 and 1926, he hypothesized that hypnosis resurrects and reactivates a childlike persona in the subject's unconscious. He said that persona is characterized by abject dependency and Oedipal cravings toward the hypnotist (who is unconsciously viewed as parent). Ferenczi believed that a normal adult represses the unconscious wish to regress to childhood, but trance turns off the conscious mind and frees those immature desires to shape the subject's role in the hypnotic relationship.

...the situation during hypnosis tends to favor a conscious and unconscious imaginary return to childhood, and to awaken reminiscences, hidden away in everyone, that date from the time of childlike obedience. (Ferenczi, *Contributions to Psychoanalysis*, p. 375)

KILL SWITCH

Ferenczi defined two styles of hypnotic induction and management which reflected that regressive element. He called them **maternal** and **paternal**. The maternal style of induction is conventional, gradual, polite, considerate, gentle, cooperative, and based on love or persuasion. A maternal-style hypnotist's voice is warm and friendly. A maternal induction lulls, persuades, or bores the subject into trance. Ferenczi said that a subject in a maternal hypnosis rapport is motivated by a need for **love**.

The paternal induction style is abrupt, shocking, dictatorial, highly authoritarian in tone, a domineering technique based on fear. A paternal-style induction uses a fast, directive induction method with a cold, unfriendly tone of voice. Ferenczi said that paternal hypnosis reawakens the hating and fearing attitude learned by a little child when disciplined by his parents. He said that, in paternal hypnosis, the subject is motivated by need for "abasement" and for "compliance." According to psychoanalysts, that need for abasement is an infantile, erotic, masochistic complex. Such a subject is in awe of the hypnotist, and submits to the operator's demands out of **fear** of him.

*...the hypnotist with the imposing exterior, who works by frightening and startling... [is like] the stern, all-powerful father, to believe in, to obey, to imitate whom, is the highest ambition of every child... [hypnosis] consists in the deliberate establishment of conditions under which the tendency to blind belief and uncritical obedience present in everyone, but usually kept repressed by the censor (remains of the infantile-erotic loving and fearing of the parents), may unconsciously be transferred to the person hypnotizing... (Ferenczi, *Sex in Psychoanalysis*, Ch. 2)*

Ferenczi believed instinctive Oedipal impulses were at the very center of hypnosis.

*The capacity to be hypnotized... depends on the positive, although unconscious, sexual attitude which the person being hypnotized adopts in regard to the hypnotist... [The hypnotic subject] is really in love with the hypnotist, and has brought this tendency from the nursery. (Ferenczi, *Theory and Technique of Psychoanalysis*, p. 473)*

Hypnosis always arouses a childlike state of mind: **dependence** and **transference**. Transference means relating to the hypnotist as if to a parent figure, hero, or godlike spiritual leader.

...the hypnotic subject is being directed to assume a state of mind in which mature discriminations are excluded and childish dependence upon the hypnotist is encouraged. As some people are pleased to be in a state where life seems narrowed down to an easily manageable level of closeness with a powerful guiding parent, hypnosis is in no danger of extinction... (Kovel, p. 209)

In the midst of World War II, Margaret Estabrook reported, in a Seattle newspaper, on research which created an artificial childhood:

...hypnosis is a peculiar relationship between two people. The hypnotist is a figure of parental authority, just as a doctor is to a patient, or a teacher to his pupil. Even more strikingly than in these other relationships, the subject tends to respond emotionally to the hypnotist in the same manner that he responded to his own parents in his childhood. In particular, "parental" commands in the form of suggestions are readily obeyed... (Margaret Estabrook, 1942, p. 1)

The artificial neurosis was created in a subconscious isolate defined as a child. The deeply hypnotized subject had been given a fake memory:

When you were a very small child, one and a half years old, your mother was taken to

KILL SWITCH

the hospital and your father made you drink milk from a cup. Up to this time you had been breast-fed. You thought it was your father's fault that your mother could no longer feed you. (Estabrook, p. 1)

The artificial memory was deliberately made painful.

When painful emotions have been aroused, as in the subject who accepted the weaning story, there is a natural tendency to forget or "repress" the cause of them. This is particularly true of childhood experiences.... (Ibid.)

Young children have a natural tendency not to remember painful things. A false memory that will predictably cause painful emotions, when implanted in a **hypnochild**, will be strongly repressed and resistant to uncovering and healing.

Mind-control researchers were looking for ways to cause hard-to-overcome amnesia. One way turned out to be loading a hypnochild subconscious isolate with guilt, pain, or shame.

Natural Development of Multiple Personality

How does multiple personality develop under natural circumstances? Since Freud, psychologists have understood that the earlier a trauma happens in a person's life, the more devastating (and hard to remember) it can be. Over 95% of natural multiple personalities develop as a result of some combination of monstrous psychological, physical, and sexual abuses in childhood. All persons who suffer from spontaneous multiple personality

...have a history of being severely abused; the disorder is thought to stem from ways some children try to mentally isolate themselves against the horror of unremitting abuse. (Goleman, pp. C1, C6)

Sybil's life story, told by Dr. Schreiber, is a well-known case history of a naturally-split personality. Her amnesia and multiple personalities developed during a childhood in which she was frequently beaten, shut up in closets, cruelly tortured, and nearly killed. The original Sybil-self escaped by dissociating, which created a split-self who suffered that torture instead of her.

E.R. Hilgard said that the cause of multiple personality can be traced to a "severely brutal period in childhood." (*Divided Consciousness*, p. 32) He detailed some elements of brutality that can result in a split personality:

...a disintegration of values at the heart of the family, with violent and excessive punishment, overt sexual assaults in childhood, unbalanced parental roles, one parent occasionally sadistic, the other rather passive and aloof. In resolving the conflicts over identification and guilt, and in trying to cope in a context in which a unified strategy cannot work, the person divides...[and] the cause of the dissociations...lies in motivational conflicts that are often deeply unconscious. (Ibid., p. 40)

A Dutch psychoanalyst wrote in his post-WWII study of brainwashing:

The method of systematically exploiting unconscious guilt to create submission is not too well known. Guilt may be instilled early in life...[may] burden the child with a sense of guilt when he does not understand what was unmoral or wrong about a given act. (Meerloo, *The Rape of the Mind*, p. 81)

A real child lacks understanding. It is a phenomenon of hypnosis that a hypnochild (created by suggestion) also does not understand. Therefore, suggested amnesia is hardest to overcome if the problem programming:

KILL SWITCH

- a) embodies conflict;
- b) is implanted in a child, or a hypnochild;
- c) has associations to psychological trauma;
- d) embodies guilt and/or torture.

The Controllable Child

Here are the mental characteristics of a very young child:

§ **Dependence**—Controllers say they are taking responsibility for another person's behavior or welfare. The silver lining of control, for the child, is the presumed privilege of dependence. A very young child must depend on adults to meet every need. Therefore, a young child humbly seeks approval and acceptance. It's a matter of survival. There's submission in any adult/child relationship, real or hypnotic.

§ **Does Not Clearly Distinguish Fantasy from Reality**—A child does not clearly distinguish between fantasy and reality. Young children like to play pretend. Even when not playing pretend, a very young child does not distinguish reality from fantasy very well.

§ **Accepts Logical Inconsistencies**—A young child's way of reasoning allows logical inconsistencies. That stage of nonlogical thinking is called **preoperational**. A very young child's mind passively accepts any logic provided by an authority figure, however preposterous it may appear to an adult mind. The child's literal and passive acceptance of whatever he is told resembles the acceptance of suggestions by a hypnotized person.

§ **Obedience**—A child usually accepts a statement that he is guilty and believes that he deserves punishment. At the same time he internalizes the principle that he is in submission to the dominant punisher and must obey—or be punished. An adult mind understands that when the other person stops playing fair and begins to cheat, it is time to get OUT of the game. A child does not understand that.

§ **Natural Amnesia**—Early childhood memories (before age three or four) tend to be inaccessible to adult retrieval. Very young children are naturally amnesic. Children—or hypnochild subconscious isolates—are more likely than adults to repress painful emotional memories.

§ **Assumption That Might Makes Right**—Lawrence Kohlberg, a researcher on the development of moral reasoning in children, discovered that very young children reason on the basis that might makes right. So the child offers obedience to authority (and avoids punishment). Older they go through a “good girl,” “nice boy” stage when adult approval is more important than anything else to them. So a child, or child split, might be urged to “be a good girl!”—defined as doing what pleases the adult.

§ **Greater Imprinting Capacity**—The earlier in life the programming occurs, the more deep-rooted and severe the psychological consequences are, and the more strongly driven an artificial neurosis may be.

Hypnochild Given Artificial Neurosis

The next technological advance in this black psychiatry sequence came when merely verbal hypnotic induction was replaced by **narcohypnosis**. It was Dr. Brickner, et al, who thus advanced this process of creating artificial neurosis. Their 1950 report, “Direct Reorientation of Behavior Patterns in Deep Narcosis (Narcoplexis),” described creation of a “psychotherapeutic method which utilizes directly certain neurophysiologic factors.” The “neurophysiologic factor” was the forcing of their subject into a state of deep trance by drug-

KILL SWITCH

ging. They used intravenous sodium amytal

...because of the known accessibility and responsiveness of patients while under the effects of this drug. However, the doses we employed were much larger than those ordinarily used. (Brickner, 1950, p. 166)

They gave large doses in order to push the subject's chemical trance to a very deep level.

When the brain is in that state, specific psychologic impacts often can be made with unusual directness. Frequently this results in unusually rapid psychologic changes. (Ibid., p. 194)

Even the biggest doses of barbiturate did not make the subjects "patternless." But the drug did create a physiological state of...*childishness and allowed the subjects' basic and primitive conditioning patterns which had been created early in life, to be stripped of their higher defenses...[and] directly susceptible to attack.* (Brickner, et al, 1950, p. 166)

The "higher defense" that was stripped away was the subject's **conscious mind**. The method was an IV drip of amobarbital sodium solution until the patient was in clinical coma.

Then Brickner read a **script** which pictured the patient in infancy, or early childhood. It dealt with the "early pattern" which they intended to reprogram. Each script followed the artificial neurosis model. It implanted a phony memory which was meant to become dominant over the subject's real experience, and to replace it as a psychological dynamic in his personality in order to achieve the operator's desired change in his behavior.

The script was read for an hour, either live or on tape, until the subject awoke from the drug trance. It was read to the drugged subject over and over during that hour, perhaps five times each session. They used an average of sixteen narcosis/script reading sessions to build the subject's **new personality**.

The script regressed the subject to early childhood and then reprogrammed him while in that drugged hypnochild state. The hypnotist pretended to be a childhood parent of the drugged patient. The script created a phony, implanted "memory." The new memory, thus implanted, was psychoanalytic dynamite. Brickner explained that an **incest** memory caused "unusually rapid psychologic changes." The script suggested

...a triangular (oedipal) situation, involving child and parents...WE HAVE NOT HESITATED TO GRANT COITAL RELATIONS WITH A PARENT...in a script... (Ibid., p. 172) [caps added]

The subject was kept totally amnesic about the new "memories." "No conscious insight is given..." (Ibid., p. 173)

Brickner's Technique, Summarized—An artificial neurosis is an implanted set of false memories. The hypnotist lies to the subject; the subject believes those lies because he is hypnotized. Brickner used the following steps:

The subject received hypnotic training and conditioning under very deep **barbiturate** narcosis.

The script addressed the subject as a **child**.

New, **false memories of childhood**, intended to be the basis for major, permanent changes in the subject's personality, were implanted.

KILL SWITCH

Coital relations with a parent was part of the script.

The script was read to the subject **over and over**.

Brainwashing: The Technology

Stage One: Deconditioning

Stage Two: Breaking Point

Stage Three: Reconditioning

The message of coercion is: you must change and become what we tell you to become—or else. The threat embodied in the ‘or else’ may be anything from death to social ostracism, any form of physical or emotional pain. The goal of naked coercion is to produce a cowed and demoralized follower.

– Lifton, *Thought Reform and the Psychology of Totalism*, p. 438

Brainwashing’s Goal Is Conversion

Stressed humans naturally tend to make **conversions**—which may, or may not, be permanent. The conversions happen because stressed humans (and dogs) may respond to crisis by discarding inappropriate old programming and discovering, in suffering, the key to spiritual growth and to new and better behavior. A person can change by adopting a group’s shared values and beliefs. Or, they can change independently, creating a new personal path out of the debris of shattered past attempts. **Brainwashing** is a deliberate regimen of stress that seeks a true change of heart, which results in future collaboration.

In the 1950s, certain U.S. government agencies began to fund brainwashing research. In 1957, Dr. William Sargant, an English brainwashing specialist, stated the goal in one question: “Why do stressed humans tend to make conversions?” They were looking for a way to deliberately, systematically elicit conversion: predictable stresses for predictable results. The experiments confirmed that harsh manipulation of a confined person can break down previous attitudes and instill a new set of the brainwasher’s choice.

Brainwashing is not what advertisers, politicians, educators, and evangelists do, because their audience is not a captive one. If you can walk away from unwelcome persuasion, it is not brainwashing. If you cannot walk away, it may be. **Indoctrination** is the mildest level of brainwashing. Indoctrination is a very direct conversion system which attempts to change a person’s viewpoint while he or she is still a thinking individual. More severe and classic brain washing regimens differ from indoctrination in that they attempt to change a person’s mind without allowing any input or control from the victim. Complete control over a person’s environment allows extreme psychological manipulations.

Methods of Brainwashing

The technique of brainwashing involves total external control, an atmosphere of stress, and two or three induction methods (alternating, or combined) which increase suggestibility. Since brainwashing is a coercive mind-control technology that contains elements that lower consciousness and increase suggestibility, there is a link between hypnotism and brainwashing. Stress increases suggestibility. Extreme stress can cause trance. The Pavlovian induction types historically associated with brainwashing are:

Type One: Sensory deprivation.

Type Two: Over-stimulation—prod, whip, sexual abuse, haranguing, terrifying, etc.

Type Three: Brain syndrome caused by fatigue and hunger.

KILL SWITCH

Three Stages of Brainwashing

Brainwashing takes place in a series of three major stages. A Dutch psychoanalyst, Joost Meerloo, first analyzed and named them in his post-WWII analysis of Nazi brainwashing techniques:

- I. **Deconditioning** of the subject.
- II. Subject's artificial **breakdown** and **identification** with the new authority, with the brainwashers' orthodoxy, whatever it is.
- III. Subject's **reindoctrination**, retraining in the new orthodoxy.

So, the first stage is breakdown. The second is the phenomenon of the breaking point, and identification with the brainwashers. The third is the subject's reindoctrination. All three stages—deconditioning, breaking, and reindoctrination—have been carefully researched.

Stage One: Deconditioning

[The purpose is] to destroy the old loyalties and value systems... their personal meaning systems... extinguishing old conditioned patterns.

– Perry London, *Behavior Control*, p. 91

Biderman and Lifton independently analyzed the exact coercive elements, and their chronological order, which accomplish the subject's deconditioning. Each came up with an eight-item list.

Biderman's List of Deconditioning Factors

1) Isolation, Disorientation, and Loss of Control—A brainwashing regimen always starts with **isolation** of the victim. [24] Brainwashers isolate a prospective subject from associates who might sustain his old beliefs. Isolation may be solitary confinement. Patricia Hearst was shoved into a closet in a house where only SLA members lived.

If the inmate is to be held in a group, the brainwashing program usually isolates new candidates from all former associates. It surrounds them instead with new associates who are also undergoing brainwashing, or who are already single-mindedly devoted to the new point of view. In a brainwashing program described by Sargant, the inmates lived for nine to twelve months in a camp which was so isolated that all ties with the subjects' friends and families were cut.

The camp regimen deliberately shattered all their old patterns of behavior. In any brainwashing situation, the subject has totally lost control—and is confused. This is deliberate. In a classic brainwashing regimen, the isolation from former peers is combined with **loss of control** and **disorientation**. The victim has been snatched abruptly out of his accustomed environment and thrust into a totally different one. The subject's lack of opportunity to mentally prepare for the change is deliberate. It makes him less able to resist.

Many victims of totalitarianism have told me in interviews that the most upsetting experience they faced in the concentration camps was the feeling of loss of logic, the state of confusion into which they had been brought—the state in which nothing had any validity...In order to tame people into the desired pattern, victims must be brought to a point where they have lost their alert consciousness and mental awareness. ...Feelings of terror, feelings of fear and hopelessness, of being alone, of standing with one's back to the wall, must be instilled. (Meerloo, p. 49)

2) Monopolization of Perception—Unauthorized information is prohibited and prevented. There may even be outright **sensory deprivation**. The victim's attention is focused

KILL SWITCH

on his own physical and mental misery, and the necessarily exaggerated importance of all interactions with the tormenters. Isolated from family and friends, he is now totally dependent on his captors who have the exclusive right either to continue or relieve his suffering. He may be in sensory deprivation, being made susceptible to propaganda. Or he may be mentally over-stimulated. In that type of brainwashing regimen, subjects are given no chance to relax, not a moment's peace, no opportunity simply to think their own thoughts. Mind and body are constantly occupied, and fatigued, with specified group activities and propaganda input.

3) Exhaustion—Mental collapse under stress can have both a physical and mental basis. Physical stresses, such as fatigue, isolation, and malnutrition; and mental stresses, such as humiliation, weaken the physical foundation of body and mind. Extreme physical stress, especially torture, causes brain syndrome, which further weakens the will to resist and creates suggestibility. Exhaustion makes a person susceptible to any repeated message, an easy target for hypnotic suggestion. Another brainwashing technique wearies the subject mentally by locating a psychological “sore spot,” then prodding it again and again.

4) Threats—The subject, now totally isolated and totally helpless, is threatened.

5) Occasional Indulgences—This is the carrot of the carrot-and-stick **behavior modification** program.

6) Subjugation—Subjugation conditioning often involves **invasion of body space**. Most people have a limit, a physical area inside which they do not like other persons to intrude. This private space is usually a circle around us, about two or three feet from the body. Harsher brainwashing regimens involve constant interrogation, sleep deprivation, bad and insufficient food, inadequate toileting facilities, humiliating treatment, and no contact with persons outside the brainwashing setup.

7) Degradation, Omnipotence, Omniscience—Physical or sexual assaults—anything that shames—further subjugate and degrade the victim. The subject is shamed. The captors, on the other hand, demonstrate what Lifton called **omnipotence** and **omniscience**. Degradation of the subject seems to prove the programmers' omnipotence. The abuse in this category typically involves not only humiliation and degradation, but also forced self-betrayal.

8) Enforcing Trivial Demands—This conditioning is for takeover of the subject's will.

Lifton's Brainwashing Analysis

Dr. Lifton interpreted brainwashing as a manipulated, forced conversion experience. His 8-point method incorporated psychoanalytic elements, the Chinese Communist indoctrination system, and all three of Dr. Meerloo's elements (deconditioning, breaking, and reindoctrination):

1. Captors acquire total **control** over victim.
2. Captors assault victim's sense of **identity**.
3. Victim feels **guilt** and accepts blame.
4. Victim **confesses** vices, both real and imaginary, the uglier, the better.
5. Victim **betrays** self and others, then feels “cut off from his former roots and unable to return...”
6. Victim is pushed to extreme **death anxiety** and breaking point.

KILL SWITCH

7. Captors swap leniency for **total compliance**. The prisoner now eagerly behaves any way they want, because he now believes this may be a way to survive.

8. The prisoner's conversion is reinforced by a systematic regimen of criticism, self-criticism, and **instruction** in exactly what he is supposed to believe.

Stage Two: The Breaking Point

...the Chinese Communist leaders not only find nothing to resent in charges that they 'brainwash' their opponents, but regard the term as a quite apt and honorable description of what they wish to achieve. (p. 6) Practitioners of 'thought-reform' seek 'real' changes in beliefs and values. They demand that the victim be 'honest, sincere, and full' in his 'self-examination, repentance, and change.'

– Blake in Biderman and Zimmer (eds), *The Manipulation of Human Behavior*, p. 10

Finally, the subject's mental tension reaches the cortex overload stage. Then, ultraparadoxical breakdown (a physiological phenomenon first described by Pavlov) occurs.

Ultraparadoxical Stage

The **breaking point** is a physiological event. Abuse causes the ego, the "I," to shrink, pull back, and weaken until, finally, exhausted, it gives up. Pavlov named that moment of giving up the **ultraparadoxical stage**. When pressure, exhaustion, and fear become unbearable, the subject reaches the breaking point.

Sargant argued that anything that causes temporary cortex over-stimulation and collapse has the healing effect of loosening up old programming patterns, thereby allowing the implant of new ones. His list of over-stimulations which could cause the ultraparadoxical break included electroshock, voodoo possession, rock concerts, and suggested confabulations and implanted false memories. Sargant approved of whatever it took to drive the patient into the **transmarginal collapse**, so that his previous behavior patterns could be broken up.

Pavlov stressed dogs, through deconditioning, into the ultraparadoxical crisis. After the breakdown, he conditioned new habits into them. Sometimes, he put the dog through the whole routine again: stressing it into another breakdown, and then retraining into yet another set of habits. At the breaking point, the exhausted, confused dog—or person—will accept any sort of relief.

Submission to and Positive Identification with Enemy

A curious phenomenon of this second stage of brainwashing is the subject's **identification** with the brainwashers. At the breaking point, the victim switches, from fear and hate of Big Brother, to trust and love of Big Brother.

Victims

*...suddenly begin to feel affection for the examiner who has been treating them so harshly—a warning sign that the 'paradoxical' and 'ultraparadoxical' phases of abnormal brain activity may have been reached: they are near to breaking point... (Sargant, *Battle for the Mind*, p. 214)*

Meerloo wrote of the breaking moment:

...the moment of surrender may often arrive suddenly. It is as if the stubborn negative suggestibility changed critically into a surrender and affirmation. What the inquisitor calls the sudden inner illumination and conversion is a total reversal of inner strategy in the victim.

KILL SWITCH

From this time on, in psychoanalytic terms, a parasitic superego lives in man's conscience, and he will speak his new master's voice. (Meerloo, p. 92)

At the breaking point, the subject begins to reject what he is being told to reject and begins to accept what he is being told to accept. At this point of emotional extremity, he makes the Pavlovian reversal. Now he loves Big Brother. The breaking point is also the point of confession: "I was bad but now I'm good."

Compulsives Resist the Best

The "**obsessional neurotic**," better known as the **compulsive**, whether canine or human, is the personality type which is most able to resist brainwash techniques. He tends to avoid becoming emotionally involved in what is going on. That protects him from being influenced. Brainwashers have the most success with compulsives using Type Three inductions—lack of food, lack of sleep, illness, injury, and exhaustion.

*Many human eccentrics may approximate to Pavlov's stronger dogs, who acquired new behavior patterns only when they had first been debilitated by castration, fever, or gastric disorders which made them lose a great deal of weight. Once reindoctrinated, they were fattened up, and the new behavior patterns became as firmly fixed as the old; indeed, Pavlov could not get rid of them again. (Sargant, *Battle for the Mind*, p. 86)*

Internalization of the Guilt for Breaking

All brainwashers dread conformity based on opportunism rather than conviction. All work to achieve a sincere conversion. They make...*the ultimate test of the loyalty and sincere devotion of the individual to the system...his acceptance of the inquisitorial process itself: the purge, coercion, confession, and the entire paraphernalia of enforced conversion...* (Biderman and Zimmer (eds), p. 8)

The subject's final capitulation happens when he not only gives outward obedience to whatever the captors will for him to do, but he also honestly comes to think and believe whatever they demand. After that, he no longer blames Big Brother for bringing him to the breaking point. He now thanks Big Brother for his "help." The subject now blames what happened on himself.

He now feels a deep conviction of **guilt**. He accepts personal responsibility for what happened: "I was bad. It had to be done to me, so I could be made good. I'm so grateful Big Brother fixed my wrong thinking." The subject now believes that he was imperfect, and needed the brainwashing cure. This taking of responsibility for his mistreatment is called the **internalization of obedience**. At the breaking point, the victim's independent will steps back, yields to the controller's will, then internalizes that submission.

Self-loathing Measures Inmate's Renewal—

*One final test of loyalty demands that the prisoner act as though he hated himself with the intensity of the criminal definition which the system has placed upon him. (Blake in Biderman & Zimmer, eds, *The Manipulation of Human Behavior*, p. 8) Similar language described a model prison therapy, the Asklepeion program at the Marion Illinois Federal Penitentiary: ...object of the "therapies" is initially to "unfreeze" the prisoner's formal organization of beliefs about him or her self (or, as Opton describes it, "to degrade the self-concept and shatter his personal identity"). When this has been achieved, the person will then "change" his or her personality and belief system. In the final stage the new personality will be "refrozen." (Ackroyd, et. al., p. 268) The "refreezing" takes place in Stage Three.*

KILL SWITCH

Stage Three: Reconditioning

Through both continual training and taming, the new phonograph record has to be grooved... Incidental relapses to the old form of thinking have to be corrected... The victim is daily helped to rationalize and justify his new ideology... This systematic indoctrination...

– Meerloo, *The Rape of the Mind*, p. 92

In Stage One, the relentless deconditioning pressure unfroze former convictions, values, beliefs, and attitudes. That left the subject vulnerable to the implanting of new ones. In Stage Two, the ultraparadoxical stage, the subject reversed strategies and began to identify with the brainwasher. Meerloo called Stage Three “The Reconditioning to the New Order.” It accomplishes the subject’s **reindoctrination**.

The brainwashed, broken subject learns the new orthodoxy in a hypnoidal way. Because of that characteristic of greatly increased suggestibility to new ideas and new conditioning, Pavlov called Stage Three the **hypnoidal stage**. In the hypnoidal stage, the subject stops being critical. He accepts suggestions or commands without argument, without questioning, and in an uncritical way. New habits, new convictions, and new behavior are now easily programmed into his mind.

Soviet brainwashers omitted this third stage of brainwashing. The Russians sent the prisoner on to serve his time after he broke and “confessed.” Chinese brainwashers, however, sent the softened-up prisoner for the third stage: **reconditioning**.

Reconditioning is accomplished by **message repetition**, **operant conditioning**, and **milieu control**. The typical instruction program continues from morning to night, repeating its teachings over and over. As the prisoner shows signs of genuine conversion, he is rewarded with group approval and upgrades in physical circumstances. Operant conditioning, a system of rewards and punishments, retrains by linking hope to conformity, and fear to nonconformity. Milieu control works because humans are social beings and generally follow the crowd.

Grateful for the Cure

After the prisoner has been broken and retrained, he defends the new mental conditioning. He feels genuine **gratitude** for having been brainwashed. The human mind has a natural tendency to defend its status quo—whatever it is. Retraining is finished when all the new attitudes are “frozen” in place. They will now be as resistant to outside change as were their predecessors. The more rigid the subject’s personality was before the break, the more stoutly he will now defend and cling to his new programming.

[Note:1] *Secret, Don't Tell: The Encyclopedia of Hypnotism* (1998) by Carla Emery was published in hardcopy (550 pages) and CD (reader and audio files) versions. The book’s website: <http://www.secretdonttell.com>.

[1] Stevenson’s tale of Dr. Jekyll and Mr. Hyde was another literary representation of this type of research.

[2] Readers now need better technical explanations and plainer speaking on this subject than any novel can provide. They need facts, stated as facts, to combat the flood of lies, claimed to be truth.

[3] In reality, subjects cannot be so totally metamorphosed by hypnotic suggestions from talentless to skilled. It is not possible to make somebody who croaks like a frog into a

KILL SWITCH

concert-quality singer by means of hypnosis. Du Maurier wasn't all wrong, however. Any training is enhanced by adding a trance component. Trainers, from sports psychologists to motivational specialists, now use visualization-relaxation inductions to create trance and then give suggestions to their students.

[4] Numerous cases of death by suggestion are recorded in G. Frazer's classic, *The Golden Bough* (N.Y.: Macmillan, 1931, p. 204, etc.). More deaths caused by suggestion, "belief," are described in W. B. Cannon's article "'Voodoo' Death" (*American Anthropologist*, XLIV (1942), 169-81. Reprinted, abridged, in *Reader in Comparative Religion An Anthropological Approach*, W.A. Lessa and E. Z. Vogt (eds.). N.Y.: Harper & Row, 1965.)

[5] By "All-Highest," did George White mean the CIA Director? Or his MKULTRA project director? Or the National Security Council? Definitely, he did not mean God. Here we have "situational ethics" stated blatantly.

[6] *In The Sleep Room: The Story of the CIA Brainwashing Experiments in Canada* by Anne Collins is the most painstakingly documented history of the Cameron/CIA connection and the personal stories of Cameron's victims.

[7] The son, Dr. Harvey Weinstein, told the story of his father's life and his own search for the truth about what happened to his father in a heartbreaking book originally titled *A Father, A Son, and the CIA*, then *Psychiatry and the CIA: Victims of Mind Control*.

[8] See Section IV, "Susceptibility," for more markers.

[9] A **cover personality** is the "new personality," the conscious self, which is unaware of the conditioning period or of its second, secret hypnotic life.

[10] The CIA had a project "designed to turn people into programmed assassins who would kill on automatic command." (Lee and Schlain, *Acid Dreams*, xx)

[11] See Part V for methods to identify a victim of unethical hypnosis.

[12] Lee and Schlain describe many more CIA records of goals, experiments, and activities in *Acid Dreams*, some even more horrific than these.

[13] The period of time during which a dissociated personality split takes over, in an episode for which the original personality is amnesic, is called a **fugue**. A person may have one short fugue, or a series of them, or one long one, or any combination. Pierre Janet very narrowly defined "fugue" as an escape episode involving the dissociation (splitting off) of a set of ideas whose unity is based on a ruling emotion—such as fear. But modern writers use "fugue" to mean any time lapse or memory blackout.

[14] The words **narcosynthesis**, **narcohypnosis**, and **narcoanalysis** all mean the same thing: Freudian analysis (or hypnotherapy) using drug induction and hypnotic training as the foundation of the therapy process.

[15] Both of those Grinker and Spiegel books were funded by the Josiah Macy, Jr. Foundation (OSS funds conduit) and "privately" distributed.

[16] I haven't read it. Estabrooks said the Watkins techniques "give us a picture of hypnotism that is weird and fascinating."

[17] See Section V for the discussion on M.H. Erickson's equally phony experiments.

[18] A Hungarian psychiatrist, Volgyesi, used a mild electric shock to induce "passivity" (trance) in the 1930s. He then deepened, formalized the trance, and treated the subject with verbal suggestions.

[19] Confusion is also inductive and increases suggestibility.

KILL SWITCH

[20] "ECT Timed with Disturbing Thoughts," *Clinical Psychiatry News*, Dec. 1975, p. 2, is a related article.

[21] In a 1951 article, the authors reported feeding shock patients using "a standard nursing bottle with nipple...she began to suck and was able to swallow the milk slowly but completely. To our further surprise, it was found that the other patients being [ECS] treated at this time also readily fed from nursing bottles...a return to an early, infantile mode of activity..."

[22] The brain's natural **self-governing** capacity requires an operational **feedback circuit**. When memory works normally, pain, shame, or fear can cause reprogramming. But there will be no reprogramming if memory of the problem is blocked by amnesia.

[23] Modern knowledge of the molecular basis of brain chemistry and the various emotional states has caused near abandonment of investigation into mental distress caused by stress or misprogramming. It is so much easier just to give somebody a pill which will repress excess neurotransmitter or to cause a shortage of some kind of neurotransmitter rather than to struggle trying to change problem programming or problem circumstances. Most cases of mental illness are caused by dysfunctions of brain chemistry and drugs are the answer. But, in some cases, the problem is the client's life circumstances, or his programming. In those cases, the best treatment would be non-drug. Change the patient's circumstances or the patient's beliefs (programming).

[24] The isolation of brainwashing is a physical corollary to the mental isolation of a hypnotic subject whose operator has become the subject's sole definer of reality.

Spin Programming

A Newly Uncovered Technique of Systematic Mind Control

Abstract

Information obtained clinically from seven multiple personality patients with recalled histories of ritual abuse has revealed a coercive technique previously unknown to psychotherapists. This technique here labeled "spin programming," appears designed to spread effects such as pain, painful emotions, and other feelings or urges globally throughout a patient's personality system for purposes of either designing and building a young victim's personality system, or harassing older victims and disrupting psychotherapy. Spin programming appears to be based on a combination of physical spinning, cognitive and imagery training, and repetition and practice aimed at creating an internal multi-alter spinning "mechanism" that can transmit the pain or affective components of numerous traumatic memories simultaneously to large groups of targeted alters. This paper presents signs and symptoms commonly seen in patients subjected to spin programs, training methods apparently used to create spin programs, and an analysis of strengths and weaknesses of spin programming.

"Spin Programming"

That old black magic has me in its spell, that old black magic that you weave so well. Those icy fingers up an down my spine, the same old witchcraft when your eyes meet mine, that same old tingle that I feel inside, and then that elevator starts its ride: Down and down I go, 'round and 'round I go, like a leaf that's caught in a tide (...) Darling, down and down I go, 'round and 'round I go, in a spin, loving the spin I'm in, under that old black magic called love.

KILL SWITCH

— Johnny Mercer, (c) 1942, 1969

Discussion of ritual abuse as a cause of multiple personality disorder is a fairly recent phenomenon (Coons & Grier, 1990; Ganaway, 1989; Hassan, 1990; Kluft, 1989; Los Angeles County Commission for Women, 1989; Mayer, 1991; Neswald, Gould, & Graham-Costain, 1991; and Van Benschoten, 1990). Use of the term “ritual abuse” here relies on the definition developed by the Los Angeles County Commission for Women (1989):

Ritual abuse is a brutal form of abuse of children, adolescents, and adults, consisting of physical, sexual, and psychological abuse, and involving the use of rituals. Ritual does not necessarily mean satanic. However, most survivors state that they were ritually abused as part of satanic worship for the purpose of indoctrinating them into satanic beliefs and practices. Ritual abuse rarely consists of a single episode. It usually involves repeated abuse over an extended period of time.

The physical abuse is severe, sometimes including torture and killing. The sexual abuse is usually painful, sadistic, and humiliating, intended as a means of gaining dominance over the victim. The psychological abuse is devastating and involves the use of ritual/indoctrination, which includes mind control techniques and mind altering drugs, and ritual/intimidation which conveys to the victim a profound terror of the cult members and of the evil spirits they believe cult members can command. Both during and after the abuse, most victims are in a state of terror, mind control, and dissociation in which disclosure is exceedingly difficult. (p. 1)

The topic of ritual abuse is controversial (Kluft, 1989), and several authors have either questioned the credibility of reports of ritual abuse or have advised caution in interpreting the usually unsubstantiated accounts (Coons & Grier, 1990; Ganaway, 1989; Noll, 1989; and Van Benschoten, 1990). This paper avoids taking a position on the accuracy of clinically derived accounts of ritual abuse, and instead simply presents information that has come to light consistently and repeatedly during intensive psychotherapy with a number of different patients with recalled histories of ritual abuse.

The information presented here is offered in hopes of making available recently discovered and preliminary findings that may be of value to some members of the psychotherapeutic community and may stimulate additional investigation by some members of the scientific community. The information is admittedly too new, derived from too small a sample, and too unsubstantiated by other investigators to be presented as fact. Nevertheless, the description of spin programming, if valid, shines a valuable light on the techniques employed by ritual abuse perpetrators and provides important insight into how problems frequently seen in multiple personality patients with recalled ritual abuse histories might more successfully be approached.

Programming

Therapists working with victims of ritual abuse often discover (or encounter compelling evidence) that their patients have been subjected to sophisticated mind control techniques, often called “programming,” designed to compel them to do various things, including engaging in self-destructive behaviors such as suicide or self-mutilation; allowing access to perpetrators so that abuse may continue; responding to various cues, such as sounds, hand signals, lights, names or numbers, etc., by carrying out specific behaviors or behavior chains; disrupting psychotherapy in a number of ways, including thought-stealing or scrambling, outbursts of various emotions (anger, depression, terror, jealousy, apa-

KILL SWITCH

thy, etc.) and distancing from the therapist (by fearing the therapist, attempting to protect the therapist from harm by others or by the patient herself or himself, etc.). Neswald, Gould, and Graham-Costain (1991) provide a listing and descriptions of a number of typical ritual abuse programs.

Patients with histories of ritual abuse often reveal that programming techniques have been applied to them for at least two distinct purposes: (a) current or recent programming designed to harass or disrupt psychotherapy, and (b) programming begun early in life (often at birth), as the means by which programmers designed and built their victims' entire personality systems in order to achieve and maintain control over them. One technique has recently come to light that appears to have had utility both for harassment/disruption and for system-building. The technique is based on spinning.

Sources of Information for this Paper

This paper is based on information that came to light during psychotherapy sessions in which the author was the therapist or, in some cases, co-therapist. The patients, of whom there were seven, all carried diagnoses of complex multiple personality disorder and had clearly defined and consistently expressed histories of ritual abuse by satanic or similar cults. They had been in therapy intensively for at least a year before disclosing any information about spin programming. They were all female and ranged in age from their mid-twenties to their mid-forties. Their education levels ranged from two years of college to masters degrees. They were all white, the majority were married, and just over half were employed full-time. They disclosed some of the information about spin programming during conversations in which they and therapist were "brainstorming" about their programming histories, and they revealed the rest either spontaneously (generally making their discoveries between sessions) or in response to direct questioning carried out with due regard to the dangers of leading them by directly or indirectly suggesting desired responses. Before an item of information about spin programming and related phenomena could appear in this paper, it had to be verified by comparable experiences and reports from at least two patients. In most cases, information was verified by all patients, with only minor variations. Informal conversations with other therapists about their experiences with similar patients have consistently verified the information presented here.

Description of Spin Programming

Specific Versus Global Targeting of Programs

Programmers appear to rely on certain criteria in deciding which mind control strategies they will select. One meaningful criterion is specific versus global, that is, whether they intend to target a single alter (or a small, defined group of alters) in a specific way, or the entire system (or a large portion of it) in a global way. Spin-based programming is a globally targeted programming technique. Programmers apparently use it when they intend to disseminate an effect throughout either a large portion of a victim's personality system, or the entire system.

Examples of the types of effects that may be spread in this way are physical pain, confusion, depression, self-destructive or suicidal urges, alienation, apathy, hopelessness, fear of abandonment or rejection, panic, terror, urges to run away, jealousy, doubt, suspicion, rage, violent urges, sexual arousal or urges, lethargy, immobility, sleepiness, sleeplessness, hunger, loss of appetite, and urges to use drugs or alcohol. Programmers may spread these effects throughout a personality system as a method of disrupting the total

KILL SWITCH

functioning of the person, or they may use the possibility of spreading them as a threat to enforce compliance with directives or prohibitions they have issued.

Spin programs are also useful in system-building, both because of their ability to quickly transmit information within or throughout a personality system, and because of their ability to establish power relationships between alters and groups of alters. How these links and power relationships are established will be explained in the section on training methods.

Signs and Symptoms of Spin Programs

Patients who are suffering the immediate effects of a currently activated spin program tend to present with a number of typical features. These features include: global effects, symptoms occurring like a “storm,” pressure, dizziness, a sense of spinning inside, physical movements related to the internal experience of spinning, and spinning-related imagery and vocabulary.

Global Effects. When a patient is affected by a specifically targeted program, she or he typically experiences one or a small number of alters having emotions or urges or manifesting behaviors, while most or all other alters remain unaffected. The patient might say, for example, “Somebody inside wants to cut,” or “Joey is feeling suicidal.” When a spin-based program is active, every alter with whom the therapist talks is likely to be suffering from the same or similar symptoms. At such times, the patient might say, “Everybody in the system is depressed;” “None of us has any hope or any energy or any interest in anything;” or “We are all terrified that you are going to abandon us.”

Stormlike Symptoms. The experience of dealing with a spin-programmed patient is, for patient and therapist alike, somewhat like riding out a storm. The flurries of pain, affect, or impulse tend to grow in intensity, build to a crescendo, maintain that peak for a time, and then gradually diminish before finally subsiding. Nearly every alter in the system is lashed by the “wind and rain” of the storm, often without understanding why these effects are occurring, and doing their best to minimize damages until the storm passes.

Pressure. As will be seen in a subsequent section, spin training relies in part on conditioning the patient to connect, through cognition and imagery, the experience of spinning with internal buildups of centrifugal force. When spin programs are active, the affected alters subjectively experience high levels of force or pressure, as if they were sitting at the outside edge of a rapidly rotating disc. They feel overwhelmed by this pressure, finding it impossible to resist, and they often complain of symptoms that would be caused by mounting internal pressure, such as headaches that feel like they are going to cause the head to explode from the inside, disruption of speech, vision problems, and similar phenomena.

Dizziness. As the internal spinning associated with spin programming increases in speed and force, patients frequently complain of dizziness. At these times, they may be literally feeling the sensations caused by the original spinning, because they are experiencing a planned (i.e., produced by intervention of the abusers) revivification or flashback of that event.

Sense of Spinning Internally. Along with the dizziness, patients experiencing active spin programs often notice a sense of spinning internally, or comment that “everything seems to be spinning.” If they do not mention this feeling spontaneously, they will often admit it when questioned, for example, by answering in the affirmative when asked, “Do you feel as

KILL SWITCH

if someone inside is spinning a mile a minute?"

Physical Movements. When the internal spinning is at its most intense, patients often move in ways that a person might move while being physically spun. These movements tend to be rhythmic and repetitive, they may involve any part of the body, and they are subtle and may escape the therapist's attention unless the therapist is looking for them. For example, a patient may stare blankly or appear to be wincing from pain or closing her eyes tightly, then move her head or upper body very slightly and rhythmically from side to side, forward and back, or in a circular motion. Feet or hands and arms are also often involved in these movements. The movements tend to be slower, smoother, more fluid, more subtle, and more regular and rhythmic than typical "nervous" movements.

Spinning-Related Imagery and Vocabulary. When describing their subjective sensations during an active spin program, patients often utilize imagery or words that are related to the experience of spinning, possibly because these images and words are literal descriptions of their experiences, and possibly because they were taught these images during the original spin training. Patients may use this kind of imagery spontaneously during sessions or in writings or drawings produced outside of sessions, or they may only describe them in response to questioning. Typical words used include: vortex, whirlpool, whirlwind, tornado, cyclone, abyss, falling, drowning, sinking, being pulled or sucked down, being blown or shot or exploded out, tumbling, hurling, whirling, swirling, and twirling. Typical visual images include drawings depicting the ideas listed above and various doodles that will be described later in the section on training. Some alters have programmer-assigned names related to spinning (e.g., Spinner,) which is a name that was independently assigned to alters in the personality systems of several different patients.

Training Methods

Pain Contests, Pain as Power, and Multiples within Multiples. A patient disclosed during a psychotherapy session some time ago that the most powerful alters in her system were those who had endured the most pain. Subsequent exploration of this notion, combined with abreactions of memories of "pain contests" eventually led to the discovery of spin programming.

Many patients with cult abuse histories have had to endure contests in which they and another person received steadily mounting pain until one of them (the loser) could not stand it anymore. Generally, only one alter was allowed to remain out during the contest, or else worse abuse would follow. The requirement that only one alter remain out had some profound ramifications, leading to the conjecture that this condition (only one alter staying out), not the outcome of the contest, was the primary purpose of the competitions.

In order to stay out continuously instead of leaving the body to a rapidly switching succession of alters (the more typical pattern of dissociation during trauma), the single alter had to create a group of internal alters to whom she or he could send the pain. The typical result of this type of experience appears to be the creation of an internal analogue of multiple personality disorder, or a "multiple within a multiple."

In other words, just as traumatic experiences in general can lead to the creation of a number of alters in one "outside" body to produce multiple personality disorder, this specific type of experience can create a similar phenomenon one level in, consisting of a number of alters "within" the alter undergoing the contest. However, since the alter has no physical body, the newly created alters do not necessarily exist "inside" that alter, but more

KILL SWITCH

likely coexist with or near the original alter in internal space—the “inside world”).

One source of internal power arising from this arrangement stems from the ability of the original alter to send pain to her or his next level of alters inside the multiple within a multiple subsystem, allowing her or him to intimidate them by threatening to activate a flashback of the original training, thus forcing them to re-experience the pain. The multiple within a multiple subsystem taken as a unit is more powerful than other, simple alters, because, as a system, it possesses or is capable of possessing greater and more varied capabilities than a lone alter might be able to produce.

Graphic Depiction. Another patient, after looking at a drawing of a tree structure that was my rough attempt to depict the connection between pain transmission and power (Figure 1a), suggested that the drawing ought to be circular instead of tree shaped (Figure 1b). The original alter, according to this new view, was located at the center of a circle of alters, and the ring (or rings) of alters surrounding this alter comprised the “multiple within a multiple” system. Secondary alters could dissociate further by creating alters of their own, resulting in branches of tertiary (and beyond) alters. She indicated further that her entire personality system, not just individual multiple within multiple systems, was arranged in this kind of circular array consisting of concentric rings, with the most powerful alters located at the center.

Figure 1. Tree and Circular Diagrams Depicting Pain Distribution Among Alters During Pain Contests

This patient then became visibly frightened, stating that some internal alters felt that I may not be a safe person because I knew too much. Subsequent discussions with other patients about this topic and other topics related to spin programming have elicited similar reactions from them; it appears that information about spin programming is highly secret and not for “outsiders” to know.

However, in spite of her fears, this patient disclosed more information at the next session, revealing that her system contained a number of alters who have been trained to create internal multiple personality systems, and that alters of these systems often received additional training that made them into a coordinated, self-monitoring and self-correcting mechanism designed to employ internal spinning to send pain (and other experiences) to large groups of alters outside their system. Discussions with all of the patients (the two mentioned above, plus the five others) provided the rest of the details comprising this paper.

Overall Training Strategy. According to patients’ disclosures, spin training begins at an early age, perhaps age three or four, or even younger. Training appears to utilize a combination of three basic elements: (a) the creation of internal multiple personality systems (by pain contests and similar experiences) whose alters are separated and given specialized training to make the internal systems into self-regulating mechanisms; (b) actual spinning both to teach senders the sensations of spinning so that they can re-create it internally and to force them to spin internally in order to avoid the extremely painful sensations of “real” external spinning; and (c) cognitive and imagery training to build and reinforce connections between internal re-creations of the experience of spinning and the sending out of pain as a means of escaping it. Along with this, connections are also established and reinforced between velocity, centrifugal force, and the intensity of the pain and other feelings that are spun.

In addition, some programming is necessary to convince the spinning alters that

KILL SWITCH

they are not connected to the other alters in the system, so that they do not feel guilty about hurting someone about whom they care. Material must be available to “feed” into the spin mechanism, and this material consists of large numbers of dissociated memories that contain pain and other feelings capable of acting as punishments or sources of disruption. Finally, there may be additional programming to create controls over such things as which material is to be spun, when or under what conditions it is to be spun, to which alters or groups it is to be targeted, which groups of alters will be exempt from the spin, etc.

Actual Spinning. All patients reported having had many experiences of being physically spun by ritual abusers throughout their lives. While being spun, they were invariably drugged, usually with sedative or hypnotic drugs as well as anti-nausea agents, often shown or forced to look at white or colored lights or to listen to music or rhythms, often given verbal instructions, and sometimes given other kinds of pain (in addition to the extreme pain of spinning). The spinning was of various types, including horizontal spinning on a table, similar to a record player; horizontal spinning about an axis, similar to being turned on a spit; vertical, “wheel-of-fortune” type spinning; and vertical spinning about an axis, on a pole, hanging upside down by the feet, or inside of a cylinder.

Patients who have experienced a great deal of spinning have a number of sensitivities that they usually do not understand until they are consciously aware of having been spun. For example, many patients become very disturbed by flashing lights, because they are similar to the lights they had to watch while being spun. For similar reasons, they are also often disturbed by watching rapidly changing colors or circular, swirling motions of any kind, as well as by certain types of music.

Programmers apparently take advantage of these sensitivities by simulating spinning when it would be impractical (due to unavailability of equipment, etc.) to actually spin a victim, or when they want to intimidate a reluctant alter by threatening her or him with spinning as a punishment. Rapidly changing lights moving across the victim’s visual field, for example, can very effectively bring back the full experience of a past actual spin. Exposure to other stimuli that accompanied spinning, such as spoken words or music, can also trigger experiences of spinning.

Abusers trigger the re-experiencing of traumatic events by taking advantage of their victims’ means of coping with trauma. When a victim experiences a painfully traumatic or terrifying event, including administration of drugs to enhance state-dependent learning, the victim dissociates the experience, breaking it into component parts (as in the BASK Model: Braun, 1988a, 1988b). Abusers apparently record the contents of these dissociated experiences and know which aspects of them to remind victims of in order to bring about a vivid replay of a component or portion of them. By simply introducing such a cue to the victim, the abusers can initiate the experience of spinning.

Dissociated components of any traumatic memory appear capable of being moved from one alter to another, making it possible to “collect” the pain or affective component of dozens of experiences that contain similar elements (e.g., physical pain, terror, abandonment, grief, etc.), feed these into the spinner, and thereby spread massive amounts of these feelings throughout the personality system or to targeted groups of alters.

Visual Aids, Demonstrations, and Practice. All patients reported having observed as children (or when spin training was done, if later than childhood) a wide range of demonstrations apparently intended to teach them to think about and perform spinning in ways

KILL SWITCH

that are advantageous to the programmers. For example, several patients report having watched mechanical devices, such as centrifuges or devices similar to those sometimes seen at fairs that make pictures by spreading paint with centrifugal force; people, such as “whirling dervish” dancers who are made (presumably by drugs and special effects) to seem as if they are able to spin so fast that they become a blur; and object lessons, such as people who are tortured or killed for failing to spin properly.

Patients also report having spent a great deal of time as children (again, only those programmed as children) practicing spinning at a conscious level. For example, they may have spun around furiously at play time, but the spinning was done in grim earnestness, not for fun. They may also have been involved in organized activities that involved spinning, such as ballet or figure skating lessons.

Drawings and Doodles. All patients reported having filled or decorated many pages over periods of years from early childhood (again, only those whose training commenced in childhood) through adulthood with doodles that are strikingly similar across individuals. They describe themselves as having produced the doodles in an almost obsessive manner, drawing them over and over for no apparent reason. Certain themes connect these doodles. Many of them obviously depict spinning, such as the drawings of spinning tornadoes (Figure 2a). Others only suggest spinning, such as spirals that may be round (Figure 2b), rectangular (Figure 2c), or triangular (Figure 2d), but they also depict movement or transmission outward from the center. Finally, other doodles depict movement or transmission from one linked unit to another, without spinning, as in the interconnected boxes or interconnected loops (Figure 2e and f).

Doodles Frequently Drawn by Patients with Histories of Spin Programming.

The doodling appears to be intended to reinforce by repetition and visualization the lessons learned through cognitive and imagery training. Doodles may be produced by alters trained as spinners, or they may be produced by others to be seen by the spinners, as reminders to the spinner to maintain their skills and alertness.

Cognitive and Imagery Training. Programmers apparently combine pain transmission training, actual spinning, visual demonstrations, and doodles with detailed verbal instructions that contain a great deal of vivid visual imagery. This training takes place over a period of many years, with countless repetitions and variations, so that the overall effect is very potent. The thrust of all this training appears to be to convey several key ideas to the spinners and other alters, so that they accept these ideas without question as their actual reality.

First, the spinners must learn to spin inside, just as they did while out in the body during actual spinning. Often, they learn to become a spinning object, such as a tornado or a spinning top. That is, their internal representation of self (or internal body), as viewed by both themselves and other alters, is a spinning object (at least while spinning or during rapidly accelerated spinning). Then, they must link the experience of internal spinning with the sending out of pain, emotions, and other feelings to other alters, so that two experiences are inseparable and indistinguishable. Finally, they must link the velocity of their spins with centrifugal force, so that the more rapidly they spin, the stronger and more irresistible is the force with which they send out the pain or other feelings.

An additional set of ideas is important to impart to the spinners for spin programs to be effective. The first of these has to do with spinners feeling good (or not feeling bad)

KILL SWITCH

about spinning. In order to feel good about spinning, spinners must think themselves separate from other alters, and view the other alters as deserving the painful feelings that they receive as the result of the spinning. It is clear from patients' reports that programmers teach and reinforce these ideas. It is also useful for the spinners to derive feelings of competence and pride about their spinning. Therefore programmers apparently reward proper spinning with praise and other reinforcements. Next, spinners need to be convinced that they have only two choices once a spin program is activated: Either they must spin, or they will experience all the pain themselves; but, if they do spin, they will experience no pain at all. Programmers apparently teach these lessons too. Finally, it is advantageous to protect spinners from contact with other alters or outsiders, who might impart information to them that could potentially allow them to think for themselves. Therefore, programmers apparently often set up a ring of guardians around the spinners or impose other security measures.

Transmission Routes. When patients first began to describe pain contests, it was thought that the purpose of these ordeals was to establish transmission routes for the spinning of pain. Soon it became clear that, instead, they were designed to create multiple within multiple systems which would be trained to become spinning mechanisms. This conclusion left open the question of how transmission routes are established. Additional inquiry of patients about this question has not provided conclusive answers, but the one hypothesis that "feels right" to most of them is that pain is sent along the lines of lineage, that is, the connections between alters who split off of earlier alters, who split off of yet earlier alters, etc., going all the way back to the core or near-core personalities. If this is true, then either spinners learn how to locate and to send pain to near-core alters, or they themselves are near-core alters who were selected for spin training because of their position in the internal genealogy. The second alternative appears to be the more likely one.

Self-Regulating Spin Systems. One would think that it would be very difficult for a programmer to control a multiple within a multiple system. More than the desired number of alters may be created during the initial abuse, leaving the programmer with a problem of disposition. Alters may be created who are never discovered by the programmer, and are in positions potentially to resist or disrupt the programmer's plans. The number of alters and complexity of their interrelationships would make it difficult for a programmer to keep track of the behavior of both individual alters and interactions among them. Programmers apparently respond to all of these problems by imposing rigid structure and strict discipline. They control alters' personality traits and other attributes, where and with whom they live in the internal world, who may communicate with whom, who watches whom, and who punishes whom.

The outcome of programmers' control efforts appears to be a complex, self-regulating systems of alters, each of whom is assigned specific roles and duties, which is governed by a carefully designed scheme of checks and balances. Certain functions are essential for spinning to take place, and there seems to be some uniformity across patients in terms of which functions are carried out by which alters, and how the alters are allowed or forced to interact.

The first step in creating a spin system appears to be to split up the group of alters comprising the system, keeping them only dimly aware, if aware at all, of the existence of the others. They appear to be placed in specific locations in the internal world, determined by the roles they occupy. Those who occupy the same or corresponding role are often simi-

KILL SWITCH

lar to one another in other ways, such as all being children of a given age, all being of the same gender, or all being animal alters. They may also have similar skills or other attributes such as having been taught a performing art, having been trained in psychic abilities, or belonging to a specific cult figure who “loves” them. As additional spin systems are created, alters from other spin systems who occupy the same roles are placed in the same locations. These role-based groups may then be taught to be suspicious of or hate the other role-based groups, thereby keeping them from “comparing notes,” cooperating together, or organizing any kind of resistance.

The key functions that need to be accomplished for spinning to work effectively are as follows: Of course, there should be an alter who spins. There should also be an alter who locates, obtains, and moves the dissociated memory components so that they can be spun by the spinner. There should be a controller or coordinator of the overall process. There should be informers who report to programmers about whether other alters are performing their duties, including other informers. There should be punishers who discipline misbehaving alters, including other punishers, and one who can punish even the spinner (who is otherwise impervious to pain). There should be a “key” or access alter who makes it possible for programmers to enter the system, obtain information, and make adjustments. And all these functions should be designed to interact in such a way that the system can regulate itself and operate independently.

The roles and lines of communication and influence within such a system can be depicted graphically in some cases, with lines representing the communication pathways and points of intersection representing the alters who occupy the essential roles. The result is a three dimensional geometric figure resembling a crystal.

Utility of Spin Programming

Spin programming has some obvious uses to programmers for designing and building personality systems. The power of the spinners or alters who control them, and the threat of pain that they convey, establish them internally as authorities who must be obeyed. The networks (apparently of descent) along which spinners send pain and other experiences represent natural divisions within the overall system that programmers may program separately and use for specific purposes, such as spying/informing, enforcing internal discipline, sexual behaviors, ceremonial behaviors, etc. Spin programming can contribute both to unifying a system and to separating groups from one another. There are doubtless many other ways in which spin programming can facilitate system building.

Harassment and disruption of therapy are easy to achieve with spin programming. For example, only one brief programming session is capable of setting up a spinner to react each time she or he notices the therapist engaging in a predictable behavior by setting in motion a furious spin of the emotions contained in dozens of dissociated traumatic experiences of childhood rejection and abandonment. The patient is then likely to perceive the therapist as behaving in an abandoning and rejecting manner, and as a result the therapy may be dominated by endless sidetracking from other issues in order to deal with the more subjectively pressing issue (to the patient) of the fear and hurt that the patient feels the therapist is causing. And the spinning may continue for days, weeks, or months. Numerous variations of this kind of approach are possible, providing many opportunities for keeping therapy ineffective for years.

KILL SWITCH

Importance of Spin Programming

Spin programming must be of immense importance, judging from the sheer amount of time and energy that programmers appear to have devoted to creating and maintaining these programs throughout their victims' lives. Another indication of the central importance of this kind of programming is the wariness shown by many patients when the subject is initially broached. It is obviously "classified material." These factors, plus the obvious power of spin programming as both a system-building and harassment/disruption technique, indicate that this kind of programming is a fundamental mind control method used on victims of ritual abuse. Therefore, it must be addressed in psychotherapy with victims of ritualistic abuse. In fact, spin programming is apparently so fundamental a technique that our patients may not be unable to heal unless it is addressed in therapy.

Strengths of Spin Programming

Spin-based programs present a number of strengths from the point of view of programmers. They have been difficult to detect, because therapists have been unaware of globally targeted spin programs as a separate type of programming strategy. The reactions created by spin programs, if not identified as such, are likely to be mislabeled as borderline traits or "transference issues," providing little or no benefit to the patient. Containment strategies (utilizing hypnosis or visualization) that may work well at stopping or preventing flashbacks of specifically targeted programs are often useless with spin programs, because of both the sheer volume of memories that are activated by a spin program and the force of the spin. Working with the affected alters is difficult because of the lengthy, intensive attitude training against communicating with outsiders that they have received; due to the fact that they are guarded to prevent contact; because they fear that they will experience pain if they do not spin it out, combined with the immediacy of pain relief if they do; and due to the power, or perceived power, of the spin.

In general, when therapists attempt to deal with a spin program, they are likely to feel as if they are grappling with a complicated, powerful machine. In fact, that is essentially what they are doing. Spin programs "feel" quite different from specifically targeted programs. Many more alters are involved in spin programs, they are much more highly trained and more automatic and smoothly coordinated in their functioning, and the operations of the programs are much better safeguarded against attempts to tamper with or undermine them. As such, they present a formidable challenge to therapists and patients.

Weaknesses of Spin Programming

In spite of the power and complexity of spin programs, they are nevertheless amenable to therapeutic intervention. With patience, commitment, and compassion, an astute therapist working closely with a creative, motivated patient can gradually make a dent in this kind of programming and eventually overcome it by exploiting its inherent weaknesses.

The first weakness is the fact that all programmed alters, including spinners, guards, controllers, and all those who are part of the spin mechanism, are personalities who were "cut from the same cloth" as the rest of the system and are therefore capable of both reason and emotion. Alters comprising the spin mechanism can actively observe incoming information and react to it by commencing the spin, making decisions about when to block outside contact or punish those who fail to cooperate with the program; therefore, they can reason. Spinners often take pride in being good at spinning, and they are proficient at spinning painful emotions in order to avoid them; therefore, they are capable of feeling emo-

KILL SWITCH

tion. If a therapist or an internal helper can establish communication with these alters, the way is open for them to correct their present, limited cognitive grasp of their situations and options by learning new facts, and to want to change what they do by becoming aware of their feelings about it. They are also capable of positive emotions, and they are likely to be deprived of and hungry for them. Therefore, they are likely, once contacted, to respond favorably to care and concern.

The second weakness is the fact that much of the training that makes up spin programming is conditioned as opposed to unconditioned, that is, based on paired associate or cognitive learning. Therefore, cognitive changes such as consciousness of how the conditioning was done can facilitate breaking the connections rapidly. The connections and beliefs that can be broken in this way include the link between external spinning and internal spinning; the link between internal spinning and the sending out of pain and other feelings; the link between velocity of internal spinning, centrifugal force, and the irresistibility of the pain and other feelings being spun out; the illusion that the spinners are separate from the rest of the system; the pride of being good at spinning; and the belief that they have only a limited number of options. The third weakness is the fact that spin programming is built on an accumulation of individual dissociated experiences that can be abreacted, one after the other, until the foundation of the spin mechanism has been completely undermined. Three groups of dissociated memories may be addressed: the original training experiences of the spinners and others involved in spinning; the traumatic experiences from which pain or affective components are collected and fed into the spin mechanism; and the programs instructing the spinners what to spin and under what conditions to begin spinning.

The fourth, and greatest, weakness of spin programming is also its greatest strength: the complexity of the system of alters and the checks and balances that control them. An astute therapist can eventually gain access to individuals who occupy the different roles, either directly or indirectly, and then educate them about their betrayal by their programmers, about the compassion they could be feeling toward the suffering of other alters in their system (instead of the hate or mistrust they have been taught to feel), about their ultimate unity with the others (instead of the separation that has been forced on them), and about how to join forces to resist.

Summary

This paper has described spin programming, a type of abuse that until recently was unknown to psychotherapists, but has obviously been in use by ritual abusers for many years, at least four decades, and probably much longer. It is possible that most or perhaps all patients with histories of ritual abuse have been subjected to spin programming. Patients who were born into cults that practice ritual abuse (as opposed to having been recruited later in life) are probably more likely to have experienced spin programming, and their spin programming is likely to be both more intensive and more sophisticated.

Spin programming presents some formidable obstacles for psychotherapy. It is apparent that, in the past, lack of awareness and understanding of spin programming by the therapeutic community has contributed to many problems in therapy, and that complete healing has probably been impossible without facing and dealing effectively with this type of mind control technique.

It is hoped that this paper will provide a valuable service by making information

KILL SWITCH

available to therapists that may contribute to significant breakthroughs for their patients and ultimately allow for their complete healing, while also providing testable hypotheses to researchers interested in ritual abuse.

References

Braun, B.G. (1988a). "The BASK (Behavior, Affect, Sensation, Knowledge) Model of Dissociation." *Dissociation*, 1, 4-23.

Braun, B.G. (1988b). "The BASK Model of Dissociation: Clinical Applications." *Dissociation*, 1, 16-23.

Coons, P.M., & Grier, F. (1990). "Factitious Disorder (Munchausen Type) Involving Allegations of Ritual Satanic Abuse: A Case Report." *Dissociation*, 3, 177-178.

Ganaway, G.K. (1989). "Historical Truth Versus Narrative Truth: Clarifying the Role of Exogenous Trauma in the Etiology of Multiple Personality Disorder and its Variants." *Dissociation*, 2, 205-220.

Hassan, S. (1990). *Combating Cult Mind Control*. Rochester, VT: Park Street Press.

Hill, S., & Goodwin, J. (1989). "Satanism: Similarities Between Patient Accounts and Pre-Inquisition Historical Sources." *Dissociation*, 2, 39-44.

Kluft, R.P. (1989). Editorial: "Reflections on Allegations of Ritual Abuse." *Dissociation*, 2, 191-193.

Los Angeles County Commission for Women. (1989, September). Report of the Ritual Abuse Task Force. *Ritual Abuse: Definitions, Glossary, The Use of Mind Control*. Los Angeles, CA: Author.

Mayer, R.S. (1991). *Satan's Children: Case Studies in Multiple Personality*. NY: G.P. Putnam's & Sons.

Neswald, D.W., Gould, C., & Graham-Costain, V. (1991, September/October). "Common 'Programs' Observed in Survivors of Satanic Ritual Abuse." *California Therapist*, pp. 47-50.

Noll, R. (1989). "Satanism, UFO Abductions, Historians, and Clinicians: Those Who Do Not Remember the Past..." (Letter to the Editor). *Dissociation*, 2, 251-253.

Van Bensehoten, S.C. (1990). "Multiple Personality Disorder and Satanic Ritual Abuse: The Issue of Credibility." *Dissociation*, 3, 22-30.

A CONSOLIDATION OF SRA AND FALSE MEMORY DATA

The purpose of this paper is to consolidate and present some of the major data for those skeptical of the existence of Satanic Ritual Abuse (SRA) and to suggest more mutual affirmation in pursuit of the truth in this area. This paper, nonetheless, attempts to critically examine both sides of the debate, namely: critical thinking and belief, "no official" evidence, the context of evidence, actual corroborative evidence (including a map of the McMartin Preschool tunnels), false memory, the sharp rise in MPD/DID diagnoses, and alternate explanations for the profound similarities in child and adult accounts. In light of the semantic difficulties inherent in "memories" it is important to avoid overgeneralizing on either side, and yet to fully accept that for which both memory and corroboration exists.

1. NATURE OF BELIEF

No doubt, new experiences can broaden our perspectives. It is therefore not sur-

KILL SWITCH

prising that in a 1991 informal survey, 93% of APA therapists who have personal experience with adult SRA survivors stated they believe the memories of SRA are accurate. Contrary to accusations, many have been skeptical at first (Young, et al, 1990; Friesen, 1990; Calof, 1994), but: 1) The quality of therapists' experiences with their clients was sufficient to broaden their criteria for the existence of this crime; 2) There are extensive similarities in the accounts from both young children and adults throughout the country, many with minimal therapist suggestion and minimal cultural exposure; and 3) There is corroboration in some cases, yet for therapists to file reports with law enforcement would endanger the vital trust-based relationship and would not be in the client's best interest for safety or privacy.

It is for these and other reasons described herein that I suggest considering a broader scope of acceptable "evidence" to also include qualitative and statistically quantitative aspects of the available clinical information. These definitive contexts (thoroughly available to those within the clinical realm or personally associated with survivors) are foundational to a proper understanding of such reports.

CONTENTS

1. NATURE OF BELIEF

2. EVIDENCE EXAMINED

3. LOGIC TO DENY SRA EXISTS

4. FALSE MEMORY ANALYSIS

5. HISTORIC CONSISTENCY OF SRA

6. ALTERNATE EXPLANATIONS CONSIDERED

Critical thought demands that our conclusions not be limited to the believable or the intuitive, but to the data, itself. Neither does critical thinking require that ambiguity be maintained in the face of indicative data, but rather a commitment to the indicated reality.

For this reason, the position of this paper is boldly apparent in a critical examination of all the data, including the qualitative and statistically quantitative data along with corroboration and "false memory" considerations.

At the same time, we must acknowledge that survivor accounts may comprise a continuum from entirely false to entirely true. There may be some who have falsely concluded an SRA survivorship with, or perhaps without significant memories, and some overzealous non-victims may promote a satanic panic which skeptics use to discredit all survivorship (Wright, 1993). Yet others with *little or no exposure* to the obscure consistencies they share with many others, recall incredibly similar details and with similar symptoms (For instance, compare the surveys of Young, et al, 1990 with Hudson, 1990; see table included on pages 11-13).

It is vital to understand that either side can present a convincing argument, with some documentation in support of that side. For instance in the Spring 1994 issue of the *Journal of Psychohistory*, David Lotto's (1994) article apart from the article that follows by Roland Summit (1994), would thoroughly convince an uninvolved party that SRA is a rumor-based social phenomenon. The mass media is notorious for airing such single-sided perspectives, omitting an accurate portrayal of the victims' actual life context[1] (demonstrating the importance of professional journals).

Confirmation Bias.

Central to the nature of belief is the *confirmation bias*, a natural emphasis on the

KILL SWITCH

information which confirms one's own position along with a de-emphasis on that which doesn't. We are naturally biased as a psychological defense mechanism for minimizing *cognitive dissonance*—an incompatibility between one's world view and certain concepts (Tavris & Wade, 1993), such as SRA. Because of our drive to reduce dissonance, we struggle with the resulting affinity for all-or-nothing thinking, such that we either tend to dismiss all SRA or we might be overly suspicious on the other hand. Without personal acquaintance with alleged victims or alternately the accused, one will likely remain consistent with his or her existing world view. Acknowledging this bias will help us assure the necessary case-by-case mentality on this subject.

So, we maintain our beliefs on a platform of certain information, selectively assembled through our own confirmation bias. We thereby require time to assimilate new especially challenging information.

Denial.

Another component of the nature of belief is *denial*, which can be conscious or unconscious. We can best approach denial by understanding the implication-sensitive nature of denial. As Sandra Bloom (1994) has noted in her article, the willingness to believe in SRA is a *process* of incremental acceptance of human cruelty and sadism, more than a sudden conversion to a belief in the unbelievable. She describes how denial (including her own) is a “potent and universal defense, protecting us from being overwhelmed by an unacceptable internal or external reality” and that everyone—from survivors to supporters—lapses into denial regularly, based not on evidence, but on the personal implications.

Thus, the nature of belief is anti-objective, since first, no one can believe more than the sum of their information, which is filtered selectively via one's confirmation bias and then maintained through denial. Beliefs can and do gradually change, but are subject to these forces.

A recent poll showed that 9% of Americans, a sizable minority, aren't even sure the Holocaust ever happened and that 2% feel *certain* it did not occur (Kagay, 1994). In this light, we can accept that a much larger percentage of people won't believe SRA occurs, *regardless* of evidence.

2. EVIDENCE EXAMINED

The following professionals have made powerful statements regarding the lack of official evidence for the reality of SRA:

A. NO OFFICIAL EVIDENCE

George K. Ganaway

“...in nearly 12 years of extensive investigations by law enforcement agencies at local, state, and federal levels, virtually no independent corroborative evidence has surfaced to support claims that such a multigenerational conspiratorial ‘megacult’ exists...” (Ganaway, 1992, p. 202)

David J. Lotto

“We have seen that in the cases in Manchester, the Orkneys, the Country Walk and McMartin preschools . . . that there are some very real victims, innocent of any wrongdoing, who have suffered traumatic consequences from being caught up in a net of hysterical accusations. . . Unfortunately, the therapists who are too eager to believe the outlandish tales told by their patients bear some degree of responsibility . . . One is stretching the meaning of neutral-

KILL SWITCH

ity to maintain [an] agnostic stance in the face of mounting evidence that there is no corroboration for the reality of these events.” (Lotto, 1994, pp. 391-392)

Bob & Gretchen Passantino

“Let’s suppose there are 100,000 adult survivors [of SRA] who represent only a small subgroup of the conspiracy. They are the ones who were not killed; eventually escaped the cult’s control; got into therapy; ‘remembered’ their abuse; and were then willing to tell others about it. . . . If we conservatively peg the average number of abusive events per survivor at fifty, that would give us 5,000,000 criminal events over the last fifty years in America alone. And not a shred of corroborative evidence?” (Parrott and Perrin, 1993).

Martha L. Rogers

“What I have experienced as most disturbing in this pressure to accept SRA premises and conspiracies is the defensive explaining away as to why hard evidence should not be expected...there is absolutely no criminal evidence to be found, not a body, not a hair, not a drop of blood, not a trace of bodily fluid—nothing. They never leave a trail. The conspiracy is so tight that no one ever tells. They never make mistakes. The police and FBI are simply stupid or else part of the cover-up...” (Rogers, 1992, p. 180).

When information like this is one’s primary source, it’s clear that one won’t believe SRA exists. Either way, these statements demand adequate responses. By referring to a composite of corroborative and contextual information on the existence of SRA, I hope not only to address these concerns but to counter these statements with equally demanding questions and observations from the other perspective. For the sake of objectivity, I hope professionals in the future will temper their statements both with the corroboration and the contextual considerations in this paper.

Ganaway necessitates some form of a “megacult” to accept the widespread similar reports of SRA. While many believers do suggest that cult networks exist, they probably do not intend this as Ganaway portrays. To what degree a centrally organized “megacult” exists in the bizarre ways we might envision is not as important as would be the existence of numerous such groups who abuse in similar religious rituals. Obviously, one network does exist to maintain the estimated \$3 billion dollar per year child porn market in the U.S. alone (Raschke, 1990). It is therefore of considerable importance to examine the correlation between the consistent claims of photography and consistent claims of ritual abuse and the significant overlap in accounts. The fact that photography is one of the most common elements cited in SRA accounts, aside from corroboration is sufficient cause to delay a broad dismissal of cult networking.

A larger system of cults also seems likely from evidence described in the survey by Young, et al (1990). Patient photographs of alleged cult members were shown to other patients from a similar geographic region. Four patients independently identified, by name and cult roles, the individuals in the photographs. Neither group of patients were in contact with the other during their treatment when these independent identifications were made. [2] Although not the central theme of his paper, Summit (1994) describes similar independent corroboration from children for a larger cult network in the Los Angeles area (described later).

Passantinos. However, as the Passantino’s note, millions of bodies of cult murder victims have not been located and identified as such over the past half-century. **Martha Rogers** suggests that by “a defensive explaining away as to why hard evidence should not

KILL SWITCH

be expected,” it is inappropriate to *consider* any explanations for this anomaly. On the contrary, we must consider these claims in their time, space, and social contexts to even understand how, or if, these statements on “no official evidence” have significance.

B. EVIDENCE IN CONTEXT

Relative Context

Let’s consider these numbers in the larger picture of time and space. For estimating purposes, since most reports involve more than one victim per ritual, we could probably reduce the Passantino’s estimate to 2,000,000 criminal scenarios over the past 50 years, or about 40,000 per year. For comparison sake, from the *Source Book for Criminal Justice Statistics for 1991*, there were around 3,000,000 violent crimes of all types in the U.S. in the year 1991 alone, *excluding all violence against children* and excluding all robberies. Thus, 40,000 ritual child abuse crimes per year is only about 1.2 percent of only the violent crimes committed against adults and would be a lesser percentage of criminal violence toward all ages.

It’s important to keep these numbers in perspective. Since 100,000 victims is still less than 1 in 25,000 Americans, we can enjoy each others’ company, with little worry that any one of our acquaintances could be a satanic cultist. There is no need for a “satanic panic” to still accept that SRA exists on a limited but very real scale.

To further place these numbers in context, if the estimated 100,000 survivors seems an outrageous number, consider the fact that 700,000 copies of the *Satanic Bible* have been sold (Rittenhouse, 1992). Although the *Satanic Bible* does not promote ritual abuse, it wouldn’t take a very big subset of the people who purchase the book to legitimize the large estimate of SRA survivors.

Although aggressive efforts have been made to walk in on rituals as well as turn up other undeniable evidence, we must consider how evidence can ever be discovered for crimes authorities don’t even know happened. There are few possible indicators that this type of crime has occurred. By definition, there would be no calls made to police, no burglar alarms set off, and no balance sheet discrepancies. No search for evidence will be initiated for crimes authorities are not aware of, and evidence will not be found if it is carefully hidden, at the same time that there is no awareness of its existence. To expect to find such evidence might be like going home from work early on an arbitrary day, *expecting* to catch someone breaking into your house; or perhaps to discover faulty wiring *just as* it starts a fire, simply because your wiring is old. It is very difficult to track this type of crime, because it is impossible (and unethical) to monitor everyone at all times.

Numerical Context: The product of several small fractions is a much smaller fraction.

Further, we must acknowledge the multiple hindering factors influencing the discovery and identification of evidence. The effective multiplication of these three major evidence-reducing factors produces minimal evidence.

(%Overcoming Motivated Secrecy)

x (%Corroboration) x (%Official Recognition)

= Minimal Evidence.

% Overcoming Motivated Secrecy. Child SRA victims would not initiate contact with the law because they virtually always report that their lives or the lives of loved ones were threatened, *confirmed* to them by the murders and tortures they recount. It is in this

KILL SWITCH

context that Hudson (1991) describes how the incremental and progressive disclosure of a ritually abused child may take a year or more, beginning with the less severe molestation and progressing gradually to increasing degrees of horror. *Before and after* every major disclosure, the child experiences a severe anxiety period lasting from one to several days.

In their college (General) Psychology textbook, Carol Wade and Carole Tavis (1993), describe the *entrapment process* (social psychology chapter) by which all cult-type groups successfully achieve mind control and motivate secrecy in their members. This same entrapment process is often described by child and adult SRA survivors.[3] Adults and children alike share a strong reluctance to disclose the more horrific details, due to both a fear of threatened harm from the cult and the fear of disbelief and rejection. An important observation is that patients happen to mention both the threats and deceptions consistently as a peripheral to the main content of their memories.

% **Corroboration.** Of these children who overcome confirmed threats to maintain secrecy, we must consider what percentage could produce irrefutable corroboration, without slipping in an element of the impossible, included by abusers to discredit their story, should the victim break silence.

Not only is deception commonly reported, but it would increase uncertainty, augmenting the fear of rejection and subsequent punishment by the offenders in any child considering disclosure, thereby further motivating secrecy. Further, it would be sloppy and thereby out of character for successfully secretive cults to bury actual bodies in the presence of children (who have reported witnessing burials, where bodies were later not found). Rather, if those who periodically initiate sacrificial murders do exist, they would *necessarily* incorporate fail-safes such as deception to discredit any potential reports, and would dispose of the bodies in a traditionally proven manner.

I know it may resemble circular logic to attribute all impossibilities to purposeful deception, such as a child's report of sexual abuse by a lion as an adult in a lion costume, but if we are going to openly examine this issue, we must at least remain consistent with victim's descriptions of perpetrators, of which secrecy motivated by confirmed threat *and deception* are nearly universal. McMartin whistle blower, parent Judy Johnson[4] reported to Summit that her son, contrary to accusations, *didn't* like to talk about the abuse, and mentioned such things as being sodomized by a lion. In 1984, such reports were unheard of and/or ignored, and it wasn't until older less credulous children began reporting around the world (Netherlands in 1987, England in 1988, and North Carolina in 1989) that these wild animals had zippers on their costumes.

% **Official Recognition.** Regardless, some claim that plenty of hard evidence has been submitted, but it is officially unrecognized, both because it is prosecutorially unwise for law enforcement to link molestations with SRA and because of the enormous ramifications in the existence of "official documented SRA evidence." Besides, to say there is absolutely no evidence is very different than to say there is no *officially documented* evidence. Along these lines, it is interesting to note that a law enforcement friend of Friesen's, witnessed SRA evidence being intentionally misplaced in the law enforcement office where he worked, implying some degree of cover up (Friesen, 1991, pp. 96-97).

The Result. As a hypothetical calculation of this effect, let's assume that out of all children ritually abused who thereby are *motivated to secrecy*, say 5% would initiate disclosure of their involvement and trust their legal acquaintances to keep them safe (see Friesen,

KILL SWITCH

1991, pp. 95-98). Out of these cases, if we assume 20% could produce sufficient *corroboration*, to warrant an investigation, and then out of these pieces of SRA evidence, 10% would be *officially recognized* in (or out of) court, we would have $0.05 \times 0.2 \times 0.1 = .001 = 0.1\%$, or one out of a thousand ritual crimes is even acknowledged as evidence. I know this is very hypothetical and perhaps simplistic, but since any adults would be long-time perpetrators and/or extremely motivated to secrecy, how else could evidence be discovered than specifically through a child's account at that time?

The definition of "equation" is that both sides are equivalent. The multiplication of the obstacle fractions on the left side of the above equation implies a very small value on the right side ("Minimal Evidence"). If one insists on substantial evidence—a larger right hand value—then we better see to it that the factors on the left side of the equation are dramatically increased. It would be an appropriate area of study to better approximate the values of these (or other) factors. The result in a more realistic equation could be larger or smaller, but the effect is the same: Evidence is minimized severely.

C. CORROBORATIVE EVIDENCE

The definition of "evidence" used herein to support the existence of ritual abuse is . . . The presence of the following multiple independent indicators: a) Disclosures with post-traumatic presentation, b) Profound similarities between such disclosures in which the similarities outweigh the normal occurrence of conflicting details, c) Occult objects found at the scene consistent with such disclosures, d) Structural or decorative details consistent with disclosures, but unknowable outside the reported abuse scenarios, and/or e) Victim descriptions of the video and/or still photography of abuse scenarios alongside the accused's significant preoccupation with video production and photography, sometimes including a discovery of child pornography.

The reader must be the judge in each of the following cases as to how persuasive such evidence is. Although this level of evidence rarely provides a criminal conviction, it is more than sufficient for 93% of the professionals who have personal experience with those making such disclosures to conclude ritual abuse exists.

In any case, more than "a shred of corroborative evidence" has surfaced:

McMartin Preschool. This case is often quoted as proof of the suggestibility of children to confabulate SRA allegations. The case began with Police telephoning 5 parents to notify them of the potential molestations and asking for their assistance in gathering information for this case. At least one of them called the preschool, alerting the suspects (Gorney, 1988).

One of the most unbelievable claims children had made was that they were led through tunnels beneath the preschool. Parents eventually became indignant about the official ambivalence and commissioned a back hoe in 1985, at which time the district attorney responded by commissioning a limited and fruitless survey of the building—the tunnel claims were "officially disproven." Even though all of this digging was *outside* of the building, with *no attempt* to cut through the slab floor of the preschool itself, the officials declared there were no tunnels on the site, hence the tunnels were and still are commonly cited by skeptics as non-existent.

1) *Tunnels.* Nevertheless, five years later (in 1990) McMartin parents hired an archaeologist, Gary Stickel, Ph.D., to bring some closure to the persistent, consistent reports of tunnels. In contrast to the D.A.'s limited survey, Dr. Stickel and his crew did cut through

KILL SWITCH

the concrete slab in several places and found spaces beneath the building that had been filled in with dirt after the investigation opened, verified by an unearthed plastic Walt Disney bag with a copyright mark of 1982. The tunnel floorplan matched that of the children's *pre-dig descriptions* including the location of tree roots "that brushed your face", a pipe across the tunnel ceiling ("I liked to stop and swing on the pipe"), a slight arch underneath the foundation wall between two classrooms—worn smooth only where the tunnel passed underneath it, the "secret room" approximately the same dimensions described by the children, and four large containers (two enameled iron pots, a crockery jar, and a cast iron cauldron) placed vertically and side by side directly underneath the foundation arch *and halfway up* the loose fill dirt, and much more. This not only confirms the children's claims of the tunnels, but also lends strong credence to mischief, for if there had been no wrongdoing in these spaces, there would have been no need to fill them in near the time of the investigation.

The best representation of findings would come from a first hand account. Dr. Roland Summit personally examined the tunnels and later wrote the article, "The Dark Tunnels of McMartin" (Summit, 1994). The following is an excerpt:

At least one child had a voice in the archeological project. Time was running out before the bulldozers would obliterate the site and there seemed to be no trace of the children's secret room. Joanie, 12 years old, was visiting her old preschool with her mother. Dr. Stickel asked her, "Can you tell us where it was that you entered the tunnels and which way you turned?" Joanie gave a meticulous description of every step along the way. Starting in the northeast corner of classroom #3, she described being lifted down a hole, turning right, going "straight past the roots that brushed your face," turning right again "where you were hurried through the long tunnel. I liked to stop where the pipe was and swing on it. There was a little boy who couldn't reach the pipe, and sometimes I'd lift him so he could touch it. But right after that you had to duck down so you wouldn't hit your head on the cement, then you had to run again to get to the secret room."

Part of the course Joanie described corresponded to twin anomalies which had been detected earlier by ground penetrating radar (the tunnel walls). Corresponding openings had previously been cut in the concrete (see below: Unit 1 in classroom 3 and Unit 2 in classroom 4), but nothing unusual had been found. Encouraged now by Joanie's explicit directions, the archaeologists extended the dimensions of the Unit 1 dig and discovered contrasting soil. The concrete cutout from the earlier dig had passed just inside the fill dirt between the tunnel walls.

Besides being different in color, texture, and density of pack, the dirt which filled the tunnel spaces was distinct in composition from the adjacent soil of the tunnel walls. Now that the soil contrast was identified, the tunnel could be reopened with precision. It proceeded westward beneath a cast iron waste pipe, just as Joanie had described, and then passed under the deep concrete foundation of the wall separating classrooms #3 and #4. At the point where the tunnel passed under the foundation, and only at that point, the concrete had been arched upward and worn smooth, in contrast to the adjacent ragged contours and texture assumed by the concrete poured into an earthbottomed trench.

Under the classroom to the west the tunnel proceeded into a wide, room-like potential space of earth fill bearing remnants of timber, plywood, and tar paper which appeared to have shored up the ceiling of a "secret" room. All this had been implied for years by

KILL SWITCH

numerous children and anticipated on the spot by Joanie. There was not time to determine the entire parameters of the room-like space, but there was enough excavation to show that it was 6 feet 8 inches *high* and at least 9 feet in diameter, and that it connected to the north, exiting under the foundation of the west wall of the building where the rabbit hutch used to be—again, as children had previously described.

The pattern of tunnels had absolutely no architectural or structural purpose. The tunnels *did not* conform to expected trenching for foundations or utilities. In fact, the profile of the shallow trench dug to accommodate the waste pipe leading across the main tunnel (Joanie's reach-up-and-touch pipe) was clearly distinguishable as mechanically dug, showing the sharp angulation characteristic of a backhoe, whereas the tunnels had a rounded floor contour and shovel marks, showing that they had been dug by hand, presumably under the pre-existing concrete.

Two of the tunnel's most definitive items were found just inside the foundation. One, a tree root described by Joanie which had originally grown across the tunnel before being sawed away. The proximal section of that root, still feeding the distant avocado tree, had partially healed and sent out new sprouts where it had been cut some years before. The distal section, isolated at the other side of the tunnel was withered and dead. Secondly, stainless steel pipe clamps joining an angle of the pipe where it crossed through the tunnel space had a different quality from the clamps elsewhere which had remained buried since installation. The other clamps were corroded from years of soil contact, while those crossing the tunnel looked shiny and new.

2) *Artifacts*. Equally indicative, the excavation turned up many artifacts and occult-related objects, including a plate from a toy tea set painted with three pentagrams and the iron cauldron. Some of the artifacts were mentioned in the children's testimonies (Vanderbilt, 1992; Summit, 1994; Coulborn-Faller, 1994). Skeptical reports are discussed in Alternate Explanations.

3) Several children reported being led through this tunnel up into the garage of the building next door and being loaded into a van (comprising a perfectly secret form of child transport). They then described to their parents the interior of another place they were taken where they claimed to have pummeled dead bodies and watched people burn. Additionally, they referred to another place as "the doctor's house", all of which was beyond belief:

Children eventually led their parents to a mortuary and crematory where the parents were convinced that interior decorating confirmed the identity with details anticipated by children's descriptions.

In addition to the mortuary discovery, parents followed a child-guided route in search of "the doctor's house" where blood rituals had been described. They found a residence in an affluent community some 20 miles away matching the description offered independently by several children. Further, authorities confirmed that the house was owned by a physician. Prosecutors received all of this information with resentment and distrust; first, it was outside an acceptable chain of evidence, and second, this evidence was alien to what they could reasonably charge. Logically conclusive but legally intangible, it was left alone.

At the beginning of the case, in 1984, Dr. Summit was consulted by a therapist who suspected a conspiracy. The mother of her two preschool aged clients believed her estranged husband was involved in drug dealing and large scale child prostitution. The chil-

KILL SWITCH

dren had led their mother to the place they had previously described where their father took them for encounters with naked adults and other children. The children spoke of group encounters involving both a defendant in the McMartin case and a suspect from yet another preschool then under investigation. The building shown to the mother, the Coco Palms Motel, had been the site of a babysitting service sex abuse investigation, unrelated to either of the two preschool cases. Even further along these lines, two McMartin children independently identified a newspaper picture of the Coco Palms suspect as the “Wolf Man” who delivered drugs to the rituals they experienced. Eventually, seven area preschools were presumed to be linked in such corroboration. Unfortunately, the law enforcement team assembling this information took Dr. Summit’s report and promised to follow up immediately, but nothing ever came of it. The alleged wolf man later died of a drug overdose and the children recanted their complaints about the man and woman named by the children as his accomplices. We must think critically about recantations from preschool-aged children, unknown to each other, who had previously, independently identified the same places and people. Yet who introduced this man as the “Wolf Man” to the children? It seems probable that the children were encouraged somehow by an authority figure to recant. It’s not so difficult to ponder conspiracy theories in the face of multiple corroborations such as these.

In Richmond, VA, a child’s mutilated body was discovered by police. One year later, two frightened children disclosed that they had been abused in their home and forced to witness the murder of this very child. Skeptics must assume the children overheard details of the discovered body and over the course of a year mistakenly confabulated this story. However, *candles and ritualistic paraphernalia consistent with the children’s disclosures* were found at the scene (Ross, 1986).

In the Jordan, Minnesota case of 1983, children reported ritual abuse. Following James John Rud’s arrest, *1)* a police officer reported seeing a stack of approximately 12 VCR cassette tapes, a large box containing pornographic magazines, ...two green garbage bags of pornographic material, ...and numerous items of children’s clothing.” But Rud’s *parents* interrupted the search and became “so abusive and threatening” that the officer “vacated the premises to avoid an altercation.” When he returned the next day, all the above items had disappeared. This also implicates his parents; hence, multiple perpetrators. *2)* In a subsequent search of another suspect’s home, police did retrieve candles and miniature bowling pins children alleged were used to violate them (Crewdson, 1984). Lab tests confirmed the objects were contaminated with human feces (Moss, 1987).

The Little Rascals Case. In Edenton, North Carolina, one of the seven defendants, Willard Scott Privott plead no contest in exchange for probation, although he fully denied all content of children’s reports. Note his believable sounding statement, eliciting sympathy from all skeptics, and yet a virtual hallmark of sociopathy—but don’t miss the evidence that follows:

“I accept this agreement because of fear—a fear that was instilled over the last five years . . . I was convinced earlier that the state would realize it’s mistake and drop the charges . . . I am not a child molester. I have done nothing to these children. I’ve never touched these children. I am innocent of each and every charge.”

One of the most unbelievable reports by children was that a pirate had taken them away on a boat where they were abused *while photographed and filmed*. Some time later,

KILL SWITCH

videotapes were seized in Montana which showed a man dressed as a pirate, identified as Scott Privott, thus confirming children's earlier reports. Although Privott did own a *video* business, he denied any involvement with the preschool. However, witnesses confirmed that Privott and Robert Kelly (owner of the preschool) were friends and were often seen together around Edenten during the hours the preschool was in operation. Further still, the state was prepared to offer evidence that Privott was a sexual deviant whose telephone records showed he spent \$300-400 per month on sex line charges, and he was positively identified by children who had *earlier* described assaults by "a fat man named Scott" (Quillin, 1994).

In February 1994, three German teens, 17, 17, & 18, members of a secret satanic cult were sentenced to 22 years in jail for the murder of a 15 year old schoolmate who participated in rituals, was subsequently rejected for membership, and then threatened to expose the cult. Again, video taping was involved as one cult member's girlfriend came forward to say that she was asked to video tape the killing of the boy *a week before* the murder (Bajak, 1994 & Wicher, 1994).

In Spensor Township, Ohio after hearing many reports of ritual murders, authorities dug for bodies. They uncovered a blood stained dagger, an upside-down crucifix, several large crosses, and a headless doll with a pentagram emblem (Maharidge, 1985 and Norris, 1986). Again, what are the chances that ritual paraphernalia would surface following SRA allegations if rituals did not occur?

CORROBORATION LISTED IN JPH

A thorough survey of several articles in the *Journal of Psychohistory*, Spring 1994, Cult Abuse issue turns up more corroboration with which each of the respective authors had direct contact.

A) Miami Country Walk (Summit, 1994).

In this daycare case, authorities found physical evidence supporting the children's claims: 1) photographs of Frank Fuster's fecal fetishism, showing Fuster's own wife and child soiled with feces, thereby corroborating children's claims. 2) The crucifix, the weapon of abuse described by the children of the daycare *was found* under the mattress of their bed. His own son described the tortures he and his mother, Ileana endured apart from that claimed by the rest of the children in the daycare. [5]

B) Sharon J. and Murray J. Ireland (1994)—Photographic Evidence

In this article, the Irelands describe an unbelievable account quite typical of those boldly rejected by skeptics, such as the Passantinos' dismissal of *Satan's Underground* (Stratford, 1988). The same argument the Passantino's used to discredit Lauren Stratford's story, was again present: the very close high school friend was totally unaware of any abuse and claimed this particular family had the best reputation in the neighborhood. However, in this private case there again is corroboration and other independent elements that confirm the validity of the story with few alternate explanations possible.

Their patient, referred to as Rene, began recovering memories of abuse only by her mother for the first 5 years of therapy. *Starting at the 5 year point*, she began remembering her father's extensive role in the abuse. Several years later, she began recalling sadistic and ritual cult abuse. To gain some closure to her horrific memories, she asked a close friend to accompany her to verify the existence of the isolated mountain site in her recovered memories. In a state of terror, she not only located the site, but extensively photo-

KILL SWITCH

graphed many details from her memories, including the alter on which children were sacrificed and tortured, sinks and troughs, and various buildings, thus corroborating her memory of cult rituals.

Further, she also recovered memories of a secret hole under the bedroom closet of her childhood home where her father had often placed her sister. Upon returning to this house, she not only found a thin sheet of plywood covering this very hole, but again photographed the hole.

Moreover, her father did not deny the abuse when confronted, but presented a typical unremorseful reply that God had forgiven him. There are too many unrelated pieces of corroboration and other indicators to adequately explain contrary to Rene's account, yet if we accept this horrific and private case, we must grapple with the existence of other SRA in which patients also present several categories of dissociative and PTSD symptoms—with corresponding memories—but do not initiate such extensive corroboration.

C) R. McFarland and G. Lockerbie (1994)

McFarland and Lockerbie describe four case histories of child ritual abuse. It is quite apparent from their descriptions that the reports came spontaneously from the children—there was no mention of anything vaguely resembling cult abuse to the children prior to their disclosures. One of the children had an inordinate fear of knives (before starting therapy). Late one night, her mother called in desperation. The counselor met them in the office and the girl recalled, in a distant state of mind, adults in dark clothing, chanting, sadistic acts, group sex, and the murder of an infant. There was no suggestion prior to this recollection. Another child was brought in by his mother who discovered drawings by her son of events as horrible as those above. In all four cases, the counselors describe that the children did not look to them for approval or corroboration, but seemed focused on a view within.

D) Matt Johnson (1994).

This article is written by a clinician who describes his very tangible and costly experience with a cult, even though she had no prior concept of SRA.

Corroboration from Young, et al. (1990)

As described earlier, four independent identifications were made by patients of both the names and cult roles of patient photographs of alleged cult members (from a similar geographic region). *Neither group of patients were in contact with the other during their treatment.*

One patient reported being forced to watch her mother strangle a newborn sibling while her father also observed. Later a cult ritual was held in which the infant was dismembered and consumed. The mother informed the rest of the family that the child had died from “crib” death shortly after birth. Independent verification was partially obtained from a brother who remembered the pregnancy and a “funeral” at home, *but never saw the infant.* Neither the hospital in which the infant was *statedly born*, nor the state's Bureau of Vital Statistics had any record of the infant's *birth or death.*

Evidence in “The New Satanists”

This 1994 paperback by Linda Blood came out two few years after I began this paper. It offers so much evidence for SRA that I probably would not have written this paper had I known this book was to come. Linda Blood includes the largest collection of evidence

KILL SWITCH

I have read to date, especially in chapters 5 through 7. Although the cover and title are in my opinion too sensationalistic, this \$5 book is a must read for anyone sincerely examining the veracity of SRA.

Taped Evidence

Yet another element which might provide a better angle on the SRA believers' perspective is a one-minute clip from a telephone call to the Bob Larson show. The caller wanted to escape from her *present involvement* in a transgenerational satanic cult. A close scrutiny not only of the caller's terrified tone of voice, but also of her means of disclosure and of the content, lend strong credence to the authenticity of the caller's situation. One can better understand how therapists who hear stories like this regularly, with consistent elements would eventually start believing their clients (Rittenhouse, 1992).

Similarities Between Child and Adult Survivors

The internal consistency present in current reports of SRA is astounding. The following table compares these extensive similarities in two surveys performed by two separate entities—one of child ritual abuse survivors and the other of adult ritual abuse survivors—samples of each of the two surveys were separated geographically.

Warning: The following details may be triggering to survivors and deeply disturbing to those not familiar with SRA reports.

Children: Pamela Hudson, MSW, has over 35 years of experience working in mental health, both in-patient and out-patient. She began encountering child ritual abuse cases in the 1980's. In 1988, she conducted a telephone survey of one set of Parents from each of 10 daycare cases and the non-offending parent of two brothers from a coven case—for a total of 12 children representing 11 locations—on the East Coast, Texas, and up and down the West Coast. No parent knew beforehand that she would be calling, and therefore no one had an opportunity to compare responses before her call (Hudson, 1990). She spoke only to the parents, not the children. Please see her book for more detail on the survey and on each case. (Hudson, 1991). The children surveyed attended the following day cares:

1. McMartin Preschool, Manhattan Beach, CA
2. West Point Child Development Center, NJ
3. Parent in a Coven, CA
4. Alabama child in day care, CA
5. Babysitter case, Manhattan Beach, CA
6. East Valley YMCA, El Paso, TX
7. Day care center in Campbell, CA
8. Gallup Christian Day Care, Roseburg, OR
9. St. Cross Episcopal Day Care, Hermosa Beach, CA
10. Presidio Child Development Center, San Francisco, CA
11. Day care center, Fort Bragg, CA

Adults: 37 Adults from 5 separate wards in 4 separate hospitals across the country were surveyed over the course of two years of treatment (Young, et al, 1990). See Table 1, next page.

Table 1. Similarities between child survivors from 11 locations and adult survivors from 4 hospitals across the country. Note the extensive correlations, both *within* each study—

KILL SWITCH

and between the two studies.

Abuse Reported:

Children/Adults Sexual Abuse

All 12 children reported sexual abuse by adult strangers and/or daycare workers. All 37 adults reported sexual abuse.

Torture: All 12 Children described torture and sexual assault. All were given medical exams; findings commensurate with sexual assault. All 37 adults reported witnessing and receiving physical abuse and torture.

Animal Killings: 11 children (92%) observed animals tortured and killed; 12th did not state. All 37 adults witnessed animal mutilation/killings.

Confinement: 11 children (92%) reported being locked inside a “jail” or cage. 5 of these 11 children also reported being put inside caskets, coffins, “boxes”. 27 adults (72%) reported being buried alive in coffins or graves.

Human Sacrifice: 8 children (67%) described small children and/or babies being killed, carved up, and eaten by abusers, and some reported forced cannibalism. 31 adults (83%) witnessed and were forced to participate in human adult and infant sacrifice. 30 (81%) reported forced cannibalism.

Forced Drug Usage: 11 children (92%) were injected, drugged, or “poked” with needles. 36 adults (97%) reported forced drug usage.

Marriage Ceremonies: 6 children (50%) reported participating in mock marriages. 26 adults (78%) described marriage to Satan.

Death Threats: All 12 children reported threats to the lives of their parents, siblings, or pets if they told; 9 of the 12 children (75%) were threatened directly with guns or knives. All 37 adults reported death threats to themselves and/or family members for breaking the silence.

Pornography: All 12 children were photographed or filmed during abuse. Adults were not measured in this survey, but another survey of 7 SRA survivors found 4 describing sadistic pornography and/or “snuff” film production, the remaining 3 not specifying.

Robes: All 12 children described abusers wearing robes, masks, having candles. Adult patients commonly reported robes, but of differing colors.

Defecation: 11 children (92%) were defecated and urinated upon, and were forced to ingest both. Although not quantified in this survey, six out of six in another survey described consumption of feces and urine (Brown, 1987).

Other common reports: 11 children (92%) reported being given (fake) operations; 10 children reported being taken away from the care provider, traveling by car, airplane, helicopter, boats, or submarines.

(Purposeful deception—e.g., animal costumes—is often used as a hedge to discredit any would be children’s reports); 11 children (92%) reported being taken to churches, other daycare centers, and graveyards for more terrorizing, torture, and sexual assault. Adults also have reported fake operations during which bombs were supposedly implanted which would explode upon their telling of any cult secrets (Friesen, 1992).

Children/Adults Stress

All 12 children presented “extremely high anxiety”; 10 (83%) exhibited a sudden

KILL SWITCH

extreme fear of the bathroom, bathing, washing, rain; 11 (92%) experienced nightmares, night terrors, night sweats. All 37 adults diagnosed “Severe post-traumatic stress disorder” (met requirements for DSM-III-R), and 34 (91%) exhibited “unusual fears”.

Related Behaviors At least 11 children (92%) exhibited new compulsive, erotic behavior, and acted out the sex acts. 32 adults (86%) exhibited “sexualization of sadistic impulses”.

Eating Disorders: 10 children (83%) exhibited a sudden eating disorder: refusing meat, catsup, spaghetti, and tomatoes. Not reported in this survey, but adult survivors I know alternately crave/refuse red meat and sauces.

Other common symptoms: 9 children (75%) began vomiting for no apparent reason and experienced abdominal pain. 10 children (83%): “Hyperaggressive, temper tantrums, oppositional behavior, school disruptiveness”. 36 adults (97%) presented survivor guilt, 35 (94%) described Indoctrinated beliefs, 31 adults (83%) performed “bizarre self-abuse”, and 23 (62%) were involved in substance abuse.

Concluding Thoughts on Evidence.

There is certainly a broad range of evidential data for SRA; however, due to the very private nature of survivorship as well as concerns for the safety of survivors, little can be expected publicly in any form of proclamation. To dismiss SRA while promoting critical thinking skills (Wade & Tavis—see SRA quiz question, p. 256), one may not gloss over corroboration and correlations such as those listed, but must grapple with the probability that *every* corroboration listed above *and all others*—without exception—have alternate explanations. To responsibly take a position on this issue, one should know specifically what would be adequate evidence to modify his or her view.

There will always be residual populations of articulate deniers in many realms of human suffering (e.g., the Jewish Holocaust, the Armenian Genocide, etc.) and often with some connection to those accused of the atrocities. These activists typically dismiss each and every piece of corroboration to maintain their positions at all costs. Such an unbending stance plants seeds of doubt sufficient to neutralize the otherwise appropriate societal rage in all but those most personally involved with the victims.

“It should be obvious that any possibility of such inconceivable cruelty must be confronted and understood before we as a people can progress to define the real dimensions of human experience. Considering the potential benefits of such a confrontation—new insight into alienation, despair, rage, violence, dissociation, and the vagaries of memory and of ultimate accountability—it is all the more remarkable and lamentable that scholars are willing to harp at the extremes rather than to delve into the common ground of human perversity and deliberate psychic trauma.” (Summit, 1994).

The non-SRA professional community continues saying there is “no evidence” (Rogers, p. 180, Mulhern, p. 231; Ganaway, p. 202; Stevens, p. 240)—this is very inaccurate. Even a small percentage is infinitely more significant than zero.

3. LOGIC TO DENY SRA EXISTS

Although Ganaway states that a belief in the existence of SRA includes a certain set of suppositions (Ganaway, 1992, p. 202), a denial of SRA also requires a certain set of suppositions:

Specifically, we must believe in a very complex social organism, consisting of the

KILL SWITCH

following:

1. False Children's Reports:

a) Parents and/or therapists, expecting the worst, misinterpreted both the children's distressed behavior and reports, via an SRA-paranoia filter,

or

b) Parents and therapists inadvertently suggested the 15-20 commonly reported, yet bizarre elements of the "satanic mass" to the children, and the children created an average of 15 of these along with the corresponding panic responses (see survey of children's symptoms and reports: Hudson, 1990),

or

c) Those conducting all surveys like this blatantly reword the children's reports to support their own causes of proving that SRA exists,

and

2. Adult SRA patients create false memories matching preschooler's claims,

and

3. Every adult SRA patient is necessarily exposed to all 15-20 specific SRA details *before* the respective memories of such.

- OR -

1'. There is a culturally or biologically programmed fear to the 15-20 specific elements of the "satanic mass" (see the discussion on Phillip Stevens' explanation in *Alternate Explanations Considered* section) even though, as I contend, most people have not been exposed culturally to these items *in any manner typically resembling victim accounts*.

and

2'. All SRA clients, with and without MPD, create false memories with post-traumatic symptoms which parallel the memories. Additionally, many MPD clients create not only false memories, but must have also created evil alters as well which correspond with the memories. Note that these alters exhibit severely deviant characteristics (enjoying the feeling of stabbing a sacrificial victim, cannibalistic desires, etc.), while the patient's core personality is entirely inconsistent with—even unaware of—these characteristics.

In summary, we must believe the logical statement: [(1a or 1b or 1c) and 2 and 3], OR: (1' and 2') is True to deny the existence of SRA.

4. FALSE MEMORY ANALYSIS

We have seen that there *is* substantial corroboration for SRA, yet several authorities continue to state that there is "not a shred of evidence," thereby allowing others to cite recovered memories of SRA as *indicative* of a False Memory Syndrome (FMS). Depending on how it's framed, one might admit that the concept of recovering a series of bizarre abuse memories previously out of consciousness seems unlikely, even far-fetched, especially when soberly denied by the otherwise respectful accused. However, the framing is often oversimplified, describing something both simpler and more ominous than what is clinically encountered. Thus the case-by-case contextual framework is the very core from which this issue must be examined.

Although it is important to note that the FMS Foundation Advisory Board includes numerous professionals with respectable credentials in medicine and psychology, few have

KILL SWITCH

relevant clinical experience with abuse survivors, sociopathy, offender psychology, or dissociative disorders. Most FMSF Advisors do not understand nor discuss traumatic dissociation, nor much of the clinical phenomenology or the psychodynamics of trauma and abuse victims. They especially don't understand the distinction between normal and traumatic memory processing. Most have neither studied the subject nor become conversant in the scientific and clinical findings regarding traumatic dissociation and traumatic amnesia that have been garnered since the days of Freud, Breuer, Charcot, Janet, and Prince. Although some false memory advocates claim to have read from these authors and remain unconvinced, they offer few arguments to overturn the conclusions arrived upon by these clinicians. Rather, they deny the existence of most if not all Dissociative Identity Disorder (MPD), apparently due to the clear trauma-indicative nature of dissociative symptoms.

Also imperative to note is that since the inception of the FMSF in 1992, a "syndrome" has yet to be established for false memory. Thus, the term "syndrome" reveals a distinct lack of objectivity and is misleading through the informal media. Some admittedly have a personal interest in establishing a False Memory Syndrome, having joined the board only after learning of a friend or family member accused of abuse. They attack a strawman, consisting of the terms, "recovered memory therapy (RMT)" and "robust" or "strong repression" of the normal-type integrated memory (Pope, 1994). They speak in broad generalities with outrage over concepts much simpler and different than what is actually experienced by and observed in patients with dissociative disorders.

An inclusive analysis of false memory is, however, complicated by the results of research and of experiments, which appear at first glance to diverge. While research from Williams, Hermann, and others on known adult survivors of childhood sexual abuse validates delayed traumatic memories, experiments from Loftus and from Ceci support the creation of false memory in children through repeated suggestion and questioning from an authority figure. A closer look, however, might reveal some intermediate truth with some key distinctions between the clinically encountered delayed traumatic memory on the one hand and the experimenters' implanted memories on the other.

Two Models: Repression vs. Dissociation

The two camps of this debate attack and study these respective terms with more than a difference in semantics, but based on two very different models of memory. So, to understand both sides of the debate, it is crucial to distinguish between the two models: Repression, which would operate on *normal memory* and Dissociation which automatically creates and accesses a separate *traumatic memory*. Both the mechanism and the memory type will be discussed under each of the two models.

1. Repressed Memory Model.

This model is referenced in attacks by false memory advocates as insufficient to explain the recovery of traumatic memory. True enough, Freud's repression theory does not adequately explain such a complicated mechanism of memory. However, the actual observations and experiences of the FMSF criticized "RMT" clinicians do not resemble Freud's repression theory either.

1A. Mechanism: Repression. Freud first applied this term to the central psychoanalytic theory that individuals actively inhibit unacceptable wishes, feelings, and sexual impulses to the point that they become unconscious. If such feelings become sufficiently

KILL SWITCH

strong, they would intrude into consciousness. If not, they would be relegated to the unconscious by the willful forces of repression. Secondly, he applied the concept of repression in the very different sense of a *motivated* forgetting of uncomfortable experiences. The same confusion is seen in the psychoanalytic literature at large, where the use of the term “repression” is overapplied (really redefined) to infer an *active* pushing away of the unwanted traumatic memory. In this faulty model, one’s *consciousness stays in its place*, unaltered; it is the traumatic memory, itself, which is removed.

Repression thus theorizes an on-off mechanism, and offers only a vague explanation for the recovery of childhood sexual abuse memories. There is little evidence for this type of an intentional pushing away of overwhelming experiences, a point on which we can agree with the FMSF. It seems reasonable, therefore, to reserve the concept of repression for the defense against unwanted wishes and Id-impulses only, and *not* for recovered memories, which is referred to by FMS proponents as *Redefined Freudianism*.

1B. Memory Type: Normal, also called *Narrative* or *Declarative Memory* results from the continual cataloging or categorizing of experiences. New experiences and images in short term memory are integrated by *association* with related material already in long term memory. Because of this ongoing integration and cataloging of experience with existing schemes, malleability is likely during the reconstruction of normal memories. FMSF advisors may thus be partially correct in their statements that there is no evidence for the complete forgetting or *repression* and subsequent full recovery of *normal-type memory*. **Thus, false normal-type memories may be possible in contrived cases with repeated authoritative suggestion**, yet the existence of false traumatic-type memories (defined by the accompanying dissociative and post-traumatic symptoms) remains unproven.

2. Dissociation Model.

2A. Mechanism: Dissociation. Distinct from repression, this term refers not only to a mechanism of memory, but also to a related branch of psychological disorders, based on a *dis-association* of experiences and images with those previously integrated in normal long term memory. According to Freedman, Kaplan, & Sadock’s *Comprehensive Textbook of Psychiatry*, “dissociation and the dissociative disorders are a psycho-physiological process whereby information—incoming, stored, and outgoing—is actively deflected from integration with its usual or expected associations. The dissociative type of hysterical neurosis can be defined as a state of experience or behavior wherein dissociation produces a discernible alteration in a person’s thoughts, feelings, or actions so that for a period of time, certain information is not associated or integrated with other information as it normally or logically would be. The classic symptoms are amnesia, somnambulism, fugue, and multiple personality” (p. 341).

The dissociative uncoupling appears to have an *automatic* mechanism such that another parallel consciousness is created or split off at a sensory-motor or subconscious level of processing. Many survivors of all kinds of trauma report that they are automatically removed from the scene; they look at it from a distance or disappear altogether, leaving other parts of their personality to suffer and store the overwhelming experience. “I moved up to the ceiling from where I saw this little girl being molested and I felt very sorry for her” is a common description of dissociation by incest survivors. It is the psychological parallel to the automatic numbness experienced by some following a physical injury.

2B. Memory Type: Traumatic. According to van der Kolk’s and van der Hart’s

KILL SWITCH

research summarized in *The Intrusive Past: The Flexibility of Memory and the Engraving of Trauma* (1991), there is a telling distinction between the encoding of normal experience and that of trauma. An important observation is that much of their research occurred before the false memory debate began as we know it, so van der Kolk's bold re-statement of the century-old conclusion of Pierre Janet (that the integration of traumatically dissociated, or "recovered", memory is confirmed by its physiological and neurological affects[6]) is uncritically dismissed, out of necessity, by false memory proponents. The other side of this coin, however, is the FMSF contention that any such unexplained affects are *not confirming*, but are *also* the result of suggestion. Of course, any pre-existing or life-long affects would have to be strictly coincidental with the recovered memories.

Two models, two memory systems. As the definitions reveal, these terms address two different models of trauma processing, two different memory systems, and describe even two different subjective experiences as well. The concept of repression does not account for the complex clinical phenomenology of trauma survivors. False memory advocates argue against the "depth of repression" and about "burying" memories, while traumatic dissociation actually speaks in terms of the "associational proximity" of the *components* of the trauma: knowledge, emotion affect, and sensation. Dissociation better resembles how trauma is actually reported, as is extensively documented.

Dissociation—Documented.

Since the days of Charcot, etc. we have documented dissociation, amnesia, and other traumatic memory disturbances (dissociation of knowledge) as common responses to a great variety of contexts of traumatic stress, including: combat and war, disasters, violent crime, assault and sexual assault, torture and mind control, concentration camps, cults, child abuse, vehicular and industrial accidents, life threatening events, and multiple traumatic events. Traumatic amnesia and fugue states have long been recognized as common occurrences in war resembling closely those in child abuse victims. Mira documented "the inability to recall experiences either immediately before or after the traumatic incident or the events directly related to the shock itself is a common event in war." Mira documented fugue states in war trauma victims occurring "either immediately after the traumatic incident or somewhat later." (Mira, 1943).

The symptoms of war trauma survivors resembles Charcot's lists of symptoms of hysterics. The range of post traumatic sequelae that Mira observed during the second world war included "psychogenic repression, dissociation, traumatic amnesia, fugue states, anesthetics, psychogenic pain, repression, phobic states, psychomotor disturbance, and self-inflicted injuries." This reads like a list of features of Charcot's and Janet's patients.

A 1957 article in a *British Medical Journal* reports "during periods of public emergency, this form of [psychogenic] amnesia may be responsible for 15% of all psychiatric admissions." (Kennedy & Neville, 1957).

Thus, we've known about traumatic dissociation throughout the past century—years before the rediscovery of child abuse—and in a variety of contexts. The 19th century founders of the study of traumatic dissociation, Charcot, Janet, Prince, and Breuer, have received much attention in recent years, yet they were the few dissenters and were largely ignored by the developing dynamic psychiatry, which showed little interest in either the dissociative disorders or the traumatic etiology of them.

Duration of Amnesia. Some argue that the length of the delay (months vs. decades)

KILL SWITCH

affects the validity of recovered memories. Pope compares the amnesia of disaster victims with that of alleged abuse survivors (Pope, 1994). To make such a comparison, one might include all related indicators in the equation. A disaster or war trauma survivor should have none or perhaps a short memory delay since their entire world (homes, friends, lifestyle, etc.) reflects the incident, prompting a recovery of such memories. In contrast, child abuse survivors have little-to-no external information on which to base an understanding of their trauma or to prompt an immediate integration of any dissociated trauma.

Dissociation Foundation.

For the clearest understanding of both sides of the false memory debate, it would be helpful to understand the origins and roles these concepts have played in the unraveling of psychodynamic psychotherapy. Prof. John Hochman of the UCLA medical school has stated:

“Recovered memory therapy is based on pseudoscientific theory and should not be believed either in a context of law or the world in general. This therapy is a combination of pop-psychology, self-help recovery groups, and redefined Freudianism.” (Hochman, 1994)

As we will observe through examining a brief history of traumatic dissociation, recovered memory is *not* re-defined Freudianism, rather it is a reuniting of a tributary of psychiatry that split off from Freud when he abandoned the seduction theory of adult psychoneurosis.

Among the founders of the study of dissociation was French neurologist Jean Charcot who practiced at the famous Salpêtrière hospital in Paris. In 1872, he noted that his hysterical patients' stream of consciousness often broke into diverse components (Freedman, Kaplan & Sadock, 1972). He also noted a similarity between hysteria and hypnosis, and even viewed hypnosis as “artificial hysteria.” Charcot eventually raised hypnosis to a level of respectability as a primary investigative tool of dissociation. During 1885-86, a 29 year old Sigmund Freud came from Vienna, Austria to Paris to attend Charcot's lectures and observe his use of hypnotism in treating hysteria (dissociative disorders).

He was sufficiently impressed with the clinical results that when he returned to Vienna, he began to practice hypnotic catharsis and abreaction with his hysterical patients. For several years, he collaborated with his close physician friend, Josef Breuer, a pioneer in abreactive and cathartic hypnosis. Together, they concluded that dissociation and personality-splitting were the central clinical features of their hysterical patients.

For the next decade, Freud and Breuer accepted their hysterical patients' recovered memories of sexual and physical abuse. During the course of treatment, all 18 of Freud's “hysterically neurotic” patients eventually disclosed in their treatment to have been sexually abused as children. Without pursuing it, Freud even happened upon corroboration for at least three of his patients' claims. At age 40 he published his infamous paper “The Aetiology of Hysteria,” in which he argued that traumatic experience, notably “premature sexual contact” in childhood was the very root of adult hysterical neurosis—in stark opposition to the prevailing view. Freud even anticipated the false memory movement. He predicted skeptics would...

“insist either that the physician forces such scenes upon the docile patient, alleging them to be recollections, or that the patient tells him things which he has purposely invented or spontaneous fantasies which the physician accepts as genuine facts” (p. 199).

At the same time, Freud remained convinced that he had not created false memories in his patients:

KILL SWITCH

"I have never yet succeeded in forcing on a patient a scene that I expected to find, in such a way that he appeared to live through it again with all the appropriate emotions..." (p. 200).

Freud's Peer Influences.

The publication of Freud's "Aetiology of Hysteria" brought him new scholarly attention. Freud was soon confronted with a cultural pressure that was incompatible with his clinically-based conclusions. He faced probably the most difficult decision of his career: maintain his findings on the abuse-hysteria link or concede to the prevailing anti-victim/anti-woman prejudice of the day.

One such respected authority was the noted professor of neurology at the University of Berne, Dr. Paul Dubois. He was one of the first in French Neurology advocating psychotherapy for the psychoneuroses. The prejudices of his day—a disrespect, disdain, or disbelief of hysterical patients—were the most influential deterrent in preventing widespread acceptance of these accounts of abuse from hysterical patients everywhere. Anyone who desired recognition in the field would think twice before taking such a bold position on child sexual abuse. These prejudices are unmistakable in Dubois' widely accepted publication, translated by Funk & Wagnalls in 1905, *The Psychic Treatment of Nervous Disorders: The Psychoneuroses and their Moral Treatment* (Dubois, 1905). A few choice statements are listed to demonstrate this prejudice:

"I am led to believe that the various vague, unconscious or conscious, sensations which pertain to the sexual instinct play even in the virgin of the most immaculate thoughts a considerable role in the genesis of hysteria..."

"Rhythmic movements of the pelvis betray a lascivious state of mind, whether it is conscious or unconscious, in the most modest young girl as well as in the prostitute."

"In the hysterical patient suggestibility is the dominant quality or, more exactly, auto-suggestibility. She—I say "she" because the woman is more subject to these symptoms—lives in a world of dreams and in the graver cases . . . the mental trouble amounts to an hysterical delirium . . . These patients are experts in the art of putting the stamp of reality, not only on their sensations . . . but on the phantoms created by their most vagrant imaginations" (pp. 172-173).

His editors and translators were highly respected leaders in the American psychiatric community and were enthusiastic to advance this perspective to the American medical establishment. In this social context, it is understandable why Freud abandoned his awkwardly glaring seduction theory. He surely would not have reached the pinnacle of recognition had he continued promoting this relatively brash concept about sexual abuse as the root of hysteria.

Apparently, due both to enormous peer and cultural pressure and perhaps by repressing his own convictions stemming from his clinical experience, he began a tremendously influential paradigm shift, opposing virtually everything he stood for on traumatic dissociation, yet with little supporting data. By 1905, he publicly retracted his "Seduction Theory"—that children are seduced into sexual acts which later becomes the root of their adult psychoneurosis, and replaced it with the "Oedipus Complex"—children have a sexual desire for their parents which would, among hysterics, reappear in adult years as memories, but originate from no more than childhood sexual fantasies.

With Freud's dramatic turnaround, the study of traumatic dissociation and its pri-

KILL SWITCH

mary investigative tool, hypnosis, was thereby split off from the mainstream of medicine and from the developing psychodynamic and biological psychiatry. In the service of family denial, neither traumatic dissociation nor any co-conscious or dissociative disorders were made part of the developing psychiatric, medical or psychoanalytic paradigms.

"... I was at last obliged to recognize that these scenes of seduction had never taken place, and that they were only fantasies which my patients had made up . . . namely, that the father seduced her in childhood. This is the later reworking which is designed to cover up the recollection of infantile sexual activity and represents an excuse and an extenuation thereof. The grain of truth contained in this fantasy lies in the fact that the father, by way of his innocent caresses in earliest childhood, has actually awakened the little girl's sexuality (the same thing applies to the little boy and his mother) . . . And thus the motifs mingle in the most successful fashion to form this fantasy, which often dominates a woman's entire life (seduction fantasy): One part truth, one part gratification of love, and one part revenge" (Masson, 1984, p. 12).

FMSF proponents might be tempted at first glance to promote the turnaround of this most famous psychotherapist as an example for other therapists to follow and to likewise begin considering their clients recovered memories as rooted in fantasy. However, inseparable from his abandonment of the seduction theory was his tolerance of incest. He had not only changed his view on incest memories, but redefined these very traumas as acceptable:

"It is one of the most commonest things—psychoanalysis is full of such incidents—for children's genitals to be caressed, not only in word but in deed, by fond relations, including even parents." (Freud, 1909/1974, p. 64)

Thus, at the very core of Freud's denial of trauma-based dissociation as the primary root of hysteria, was his rejection of any incest as abusive or traumatic. We're left hanging as to how he accounted for the corroborated cases in his patients' recovered memories. We're also left hanging as to how he accounted for the recovered memories of abuse by people other than their fathers.

Freud's Dissenters. Although the study of traumatic dissociation was never popularized in Freud's day, not all of Freud's contemporaries succumbed to pressure to abandon the existence of dissociated traumatic memory. Pierre Janet, a fellow student during Freud's study with Charcot at the Salpêtrière and a distinguished French medical psychologist, was drawn to the study of dissociation through his interest in the dissociative symptoms of hysteria, including amnesias, fugues, trance states, and multiple personality. Janet was struck by the observation that some memories could become the nucleus of later psychopathology.

Janet was the first to note that dissociated *states* often follow childhood physical or sexual abuse. He was also the first to observe that spontaneous dissociative reactions function as *defenses* to keep traumatic memories out of consciousness (Janet, 1889). He explained that while traumatic experiences were split-off from the mainstream of consciousness, they could still exercise harmful influences on thought and behavior, not consciously understood (Janet, 1924).

Another who remained faithful to his clinical findings was Morton Prince, a contemporary of Freud and Janet's. In 1906 he published the first clinical study of multiple personality and dissociation (Prince, 1906). He later went on to develop the concept of coexisting, simultaneous consciousnesses he titled *co-consciousness* (Prince, 1919) amidst the wave of

KILL SWITCH

negative reaction against MPD in 1910. Prince, Janet, and several other prominent clinicians were so convinced by their clinical findings that they opposed the evolving all-or-nothing conscious-unconscious duality of psychoanalysis' explanation for mental disorder in favor of the concept of parallel or co-consciousness.

It's curious note how differently World War I psychiatrists treating "battle fatigue" accepted symptoms of traumatic dissociation as such (including amnesia and fugue states) in soldiers (Mira, 1943), while dismissing the very same thing in female hysterics of the day. While it was apparent to them that the men's symptoms had a traumatic etiology, they related the women's symptoms to character, moral, or biological issues.

Contemporary Context. The study of traumatic dissociation languished primarily in the hypnotic community until the resurgence of interest in hypnosis in the mid 1970's, largely popularized by Milton Erikson's work, followed by a rekindled interest in the dissociative disorders such as in the 1984 founding of the International Society for the Study of Multiple Personality and Dissociation (ISSMPD).

This resurgence of interest in dissociation was potentiated by several factors: First was the renewed interest in hypnosis in the 1970's. The mobilization of the rape crisis and sexual assault center movement, galvanized by Burgess and Holstrom's 1974 pioneering study of inner-city rape victims and the description of the Rape Trauma Syndrome. This brought our attention to the existence of sexual abuse and trauma of women and children and began to break down societal denial over sexual abuse and assault. The next factor that contributed to this was the development of broad-based yet unseen cultural movements in the 1980's beginning with the Adult Children of Alcoholics movement, which led to Adults Molested as Children movement. This again increased our sensitivity to child abuse and in this case to its intergenerational effects. Lastly, the recognition of Post-Traumatic Stress Disorder (PTSD) in 1980 and the creation of the International Society for the Study of Traumatic Stress in the early 1980's. All of these factors during the past decade have given us a wider lens to see the universality of dissociation as a response to trauma.

Evidence for a False Memory Syndrome.

The most significant evidence for the existence of a False Memory Syndrome consists of:

Elizabeth Loftus' research. An experiment conducted by Professor Elizabeth Loftus (a psychologist from the University of Washington and member of the FMS Advisory Board). In this experiment, she asked students to suggest falsely to their younger siblings a time they were lost in a mall. Five of her students' younger siblings reported remembering such events. A fourteen year old boy even remembered the color of the shirt the man was wearing who returned him. Dr. Loftus has also conducted experiments on adults watching a film clip of a multi-vehicle auto accident. There is a strong correlation between the suggestive wording of the questions (about the presence of a sign, colors of cars, and directions cars were moving) and how the subjects recalled the accident (Wade & Tavris, 1993).

n David Lotto (1994) cites an experiment conducted by **Dr. Steven Ceci**, a psychologist at Cornell University. Parents were asked to make a list of 10 events, 2 of which happened and 8 of which didn't. Each child was then asked "has this ever happened to you" about each event and on a weekly basis. By the 11th week of this procedure, 56% of the children reported at least one false event as being true. Some children reported all of the fictional events as having occurred and the children frequently elaborated on these

KILL SWITCH

events producing detailed and believable sounding accounts (Goleman, 1993).

Acknowledging this evidence, it is critical to point out that although these experiments lend strong credence for the fabrication of memories, this is nonetheless normal narrative, memory which is quite malleable due to the integrative process aligning such experiences into categories of *association*. Normal memory is apparently quite subject to confusion through repeated suggestion. *Dissociation* on the other hand occurs in overwhelming traumatic situations and is clinically distinguished by the accompanying dissociative symptoms and sequelae as documented in survivors of all types of trauma. This crucial distinction in the two types of memory processing is detailed in Bernard van der Kolk's pre-FMSF paper (van der Kolk and van der Hart, 1991).

Other support for false memories consists of:

The Ramona Case. Still, some state that false abuse memories have been proven in the courtroom in the this case. Note, however, that when the spokesman for the jury was asked on a daytime talk show about this proven case of false memory, he adamantly stated that they did not find the memories to be false—only that the therapist's behavior was unethical.

Ingram Case. In the very complex Ingram SRA case of 1988 in Olympia, Washington, a curious-to-skeptical professor, Richard Ofshe from UC Berkeley, CA, conducted an experiment on Paul Ingram in which he falsely advised Ingram that his son and daughter were disclosing that he had forced them to have sex together. Ingram then elaborated on this (relatively not so far-fetched) event. This case is discussed with more detail in *Alternate Explanations*.

It is understandable in light of these results, that people without firsthand experience with survivors would assume false memory syndrome exists, fully explaining the sharp rise in the number of incest and SRA survivors, especially when the memories were recovered decades after the fact and even more so when well respected parents fully deny any such offenses.

Checklists are often the target of false memory proponents. However, the understated purpose of these lists is to describe indicators of dissociative disorders and the often accompanying traumatic memories. Important to note is that these lists are not meant as an all or nothing indicator of past abuse, but merely a varying degree of probability of abuse dependent on the correlation with various items. When several symptom clusters exist across several broad categories, it is not inappropriate to consider the possibility of dissociative disorders and traumatic memory (Calof, 1994).

Recanters.

Recanters are commonly referenced to prove induction of false memories. The picture of a woman in irreparable regret, and recanting her false memories and accusations toward her father strikes unparalleled strings of sympathy in most of us and suggests the strong possibility of false memories as well. Further, acknowledging that in therapy we all desire to discover a central source for all of our problems, when combined with the secondary gain of sympathetic approval from an admired therapist who also advises us of the likelihood of repressed memories of sexual or satanic abuse, undoubtedly results in a motive to construct such memories.

However, in this scenario, we cannot ignore the foundational counter-motives of any patient to reject such severe images—if they really occur at all with the element of recogni-

KILL SWITCH

tion innate to memory. Even the known cults who brainwash haven't been reported to result in false memories; just a general disdain. Yet false memory proponents require as commonplace this very process of uncritical acceptance of such fabrications of both imagery and a sense of recognition. Regardless, in this light, it is very likely that *some* recanters were persuaded of a false survivorship with, or perhaps without, significant memories and due to their remorse over the tragedy of falsely accusing a loved one, have become crusaders assuming all recovered memory is false.

Secondly, as therapists know well, the denial process is an extremely strong mechanism, and it is therefore quite possible that *some* who recant, claiming their memories were falsely acquired, are actually lapsing into a denial about their painful pasts and/or deciding on some level that the break in family relationship is much more painful than anticipated. Recanting is the clearest, if not the only, way to consciously or subconsciously deny one's own accusations if the goal of the confrontation (confession and healing) was not met.

Finally, a recanter suffering from a dissociative disorder often has the ability to separate many ordinary things from consciousness. Thus, especially when motivated, all prior knowledge and conviction of one's own abuse can likewise be split off from consciousness, providing a means for deep denial and a full retraction. This is the same mechanism under which a DID patient may "lose time" and the memory of immediate, but normal everyday experiences.

Evidence for Recovered Memory.

To most critically discuss the evidence for recovered memory, we must not ignore the forefront alternate explanations offered for each. Such counterperspectives are perhaps best presented in an interview of **Harrison G. Pope, M.D.**, Associate Professor at Harvard Medical School and member of the FMS scientific advisory board (Pope, 1994). Dr. Pope, holding that virtually all recovered memories are false, questions each and every otherwise conclusive piece of research on the commonality of delayed traumatic memory, including all reports of corroboration. In final consideration of Dr. Pope's comments, it is noteworthy that he relies on the contingency being fact in every case he dismisses. That is, Dr. Pope must assume that every explanation he offers to counter each and every results is correct, however slight the probability. Such a position requires faith in an ever shrinking probability.

The most significant evidence for recovered memories consists of:

Linda Meyer Williams, Ph.D. of the Family Violence Research Laboratory at the University of New Hampshire conducted a follow-up study 17 years later on 129 women *hospitalized* as children for sexual abuse and found that 38 percent did not recall the experiences documented in their hospital records 17 years earlier. (Williams, 1993). **Dr. Pope** contends that these results resemble other *non-disclosure* findings from both a similar prior survey conducted by Femina & colleagues (1990) and in Federal Government investigations in the 60's and 70's, in which people elect not to tell about various life events of which they were in fact conscious. Thus he holds that *all* 38 percent of these women did know of their abuse, but elected not to disclose this incident which had prompted a hospital admission 17 years earlier.

However, in Williams' experiment, significant time was taken to establish only the highest rapport with each woman before interviewing, to counter this very contention, yet it is not clear whether Femina, et al took the same time and care to develop such a rapport

KILL SWITCH

with their sample who did admit their knowledge of the initially non-disclosed abuse during a second “clarification interview” when they were confronted with their documented histories. Further, and discordant with Pope’s position, is that out of a subsample of the 23 women who received the *highest* credibility rating by the interviewer, and with documented medical evidence of genital injury, Williams found *52 percent* did not report the abuse. It seems that those in the highest credibility group would have disclosed more often rather than less often if non-disclosure accounted for *all* 38 percent.

Finally, and to counter Pope’s statement that “a 38 percent non-disclosure rate for an embarrassing event that had occurred 17 years earlier is consistent with what one would predict,” Dr. Williams points out that of the women who elected not to tell, 68 percent told the interviewer about *other* sexual assaults. Yet it is not clear how many in Femina’s study disclosed other sexual assaults, as did in Williams’ participants.

Judith Herman, M.D. conducted a study of 53 women in group therapy (groups are often cited as a source of false memories), all of whom recovered amnesic memories of abuse, found 74% were able to find corroboration from family members, pornographic photos, or diaries. (Herman & Schatzow, 1987). Further, Herman notes that denial signifies little. Research with known pedophiles has illustrated that they often exhibit a cognitive distortion; they often deny the offense until corroboration is presented at which time, if they admit it, will then often minimize or rationalize their behavior (Horn, 1993).

Corroborated Recovered Memory Cases.

n Francis S. Van Derbur was an ambitious boy who went through college on scholarships, worked every spare minute, played piano by ear and recited poetry by heart. A former mayor of Denver once called Mr. Van Derbur “a figure in the state’s history,” and he was named the Outstanding University of Denver Alumnus for 1951. Mr. Van Derbur was an important influence on the Cleo Wallace Village for Handicapped Children, Colorado Women’s College, the University of Colorado, the Denver Center for the Performing Arts, the Civic Theater, the national Intrafraternity Council, and the Boy Scouts. His death by heart attack in 1984 made the front pages of the Denver papers, and he is interred in a mausoleum atop Mt. Lindo near a huge neon cross which he built for his mother and which is now an official Jefferson County landmark, serving as a reference point for airline passengers flying into Denver.

Perhaps the most impassioned theme for false recovered memories is that the accused are often well liked, positive, productive, even philanthropic people, such as Francis Van Derbur. It can be difficult to accept that someone of such notable character would entertain even a fleeting incestuous thought, let alone molest his children throughout childhood. Friends of his family would know no less than a beautiful family life to be envied, and family pictures are just as pristine.

Francis Van Derbur insisted that each of his four daughters, like himself, volunteer, and the youngest of his four daughters Marilyn, spent hours at the Wallace Village, serving in programs for emotionally disabled children. She had a seemingly beautiful childhood, was a popular girl with unsurpassed poise which served her well enough to become Miss America of 1958. Such a picture is not compatible with her recovered memories of incest by her father, occurring from age five *through her teens* until she left for college. Her “day child” had no awareness whatsoever of incest—until at age 24 the mere suggestion over lunch from her longtime friend and former youth group minister, Reverend D.D. Harvey,

KILL SWITCH

triggered a rush of overwhelming emotion and memories. After sobbing uncontrollably, her first words were “Don’t tell anybody.” The city of Denver did not respond with empathy or belief. Callers to talk shows asked such things as “Why should we believe her?” or “Is she just trying to be famous again?”

Corroboration arrived only three days after Marilyn went public. On May 11, Fawn Germer, of the Rocky Mountain News reported a phone interview with Gwen Mitchell, Marilyn’s oldest sister, who had moved to California to work as an attorney. Gwen said that she, too, had been sexually abused by Francis S. Van Derbur. But unlike Marilyn, *Gwen had always remembered*: The incest began when she was 7 and ended *when she was 18*. Until that moment, Gwen assumed that she was the only abused child in the family. Lenore Terr, M.D. offers a thorough and captivating narration of the family history as well as an analysis of the memory processes of Marilyn and Gwen (Terr, 1994).

Eileen Franklin Lipsker charged her father with the murder of her best childhood friend Susan Nason after recovering the memory 20 years later. Her father was found guilty and went to prison. Many have used this high profile case as a tragic example of how false memories have been used to convict an innocent man. However, to make an informed conclusion one must have the context, which I will attempt to summarize. [7]

Eileen began recovering the memory while alone on her couch one day at home watching her daughter play on the floor. When her daughter looked up and over her shoulder, pivoted her head a certain way and the sunlight shone over her freckled face, red hair, and blue eyes, she suddenly remembered something as a picture. She could see her red-headed friend Susan Nason looking up, twisting her head, and trying to catch her eye. Eileen knew that Susan was terrified. Suddenly, Eileen felt something move to one side. She saw the silhouette of her father. Both of George Franklin’s hands were raised high above his head before he struck Susan’s head with the large rock. Eileen didn’t question the content of this memory, only its long absence. She feared that if she revealed this to anyone, she would be classified insane and her children would be taken away. For months, Eileen continued retrieving pieces of the incident, but told no one. She found herself inundated with a slow but inevitable memory cascade, all of which occurred without therapy.

Eventually, the whole episode came back. Her father was a fireman and had afternoons off. One afternoon, she went off with her father on a drive after he suggested “playing hookey” from the usual after-school routine (it was during this very incident that she learned the meaning of the word “hookey”). She and her father spotted Susan playing in an open field near their house. Eileen begged Susan to come along with them in the van so she did. He drove the two girls up a mountain road past a lake that Eileen had always loved. He stopped the van, let the girls play and after a smoke and a beer told Eileen to go up front. She remembers hearing the weak cries, seeing the white socks and white children’s underwear, and at 8 years old somehow knew this was rape. She remembered being so terrified that she had rolled herself into a tight ball in the front seat. When George then took Susan out of the van, Eileen followed. At the last moment of Susan’s life, she pivoted her head to catch Eileen’s eye and the sun shone across her freckled face, red hair, and blue eyes just as it had on her own daughter’s the day her memory surfaced. As she ran back to the van, her father ordered her to forget all about this, that “No one will ever believe you” and that she would be “put away” if she told because it had been her idea for Susan to get into the van; and finally that he would kill her, too, if she didn’t stop crying. At home, she developed a bad case of the shivers and slept with her older sister, trembling all night long.

KILL SWITCH

Lenore Terr met with Eileen and eventually realized that she was a Type II trauma victim—a repeatedly traumatized child: She had *always remembered* her father's violence, throwing all five children against the walls. There were times she was certain he would kill her mother right before her eyes. Six months after her first memory returned, she saw a psychotherapist, Kirk Barrett, about her marriage problems and wondered out loud whether it was possible “for a person to have a really horrible memory of something that had never been remembered before.” Barrett assured her this could happen, but couldn't be certain whether such a memory would be real.

When she later mentioned the memory of the murder to her older brother, he was so incredulous she felt suddenly the need to endow herself with some extra credibility. “I recovered the memory under hypnosis,” she lied, but George Jr. remained skeptical. Eileen then told her mother, Leah Franklin, about her memory, and her mother was not shocked. She said that George Sr. was certainly capable of killing and it was a wonder she wasn't killed during their stormy marriage. Although Leah spent months in mental hospitals during the marriage, she entirely recovered after leaving George, subsequently remarried, attended law school, and opened a successful legal practice. When Leah asked Eileen about why the memory was gone for so long, Eileen responded “Hypnosis,” reaching once again for a magic sounding source of credibility.

Eventually she told her husband, Barry, under the condition that he promise not to tell anyone. He believed her, and then began talking to the district attorney's office, using only his first name, saying he had information about an old unsolved murder. One day, he suddenly told Eileen that she was wanted on the phone, thereby prompting her to disclose, which eventually led to the trial.

Evidence: 1) Leah washed a bloody shirt of George's shortly after the time of the murder. He explained that it was from a painting accident. Leah then asked him at that time *whether he murdered Susan Nason*. He denied it. 2) Then in 1984, six years before Eileen's memory, her sister Janice—the third member of the family to independently consider George's involvement—actually went to the Foster City police to accuse her father of the killing. When the police called her on the phone, George answered the call, said she was unavailable, and after hanging up, kicked her so hard in the base of the spine that her back hurt for weeks, and she kept quiet from then on. 3) Eileen eventually recovered memories of her own sexual victimization by her father—explaining her implicit understanding of rape at age 8 *and* her access to dissociative abilities. The case was so strong for Eileen's sexual abuse that the defense accepted these charges. Further along this line, Eileen and Barry had cut off all communication with her father two years prior—due to his inappropriate actions around their own daughter and his sexual perversion about kids in general. Moreover, the D.A.'s men found George living out his retirement in a Sacramento apartment “filled to the brim” with child-size dildos, child pornography, and books on incest. However, note that any mention of this evidence would have so prejudiced the jury that it was ordered out by preliminary judicial ruling. 4) The defense attempted to show that Eileen could have acquired her many details from newspaper articles. Eileen testified under oath that she had not read the papers detailing Susan's murder (she was only 8 at the time), yet her recollection included many accurate details: the size of the rock, location of the blow to the head, “some hair that was no longer attached to her body,” Susan's injured hand and crushed ring, and more. As a child, Eileen became withdrawn after Susan's disappearance. She began pulling at her hair at the same location where Susan had received the

KILL SWITCH

horrible blow—it is common for survivors of trauma to unconsciously repeat elements of the traumatic events (Terr, 1994). 5) Finally, the jury verdict was “guilty”—beyond a reasonable doubt—even without any consideration of the pedophile paraphernalia found in George Franklin’s apartment.

Herald v. Hood, C.A. No. 15986 (Court of Appeals of Ohio, July 21, 1993). Julie Herald sued her uncle in 1989 alleging sexual abuse from age 3 (in 1962) through age 15. The memory returned when Herald was watching her 4-year-old daughter playing with a friend. She was awarded \$150,000 in compensatory damages and \$5 million in punitive damages. The Ohio Supreme Court recently upheld the decision. Herald presented a taped telephone conversation in which her uncle indicated his guilt, and two therapists testified about the confession he made in their presence. The case has been covered in the Plain Dealer since December 17, 1993.

Pfiefle v. Hustwaite, No. 98-2-00044-8 (King County Superior Court, Seattle, 1991). Mentioned in Anastasia Toufexis, “Can Memories be Trusted?” Time Magazine, October 28, 1991). Ms. Pfiefle received \$1.4 million from her church-run school in settlement of her recovered memory claim that a teacher repeatedly raped and sodomized her two decades earlier. According to Verdicts, Settlements & Tactics, “discovery revealed several other victims whose testimony was helpful in establishing that the Seventh Day Adventist defendants should have known of the teacher’s propensities.”

From the St. Petersburg Times, March 6, 1994: “Frank Leonard of Fort Lauderdale said that therapy in 1992 helped him recover memories of sexual abuse in the 1960s by his uncle, Tampa publishing executive Frank Louis Cowles Jr. Records were produced showing that Cowles had been convicted in 1959 of sexually abusing young boys in Clearwater, and had been sentenced to probation and counseling. According to the lawsuit, Leonard’s uncle admitted the abuse and then killed himself after a confrontation. Leonard won a settlement from Cowles’ estate.”

Jane Doe v. Budge (Case No. NWC 10610; Van Nuys, California) Verdict date: January 15, 1993. The case was originally tried in 1989; this was a retrial on the question of punitive damages. Plaintiff (age 26) alleged sexual abuse 14 years earlier. “Defendant admitted to a few acts, but denied most allegations. Defendant also argued that he had changed his life since the incident.” Verdict in the amount of \$1.25 million—nine day trial; jury deliberations: 1 hour, 10 minutes.

In the spring of 1992 in Providence, R.I., John Robitaille heard a news report about Father James Porter, a pedophile priest, and suddenly recalled that he, too, was his victim. His *specific* memories were confirmed by two classmates. Porter later pleaded guilty to molesting 28 of the 153 reported victims. Harvard psychiatrist Stuart Grassian surveyed 43 of them in 1993 and found another 8—or 19 percent—who reported no memories of the childhood abuse *until* the case broke in the media. Others reported years of forgetting (Butler, 1996). Suggestive therapy was keenly absent in these recovered memory cases.

In 1992, a 26 year-old Michigan police clerk, who, again was not in therapy, was typing probation reports about child sexual abuse cases when she remembered being abused at the age of 8 in Ohio by her mother’s boyfriend. Ohio police detectives eventually tracked down former child psychologist David A. Hoffman in Poughkeepsie, N.Y. He confessed in 1994 and was sentenced to two years in prison. Hoffman had also been convicted of sexually abusing children at a New York State children’s home in 1986 (Butler,

KILL SWITCH

1996).

To further contend the typecast of recovered memories limited to middle-class white women in suggestive therapy, is a 1995 survey by psychologist Diana Elliott of UCLA. Elliott surveyed a group of 505 randomly selected, demographically balanced men and women across the country of all races. An astonishing 72 percent said they had witnessed or endured a serious trauma, such as combat, assault, serious car accident, mugging, natural disaster, rape, child sexual abuse, or drive-by shooting. Of those victimized 15 percent (55) reported a period of total amnesia; of that relatively small minority, only 8 were in therapy when their memories returned. Most recollection was triggered by a book or media event like Oprah Winfrey's TV show, by an incident reminiscent of the original trauma or by talking to family members. *Combat veterans were more likely to report memories triggered by therapy than were sexual abuse victims.* Although Elliott did not confirm the accuracy of these various memories, that would have been a much larger and more invasive task than the original survey (Butler, 1996).

A recovered memory case typical of those categorically dismissed by false memory activists involves Chereese Franklin of Salt Lake City. Franklin entered therapy in 1992 for panic attacks. Using a technique suggested to contact her "inner child," she used her left hand to record detailed memories of seemingly unbelievable abuse by a teenage cousin, Kenton Stevenson. Her vivid journal entries included bizarre accounts of being raped with sticks, being stuffed into the carcass of a dead deer and being made to watch her cousin mutilate a rabbit. Were it not for corroboration, FMS advocates might use this case as evidence of false memories through suggestive therapy. Indeed, both the memory-recovery technique and the sadistic, seemingly preposterous content would elicit at least some skepticism by most critical thinkers. But after recording her memories in a *dated* journal, Franklin hired a private detective, found Stevenson's former wife and learned that Stevenson had been found to have abused his own children as well. At a trial in August 1996, Stevenson's 16 year-old daughter testified that her father had sexually abused her. A stepdaughter testified he had *mutilated animals* in front of her. The accounts were supported by a 1986 Family Court divorce and custody ruling, finding that Stevenson had sexually abused his son and two daughters, and had *raped one with a coat hanger*. A Salt Lake City jury awarded Chereese Franklin \$750,000. The verdict suggests that, in some court cases, the presence of substantial external corroboration may outweigh suspicions about the therapeutic techniques involved or the bizarreness of the reported abuse (Butler, 1996).

In 1996, a 39 year-old Toronto woman identified only as D.M.M., while involved with Alcoholics Anonymous, recovered memories of being repeatedly abused by her family doctor. She had returned to Toronto where the abuse took place, and was writing in a journal in 1991 when her memories poured onto the page. Last March, a provincial justice ordered Leo Pilo, M.D., to pay her \$95,000—despite the testimony of FMSF advisory board member and psychiatrist, Harold Merskey, M.D., who suggested that D.M.M. was probably suffering from "false memories." However, D.M.M.'s accusations were supported by four other women who said Pilo had sexually abused them in childhood, too. Pilo's medical license had been previously revoked in a separate proceeding in which he admitted the women's charges (Butler, 1996).

Ross Cheit, a lawyer and ethics professor, recovered memories of childhood sexual abuse by a camp counselor. These memories were externally verified not only by fellow campers, but also by the, albeit rationalizing, camp founder and the offender himself (Horn,

KILL SWITCH

1993). In my correspondence with Cheit, he contests a recent minimizing of his case in a book by Harvard memory researcher Daniel Schacter. According to Schacter, Cheit's incident probably wasn't traumatic and therefore is less evidential of traumatic amnesia; Schacter mischaracterized his case by distorting a quote of Cheit. Schacter also claims that there is a lack of corroboration for more horrific abuse which occurred over many years. However, as noted in several other cases within this section, as well as in the case of "Rene," by the Irelands (1994) (described in the SRA corroboration section), and others still, there is in fact substantial corroboration for the more horrific long-term recovered memories as well.

David Calof (1993) answers the key objections of proponents of the False Memory movement and explains in his article that therapist-induced suggestion is by far the exception to recovered memory. *1)* In his article, Calof tells the initially unbelievable stories of two of his over 400 clients during his 20 years as a clinician who have recovered memories of sexual abuse and were able to corroborate them apart from the denying, but eventually confessing offenders (Calof, 1993). *2)* Calof describes his initial skepticism—6 years of disbelieving his first SRA client's memories. He later corroborated the case by *two others*, one an eye-witness and the other a *victim of the same perpetrators 15 years later* in the same small town (Calof, 1994).

Only Remaining Argument: False narrative memories. As Paul McHugh noted in the FMS Newsletter in response to the Linda Williams Research (Williams, 1993), the existence of delayed memories does not preclude the existence of false ones. This is the final attestation to the otherwise conclusive evidence validating recovered memory, as well as the key distinction between the malleable normal memories and the inflexible traumatic-type memory. A survey of those who recover memories in therapy would quite likely show that virtually all possess the indicative symptoms of dissociated traumatic memory, versus the narrative memory distortions described by the FMS supporters.

Conditionless Responses?

Martin Smith (1987, 1992) has identified a chain of three levels of conditioned memories and cognitions: everyday anxieties and worries (third order); obsessions, dreams, taboos, and phobias (second order); and the first order of conditioned responses of terror, rage, dread and despair. To believe in false memories, we must know how a non-conditioned (suggested or non-suggested) stimulus can transcend all three orders of conditioned responses. In other words, can a memory be "planted" and then escalate to terror and panic-based responses at nearly reflex levels of consciousness without any such conditioning? Can mere inadvertent suggestion infuse death terror? To accept false memories, we might seek to know how panic responses triggered by everyday items and experiences can co-exist in the same subconscious mind which merely created the memories in the first place.

The Foundation of the FMS Foundation.

Perhaps most significant on the topic of false memory is that the very title "False Memory Syndrome" was coined by the co-founder of the FMS Foundation, Dr. Ralph Underwager, a psychologist and director of the Institute for Psychological Therapies in Northfield, MN. In addition to resigning from his position in the Foundation for his indifference and/or approval of "adult-child sexual relations" in an interview printed in the winter 1993 issue of *Paidika*, a propedophilia Dutch Journal, eight states have investigated him for his performance as a professional expert witness.

Via his "expertise," he was instrumental in the acquittal of, among others, an Austra-

KILL SWITCH

lian daycare in which approximately 20 children were allegedly abused. In this case, he successfully barred the testimonies of the 4 to 8 year old child victims due to their “inability to form an opinion of right and wrong.” He also disqualified blatant medical evidence from the trial, which included such injuries as anal tearing. When he was later interviewed by the Australian equivalent of *60 Minutes*, he denied having made the statements they quoted him as making. The interviewer then presented the court transcripts, at which time Dr. Underwager ended the interview and said to the interviewer, “Sir, you are the most despicable human being I have ever met!” Further, he has required that his clients sign a contract to pay all legal fees if he is sued for lying on the stand (Calof, 1994).

The other co-founder and present director of the FMSF is Dr. Pamela Freyd, who claims to be the wife of a falsely accused husband. Her daughter, Jennifer, a psychology professor specializing in memory, realized that her two years of silence was being framed by the media as complicity with her parents’ claims of false memory. She reluctantly went public to counter her mother’s widespread inferences of substantiated false memories, thus setting the record straight that she had *not* retracted her memories nor her private accusations of sexual abuse (Mitchell, 1993 & Calof, 1994).

By the phrasing of the recruitment question, “Do you know of someone who was falsely accused?” the False Memory Syndrome Foundation is making an unscientific blanket assumption that all denied accusations are false.

Media Influence.

Many are skeptical about the existence of SRA simply because if it was real, why wouldn’t they have heard more unsensationalized news reports about it? The media has both downplayed the actual findings, such as the McMartin tunnels, while sensationalizing the “falsely accused” along side survivor accounts.

Contrarily, the false memory movement *has* received media attention, further shaping public opinion away from belief of the unbelievable. As an example, twenty articles from across the country on the topic of False Memory Syndrome were recently analyzed for content and were found to be lifted directly out of publicity releases from the FMS Foundation (Calof, 1994) with validity assumed categorically. The mass media is undoubtedly left in a difficult position and must rely on information from its sources; however, it is irresponsible journalism not to portray both sides of a debate bearing such profound implications.

5. HISTORIC CONSISTENCY OF SRA

Some have suggested that our cultural demonology (legendary cultural symbols of evil, e.g., witches, skeletons, hauntings, etc.), when combined with patient suggestibility results in SRA reports (Stevens, 1992). The following records show that the opposite is more likely true: Traditional practices maintain an unbroken progression of various occult activities through time, including satanic ritual abuse.

19th and 20th Century Records.

Many have proposed the view that a “Satanic Mass Hysteria” began in the early 1980’s with the publication of *Michelle Remembers* and the McMartin Preschool trial. However, note that these cases did not comprise the beginning of such reports, but take their place in an age old continuum of both overt and covert occult practices which often involved respected citizens. The sudden publicity of these cases is most likely due to a larger cultural readiness to accept such previously ignored disclosures (see False Memory section for more background on this cultural change).

KILL SWITCH

In 1934, a scholarly treatise was published “intended for circulation only among members of the learned professions, mature scholars of the sexual sciences and other educated adults.” French Professors Emile Laurent and Paul Nagour, trace the history of Black Magic and erotic occultism. Pulling from “all the fleeting pages of history,” the authors describe widespread practices of the Black Mass and erotic occultism from the 12th century to the early 20th century:

“...there are numerous societies throughout the world that celebrate Satanism and which are highly organized...The biggest of these societies founded as long ago as 1855 is the society of the Re-Theurgistes Optimates. Beneath an apparent unity it is divided into two camps, one aspiring to destroy the universe and the other thinking simply of imposing upon the world a demoniac cult of which it shall be high priest. The society has its seat in America...For a long time it has had branches in France, Italy, Germany, Prussia, Austria, and even Turkey” (p. 82-83).

The book is replete with numerous illustrations of sexual torture and abuse as a part of Satanic rites going back to the middle ages. Consider the “abominable practices” of a certain Abbe Guibourg, for example:

“He celebrated many masses on the abdomens of famous women . . . The ritual of these ceremonies became standardized. Generally, a child was kidnapped and burnt in a furnace out in the country somewhere, the ashes were saved and mixed with the blood of another child whose throat had been cut, and of this mixture a paste was made...That was the material of the sacrament.” (p. 79).

In 1930, the famous American psychiatrist, Karl Menninger, describes hearing contemporary accounts of the Black Mass and erotic occultism, including child sacrifice. Intended for medical students, this book found a wide market and was the first book to popularize psychiatry in America. Menninger observes:

“One of the most curious examples of perversion is found in the Black Mass, which I am told is celebrated in Paris and New York city and probably in all other large cities, though an attempt is made to keep the rite absolutely secret...In the common version, on the altar is a naked body of a woman. The celebrant is a deposed priest...The service follows the Christian Mass, either Roman or Anglican, making it blasphemous in every place possible. The members of the congregation are naked throughout the service and at the engage in both normal and abnormal sex relations. Sometimes, it is alleged, the blood or the ashes of a murdered child are used in the ceremony.” (Menninger, 1930).

Aleister Crowley is a name recognized around the world as a deceased leader of the occult. *Passport Magazine* (1986) describes how Crowley maintained a lifelong attitude of setting himself up in god’s place. The article describes Crowley’s involvement in similar activities:

“For a time, he lived with disciples at the Abbey of Thelema...near Cefalu in Sicily, Italy. Satanism was practiced at the abbey and animal sacrifices were offered up to the devil by the men and women who lived there. After finding out about the black magic rituals taking place at the abbey, the Italian government investigated and discovered that human infants born to the disciples were also being killed in rituals. Crowley was expelled from Italy.” (*Passport Magazine*, 1986).

In 1836, the book *Awful disclosures of the Hotel Dieu Nunnery of Montreal* sold 300,000 copies and prompted numerous others to come forward with accounts of similar experi-

KILL SWITCH

ences. It was written by a woman who described her escape from a cult that bred babies for sacrifice. (Johnson & Padella, 1991).

Pre-Inquisition Records.

Further back in history yet are the results of a survey conducted by Hill and Goodwin (1989) of pre-inquisition historical documents describing Satanism and satanic practices. They compiled a list of 11 elements of satanic ritual: (1) secret nocturnal feasting around a special table or altar; (2) ritual orgiastic sex involving incest, homosexuality, and anal intercourse; (3) imitations and reversals of the Christian mass; (4) ritual use of blood, semen, urine, or excrement; (5) sacrifice of embryos and infants often using knives followed by cooking in a cauldron and/or ritual cannibalism; (6) ritual use of animals; (7) ritual use of torches, candles, and darkness; (8) chanting, especially of names of demons; (9) drinking a drug or potion; (10) dancing backwards in a circle or other ritual use of the circle; and (11) dismemberment of corpses and extraction of the heart. Although Hill and Goodwin do not suggest that this historical evidence proves that patients' reports of ritual abuse by satanic cults are true, they do suggest that this be considered for further investigation. They also acknowledge that credibility is a key issue in the treatment of survivors of extreme childhood trauma and abuse. It is interesting to note how the elements they list correlate with the abuses reported in the attached surveys.

Biblical Records.

Additionally, there are numerous biblical references specifically to the pagan practice of child sacrifice to demons/ false gods, spanning thousands of years. Read in the Old Testament Psalm 106:36-39, Deut. 12:31 with 32:17; II Chron. 28:1-4, Isa. 57:3-8, Lev. 18:21, Ezek. 16:20-21, and Jer. 19:4-5, supported much later in the New Testament by I Cor. 10:20. In Psalm 106:36-39, king David told of the lamentable deeds of those who had worshipped false gods:

"They worshipped their idols, which became a snare to them. They sacrificed their sons and their daughters to demons. They shed innocent blood, the blood of their sons and daughters, whom they sacrificed to the idols of Canaan, and the land was desecrated by their blood. They defiled themselves by what they did; by their deeds they prostituted themselves."

David's people had their struggles with demon worship, as even his own descendant became involved a few generations later:

"Ahaz was twenty years old when he became king, and he reigned in Jerusalem sixteen years. Unlike David his father, he did not do what was right in the eyes of the Lord. He walked in the ways of the kings of Israel and also made cast idols for worshipping the Baals. He burned sacrifices in the Valley of Ben Hinnom and sacrificed his sons in the fire, following the detestable ways of the nations the Lord had driven out before the Israelites (2 Chron 28:1-4)."

It therefore is very possible that the *historical* satanic ritual activity is at least the origin of both our culture's general demonology and SRA as well.

The Constants.

Constant: Power and control.

Although the ancient pagan cultural atmospheres may have been quite different than our western culture surrounding today's SRA, the central theme has remained constant through nearly all occult and pagan religions: Power and/or control (real or perceived) may be attained through certain pagan rituals and mystical methodologies. This is in stark

KILL SWITCH

contrast to the Judeo-Christian faiths which place the self in subordination to God; the self is subservient to an infinite *God* whose ultimate glory will prevail (Psalms 34, Ps. 46:10, I Cor 10:31, Eph. 3:20-21, etc.). Judeo-Christian religions oppose any spiritual activities prescribed to bring pleasure or benefit apart from God's provision (Lev. 19:26, II Chron. 33:1-6, Acts 16:16-18, Gal. 5:20). Christians trust that through the demonstration of His self-sacrificial love (via Jesus), this provision for us will be grand indeed. SRA is clearly anti-Judeo-Christian, not only in behavior, but in its very purpose to (temporarily) fulfill a power-hungry self at great expense to others.

Although SRA activity is considered a deviant/pathological behavior, survivors claim the same philosophy as is shared with the pagan/occult religions throughout time. To reapply Virginia Doland's wording (Doland, 1992, p. 339) "the fundamental meaning may be more complex than its literal surface," SRA occurs not simply to be hateful or to terrorize children, but more profoundly as a self-perpetuating cycle of abuse including an addiction to a methodology of pursuing *power and control*.

Constant: Human Nature.

The Bible consistently demonstrates how human nature does not change very much. Throughout the Old Testament, Israel repeatedly abandoned God to participate in the, albeit overt, pagan practices (which included child sacrifice) even while they recorded God's miraculous signs and wonders occurring every few generations. The New Testament also supports the concept that human nature is a constant (Matt. 23:25-39, Luke 11:29-54, Acts 8:51-53, and Rom 1:18-23 & Rom 3:9-23). Thus, since human nature has apparently remained constant, some people in today's Judeo-Christian based societies would likewise also abandon God for the very same purpose of seeking forbidden gratification, real or perceived.

Constant: Power via addiction to sexualized evil.

If this gratification is sufficient to perpetuate the existence of child-sacrifice for thousands of years, from the days of Moses into the early 20th century, perhaps it is sufficient to perpetuate its existence even today among people who are similarly bound to just such a multigenerational addiction to power through sex and death rituals. Although not necessary, it is much easier to accept this if one holds the biblical concepts of a sinful human nature, Satan, and demons (see Job chs. 1-2, Zech. 3:1-2, II Cor. 11:14, esp. Eph. 6:10-18 and throughout Matthew, Mark, Luke, and John), who are able to supply immediate gratification through sin which is in conflict with the spiritual life described in the Bible (Rom. 8:5-9, Gal. 5:16-25). Further, Matt.14:8-9 implies Satanic rewards for Satanic worship.

6. ALTERNATE EXPLANATIONS CONSIDERED

In the skeptical literature, there exists a variety of proposed alternatives to explain the existence of this "mass hysteria." Each author discussed below employs various combinations of the following explanations to discredit all SRA claims:

- (1) SRA disclosures were nonexistent before the 80's**
- (2) Therapist ("iatrogenic") creation of MPD**
- (3) Screen memories for other real traumas**
- (4) Social Scapegoat Theories:**
 - a. Parental guilt over daycare**
 - b. Fundamentalist "moral crusade"**
 - c. Conservative response to Feminist movement**

KILL SWITCH

d. Decline of communism requires a new evil

(5) Social theories such as Group Polarization (group conclusions are more drastic than any one member of the group)

(6) Exposure to, or suggestion of SRA specifics:

- a. McMartin daycare case (the first one)
- b. Books, chiefly *Michelle Remembers*
- c. Innate cultural symbols of evil (“demonology”)
- d. Therapist suggestion (direct or implied)

(7) Incompetence of those making SRA claims:

- a. Pre-existing mental instability of those reporting SRA
- b. Financial/Reputation gain of therapists treating survivors

Skeptical professionals and journalists elaborate on various combinations of the above explanations, and in many cases have misrepresented the survivor population and ignored significant corroboration to support their objective of debunking all SRA. In the process, they avoid the definitive contexts of the victims and others personally involved, yet presenting such explanatory backgrounds is counterproductive to their purposes of discrediting all accounts.

Skeptics tend toward several methods for achieving this end: a search is made for incidents to exaggerate into *ad hominem* labels of persons, assigned such that informants' and therapists' entire personhoods are confined to a particular negative incident, devoid of any personal context (“psychotic break and alcoholism” used by both Nathan and Lotto to fully discredit Judy Johnson, the McMartin whistleblower; see footnote under Corroborative Evidence for context). Secondly, corroborative evidence is minimized or severely mischaracterized, if sought at all. Writers have insufficient involvement with those on the victim's side to make an accurate “diagnosis” of FMS, and have little-to-no relevant background with any *known* offenders to qualify them as discerning their innocence. And third, items from survivor accounts are simply listed in a tone of repugnance, presenting a form of peer pressure by inferring the gullibility of any reader who would believe in such things. There seems to be an inherent negation in the mere *listing* of the abuse claims and personal labels.

Blanket Assumptions. The skeptical literature turns several important observations into blanket assumptions. One such assumption is that there were no reports before the 1980s, implying that the concept had not yet been *invented*. As we have seen in the previous section, this is incorrect; these reports have persisted over hundreds of years, into early this century and of course continue today. The dramatic increase in reports since the 1980s, not their invention, should be the topic of investigation. Even this dramatic rise in disclosures must be examined *within the context* of the enormous shifts in the cultural perceptions of child abuse and the broad acceptance of counseling.

Society's Shift. The shameful stigma of being sexually abused is continuing to be transformed from a freak-type disposition to painfully common in all demographics. Alongside this, the stigma of counseling in general has nearly evaporated. Society at large has become much more accepting of the validity of counseling not only for marriage problems, but for personal growth as well.

Psychotherapy's Shift. Therapists' capacity to believe such accounts has paral-

KILL SWITCH

leled the reporting of them. Not only are therapists open to patients' accounts of such trauma, but they typically offer much more hope for healing and treatment of childhood trauma. The atmosphere between professionals has also evolved considerably to validate each others' cases, allowing consultations and comparisons of such cases that were previously considered too paranormal to treat. Finally, three decades ago, when the more general images were not initially accepted, the threat of institutionalization prevented the flow of any such details from all but the most severely disordered dissociative patient. Such accounts were likely considered delusionary and patients reporting them were under risk of the label "insane," lengthy hospitalizations, and anti-psychotic medications, from even the best-meaning psychiatrists, who were incapable of belief and/or sufficient treatment of childhood trauma.

Debbie Nathan (1987, 1990, 1993, 1994)

Debbie Nathan was perhaps the first journalist to offer in-depth alternate explanations for the emergence of SRA allegations. She won the H.L. Mencken Award for Investigative Journalism for presenting socially parallel explanations (comprised of above items 1, 4, 6, and 7), in her 1987 work, "The Making of a Modern Witch Trial" (Nathan, 1987). In this article, she presents an articulate social argument against the criminal convictions of two women in her same town of El Paso, arrested on similar charges. She attributes this SRA case along with eight others across the country, all of which involved women (and men), to the McMartin case. She presumes the women must be innocent, and that each of these cases is a strategic reaction from Reaganite 80's conservatives against the feminist movement with the daycares as the obvious scapegoat. In all of her articles, she dismisses the children's claims chiefly by citing them. She then offers an alternate explanation in rhetorical parallels.

In her 1990 article, she blamed the McMartin case on the psychotic allegations of Judy Johnson, apparently without investigation into the context of her illness (discussed in footnote 4). She then cited the publication of the book *Michelle Remembers* as an explanation for how "large numbers of literate, secular people" were duped into a Christian fundamentalist "paranoia about Satanism," and that co-author Lawrence Pazder met with police and parents in the early days of the case, thereby concluding that the ritual abuse details came from grown-ups through suggestion to the children. Psychiatrist, Dr. Roland Summit, became involved on the victim side of the case offers quite another account. As a participant-observer, he asserts the correct order of events, describing that it was only *after* children had been growling obscenities and death threats in half-awake nightmares and telling their naive parents and therapists similar stories about costumes, ceremonies, chants, bloodshed, and death that parents and police looked to out-of-town experts who could offer some form of explanation. Dr. Pazder came not to introduce these concepts, but to explain and empathize.

In Nathan's (1993) articles dismissing the Country Walk daycare case in Miami, she ignores all the documentation in the 592 page account of Jan Hollingsworth, who, again, *lived in* the community, and participated in the case—a much different account than Nathan's.

Perhaps her most aggressive dismissal is her pre-publication internet post of her now recent book, *Satan's Silence*. She titled this post *McMartin Preschool Tunnels: Evidence of a Hoax*. Although she cites Summit's and Faller's 1994 articles at the beginning of her text, she misrepresents many of the claims described in these same two articles. She be-

KILL SWITCH

gins by adversely labeling each person involved, leaving out any background which would fully explain each of these items. Secondly, she misrepresents the findings so as to contradict both what the children had reported and what was actually unearthed. Specifically, she compares one child's *pre-dig* description of a 10'x10' secret room with the dimensions of the excavated tunnel—with no mention of the room of the said size that *was also excavated* as described in Summit's article, which she references.

She also omits Summit's eye-witness description of how the tunnels *did not* conform to plumbing trenches, and to the contrary cites contractors who, without inspection, said the tunnels "*sounded like* channels dug for plumbing," again the opposite of what was printed in the article she cites. She also conveniently excludes from her take on Summit's article: all tunnel-specific findings, including the contrast in soil in the tunnel compared to the soil surrounding it; hand shovel marks found along the tunnel walls, and the mechanical backhoe marks which were confined to the alternately described utility trenches. Neither does she mention from Coulbourn-Faller's article that 2,000 artifacts were excavated, including 100 animal bones, coinciding with children's reports of the killing of animals.

She then concludes that parents planted all the artifacts, based on no more than a confusing incident five years earlier (March 1985). A group of parents (who were not involved with the later tunnel excavation project) dug up two turtle shells found with green leaves in the hole, followed 9 days later by the discovery of a 3"x5" map-note of the vacant lot, inside a toy box in the preschool displaying the location of the two turtle shells. She concludes that whoever planted the turtle shells left the note for the digging parents. Although the turtle shells appear to have been planted (because of the green leaves), it is unclear who planted them or wrote the note. There would be an equally strong motive (of the defense) to discredit any future findings from those most motivated to look. Such an odd incident comprises a more than convenient fail-safe by cracking open the door of doubt on any and all evidence that would someday turn up, no matter how otherwise conclusive.

Nathan also states that one of the preschool children (Jackie McGauley's daughter) has a so-called "history" of false accusations since McMartin, and thereby concludes that the original McMartin accusations were thus also falsified. According to Nathan, McGauley had a close relationship with a young reporter who was diligently cooperating with McGauley to write about the McMartin case as it unfolded, until suddenly McGauley's daughter accused this reporter of sexual abuse, ruining his promising career.

I spoke with Jackie McGauley over the phone in September 1996, and found her to be a very coherent positive person, quite different than Nathan's description. She had not read any of Nathan's articles (at Dr. Summit's suggestion) and explained among many other things how this reporter was in fact no more than a roommate with McGauley and her two children. In fact, she was not even aware that this reporter was covering the McMartin case at all. When she sought medical attention for her daughter who was experiencing severe pain, it was apparent to the doctor that she was being sexually abused, and when the doctor asked who had done this, both her daughter and her son reluctantly disclosed that this roommate had abused them. Further, as McGauley was moving his belongings out of her residence, she found a box of child pornographic photos belonging to the man.

The reporter was eventually tried, found guilty, and served time for molestation. McGauley says that as her children disclosed this, she struggled deeply about whether or not to press charges, and "just wanted to do the right thing." In retrospect, she says that she

KILL SWITCH

may not have pursued allegations if she knew how much unfair exposure this was going to give her family. Nathan's account again diverges sharply from that of the victim's. In asking Jackie about the disparity between Nathan's articles and her own experience, she answers that she won't talk to Nathan. Similarly, in my conversations with Dr. Summit and with Beth Vargo (president of Believe the Children), they have each said the same out of a confirmed fear that she will misquote and mischaracterize them, leaving little recourse on their part.

Finally, she discredits the archeologist, Gary Stickel, Ph.D., a graduate of the UCLA school of archeology, because he has retained his 185 page report, comparing this to other "California archeologists" who make their work available for peer review. Again, Jackie McGauley described to me how the tunnel project unfolded, that several parents contacted Dr. Stickel who headed a team of eight archeologists on the project and that after the tunnel discovery, McGauley was left to pay for half of the project herself. She also explained that archeologists are more than welcome to review the report, but that there haven't been any requests. She says this is most likely due to the more social ramifications than archeological, and that there just hasn't been the interest. As of this writing, the report has yet to be published, due to a lack of funds.

The reports of other archeologists are first, typically their employer's property, and second, not usually subjected to such hostile scrutiny, but in this case, the report has remained in private hands until the funds are available for large scale publication.

One must keep in mind that parallel social concepts combined with biased representations of SRA doesn't necessarily establish any link whatsoever. Although when evidence is selectively ignored or misrepresented when it cannot be ignored, a link may appear quite convincing.

Lawrence Wright (1993)

In the very complex Ingram SRA case of 1988 in Olympia, Washington, a curious-to-skeptical professor, Richard Ofshe from UC Berkeley, CA, conducted an experiment on Paul Ingram in which he falsely advised Ingram that his son and daughter were disclosing that he had forced them to have sex together. Ingram then elaborated on this (relatively not so far-fetched) event. Further, Wright discredits the daughters throughout the article not only via their inconsistent reports and behavior, but also in his descriptions of their extreme emotional states. One of the daughters had implicated even one of her strongest supporters as a member of the cult. Near the end of the article, he quotes one of the daughters on *Sallie Jessy Raphael* daytime talk show blatantly contradicting a medical exam that had previously found no scars on her back, and claiming to have spent most of her life in hospitals.

Before commenting, it is significant to note both the uniqueness in this case and the biased portrayal, from both Wright's and Ofshe's articles and their publishers. Wright's article was written from the point of view of Paul Ingram, which is an obvious bias, especially since *he* didn't write it; and *The International Journal of Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis* refused to print any of several rejoinders countering much of the material presented in Ofshe's article (Calof, 1994).

First of all, throughout the investigation Ingram used a hypothetical past tense in his confessions (e.g., "I *would* have opened the door..."), which may have been an intentional tool to appear coerced to the point of incompetence. If it was intentional, it obviously back-

KILL SWITCH

fired in the end. Second, Wright's descriptions of the two daughters portrayed not only extreme swings of emotional states, but several of his descriptions of their states closely resembled very young child alters of MPD. Not to employ circular logic, but only correlation: On the *Raphael* show, the high degree of blatancy in the daughter's contradictions is unusual enough to also be characteristic of MPD alters, rather than implicating her as a vicious liar slandering her father and his friends. Further still, when the reporter tracked down Paul Jr., Ingram's son, without knowledge of the extent of the accusations against his father, guessed they were sexual offenses, and proceeded to cite a time when he was 10 or 11, which *he had always remembered*: His father nearly knocked him out after he happened upon his parents and three of his father's friends in an orgy-rape, during which his mother was tied to the bed, a rather indicative activity.

Ofshe's Role in Ingram Case.

Sociologist Richard Ofshe, in spite of his employment with the prosecution, during his first day on the case devised an experiment intended to prove that false memories had been created in Ingram. Ofshe told Ingram falsely that his daughter and son had alleged that they were forced to have sex together, something not too far from Ingram's voluntary confession (Peterson, 1990). Ofshe concluded that the inadvertent use of hypnosis during Ingram's interrogation (supposedly the result of relaxation techniques used by the interrogation team's psychologist), when coupled with the influence exerted by authority figures, convinced Ingram of his guilt (Ofshe, 1992). However, Ingram's initial confession to having sex with both of his daughters (some of which he described in graphic detail, Peterson, 1990) occurred on the same day the initial allegations surfaced, *before* he met with the interrogation team's psychologists, and without the use of any relaxation techniques. Despite Ingram's 16 years' experience as a law enforcement officer and prior knowledge of the pending charges, Ingram waived his right to an attorney, a very strong indication of his immediate sense of guilt.

Despite the fact that Paul Ingram was not in therapy and that all the "mental health professionals" that Ofshe cited were part of the prosecution's interrogation team, Ofshe indicts mental health professionals for "Influencing their clients to find 'memories' that the therapists believe to be buried in the client's unconscious" (p. 153). Ofshe has not limited his claims to brainwashing, but has generalized them to explain the majority of sexual abuse disclosures by adult survivors *and* accounts of ritual abuse (Goleman, 1992; Meacham, 1993; Watters, 1993; Wright, 1993; Olio & Cornell, 1994b), *even though nothing in Ofshe's experiment was designed to determine the veracity of ritual abuse claims*. In summary, it is clear that Dr. Ofshe was not an objective scientist stumbling across a surprising discovery as Wright (1993a,b) portrays him to be. (Olio & Cornell, 1994a).

Parrott and Perrin (1993)

In a *Christianity Today* article dismissing SRA as rumor-based, authors Parrott and Perrin (1993) make two important observations: 1) They infer a red flag due to 90% of the survivor population being female. Gender respect issues aside, since neither author is a therapist, they may be unaware that historically 90% of all counseling clients have been female. 2) They also call attention to the fact that supposed survivors almost always begin counseling for unrelated reasons such as depression or anxiety, recovering SRA memories only after beginning therapy. However, just because one begins counseling for a particular presenting reason, doesn't invalidate the underlying more private problems and pain

KILL SWITCH

uncovered. Further, this observation is once again consistent with the DSM explanation of dissociative disorders. Accordingly, the personality that presents itself for treatment may have little or no knowledge of the existence of other personalities. Those who were able to dissociate the severe abuse successfully, such as with MPD, are also able to function successfully in society and are able to admit their need for counseling when problems arise, although since these people were able to dissociate successfully, they are not usually aware of the other personalities or of the SRA at the onset of counseling. On the other hand, those who were not able to dissociate the abuse can develop character disorders, and may become narcissistic, not willing to admit they have problems (Peck, 1983), and/or perhaps become the next generation of perpetrators.

Passantino & Passantino

The Passantinos, skeptics of SRA, well advised in their article that “because something is possible, that does not mean that it is true” (Passantino & Passantino, 1992, p. 301). Note that this doesn’t mean something *isn’t* true either; rather, and to quote them again, “we must exercise critical thinking in what we choose to believe” (p. 302). Of course, we must also exercise critical thinking in what we choose *not* to believe. We need to examine all information, not just the results of formal law enforcement investigations. An intelligent person *can* rationally conclude SRA exists to some degree without being categorized as “gullible” (p. 301).

Later in their article, they described those who believe in the validity of some reports of SRA as “pro-sensationalists” and that the SRA believers’ advice to the skeptics is “Believe the stories because there’s not evidence,” inferring that the primary source for belief is that “there’s not evidence” (p. 305), or at best they believe simply because it is too bizarre to be made up. Perhaps there are some “gullible” people who do take this approach, but this description is untrue for the vast majority of laity and professionals *experienced* with SRA survivors, who believe, not just because it was convincingly claimed, but because of the internal and external consistencies.

Phillip Stevens, Jr.

One explanation that openly accounts for the similarities in victim accounts is Phillip Stevens’ article, “Universal Cultural Elements in the Satanic Demonology,” (in which a demonology is defined as a set of legendary cultural symbols of evil, e.g., witches, skeletons, hauntings, etc.). However, he regularly made the leap from theoretical to factual to support his conclusions. On page 240, he states *as if fact*: “the satanic rumors constitute a Christian form of a widespread *legend type* ... [italics added].” I also beg to differ with his comment (p. 243, lines 10-15 of his conclusion) that “elements of the satanic mass are firmly embedded in our popular culture, and only a hermit-like existence can isolate people from them.” I doubt most people have been culturally exposed to the 15-20 items (via folk lore, films, Halloween, etc.) in any manner *resembling typical victim accounts*. In his conclusion on page 243, he says, “. . . even if diffusion is the cause . . .,” implying that the *worst case* is a diffusion, perhaps some form of suggestion, without any consideration to actual SRA as a worst case possibility. *If* his presupposition is correct, *then* his conclusion would follow, but he should clearly acknowledge this, at the outset, as an assumption.

Non-cultural elements present. Interviewing techniques, “legend ostension” (Ellis, 1992), or even a broad sweeping cultural demonology do not adequately explain all the consistencies *in the obscure areas*. If the similar details in victim accounts were limited to

KILL SWITCH

the typical anti-religious, “bad-to-the-bone” concepts, then a cultural demonology could adequately explain the SRA phenomenon—but there are common, yet noncultural, reports of: secret operations in which bombs were implanted which would explode upon revealing cult secrets; needles, pills, or beverages—not initially recalled as drug inducement—yet often associated with sadistic child porn, being forced to chant, “Baby Jesus is Dead” (Chicago Tribune, 1985; Hudson, 1988, p. 62; Friesen, 1991, pp. 87-88; Givens, 1985), chanting in another language, child holding knife with adult who then stab the victim together, the star and pentagram, mock weddings, death threats to extreme secrecy, etc. These are not cultural elements in our understanding of the manifestations of evil, yet they are common elements in survivor accounts. Further, the few survivors I personally know always avoided such media as horror films and thriller books, for obvious reasons.

The Alternate Explanations offered for the “Satanic Panic” have yet to provide either adequate explanation for the profound similarities in reports and symptoms of survivors, rather these articles consistently mischaracterize the survivors and the findings. The skeptical literature is at best selective and unfortunately many times misleading.

Acknowledging our Predispositions.

So, what are the factors that cause a person to believe SRA exists? Most would agree that exposure to first hand accounts along with a compatible world view are the major contributors to belief. What are the determining factors causing disbelief? Minimized corroborative evidence and/or an incompatible world view are the most likely factors. Perhaps some psychological authorities have taken positions not primarily because of consistent patient reports on one hand, or a lack of evidence on the other, but mostly due to their world views. It is good to go out of our way to consider all of the possible, alternate explanations, as long as we’re truly open to all explanations, including the clinically encountered one—that the cited events actually occurred as described. Regardless, for objectivity sake, we on *both* sides of this issue might ask ourselves, “What *specific* pieces of information are necessary for me to change my mind about the existence of SRA?”

It is important to note that most arguments supporting the existence of SRA are logically consistent, but may never be “scientific” in nature. In adult MPD clients, there is a strong relationship between the alter personalities, the respective memories of each personality, and the respective triggers and phobias. It is clearly logical, not scientific, that certain alter personalities are formed to contain the pain of the abuse; they are absolutely consumed with it. Newly discovered alters are terrorized, sometimes *weeks before* they acknowledge SRA memories. What else could generate such dread and terror? It is purely logical that severe emotional debris implies a compatible storm.

Conclusion

In pursuit of truth, we must constantly reevaluate whether our goal actually is truth in itself, regardless of how our thinking may have to change. If truth is our goal, we must be willing to believe not our emotional preferences, but the resultant sum of *all* information (scientific and otherwise) from *all* perspectives. Finally, *very few want* to believe SRA occurs, but given all this information, it is quite reasonable to conclude that some reports of SRA are authentic, and the consistent accounts accompanied by consistent symptoms do reflect a sadistic reality of a self-perpetuating addiction to power through sexualized evil, in which there is a confirmed code of secrecy.

KILL SWITCH

REFERENCES

- Associated Press (1994). "Lawman among 8 charged with murder." *Austin American Statesman*, January 24
- Bajak, F. (1994). "Germany cult-killing." *Associated Press*. February 9.
- Bennetts, L. (1993). "Nightmares on Main Street." *Vanity Fair*. June. 42-52, 58-62.
- Blood, L. (1994). *The New Satanists*. New York: Warner Books.
- Bloom, S. (1994). "Hearing the survivor's voice: Sundering the walls of denial." *The Journal of Psychohistory*. Vol. 21. 461-477.
- Brown, D. (1987). "Adult survivors of satanic ritualistic abuse." Audio tape recorded at the conference of the Consortium of California Child Abuse Councils, February.
- Butler, K. (1996). "The latest on recovered memory." *The Family Therapy Networker*, November/December. 36-37.
- Calof, D. (1993). "Facing the truth about false memory." *The Family Therapy Networker*, September/October. 39-45.
- Calof, D. (1994).[8] Taped workshop on false memory syndrome and ethical treatment of abuse. Dorthea Dix Institute, Portland State University. April 16
- Calof, D. (1994). "From traumatic dissociation to repression: Historical origins of the 'False Memory Syndrome' hypothesis." *Treating Abuse Today* Vol. 4. No. 4
- Chicago Tribune* (1985). "Satanism haunts tales of child sex abuse." July 29
- Coulborn-Faller, K. (1994). "Ritual abuse: Review of research." *The APSAC Advisor*. Vol. 7. Spring. 1, 19-27.
- Crewdson, J., Emmerman, L. and Ogintz, E. (1984). "Sexual abuse case continues to haunt town in Minnesota." *Chicago Tribune*. December 16.
- DSM-III-R* (1987). *The Diagnostic and Statistical Manual (Third Edition—Revised)*. 300.14.
- Doland, V. (1992). Book review of C. Ginzburg "Learn from history or be doomed to repeat it." *Journal of Psychology and Theology*, Vol. 20. 338-339.
- Dubois, P. (1905). *The Psychoneuroses and their Moral Treatment*, (Trans. and Ed.) Jelliffe, S.E. & White, W.A. New York: Funk & Wagnalls Company.
- Ellis, B. (1992) "Satanic ritual abuse and legend ostension." *Journal of Psychology and Theology*, Vol. 20. 274-277
- Evans, N., Magan, P.T. & Thomason, G. (1923/ 1928) (Eds.) *The Home Physician and Guide to Health*. Mountain View, CA: Pacific Press Publishing Association
- Freud, S. (1909/ 1974). "Analysis of a phobia in a five-year old boy." In Rieff (Ed.) (1974) *The Sexual Enlightenment of Children* (47-183). New York: Collier Books.
- Freud, S. (1896/ 1959). "The Aetiology of Hysteria." In E. Jones (Ed.) and J. Riviere (Trans.), *Sigmund Freud: Collected papers, Vol. 1* (pp. 183-220). New York: Basic Books.
- Freud, S. & Breuer, J. (1895/ 1966). *Studies on Hysteria*. (translated by James Strachey with Anna Freud). New York: Avon Books.
- Friesen, J.G. (1991) *Uncovering the Mystery of MPD*. 70, 73-78, 83-88, 92, 94-101, 106, 116-117. San Bernadino, CA: Here's Life Publishers.
- Ganaway, G.K. (1992). "Some additional questions: A response to Shaffer & Cozolino, to Gould & Cozolino, and to Friesen." *Journal of Psychology and Theology*, Vol. 20. 201-205.

KILL SWITCH

Ganaway, G.K. (1992). "On the nature of memories: A response to 'a reply to Ganaway.'" *Dissociation*, 5, 120-122.

Givens, R. and Huck, J. (1985). "California: Devilish deeds?" *Newsweek*. September 16, 43.

Goleman, D. (1993). "Studies reveal suggestibility of very young as witnesses." *New York Times*. June 11.

Goleman, D. (1992). "Childhood trauma: Memory or invention?" *New York Times*, July 21, p. C1.

Gorney, C. (1988). "The terrible puzzle of McMartin preschool" and "Community of fear." *The Washington Post*. May 18.

Herman, J. & Schatzow, E. (1987). "Recovery and verification of memories of childhood sexual trauma." *Psychoanalytic Psychology*, 4, 1-14.

Hill, S., and Goodwin, J. (1989). "Satanism: Similarities between patient accounts and pre-Inquisition historical sources." *Dissociation*, 2, 39-44.

Hochman, J. (1994). "Buried memories challenge the law." *National Law Journal*. 16(17):17.

Horn, M. (1993). "Memories lost and found: Can 'forgotten' childhood abuse return to haunt you?" *U.S. News and World Report*. November 29, 1993

Hudson, P. (1990), "Ritual child abuse: A survey of symptoms and allegations," *Journal of Child And Youth Care*, Special Issue, 27-53.

Hudson, P. (1991). *Child ritual abuse: Discovery, diagnosis, and treatment*. San Jose, CA: R&E Publishers.

Janet, P. (1924). *Principles of Psychotherapy*. (Guthrie, H.M. & Guthrie, E.R., Trans.) Freeport, New York: Books for Libraries Press.

Janet, P. (1889). *L'automatisme psychologique*. Paris: Balliere.

Kagay, M. (1994). "New poll shows few Americans doubt the Holocaust happened." *New York Times News Service*. July 8.

Kennedy, A. & Neville, J. (1957). "The sudden loss of memory." *British Medical Journal*. Vol. 2. 428-433.

Loftus, E. (1993). "Reality of repressed memory." *American Psychologist*. 48, 518-537.

Lotto, D. (1994). "On witches and witch hunts: Ritual and satanic cult abuse." *The Journal of Psychohistory*. Vol. 21. 373-396.

Maharidge, D. (1985). "Many cases charging satanic rituals and mass child abuse filed, but few survive." *The Los Angeles Daily Herald*. October 31.

Masson, J.M. (1984). *The Assault on Truth: Freud's Suppression of the Seduction Theory*. New York: Farrar, Straus & Giroux.

Meacham, A. (1993). "Presumed guilty." *Changes*. April, 71-82.

McCulley, D.[9] (1994). "Satanic ritual abuse: A question of memory." *Journal of Psychology and Theology*, pre-publication copy.

Mira, E. (1943). *Psychiatry in War*. New York: W. W. Norton.

Mitchell, J. (1993). "Memories of a disputed past." *The Oregonian*, August 8.

Moss, D.C. (1987). "Are the children lying?" *ABA Journal*. May 1, 59-62.

KILL SWITCH

- Nathan, D. (1987). "The making of a modern witch trial." *The Village Voice*. September 29. 19-23, 26-32.
- Nathan, D. (1990). "What McMartin started: The ritual sex abuse hoax." *The Village Voice*. June 12.
- Nathan, D. (1993). "Reno reconsidered." *Miami New Times*. March 3-9. 10-12, 18, 20, 24, 27-29.
- Nathan, D. (1993). "Revisiting Country Walk." *Issues in Child Abuse Accusations*. 5 (1), Summer. 1-11.
- Nathan, D. (1994). "McMartin Preschool tunnel claims: Evidence of a hoax." e-mail text, June, via CompuServe 71203,3162
- Norris, J. and Potter, J.A. (1986). "The devil made me do it." *Penthouse Magazine*. January, 48-52, 174-180.
- Ofshe, R. (1992). "Inadvertent hypnosis during interrogation: False confession due to dissociative state; mis-identified multiple personality and the satanic cult hypothesis." *The International Journal of Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis*, Vol. 15, No. 3 125-156.
- Olio, K. & Cornell, W. (1994b). "The facade of scientific documentation: A case study of Richard Ofshe's analysis of the Paul Ingram case."
- Ondrovik, J. & Hamilton, D. (1992). "Is therapy science or religion, logic or faith? A response to Shaffer & Cozolino, Gould & Cozolino, and Friesen." *Journal of Psychology and Theology*, Vol. 20. 210-212.
- Parrott, L. and Perrin, R. (1993). "Memories of satanic ritual abuse: The truth behind the panic." *Christianity Today*, June 21.
- Passantino, B. & G. (1992). "Satanic ritual abuse in popular Christian literature: Why some Christians fall for a lie searching for the truth." *Journal of Psychology and Theology*, Vol. 20. 299-305.
- Passport Magazine* (1986). "America's best kept secret." Special Report. Fall.
- Peck, M.S. (1983). *People of the Lie*. New York: Simon and Schuster.
- Prince, M. (1906). *The Dissociation of a Personality*. New York: Longman's Green.
- Prince, M. (1909). "Experiments to determine co-conscious (sub-conscious) ideation." *Journal of Abnormal Psychology*. 3:37.
- Prince, M. (1919). "The psychogenesis of multiple personality." *Journal of Abnormal Psychology*. 14, 73-122.
- Putnam, F.W. (1989). *Diagnosis and Treatment of Multiple Personality Disorder*. New York and London: The Guilford Press.
- Quillin, M. (1994). "Little Rascals defendant pleads no contest, will go free." *The News and Observer*. Raleigh, NC. June 16.
- Raschke, C.A. (1990). *Painted Black*. San Francisco: Harper and Row.
- Rittenhouse, J. (1992). "Devil worship." Cassette recording available from Campus Crusade for Christ. Orlando, FL.
- Rogers, M.L. (1992) "A call for discernment—natural and spiritual: An introductory editorial to a special issue on SRA." *Journal of Psychology and Theology*, Vol. 20. 175-186.
- Ross, A.S. (1986). "Cases from the bay area and the west," "Going to trial despite a questionable probe," "Satanism or mass hysteria?" "Sensational cases across the coun-

KILL SWITCH

try,” and “‘Warped’ child, twisted justice.” *San Francisco Examiner*. September 28.

Smith, M. (1992). “A reply to Ganaway: The problem of using screen memories as an explanatory device in accounts of ritual abuse.” *Dissociation*, 5, 117-119.

Smith, M. (1987, November). “Post-traumatic stress and the loss of ontological security: Overcoming trauma-induced neophobia in adult children of alcoholics.” Paper presented at the Fourth International Conference on Multiple Personality Disorder/Dissociative States, Chicago, Illinois.

Stevens, P. (1992). “Universal cultural elements in the satanic demonology.” *Journal of Psychology and Theology*, Vol. 20. 240-244

Summit, R. (1994). “The dark tunnels of McMartin.” *Journal of Psychohistory*, Vol. 21. 397-406.

Summit, R. (1994a). Personal communication regarding McMartin tunnels.

Stratford, L. (1988). *Satan's Underground*. Eugene, OR: Harvest House Publishers.

Terr, L. (1994). *Unchained Memories*. New York, NY: Basic Books. 1-31, 120-151.

Toomin, M. and Toomin, H. (1975). “GSR biofeedback in psychotherapy: Some clinical observations.” *Psychotherapy: Theory, Research, and Practice*, 12, 33-38.

Underwager, R. & Wakefield, H. (1992). “The Christian and Satanism.” *Journal of Psychology and Theology*, Vol. 20. 281-287.

Underwager, R. & Wakefield, H. (1992). “‘A veil untaken away’: A reply to Arnold.” *Journal of Psychology and Theology*, Vol. 20. 292-294.

Victor, J.S. (1992). “Ritual abuse and the moral crusade against Satanism.” *Journal of Psychology and Theology*, Vol. 20. 248-253.

Wade, C. & Tavis, C. (1993). *Psychology*. 256, 264, 265, 586, 632, 637, et al. Harper Collins College Publishers. New York, NY.

Watters, E. (1993). “Doors of memory.” *Mother Jones*. January and February, 24-29.

Weeks, J., Lynn, S., Green, J., & Brentar, J. (1992). “Pseudomemory in hypnotized and task-motivated subjects.” *Journal of Abnormal Psychology*. 101, 356-360.

Wicher, R. (1994). “German teens sentenced for satanic murder of classmate.” February 9.

Williams, L.M. (1992). “Adult memories of childhood abuse: Preliminary findings from a longitudinal study.” *APSAC Advisor*. Summer. 19-21.

Williams, L.M. (1993). “Recall of childhood trauma: A prospective study of women’s memories of child sexual abuse.” Unpublished.

Wright, L. (1993). “A reporter at large: Remembering Satan, parts I & II,” *New Yorker Magazine*, May 17 & 24

Yapko, M.D. (1994). *Suggestions of Abuse: True and False Memories of Childhood Sexual Trauma*. New York: Simon & Schuster.

Young, W.C., Sachs, R.G., Braun, B.G., and Watkins, R.T. (1990). “Patients reporting ritual abuse in childhood: A clinical syndrome. Report of 37 Cases.” *Child Abuse and Neglect*. Vol. 15. 181-189.

van der Kolk, B.A. & van der Hart, O. (1991). “The intrusive past: The flexibility of memory and the engraving of trauma.” *American Imago*, The Johns Hopkins University Press. Vol. 48. 425-454.

KILL SWITCH

Vanderbilt, H. (1992). "Incest: A chilling report." *Lear's*. February, 49-77

[1] See the HBO production of "McMartin", written by Abby Mann, a personal friend of the defense, and the two PBS *Frontline* presentations, the two part series "Divided Memories" and the one hour "Searching for Satan", both produced by Ofra Bikel.

[2] It's difficult to form an alternate explanation for this one, yet **Lotto** (1994) demonstrates his own *confirmation bias* by ignoring this and other corroboration listed in the same paper (Young, et al, 1990). To dismiss these reports, Lotto cites *only* the authors' allowance for contingencies. He also dismisses all daycare cases, not by substantiation, but by leaving out evidence and key context (regarding Judy Johnson's role in the McMartin Preschool case and the Fusters' in the Country Walk case), which Summit provides firsthand in his rebuttal.

[3] Wade and Tavris are staunch skeptics of the existence of SRA, even though in addition to the entrapment similarity they also explain in another part of the textbook that four year olds may remember events from age two-and-one-half.

[4] Judy Johnson *personally consulted* Dr. Summit who maintains that she was quite sane and emotionally contained at the beginning of the case, her psychotic break and alcoholic toxicity beginning *only afterward*, due to inconceivable multiple stressors: she was alienated from her husband, living only with her two children, one a victim of sexual abuse, the other dying of a brain malignancy, and she became increasingly alienated by the other McMartin parents. Summit provides the full situational context, firsthand.

[5] Dr. Summit spoke with Ileana after her testimony to better understand how at first she so perfectly claimed her innocence and even passed the polygraphs if she was actually guilty all along of the things she more recently confessed to. "*I didn't do those things,*" she protested, "I couldn't do things like that; I'm not that kind of person; *Frank made me do them!*" He manipulated her to perform the crimes, so really, she was telling the truth both times, contrary to those interpreting her claims at face value and concluding both of the Fusters' complete innocence (see Lotto, 1994).

[6] Such physiological and neurological responses include cold sweats, exaggerated startle response, numbing of face or limbs, inhibited vision and/or hearing, body memories, everpresent sensations, continually reexperiencing traumatic event, flashbacks, panic attacks and other responses inappropriate to the present day context, yet triggered by ordinary but *abuse-related* stimuli.

[7] For much more complete context, see Lenore Terr's book, *Unchained Memories*.

[8] Much of the content in the False Memory Analysis section was provided through this taped workshop by David Calof.

[9] Dale McCulley provided a wealth of research for this paper, both directly and through others. He runs Cavalcade Productions, (707) 743-1896, a source for training videos on sexual and ritual abuse recovery.

KILL SWITCH

THE BATTLE FOR YOUR MIND

Persuasion & Brainwashing Techniques Being Used on the Public Today!

Summary of Contents

Introduction.

The birth of conversion/brainwashing in Christian revivalism in 1735.

The Pavlovian explanation of the three brain phases.

Born-again preachers: Step-by-step, how they conduct a revival and the expected physiological results.

The “voice roll” technique used by preachers, lawyers, and hypnotists.

The six steps to conversion.

The “sell it by zealot” technique.

The “only hope” technique to attend and not be converted.

The decognition process.

Thought-stopping techniques.

True believers and mass movements.

Persuasion techniques: “yes set,” “embedded commands,” “interspersal technique,” and “shock and confusion.”

Subliminals:

Mass misuse.

Vibrato.

ELF waves.

Non-detectable neurophone programming through the skin.

The medium for mass take-over.

Partial bibliography.

Introduction

I’m going to talk about conversion, which is a nice word for brainwashing. Everything I will relate only exposes the surface of the problem. I don’t know how the misuse of these techniques can be stopped. I don’t think it is possible to legislate against that which often cannot be detected; and if those who legislate are using these techniques, there is little hope of affecting laws to govern usage.

In talking about mind manipulation, I am talking about my own business. I know it, and I know how effective it can be. I produce hypnosis and subliminal tapes and, in some of

KILL SWITCH

my seminars, I use conversion tactics to assist participants to become independent and self-sufficient. But, anytime I use these techniques, I point out that I am using them, and those attending have a choice to participate or not. They also know what the desired result of participation will be.

So, to begin, I want to state the most basic of all facts about brainwashing:

In the entire history of man, no one has ever been brainwashed and *realized*, or *believed*, that he had been brainwashed.

Those who have been brainwashed will usually passionately defend their manipulators, claiming they have simply been “shown the light” . . . or have been transformed in miraculous ways.

The Birth of Conversion

Conversion is a “nice” word for *brainwashing* . . . and any study of brainwashing has to begin with a study of Christian revivalism in eighteenth century America. Apparently, Jonathan Edwards accidentally discovered the techniques during a religious crusade in 1735 in Northampton, Massachusetts. By inducing guilt and acute apprehension and by increasing the tension, the “sinners” attending his revival meetings would break down and completely submit. Technically, what Edwards was doing was creating conditions that wipe the brain slate clean so that the mind accepts new programming. He would tell those attending, “You’re a sinner! You’re destined for hell!”

As a result, one person committed suicide and another attempted suicide. And the neighbors of the suicidal converts related that they, too, were affected so deeply that, although they had found “eternal salvation,” they were obsessed with a diabolical temptation to end their own lives.

Once a preacher, cult leader, manipulator or authority figure creates the brain phase to wipe the brain-slate clean, his subjects are wide open. New input, in the form of suggestion, can be substituted for their previous ideas. Because Edwards didn’t turn his message positive until the end of the revival, many accepted the negative suggestions and acted, or desired to act, upon them.

Charles J. Finney was another Christian revivalist who used the same techniques four years later in mass religious conversions in New York. The techniques are still being used today by Christian revivalists, cults, human-potential training, some business rallies, and the U.S. armed services . . . to name just a few.

Let me point out here that I don’t think most revivalist preachers realize or know they are using brainwashing techniques. Edwards simply stumbled upon a technique that worked, and others copied it and have continued to copy it for over two hundred years. And the more sophisticated our knowledge and technology become, the more effective the conversion. I feel strongly that this is one of the major reasons for the increasing rise in Christian fundamentalism, especially the televised variety, while most of the orthodox religions are declining.

The Three Brain Phases

The Christians may have been the first to successfully formulated brainwashing, but we have to look to Pavlov, the Russian scientist, for a technical explanation. In the early 1900’s, his work with animals opened the door to further investigations with humans. After the revolution in Russia, Lenin was quick to see the potential of applying Pavlov’s research

KILL SWITCH

to his own ends.

Three distinct and progressive states of *transmarginal inhibition* were identified by Pavlov. The first is the *equivalent* phase, in which the brain gives the same response to both strong and weak stimuli. The second is the *paradoxical* phase, in which the brain responds more actively to weak stimuli than to strong. And the third is the *ultra-paradoxical* phase, in which conditioned responses and behavior patterns turn from positive to negative or from negative to positive.

With the progressions through each phase, the degree of conversion becomes more effective and complete. The ways to achieve conversion are many and varied, but the usual first step in religious or political brainwashing is to work on the emotions of an individual or group until they reach an abnormal level of anger, fear, excitement or nervous tension.

The progressive result of this mental condition is to impair judgment and increase suggestibility. The more this condition can be maintained or intensified, the more it compounds. Once catharsis or the first brain phase is reached, the complete mental takeover becomes easier. Existing mental programming can be replaced with new patterns of thinking and behavior.

Other often-used physiological weapons to modify normal brain functions are fasting, radical or high sugar diets, physical discomforts, regulation of breathing, mantra chanting in meditation, the disclosure of awesome mysteries, special lighting and sound effects, programmed response to incense, or intoxicating drugs.

The same results can be obtained in contemporary psychiatric treatment by electric shock treatments and even by purposely lowering a patient's blood sugar level with insulin injections.

Before I talk about exactly how some of the techniques are applied, I want to point out that hypnosis and conversion tactics are two distinctly different things—and that conversion techniques are far more powerful. However, the two are often mixed . . . with powerful results.

How Revivalist Preachers Work

If you'd like to see a revivalist preacher at work, there are probably several in your city. Go to the church or tent early and sit in the rear, about three-quarters of the way back. Most likely repetitive music will be played while the people come in for the service. A repetitive beat, ideally ranging from 45 to 72 beats per minute (a rhythm close to the beat of a human heart), is very hypnotic and can generate an eyes-open altered state of consciousness in a very high percentage of people. And, once you are in an *alpha state*, you are at least 25 times as suggestible as you would be in full *beta consciousness*. The music is probably the same for every service, or incorporates the same beat, and many of the people will go into an altered state almost immediately upon entering the sanctuary. Subconsciously, they recall their state of mind from previous services and respond according to the post-hypnotic programming.

Watch the people waiting for the service to begin. Many will exhibit external signs of trance—body relaxation and slightly dilated eyes. Often, they begin swaying back and forth with their hands in the air while sitting in their chairs. Next, the assistant pastor will come out. He usually speaks with a "voice roll."

KILL SWITCH

Voice Roll Technique

A *voice roll* is a patterned, paced style used by hypnotists when inducing a trance. It is also used by many lawyers, several of whom are highly trained hypnotists, when they desire to entrench a point firmly in the minds of the jurors. A voice roll can sound as if the speaker were talking to the beat of a metronome or it may sound as though he were emphasizing every word in a monotonous, patterned style. The words will usually be delivered at the rate of 45 to 60 beats per minute, maximizing the hypnotic effect.

Now the assistant pastor begins the “build-up” process. He induces an altered state of consciousness and/or begins to generate the excitement and the expectations of the audience. Next, a group of young women in “sweet and pure” chiffon dresses might come out to sing a song. Gospel songs are great for building excitement and *involvement*. In the middle of the song, one of the girls might be “smitten by the spirit” and fall down or react as if possessed by the Holy Spirit. This very effectively increases the intensity in the room. At this point, hypnosis and conversion tactics are being mixed. And the result is the audience’s attention span is now totally focused upon the communication while the environment becomes more exciting or tense.

Right about this time, when an eyes-open mass-induced alpha mental state has been achieved, they will usually pass the collection plate or basket. In the background, a 45-beat-per-minute voice roll from the assistant preacher might exhort, “Give to God . . . Give to God . . . Give to God . . .” And the audience does give. God may not get the money, but his already wealthy representative will.

Next, the fire-and-brimstone preacher will come out. He induces fear and increases the tension by talking about “the devil,” “going to hell” or the forthcoming Armageddon.

In the last such rally I attended, the preacher talked about the blood that would soon be running out of every faucet in the land. He was also obsessed with a “bloody axe of God,” which everyone had seen hanging above the pulpit the previous week. I have no doubt that everyone saw it—the power of suggestion given to hundreds of people in hypnosis assures that at least 10 to 25 percent would see whatever he suggested they see.

In most revivalist gatherings, “testifying” or “witnessing” usually follows the fear-based sermon. People from the audience come up on stage and relate their stories. “I was crippled and now I can walk!” “I had arthritis and now it’s gone!” It is a psychological manipulation that works. After listening to numerous case histories of miraculous healings, the average guy in the audience with a minor problem is sure he can be healed. The room is charged with fear, guilt, intense excitement and expectations.

Now those who want to be healed are frequently lined up around the edge of the room, or they are told to come down to the front. The preacher might touch them on the head firmly and scream, “Be healed!” This releases the psychic energy and, for many catharsis results. Catharsis is a purging of repressed emotions. Individuals might cry, fall down or even go into spasms. And if catharsis is effected, they stand a chance of being healed. In catharsis (one of the three brain phases mentioned earlier), the brain-slate is temporarily wiped clean and the new suggestion is accepted.

For some, the healing may be permanent. For many, it will last four days to a week—a week is, incidentally, how long a hypnotic suggestion given to a somnambulistic subject will usually last. Even if the healing doesn’t last, if they come back every week the power of suggestion may continually override the problem . . . or sometimes, sadly, it can mask a

KILL SWITCH

physical problem which could prove to be very detrimental to the individual in the long run.

I'm not saying that legitimate healings do not take place. They do. Maybe the individual was ready to let go of the negativity that caused the problem in the first place; maybe it was the work of God. Yet I contend that it can be explained with existing knowledge of brain/mind function.

The techniques and staging will vary from church to church. Many use "speaking in tongues" to generate catharsis in some while the spectacle creates intense excitement in the observers.

The use of hypnotic and conversion techniques by religions is sophisticated, and professionals are assuring that they become ever more effective. A man in Los Angeles is designing, building and reworking a lot of churches around the county. He tells ministers what they need and how to use it. This man's track record indicates that the congregation and the monetary income will double if the minister follows his instructions. He admits that about 80 percent of his efforts are in the sound system and lighting.

Powerful sound and the proper use of lighting are of primary importance in inducing an altered state of consciousness—I've been using them for years in my own seminars. However, my participants are fully aware of the process and what they can expect as a result of their participation.

Six Conversion Techniques

Cults and human-potential organizations are always looking for new converts. To attain them, they must also create a brain-phase. And they often need to do it within a short space of time—a weekend, or maybe even a day. The following are the six primary techniques used to generate the conversion.

Conversion Tactic 1: The meetings or training takes place in an area where participants are **cut off** from the outside world. This may be any place: a private home, a remote or rural setting, or even a hotel ballroom where the participants are allowed only limited bathroom usage. In human-potential trainings, the controllers will give a lengthy talk about the importance of "keeping agreements" in life. The participants are told that if they don't keep their agreements, their life will never work. It's a good idea to keep agreements, but the controllers are subverting a positive human value for selfish purposes. The participants vow to themselves and their trainer that they will keep their agreements. Anyone who does not will be *intimidated* into agreement or forced to leave. The next step is to agree to complete the training, thus assuring a high percentage of conversions for the organization. They will *usually* have to agree not to take drugs, smoke, and sometimes not to eat . . . or they are given such short meal-breaks that it creates tension. The real reason for the agreements is to alter internal chemistry, which generates anxiety and hopefully causes at least a slight malfunction of the nervous system, which in turn increases the conversion potential.

Before the gathering is complete, the agreements will be used to ensure that the new converts go out and find new participants. They are intimidated into agreeing to do so before they leave. Since the importance of keeping agreements is so high on their priority list, the converts will twist the arms of everyone they know, attempting to talk them into attending a free introductory session offered at a future date by the organization. The new converts are *zealots*. In fact, the inside term for merchandising the largest and most successful human-potential training is, "sell it by zealot!"

KILL SWITCH

At least a million people are graduates and a good percentage have been left with a mental activation button that assures their future loyalty and assistance if the guru figure or organization calls. Think about the potential political implications of hundreds of thousands of zealots programmed to campaign for their guru.

Be wary of an organization of this type that offers follow-up sessions after the seminar. Follow-up sessions might be weekly meetings or inexpensive seminars given on a regular basis which the organization will attempt to talk you into taking—or any regularly scheduled event used to maintain control. As the early Christian revivalists found, long-term control is dependent upon a good follow-up system.

Conversion Tactic 2: A schedule is maintained that causes physical and mental **fatigue**. This is primarily accomplished by long hours in which the participants are given no opportunity for relaxation or reflection.

Conversion Tactic 3: Techniques are used to increase the **tension** in the room or environment.

Conversion Tactic 4: **Uncertainty**. One of the most effective ways of creating uncertainty is to subject the participants to the fear of being “put on the spot” or encountered by the trainers who play upon guilt feelings, or convince the participants to verbally relate their innermost secrets in front of the others. Activities that emphasize the removal of “masks” is another powerful ploy. One of the most successful human-potential seminars forces the participants to stand on a stage in front of the entire audience while being verbally attacked by the trainers. A public poll showed that the most fearful of all situations is to speak to an audience. It ranked above window washing outside the 85th floor of an office building. So you can imagine the fear and tension this situation generates within the seminar participants who have *agreed* to complete the training. Many faint, but most cope with the stress by mentally “going away.” They literally go into an alpha state, which automatically opens them to being 25 to 200 times more suggestible. And another loop of the downward spiral into conversion is successfully effected.

Conversion Tactic 5: The introduction of **jargon**—new terms that have meaning only to the “insiders” who participate. Vicious language is also frequently used, purposely, to make participants uncomfortable.

Conversion Tactic 6: There is **no humor** in the communications . . . at least until the participants are converted. Then, merry-making and humor are highly desirable as symbols of the new *joy* the participants have supposedly “found.”

I’m not saying that good does not result from participation in such gatherings. It can and does. But I contend it is important for people to know what has happened and to be aware that continual involvement may not be in their best interest.

Over the years, I’ve conducted professional seminars to teach people to be hypnotists, trainers and counselors. I’ve had many of those who conduct training and rallies come to me and say, “I’m here because I know that what I’m doing works, but I don’t know why.” After showing them how and why, many have gotten out of the business or have decided to approach it differently or in a much more loving and supportive manner.

Many of these trainers have become personal friends, and it scares us all to have experienced the power of one person with a microphone and a room full of people. Add a little charisma and you can count on a high percentage of conversion. The sad truth is that a high percentage of people want to become “true believers” and give away their power.

KILL SWITCH

Cult gatherings or human-potential trainings are an ideal environment to observe first-hand what is technically called the “Stockholm Syndrome.” This is a situation in which those who are intimidated, controlled, or made to suffer, begin to admire, love, and even sometimes sexually desire their controllers or captors.

But let me inject a word of warning here: If you think you can attend such gatherings and not be affected, you are probably wrong. A perfect example is the case of a woman who went to Haiti on a Guggenheim Fellowship to study Haitian Voodoo. In her report, she related how the music eventually induced uncontrollable bodily movement and an altered state of consciousness. Although she understood the process and thought herself above it, when she began to feel herself become vulnerable to the music, she attempted to fight it and turned away. Anger or resistance almost always assures conversion. A few moments later she was possessed by the music and began dancing in a trance around the Voodoo meeting house. A brain phase had been induced by the music and excitement, and she awoke feeling reborn. The *only hope* of attending such gatherings without being affected is to be the Buddha and allow no positive or negative emotions to surface. Few people are capable of such detachment.

I once attended EST (Erhard Seminar Training). The training is no longer offered, although a current incarnation of the seminar is called The Forum. My goal in attending was to be an observer—to be Buddha throughout the process, which took place in a Phoenix hotel ballroom with 200 people attending. I remained detached until late afternoon of the final day, when a doctor stood up and accused the EST trainer of using brainwashing tactics. The incensed trainer argued back, using ridiculous Zen riddles to try to intimidate the doctor.

After 45 minutes of ranting, the trainer began using the other participants against the protesting doctor, who was speaking the truth. That did it. I stood up, snapped a karate kick at an EST staffer and took a spare microphone out of his hands (the kick was to distract and did not inflict pain). Then I verbally went after the trainer. He responded by yelling for his people to call the police. Both the doctor and I walked out of the training room as the police arrived. I’m probably still listed in the EST computers as someone who doesn’t keep agreements.

Before I go on, let’s go back to the six tip-offs to conversion. I want to mention the United States Government and military boot camp. The Marine Corps talks about breaking men down before “rebuilding” them as new men—as marines! Well, that is exactly what they do, the same as the flower sellers on your local street corner. Every one of the six conversion techniques are used in boot camp. Considering the needs of the military, I’m not making a judgment as to whether that is good or bad. *It is a fact* that the men are effectively brainwashed. Those who won’t submit must be discharged or spend much of their time in the brig.

Decognition Process

Once the initial conversion is effected, cults, armed services and similar groups cannot have cynicism among their members. Members must respond to commands and do as they are told, otherwise, they are dangerous to the organizational control. This is normally accomplished as a three-step *decognition process*.

Step One is **Alertness Reduction**: The controllers cause the nervous system to malfunction, making it difficult to distinguish between fantasy and reality. This can be accom-

KILL SWITCH

plished in several ways. *Poor diet* is one; watch out for brownies and Kool-Aid. The sugar throws the nervous system off. More subtle is the “*spiritual diet*” used by many cults. They eat only vegetables and fruits; without the grounding of grains, nuts, seeds, dairy products, fish or meat, an individual becomes mentally “spacey.” *Inadequate sleep* is another primary way to reduce alertness, especially when combined with long hours of work or intense physical activity. Also, being bombarded with intense and unique experiences achieves the same result.

Step Two is **Programmed Confusion**: You are mentally assaulted while your alertness is being reduced as in *Step One*. This is accomplished with a deluge of new information, lectures, discussion groups, encounters or one-to-one processing, which usually amounts to the controller *bombarding* the individual with questions. During this phase of decognition, reality and illusion often merge and perverted logic is likely to be accepted.

Step Three is **Thought Stopping**: Techniques are used to case the mind to go *flat*. These are altered-state-of-consciousness techniques that initially induce calmness by giving the mind something simple to deal with and focusing awareness. The continued use brings on a feeling of elation and eventually *hallucination*. The result is the reduction of thought and eventually, if used long enough, the cessation of all thought and withdrawal from everyone and everything except that which the controllers direct. The takeover is then complete. It is important to be aware that when members or participants are instructed to use *thought-stopping* techniques, they are told that they will benefit by so doing: they will become “better soldiers” or “find enlightenment.”

There are three primary techniques used for thought stopping. The first is *marching*: the thump, thump, thump beat literally generates self-hypnosis and thus great susceptibility to suggestion. Adolph Hitler used the marching demonstrations and excitement as a mass conversion technique in the primary phase for those attending his rallies, and in the decognition phase for his soldiers. The observers, entranced by the activity, were opened to accepting his suggestions.

The second thought-stopping technique is *meditation*. If you spend an hour to an hour and a half a day in meditation, after a few weeks, there is great probability that you will not return to full beta consciousness. You will remain in a fixed state of alpha for as long as you continue to meditate. I’m not saying this is bad—if you do it yourself. It may be very beneficial. But it is a fact that you are causing your mind to go flat. I’ve worked with meditators on an EEG machine and the results are conclusive: the more you meditate, the flatter your mind becomes until, eventually and especially if used to excess or in combination with decognition, all thought ceases. Some spiritual groups see this as nirvana—which is bullshit. It is simply a predictable physiological result. And if heaven on earth is non-thinking and non-involvement, I really question why we are here.

The third thought-stopping technique is *chanting*, and often chanting in meditation. “Speaking in tongues” could also be included in this category.

All three thought-stopping techniques produce an altered state of consciousness. This may be very good if *you* are controlling the process, for you also control the input. I personally use at least one self-hypnosis programming session every day and I know how beneficial it is for me. But you need to know if you use these techniques to the degree of remaining continually in alpha that, although you’ll be very mellow, you’ll also be more suggestible.

KILL SWITCH

True Believers & Mass Movements

Before ending this section on conversion, I want to talk about the people who are most susceptible to it and about *mass movements*. I am convinced that at least a third of the population is what Eric Hoffer calls *true believers*. They are joiners and followers . . . people who want to give away their power. They look for answers, meaning and enlightenment outside themselves.

Hoffer, who wrote *The True Believer*, a classic on mass movement, says, “true believers are not intent on bolstering and advancing a cherished self, but are those craving to be rid of an unwanted self. They are followers, not because of a desire for self-advancement, but because it can satisfy their passion for self-renunciation!” Hoffer also says that true believers “are eternally incomplete and eternally insecure!”

In my years of conducting seminar trainings, I have constantly run into true believers. All I can do is advise them to seek the *true self* within, where meaningful personal answers will be found. I teach that the basics of spirituality are self-responsibility (karma) and the attainment of self-actualization (being compassionate, while also accepting others without judgment, expectations, blame, or attempting to control.) But most of the true believers just tell me that I’m not spiritual and go looking for someone who will give them the dogma and structure what they desire.

Never underestimate the potential danger of these people. They can easily be molded into fanatics who will gladly work and die for their holy cause. It is a substitute for their lost faith in themselves and offers them as a substitute for individual hope. Hitler’s Brown Shirts were true believers. The Moral Majority is made up of true believers. All cults are composed of true believers. You’ll find them in politics, churches, businesses and social cause groups. They are the fanatics in these organizations.

Mass movements will usually have charismatic leader. The followers want to convert others to their way of living or impose a new way of life—if necessary, by legislating laws forcing others to their view, as evidenced by the activities of the Moral Majority. This means enforcement by guns or punishment, for that is the bottom line in law enforcement.

A common hatred, enemy, or devil is essential to the success of a mass movement. Hitler’s devil was the Jews; the Born-Again Christians have Satan himself, but that isn’t enough—they’ve added the occult, the New Age thinkers and, lately, all those who oppose their integration of church and politics, as evidenced in their political re-election campaigns against those who are opposite their views. In revolutions, the devil is usually the ruling power or aristocracy. Some human-potential movements are far too clever to ask their graduates to join anything, thus labeling themselves a cult—but, if you look closely, you’ll find that their devil is anyone and everyone who hasn’t taken their training.

There are mass movements without devils but they seldom attain major status. The *true believers* are mentally unbalanced or insecure people, or those without hope or friends. People don’t look for allies when they love, but they do when they hate or become obsessed with a cause. And those who desire a new life and a new order feel the old ways must be eliminated before the new order can be built.

Persuasion Techniques

Persuasion isn’t technically brainwashing but it is a *manipulation* of the human mind without the manipulated party being aware what caused his opinion shift. I only have time to very basically introduce you to a few of the many techniques in use today, but the basis of

KILL SWITCH

persuasion is always to access your *right brain*. The left half of your brain is analytical and rational. The right half is creative and imaginative. That is overly simplified but it makes my point. So, the idea is to distract the left brain and keep it busy. Ideally, the persuader generates an eyes-open altered state of consciousness, causing you to shift from beta awareness into alpha—a shift that can be measured on an EEG machine.

First, let me give you an example of distracting the left brain. Politicians use these powerful techniques all the time; lawyers use many variations which, I've been told, they call "tightening the noose."

Assume for a moment that you are watching a politician give a speech. First, he might generate what is called a *yes set*. These are statements that will cause most listeners to agree; they might even unknowingly nod their heads in agreement. Next come the *truisms*. These are usually facts that could be debated but, once the politician has his audience agreeing, the odds are in the politician's favor that the audience won't stop to think for themselves, thus continuing to agree. Last comes the *suggestion*. This is what the politician wants you to do and, since you've been agreeing all along, you could be persuaded to accept the suggestion. Now, if you'll listen closely to my political speech, you'll find that the first three statements are the *yes set*, the next three are *truisms* and the last is the *suggestion*.

"Ladies and gentlemen: are you angry about high food prices? Are you tired of astronomical gas prices? Are you sick of out-of-control inflation? Well, you know the Other Party allowed 18 percent inflation last year; you know crime has increased 50 percent nationwide in the last 12 months, and you know your paycheck hardly covers your expenses any more. Well, the answer to resolving these problems is to elect me, John Jones, to the U.S. Senate."

And I think you've heard all that before. But you might also watch for what are called *embedded commands*. As an example: On key words, the speaker would make a gesture with his left hand, which research has shown is more apt to access your right brain. Today's media-oriented politicians and spellbinders are often carefully trained by a whole new breed of specialists who are using every trick in the book—both old and new—to manipulate you into accepting their candidate.

The concepts and techniques of Neuro-Linguistics are so heavily protected that I found out the hard way that to even talk about them publicly or in print results in threatened legal action. Yet Neuro-Linguistic training is readily available to anyone willing to devote the time and pay the price. It is some of the most subtle and powerful manipulation I have yet been exposed to. A good friend who recently attended a two-week seminar on Neuro-Linguistics found that many of those she talked to during the breaks were government people.

Another technique that I'm just learning about is unbelievably slippery; it is called an *interspersal technique* and the idea is to say on thing with words but plant a subconscious impression of something else in the minds of the listeners and/or watchers.

As an example, assume you are watching a television commentator make the following statement: "*Senator Johnson* is assisting local authorities to clear up the *stupid* mistakes of the companies contributing to the nuclear waste problems." It sounds like a statement of fact, but if the speaker emphasizes the right word and especially if he makes the proper hand gestures on the key words, you could be left with the subconscious impression that *Senator Johnson* is *stupid*. That was the subliminal goal of the statement and the speaker

KILL SWITCH

cannot be sued for libel.

Persuasion techniques are also frequently used on a much smaller scale with just as much effectiveness. The insurance salesman knows his pitch is likely to be much more effective if he can get you to visualize something in your mind. This is right-brain communication. For instance, he might pause in his conversation, look slowly around your living room and say, “Can you just imagine this beautiful home burning to the ground?” Of course you can! It is one of your unconscious fears and, when he forces you to visualize it, you are more likely to be manipulated into signing his insurance policy.

The Hare Krishnas, operating in every airport, use what I call ***shock and confusion*** techniques to distract the left brain and communicate directly with the right brain. While waiting for a plane, I once watched one operate for over an hour. He had a technique of almost jumping in front of someone. Initially, his voice was loud then dropped as he made his pitch to take a book and contribute money to the cause. Usually, when people are shocked, they immediately withdraw. In this case they were shocked by the strange appearance, sudden materialization and loud voice of the Hare Krishna devotee. In other words, the people went into an alpha state for security because they didn’t want to confront the reality before them. In alpha, they were highly suggestible so they responded to the suggestion of taking the book; the moment they took the book, they felt guilty and responded to the second suggestion: give money. We are all conditioned that if someone gives us something, we have to give them something in return—in the above case, it was money. While watching this hustler, I was close enough to notice that many of the people he stopped exhibited an outward sign of alpha—their eyes dilated.

Subliminal Programming

Subliminals are *hidden suggestions*, perceived only by your subconscious mind. They can be audio suggestions, hidden behind music, or visual suggestions airbrushed or cleverly incorporated into a picture or design, or words/images flashed on a screen so fast that you don’t consciously see them.

Most audio subliminal reprogramming tapes offer verbal suggestions recorded at a low volume. I question the efficacy of this technique—if subliminals are not perceptible, they cannot be effective, and subliminals recorded below the audible threshold are therefore useless. The oldest audio subliminal technique uses a voice that follows the volume of the music so subliminals are impossible to detect without a parametric equalizer. But this technique is patented and, when I wanted to develop my own line of subliminal audio cassettes, negotiations with the patent holder proved to be unsatisfactory. My attorney obtained copies of the patents which I gave some talented Hollywood sound engineers, asking them to create a new technique. They found a way to psycho-acoustically modify and synthesize the suggestions so that they are projected in the same chord and frequency as the music, thus giving them the effect of being part of the music. But we found that in using this technique, there is no way to reduce various frequencies to detect the subliminals. In other words, although the suggestions are being heard by the subconscious mind, they cannot be monitored with even the most sophisticated equipment.

If we were able to come up with this technique as easily as we did, I can only imagine how sophisticated the technology has become, with unlimited government or advertising funding. And I shudder to think about the propaganda and commercial manipulation that we are exposed to on a daily basis. There is simply no way to know what is behind the music

KILL SWITCH

you hear. It may even be possible to hide a second voice behind the voice to which you are listening.

The series by Wilson Bryan Key, Ph.D., on subliminals in advertising and political campaigns well documents the misuse in many areas, especially printed advertising in newspapers, magazines and posters.

The big question about subliminals is: do they work? And I guarantee you they do. Not only from the response of those who have used my tapes, but from the results of such programs as the subliminals behind the music in department stores. Supposedly, the only message is instructions to not steal: one East Coast department store chain reported a 37 percent reduction in thefts in the first nine months of testing.

A 1984 article in the technical newsletter, *Brain-Mind Bulletin*, states that as much as 99 percent of our cognitive activity may be “non-conscious,” according to the director of the Laboratory for Cognitive Psychophysiology at the University of Illinois. The lengthy report ends with the statement, “these findings support the use of subliminal approaches such as taped suggestions for weight loss and the therapeutic use of hypnosis and Neuro-Linguistic programming.”

Mass Misuse

I could relate many stories that support subliminal programming, but I'd rather use my time to make you aware of even more subtle uses of such programming.

I have personally experienced sitting in a Los Angeles auditorium with over ten thousand people who were gathered to listen to a current charismatic figure. Twenty minutes after entering the auditorium, I became aware that I was going in and out of an altered state. Those accompanying me experienced the same thing. Since it is our business, we were aware of what was happening, but those around us were not. By careful observation, what appeared to be spontaneous demonstrations were, in fact, artful manipulations. The only way I could figure that the eyes-open trance had been induced was that a 6- to 7-cycles-per-second vibration was being piped into the room behind the air conditioner sound. That particular vibration generates alpha, which would render the audience highly susceptible. Ten to 25 percent of the population is capable of a somnambulistic level of altered stated of consciousness; for these people, the suggestions of the speaker, if non-threatening, could potentially be accepted as “commands.”

Vibrato

This leads to the mention of *vibrato*. Vibrato is the tremulous effect imparted in some vocal or instrumental music, and the cycles-per-second range causes people to go into an altered state of consciousness. At one period of English history, singers whose voices contained pronounced vibrato were not allowed to perform publicly because listeners would go into an altered state and have fantasies, often sexual in nature.

People who attend opera or enjoy listening to singers like Mario Lanza are familiar with this altered state induced by the performers.

ELFs

Now, let's carry this awareness a little farther. There are also inaudible *ELFs* (extra-low frequency waves). These are electromagnetic in nature. One of the primary uses of ELFs is to communicate with our submarines. Dr. Andrija Puharich, a highly respected researcher, in an attempt to warn U.S. officials about Russian use of ELFs, set up an experi-

KILL SWITCH

ment. Volunteers were wired so their brain waves could be measured on an EEG. They were sealed in a metal room that could not be penetrated by a normal signal.

Puharich then beamed ELF waves at the volunteers. ELFs go right through the earth and, of course, right through metal walls. Those inside couldn't know if the signal was or was not being sent. And Puharich watched the reactions on the technical equipment: 30 percent of those inside the room were taken over by the ELF signal in six to ten seconds. When I say "taken over," I mean their behavior followed the changes anticipated at very precise frequencies. Waves below 6 cycles-per-second caused the subjects to become emotionally upset, and even disrupted bodily functions. At 8.2 cycles, they felt high—as though they had been in masterful meditation, learned over a period of years. Eleven to 11.3 cycles induced waves of depressed agitation which could lead to riotous behavior.

The Neurophone

Dr. Patrick Flanagan is a personal friend of mine. In the early 1960's, as a teenager, Pat was listed as one of the top scientists in the world by *Life* magazine. Among his many inventions was a device he called the *neurophone*—an electronic instrument that can successfully program suggestions directly through contact with the skin. When he attempted to patent the device, the government demanded that he prove it worked. When he did, the National Security Agency confiscated the neurophone. It took Pat two years of legal battle to get his invention back.

In using the device, you don't hear or see a thing; it is applied to the skin, which Pat claims is the source of special senses. The skin contains more sensors for heat, touch, pain, vibration and electrical fields than any other part of the human anatomy.

In one of his recent tests, Pat conducted two identical seminars for a military audience—one seminar one night and one the next night, because the size of the room was not large enough to accommodate all of them at one time. When the first group proved to be very cool and unwilling to respond, Patrick spent the next day making a special tape to play at the second seminar. The tape instructed the audience to be extremely warm and responsive and for their hands to become "tingly." The tape was played through the neurophone, which was connected to a wire he placed along the ceiling of the room. There were no speakers, so no sound could be heard, yet the message was successfully transmitted from that wire directly into the brains of the audience. They were warm and receptive, their hands tingled and they responded, according to programming, in other ways that Pat doesn't want publicly discussed.

The Medium for Takeover

The more we find out about how human beings work through today's highly advanced technological research, the more we learn to control human beings. And what probably scares me the most is that the medium for takeover is already in place! The television set in your living room and bedroom is doing a lot more than just entertaining you.

Before I continue, let me point out something else about an altered state of consciousness. When you go into an altered state, you transfer into right brain, which results in the internal release of brain opiates: enkephalins and beta-endorphins, which are chemically almost identical to opium. In other words, it feels good and you want to experience more. Recent test by researcher Herbert Krugman showed that while viewers were watching TV, right-brain activity out numbered left-brain activity by a ratio of two to one. Put more simply, the viewers were in an altered state . . . in trance more often than not. They were getting

KILL SWITCH

their beta-endorphin “fix.”

To measure attention spans, psychophysicologist Thomas Mulholland of the Veterans Hospital in Bedford, Massachusetts, attached young viewers to an EEG machine that was wired to shut the TV set off whenever the children’s brains produced a majority of alpha waves. Although the children were told to concentrate, only a few could keep the set on for more than 30 seconds!

Most viewers are already hypnotized. To deepen the trance is easy. One simple way is to place a blank, black frame every 32 frames in the film that is being projected. This creates a 45-beat-per-minute pulsation perceived only by the subconscious mind—the ideal pace to generate deep hypnosis.

The commercials or suggestions presented following this alpha-inducing broadcast are much more likely to be accepted by the viewer. The high percentage of the viewing audience that has somnambulistic-depth ability could very well accept the suggestions as commands—as long as those commands did not ask the viewer to do something contrary to his morals, religion, or self-preservation.

The medium for takeover is here. By the age of 16, children have spent 10,000 to 15,000 hours watching television—more time than they spend in school! In the average home, the TV set is on for six hours and 44 minutes per day—an increase of nine minutes from last year and three times the average rate of increase during the 1970s.

It obviously isn’t getting better . . . we are rapidly moving into an alpha-level world—very possibly the Orwellian world of “1984”—placid, glassy-eyed, and responding obediently to instructions. A research project by Jacob Jacoby, a Purdue University psychologist, found that of 2,700 people tested, 90 percent misunderstood even such simple viewing fare as commercials or a TV series they watched regularly. Only minutes after watching a show, the typical viewer missed 23 to 36 percent of the questions about what they had just seen. Maybe this is because they were going in and out of trance. When in a deep trance, you must be instructed to remember—otherwise you forget consciously, while your subconscious mind remembers everything.

The Tip of the Iceberg

I have just touched the tip of the iceberg. When you start to combine subliminal messages behind the music, subliminal visuals projected on the screen, hypnotically produced visual effects, sustained musical beats at a trance-inducing pace, you are talking conversion—brainwashing. Every hour that you spend watching TV set you become more conditioned. In case you thought there was a law against any of these things, guess again. There isn’t! There are a lot of powerful people out there who may have plans for you.

Partial Bibliography

- Influence—The Psychology of Persuasion* by Robert B. Cialdini, Ph.D. (Quill 1984)
- The Battle for the Mind* by William Sargant (Perennial Library 1957)
- Snapping* by Flo Conway & Jim Siegelman (Delta Books 1978)
- The True Believer* by Eric Hoffer (Harper & Row 1951)
- Mind Wars* by Ron McRae (St. Martin’s Press 1984)
- How to Organize & Manage Your Own Religion Cult* by Duke McCoy (Loompanics Unlimited 1980)
- Behavior Modification* by Richard Camellion (Paladin Press 1978)

KILL SWITCH

Cults by Charles G. Waugh & Martin H. Greenberg (Beaufort 1983)

Holy Terror by Flo Conway and Jim Siegelman (Delta Books 1982)

All the subliminal books by Bryan Key, Ph.D.

Hitler propaganda films produced before World War II

Newsweek magazine.

Brain Transmitters

What They Are and How They Are Used

Radio Implants and Remote-Controlled Humans

Doctors in Sweden began placing brain transmitters in the heads of anesthetized patients without the persons' knowledge in about 1960. The insertion was conducted through the nostrils and took only a couple of minutes to perform.

Implanted devices can remain in a person's head for life. The energy to activate the implants is transmitted by way of radio waves. Professor José Delgado wrote about the technology in *Physical Control of the Mind* in 1969.

The Technology and Its Possibilities

Brain transmitters have been thought to be impossible by the majority of people and have been relegated to science fiction. The fact is that scientists developed the technology into reality at least forty years ago.[1]

By means of two-way radio communication called *telemetry*, or remote control, one can send wavelengths round trip to a brain transmitter in a person's head. The wavelengths flow through a person's brain, then return to a computer where all aspects of a human being's life are uncovered and analyzed.

To allow brain waves, measured by *electroencephalograph* (EEG), to be analyzed by a computer instead of through a printout offers new possibilities of interpretation. The charting of mental thoughts, vision, hearing, feelings, and behavioral reactions can lead to an analysis of the foundation of personality. It allows one to study the psyche more completely. In addition, one can follow chemical reactions, observe patterns of neurons, or follow an illness or disease and analyze it at an earlier stage of development. All of the above and much more can be discovered with bio-medical telemetry.[2]

During the 1960s, brain transmitters as small as a half of a cigarette filter made it possible for doctors to implant them in patients easily and without surgery.[3]

Two-way radio communication throughout the world to the brain was possible by the late 1950s. This was done in many ways. For example, vocal messages could be sent by radio waves to receivers placed in the head, where a person with an attached transmitter could answer directly to a central location with his thoughts, by brain waves data (EEG) carried with radio signals.[4]

Distances were not a problem, since radio waves could travel globally at the speed of light.

Implanted brain transmitters (biotelemetry devices) have been reported since the 1960s: "Two patients instrumented for intracerebral radio stimulation and recording engage in spontaneous activities (one is playing the guitar) in the psychiatric ward in the presence of the doctor (VM). Explorations of the brain can be performed for as long as neces-

KILL SWITCH

sary without disturbing the patients.” — J.M.R. Delgado, V. Mark, W. Sweet, F. Ervin, G. Weiss, G. Bach-y-Rita, and R. Hagiwara, “Intracerebral Radio Stimulation and Recording in Completely Free Patients,” *The Journal of Nervous and Mental Disease*, 1968, October; 147(4): pages 329-40.

Liquid crystals which are injected directly into the bloodstream and fasten themselves to the brain have been developed in the last ten years. It works on the same principle as the usual transmitters and uses the same technology and contains the same possibilities.[5] [6]

How It Began - Experiments with the Brain

As early as the 1920s, European scientists made discoveries which paved the way for future development of brain stimulation. The Swiss W. R. Hess could identify 4,000 different places in the brain's hypothalamus, which are in direct contact to certain physical and mental reactions. By stimulating specific points in the brain by an electrical current, the stimulation of one point of the brain could bring about aggressive reactions, while the stimulation of another point could bring about calmness. Through electrical currents to the brain, Dr. Hess could change peoples' personalities, bring about feelings of happiness or sadness, hunger or satisfaction, etc. All of this was achieved over seventy years ago.

To the Present and Victims for Life

Brain transmitters, also called *electrodes*, *stimoceivers*, and *endoradiosondes*, can control the brain and transmit data. They can be used to influence people to conform to a political system. They can be applied to remotely monitor and control human beings to serve as agents. The technology exists and is being utilized. The devices usually remain in a person's head for life.

“Autonomic and somatic functions, individual and social behaviors, emotional and mental reactions may be evoked, maintained, modified, or inhibited, both in animals and in man, by electrical stimulation of specific cerebral structures. Physical control of many brain functions is a demonstrated fact. ... It is even possible to follow intentions, the development of thoughts, and visual experiences,” wrote Dr. José Delgado in the book *Physical Control of the Mind* in 1969. At that time Dr. Delgado was a Professor of Physiology at Yale University, where he developed techniques for electronically and chemically influencing the brain. He has published more than two hundred scientific works and is a well-known authority in neurology and behaviorism.

In the preface to the book, it is written that Dr. Delgado, “... shows how, by electrical stimulation of specific cerebral structures, movements can be induced by radio command, hostility may appear or disappear, social hierarchy can be modified, sexual behavior may be changed, and memory, emotions and the thinking process may be influenced by remote control.”[7]

It is possible to change people, create illness, modify opinions, and dull or activate the senses by penetrating centers of the brain with radio waves. People then obey controllers instead of their own natural choices. Monitoring of individuals' brain activity can instantly reveal all private experiences and observations of others.[8]

“This is the second implanted transmitter; this device appeared under rather unusual circumstances on 10th March 1972, when I became tranquilized in the hotel where I was temporarily lodging. This implantation preceded a period of prolonged torture with personality-altering radio signals 10 - 20 hours a day and they started communicating di-

KILL SWITCH

rectly with my brain. It was then I realized that they could discern my thoughts and, indeed, experience my entire range of cognitive activity. ... The picture was taken at Karolinska Hospital where all radiographers deny that any foreign object can be identified in this picture. However, there are a number of overseas physicians who testify the obvious fact, that several transmitters can be seen quite clearly.” — Robert Naeslund, INMC, Open Letter, Stockholm, Sweden, May 1993, page 32.

Dr. Robert G. Heath, of Tulane University, has implanted as many as 125 electrodes in a human being’s brain. In his experiments, he discovered that he could control his patients’ memories, sexual arousal, fear, pleasure, and cause hallucinations.

Overriding Proof Against the Hospitals

“In response to your most recent letter regarding the roentgen films, I can only confirm that some foreign objects, most likely brain transmitters, have been implanted at the base of your frontal brain and in the skull,” wrote Professor Petter Aaron Lindstrom from California to one of his Swedish patients. The patient was a victim of an implantation of a brain transmitter over twenty-five years ago. Dr. Lindstrom, who taught at the University of California, San Diego, added, “There is no excuse for doctors to implant brain transmitters in people’s heads.”

There is complete evidence that Södersjukhuset, Karolinska, Nacka, and Sundsvall hospitals, among others in Sweden, have implanted brain transmitters without the permission or knowledge of the patients for many decades.

Mental Patients Utilized

Investigations at different mental hospitals in Sweden have shown that a great number of patients out of fifty interviewed, thought themselves to be victims of long-term medical experiments. A number of these patients were actually in need of mental care due to the experiments. There were also many at the hospitals who were forcibly placed there because they had declared that a transmitter had been implanted in their heads during an operation, or in conjunction with admittance to the mental hospital.

Checks were made of all groups with electronic devices which confirmed that there were radio waves traveling from brain transmitters in many patients.[9]

Interviews with patients were done at Långbro Hospital, Beckomberga Hospital, as well as at Karolinska Hospital Psychiatric Clinic.

The radio waves which pass through the brain are not necessarily registered by one who has a brain transmitter. Only when the effect is greatly increased, for example when experiments are performed, is it possible for the victim to detect them.

“This is the third transmitter placed in my head and the first which was embedded in my brain. Without doubt it was implanted while being detained by the police in Stockholm 1973; this was my first period of custody and afterwards I underwent considerable personality modification, a process which had already begun in 1967 but accelerated rapidly towards criminality after the implantation of the second transmitter.” — Robert Naeslund, INMC, Open Letter, Stockholm, Sweden, May 1993, page 32.

Electronic Measurements

This picture shows the frequencies 18.5 - 18.7 kHz which were sent from a brain transmitter. The chart was created by a printer connected to a radio frequency analyzer computer during measurements from a transmitter in a person’s skull.

KILL SWITCH

While measuring other persons, the wavelengths were counted at similar values.

Long wavelengths are commonly used since they work over vast distances at the speed of light, and the frequencies are often between 15 - 35 kHz.[10]

The radio waves are called “frequency shift” signals and can flow within a certain wavelength area. They do not occur in a decided frequency, but rather through a special modulation, the radio waves *identity*. The bandwidth was 150 Hz and the effect in all measurements was between 1 - 10 microvolts.

Measurements were done with the following electronic devices:

Hewlett & Packard Spectrum Analyzer 3585 A Roedre & Schwarts VLF-HF Receiver
EK 070

Marconi Spectrum Analyzer

Dynamics SD 375 Spectrum Analyzer

Nicolets Radio Frequency Analyzer Computer

Court Trials in Canada were heard against a number of hospitals in Montreal in 1989. The hospitals were accused of carrying on long painful experiments with patients which began in the 1950s. One of Canada’s most honored doctors, Ewen Cameron, Head Doctor at Royal Victoria Hospital and Allen Memorial Institute, worked on assignments from the Secret Police that ordered experiments with, among other things, brain transmitters.[11]

“Furthermore, it can be seen that electrodes placed in the occipital lobe are blocking the blood flow behind their delimitation where the oxygen depletion is caused and this is seen as well in his frontal brain just above the implanted transmitter. Among the changes caused by the frequencies affecting his brain, the reduced oxygen levels have induced an alteration of neurological functions, and impaired cognitive abilities including that of memory. Moreover he [Mr. N’Tumba] has obviously been anesthetized without his knowledge so that this implantation could be performed. ... The x-ray examination was performed at Brook Hospital Main, September 16, 1992.” — INMC, Letter to British Prime Minister John Major, Stockholm, Sweden, October 9, 1992.

“... a meeting between Mr. John Austin-Walker, Member of Parliament, and a victim of mind control, impressed on him the importance of pursuing investigations into the matter ...” — INMC, Letter to British Prime Minister John Major, Stockholm, Sweden, October 9, 1992, page 1.

Many Others Cry for Help

Doctors at the World Health Organization’s (WHO) office in Copenhagen say that many Swedes write to them, stating that they have been exploited for hospital experiments. Many say that devices must have been implanted in their heads.

The United Nations’ information office in Copenhagen also says that upset residents of Sweden have contacted them and have sought help as victims of hospital experiments.

Amnesty International in Stockholm and Copenhagen tell a similar story, as well as the Citizens’ Rights Movement, representatives of the Green Party of Sweden, and a number of female members of the Swedish Parliament.

Those who contact the National Swedish Board of Health and Welfare (Socialstyrelsen) about this issue are sent to Department Ptp (formerly HS4 and SN3). Then they are informed that they are psychologically ill and that they run the risk of being admitted to a mental hospital if they continue to talk about a device in their heads. Additionally, they are told that

KILL SWITCH

brain transmitters do not exist.

Swedish Board of Health and Welfare

The person Dr. Lindstrom later helped had by 1977 written to authorities in Sweden and explained to them to what he had been subjected. Among those he wrote to was the General Director of the Board of Health and Welfare.

Declared Mentally Ill

Dr. Annmari Jonson at the Board of Health and Welfare referred to the letter a year later when she explained, "He intensely maintains everything which he had written to the Board of Health and Welfare. He exhibits, in this way, obvious misconceptions and points clearly to the need for psychiatric examination."

The examination was conducted in 1978 by Dr. Janos Jez, who wrote:

"He says that he is convinced that a device was applied in his head during an operation at Södersjukhuset. He ought to be considered dangerous if this pattern of misconceptions cannot be erased; and if he then begins to doubt his ideas and thereafter begins to have insight into his illness. He should therefore be committed to an asylum."

Five years later Dr. Lindstrom wrote, "... I can only confirm that some foreign objects, most likely brain transmitters, have been implanted at the base of your frontal brain and in the skull. ... I fully agree with Lincoln Lawrence who in his book on page 27 wrote: "There are two particularly dreadful procedures which have been developed. Those working and playing with them secretly call them R.H.I.C. and E.D.O.M.—Radio Hypnotic Intracerebral Control and Electronic Dissolution of Memory."

The patient wrote to both the doctors and the Board of Health and Welfare's General Director, Barbro Westerholm, and included a copy of Dr. Lindstrom's declaration. However, none of them desired to answer, which indicates both the Board of Health and Welfare's attitude towards the issue, and even the doctors' guilt.[12]

Most implant victims are unaware of the devices because they were sedated during the procedures. Then they are amnesic, monitored, and controlled. However there are some disclosures.

"This is the fourth transmitter in my head and it was inserted in connection with an appearance at Nacka Police Station, just outside Stockholm, on 26th November 1975, ostensibly for interrogation. I was locked up in a cell, but after a short while I fell into a deep sleep from which I emerged to an entirely new life. It is during these hours when the transmitter was implanted, and when, I awoke I had a searing high frequency signal at about 100 db in my skull. This was to plague me for about 16 hours a day for the past eight years and completely transform my life. It depressed the functional capacity of my right cerebral hemisphere and altered my personality, behavior, and abilities as if they no longer were part of myself." — Robert Naeslund, INMC, Open Letter, Stockholm, Sweden, May 1993, page 32.

Doctors Warn

Dr. Robert J. Grimm of the Good Samaritan Hospital in Portland, Oregon, stated in March 1974 at a doctor's symposium in California, that he viewed brain control and influencing the brain with radio waves was of similar importance as to the debate concerning the detonation of the first atomic bomb in Hiroshima. He also asked, "Do scientists have the right to pursue projects potentially destructive of human life, and in this era, destructive of the individual?"

KILL SWITCH

And Protest to the Swedish Government

The chairman of an internationally influential scientific organization in Canada, Dr. Andrew Michrowski, wrote in 1985 to the Swedish government and sought an answer about Sweden's obvious encroachment of human rights. He saw clear evidence that Swedish doctors implanted brain transmitters in patients, and referred to the Declaration of Human Rights signed by Sweden.

The Swedish government did not reply.

"This X-ray shows three transmitters in the frontal lobes. All of these were implanted on different occasions by the Swedish police. The detainee had been put to sleep unaware, as usual, at the police remand center in Stockholm. A doctor writes in his statement concerning this X-ray:

'...Later I received your additional skull film which clearly demonstrated some implanted transmitters, one inside the brain and two probably just underneath the brain.'

The upper arrow indicates the object lodged completely within the brain. All these transmitters were inserted through the nostrils and implanted into the frontal lobes in the vicinity of the upper opening of the nasal passage." — Lennart Lindquist, Evamarie Taylor, and Robert Naeslund, *Cybergods*, Stockholm: Gruppen, 1996, page 11.

Another medical opinion about X-rays, "... taken at Karolinska Hospital where all radiographers deny that any foreign object can be identified." — INMC, Open Letter, Stockholm, Sweden, May 1993, page 32.

FOA Educates Doctors

Since the 1960s, the Swedish Defense Research Institution (FOA) has educated hospital doctors, mostly surgeons and psychiatrists, regarding brain transmitters and bio-medical telemetry.

One of the books which was used twenty-five years ago at FOA's Department 3 in education had the title *Bio-Medical Telemetry* (1968), written by Dr. Stuart Mackay. Dr. Mackay wrote in the introduction that, "The purpose of this book is to introduce a wide segment of the scientific community to the rapidly developing field of bio-medical telemetry. It presents to physicians, engineers, and scientists information about the possibilities of different telemetric methods. It gives biologists a background in electronics to enable them to choose equipment."

The former head of FOA, Lars-Erik Tammelin, and the following director, Bo Rydbeck, are medical doctors with advanced knowledge in biology.

When Bo Rydbeck became head of the FOA in 1985, he said in an interview in the newspaper *Dagens Nyheter* that, "Among the current assignments, more intensive effort will be put into information technology." Which includes both telemetry and brain transmitters as essential parts.[13]

Dr. Mackay continued in his introduction, "Among the many telemetry instruments being used today [1968] are miniature radio transmitters that can be swallowed, carried externally, or surgically implanted in man or animals. Recent developments include pressure transmitters small enough to be placed in the eye, ultrasonic and radio units for free-swimming dolphins, units for tracking wild animals, and pill-sized transmitters of many designs and functions that can operate continuously for several years. The scope of observa-

KILL SWITCH

tions that can be made is too broad to more than hint at with a few examples. ... The possibilities are limited only by the imagination of the investigator.”

Dr. Stuart Mackay has worked as a Professor at the University of California, Berkeley, and at many foreign universities. His main fields are Medicine and Biology.

Computers and the Brain

“Dr. Delgado is optimistic that with the increasing sophistication and miniaturization of electronics, it may be possible to compress the necessary circuitry for a small computer into a chip that is implantable subcutaneously. In this way, the new self-contained instrument could be devised; capable of receiving, analyzing and sending back information to the brain, establishing artificial links between unrelated cerebral areas, functional feedbacks, and programs of stimulations contingent on the appearance of predetermined wave patterns,” wrote Samuel Chavkin in *The Mind Stealers* (1978), a book about psychosurgery and mind control.

Samuel Chavkin was the founder and chief editor of the Science and Medicine Publishing Company, which publishes periodicals concentrating on medical topics.

In the preface to the book it is stated that, “Telemetry for the surveillance of every citizen is on the drawing boards. Chavkin’s prediction that mind-control techniques could become standard equipment of governments, prisons, and police departments is backed by forceful documentation.”[14]

Biotelemetry systems that remotely “mind read” and “mind control” have existed for decades. Brain transmitters measure EEG and send data to computers that instantly translate it into words. Implants also deliver electric shocks that control a brain and behaviors. The devices are now less than 1 mm (.04 inch) in diameter.

Dr. Delgado conducted experiments in the early 1960s that placed an electrode on the eardrum (middle ear) of a cat. The device picked-up people’s conversations and transmitted them to a receiver for listening. According to Victor Marchetti, co-author of *The CIA and the Cult of Intelligence* (1974), the CIA attached a tiny radio implant to a cat’s cochlea (inner ear) for surveillance purposes.

A few years after Delgado’s implanted “bug” experiments, Dr. Ralph Schwitzgebel developed a miniature radio receiver so that a therapist could communicate with his subject.

Tiny combination microphone-transceiver-speakers are implanted inside unsuspecting people’s ears. The instruments transmit nearby conversations and deliver audio commands. Individuals are conditioned to obey the directives, though they are usually unaware of the voices.[15]

“X-ray photograph taken the day following the operation [August 12, 1987, St. Carolus Hospital, Ji Salemba, Djakarta], the 1/2 cm [.20 inch] deep area of branded cortex can be identified, as can the implanted transmitter.” — INMC, Open Letter, Stockholm, Sweden, May 1993, page 15.

Report for an x-ray examination conducted over three and a half years after an August 12, 1987 brain implant victimization.

In 1985

an advertisement placed by the Swedish Citizens’ Rights Movement in over thirty daily and weekly publications stated that doctors in larger hospitals in Sweden inserted

KILL SWITCH

brain transmitters in anesthetized patients during operations. At the same time, a letter signed by fifty people was sent to the Attorney General.

The Attorney General Questioned

Those who had signed the letter had read through material which showed that the reality of brain transmitters is a fact. The signers demanded an answer from the Attorney General on whether the implantation of brain transmitters is a crime or not. Those who signed the letter were representatives from different human rights groups, the Swedish Peace Movement, professors from, for example, the Royal School of Technology, lawyers, and others.

The State Says Yes to Brain Transmitters

The Attorney General did not reply to the letter. Instead, he sent it to the Attorney District (*Överåklagaren*), who said that this issue should *not* be considered a crime. Decision from May 15, 1985, *Överåklagaren Register number AD II 76-85*.

However, of course it is one of the harshest crimes which the state can commit; to deny the right of the individual to his or her own brain, and to inner peace without the interference of government authorities. Since Sweden signed the Human Rights Act, it must follow the act's assumptions. In any case, it means that a new relationship has been created between the state and the people of the country.

"There are similar signs, here and now, like in Germany during the 1930s, where the country's leading doctors and politicians see individuals as objects of experimentation where their brains and behaviors are changed," wrote Samuel Chavkin about the United States in 1978. The same can be said about Sweden, the same ideas exist here. Mind-control technology has changed since the 1970s and has been developed even further. [16]

Literature

The four books marked with a Y (psi) describe Dr. Ewen Cameron's exploitation of patients in long-lasting painful medical and psychological experiments, and his participation in the development of different mind-control methods. He was one of the world's most highly regarded physicians, and was at different times president of the American Psychiatric Association, the Canadian Psychiatric Association, the American Psychopathological Association, the Society of Biological Psychiatry, and the World Psychiatric Association.

Battle for the Mind: A Physiology of Conversion and Brainwashing. William Sargant. Ashford: The Invicta Press, 1984.

Bio-Medical Telemetry. Stuart Mackay, M.D. New York: Wiley, 1968.

The Body Electric. Robert Becker, M.D. and Gary Seldon. New York: William Morrow Co., 1985.

The Brain Changers: Scientists and the New Mind Control. Maya Pines. New York: Harcourt Brace Jovanovich, 1973.

Brain Control: A Critical Examination of Brain Stimulation and Psychosurgery. Elliot S. Valenstein. New York: Wiley, 1973.

"Brainwash Experiments Still Enrage Victim's Son." Jacqueline Cutler. *San Jose Mercury News*, October 9, 1988.

Brave New World Revisited. Aldous Huxley. 1958.

The Breaking of Bodies and Minds: Torture, Psychiatric Abuse and The Health Professions. Eric Stover and Elena Nightingale, M.D., Ph.D. New York: Freeman & Co., 1985.

KILL SWITCH

Breaking the Circle of Satanic Ritual Abuse. Daniel Ryder. Minneapolis, Minnesota: CompCare Publishers, 1992.

“Canada Settles with Brainwash Victims.” Robert Davis. Gannett News Service, November 19, 1992.

“Central Nervous System Stimulation by Implanted High Frequency Receiver.” A. Mauro, W.L.M. Davey, and A.M. Scher. *Fed. Proc.*, Baltimore, 1950, 9.

“Cold War Guinea Pigs: The Government’s Secret Experiments using Radiation, Mind Control, Chemicals and Drugs on its Citizens.” Stephen Budiansky, Erica E. Goode, and Ted Gest. *U.S. News & World Report*, January 24, 1994.

The Controllers. Martin Cannon. Aptos, California: Davis Books, 1990.

Depth-Electrographic Stimulation of the Human Brain and Behavior: From Fourteen Years of Studies and Treatment of Parkinson’s Disease and Mental Disorders with Implanted Electrodes. C.W. Sem-Jacobsen. Springfield, Illinois: Thomas Publishers, 1968.

“Electrical Excitation of the Nervous System—Introducing a New System of Remote Control.” E.L. Chaffee and R.U. Light. *Science*, 1934, 79.

Electrical Stimulation of Brain. S. Cobb. Texas Press, 1961.

“Electrode and Cannulae Implantation in the Brain by a Simple Percutaneous Method.” J.C. Lilly. *Science*, 1958, 127.

“The Electromagnetic Spectrum in Low-Intensity Conflict.” Capt. Paul E. Tyler, MC, USN. *Low-Intensity Conflict and Modern Technology.* Lt. Col. David J. Dean, USAF (Editor). Maxwell Air Force Base, Alabama: Air University Press, June 1986.

“Electrophysiology of Mental Activities.” E. Jacobson. *American Journal of Psychology*, 1932, 44, 677-694.

“Endoradiosonde.” R.S. Mackay and B. Jacobson. *Nature*, 179, June, 1957.

“Epileptiform Convulsions from ‘Remote’ Excitation.” F.A. Fender. *Archives of Neurology and Psychiatry*, 1937, 38.

“Evaluation of Seven Years Experience with Depth Electrode Studies in Human Patients.” R.G. Heath and W.A. Mickle. In: *Electrical Studies on the Unanesthetized Brain.* E.R. Ramey and D.S. O’Doherty, Editors. New York: Hoeber, 1960.

A Father, a Son and the CIA. Harvey Weinstein, M.D. Toronto: Lorimer & Co., 1988.

“Human Guinea Pigs are American as Apple Pie.” Samuel Chavkin, author of *The Mind Stealers: Psychosurgery and Mind Control* (1978). *New York Times*, Letters to Editor, January 11, 1994.

The Human Guinea Pigs. John McGuffin. Harmondsworth: Penguin, 1974.

Implantable Biotelemetry Systems: a Report. Thomas B. Fryer. Ames Research Center, NASA, 1970.

Y In the Sleep Room. Anne Collins. 1988.

“Instrumentation, Working Hypotheses, and Clinical Aspects of Neurostimulation.” J.M.R. Delgado. *Applied-Neurophysiology*, 1977-78, 40(2-4): 88-110.

“Intracerebral Radio Stimulation and Recording in Completely Free Patients.” J.M.R. Delgado, V. Mark, W. Sweet, F. Ervin, G. Weiss, G. Bach-y-Rita, and R. Hagiwara. *Journal of Nervous and Mental Disease*, 1968, 147.

Y Journey into Madness: the True Story of Secret CIA Mind Control and Medical Abuse.

KILL SWITCH

Gordon Thomas. Bantam Books, New York, 1989.

“Magnetic Implants Aid Hearing.” *Popular Science*, November, 1994.

The Manchurian Candidate. Richard Condon. New York: McGraw-Hill, 1958.

“A Method for the Remote Control of Electrical Stimulation of the Nervous System.”

E.L. Chaffee and R.U. Light. *Yale Journal of Biology & Medicine*, 1934, 7.

Microwave Harassment & Mind-Control Experimentation. Julianne McKinney. Silver Spring, Maryland: Association of National Security Alumni, 1992.

Mind-Control Manuscript and Open Letter. Mediaecco. Stockholm, Sweden: International Network against Mind Control (INMC), May, 1993.

“Mind Control: the Top Secret Weapons of the Future Are Here.” Larry Collins. *Playboy*, January, 1990.

The Mind Manipulators: A Non-fiction Account. Alan Scheflin and Edward Opton. New York: Paddington Press, 1978.

The Mind Possessed. William Sargant. Ashford: The Invicta Press, 1984.

The Mind Stealers: Psychosurgery and Mind Control. Samuel Chavkin. Boston: Houghton Mifflin Co., 1978.

The Mind-Control Papers. Los Angeles: Editors of Freedom, 1980.

“Multichannel Transdermal Stimulation of the Brain.” J.M.R. Delgado. *Technical Documentary Report No. ARL-TR-70-1*, New Mexico: Holloman Air Force Base, 1970.

The Nazi Doctors: Medical Killing and the Psychology of Genocide. Robert Lifton. New York: Basic Books, 1986.

“On Hearing by Electrical Stimulation.” S. Stevens. *Journal of Acoust. Soc. Am.*, 1937, 8.

Operation Mind Control. Walter H. Bowart. New York: Dell Publishing Co., 1978.

Operation Mind Control 2. Walter H. Bowart. Tucson, Arizona: Freedom of Thought Foundation, 1994.

The People Shapers. Vance Packard. Boston: Little, Brown and Company, 1977.

“A Perfusion Cannula for Intracerebral Microinjections.” R.G. Heath and W.L. Founds. *EEG Clinical Neurophysiology*, 1960, 12.

“Permanent Implantation of Multilead Electrodes in the Brain.” J.M.R. Delgado. *Yale Journal of Biology and Medicine*, 1952, 24.

“Persistent EEG Patterns Associated with Overt and Covert Speech.” Lawrence R. Pinneo. Neurophysiology Program. Menlo Park, California: Stanford Research Institute, 1975.

Physical Control of the Mind. José M.R. Delgado, M.D. New York: Harper and Row Publishers, 1969.

“Pressure-sensitive Telemetering Capsule for the Study of Gastrointestinal Motility.” J.T. Farrar, V.K. Zworykin, and J. Baum. *Science*, 1957, 126, November.

Y Psychiatry and the CIA: Victims of Mind Control. Harvey Weinstein, M.D. Washington, D.C.: American Psychiatric Press, 1990.

Psychotechnology: Electronic Control of Mind and Behavior. Robert L. Schwitzgebel and Ralph K. Schwitzgebel (Editors). New York: Holt, Rinehart, and Winston, 1973.

“Radio Telemetry from Within the Body.” R.S. Mackay. *Science*, 1961, 134.

KILL SWITCH

"A Remote Control Brain Telemeter System." H. Warner. *Digest: 15th Annual Conference on Engineering in Medicine and Biology*, November, 1962.

Ritual Abuse: Definitions, Glossary, the Use of Mind Control. Ritual Abuse Task Force. Los Angeles: Los Angeles County Commission for Women, 1991. L.A.C.C.W., 383 Hall of Administration, 500 West Temple Street, Los Angeles, CA 90012 U.S.A.

"Sci-Fact—Not Fiction: High-Tech Slavery is Here." Maitefa Angaza. *The City Sun*, Brooklyn, New York, December 15-21, 1993.

The Search for the "Manchurian Candidate": The CIA and Mind Control. John Marks. New York: Time Books, 1979.

"Solid-state Electrodes for Multichannel Multiplexed Intracortical Neuronal Recording." S.L. Bement, et al. *IEEE Trans. Bio-Medical Engineering*, 1986, 33.

"Stimulation of the Brain by Means of Radiant Energy." J.A. Gengerelli. *American Psychologist*, 1948, 3.

"Subminiature Radio EEG Telemeter for Studies of Disturbed Children." R. Vreeland, et al. Langley Porter Neuropsychiatric Institute. San Francisco, California: *California Department of Mental Hygiene, Government Publications*, November, 1962.

Such Things are Known. Dorothy Burdick. New York: Vantage Press, 1982.

"A Technique for Chronic Remote Nerve Stimulation." M.M. Lafferty and J.F. Farrell. *Science*, 1949, 110.

"Technique of Intracranial Electrode Emplacement for Recording and Stimulation and its Possible Therapeutic Value in Psychotic Patients." J.M.R. Delgado, H. Hamlin, and W.P. Chapman. *Confinia Neurologica*, 1952, 12.

"Telemetry and Telestimulation of the Brain." J.M.R. Delgado. In: *Biotelemetry*. L. Slater, (Ed.). New York: Pergamon, 1963.

"Two-way Radio Communication with the Brain in Psychosurgical Patients." J.M.R. Delgado, S. Obrador, and J.G. Martin-Rodriguez. In: *Surgical Approaches in Psychiatry*. L.V. Laitinen and Livingston, (Editors). Lancaster, England: Medical and Technical Publishing, 1973.

"U.S. Explores Russian Mind-Control Technology." Barbara Oball. *Defense News*, January 11-17, 1993.

The Unquiet Mind. William Sargant. Ashford: The Invicta Press, 1984.

War on the Mind, the Military Uses and Abuses of Psychology. Peter Watson. New York: Basic Books, 1978.

Were We Controlled?. Lincoln Lawrence. New York: University Books, 1967.

You Must Be Dreaming. Barbara Noel. New York: Poseidon Press, 1992.

[1] The technology was developed in the United States in the CIA projects called "ARTICHOKE," "BLUEBIRD," "MKDELTA," and "MKULTRA." The area has at different times been called ESB (Electronic Stimulation of the Brain), Brain-Computer Technology, Biological Radio-Communication, RHIC (Radio Hypnotic Intra-cerebral Control), and EDOM (Electronic Dissolution of Memory), among others. All of these are pseudonyms for *bio-medical telemetry*, which is the prevailing technique used for mind control in the eastern and western worlds.

[2] *Electroencephalograph (EEG) Telemetry System* consists of transmitters, receiv-

KILL SWITCH

ers, and other components used for remotely monitoring or measuring EEG signals by means of radio or telephone transmission systems (In the U.S.A. see Food and Drug Administration, Medical Devices: Classification of Neurological Devices).

[3] “Dr. Antoine Remond, using our techniques in Paris, has demonstrated that this method of stimulation of the brain can be applied to the human without the help of the neurosurgeon; he is doing it in his office in Paris without neurosurgical supervision. This means that anybody with the proper apparatus can carry this out on a person covertly, with no external signs that electrodes have been used on that person. I feel that if this technique got into the hands of a secret agency, they would have total control over a human being and be able to change his beliefs extremely quickly, leaving little evidence of what they had done.” — John C. Lilly, M.D., 1953: *The Scientist*, John C. Lilly, M.D., Berkeley: Ronin Publishing, 1988, page 91.

[4] “Biotelemetry, which was developed to monitor the temperature, brain-wave activity, breathing rate, and heartbeat ... Biosensors attached to the body send data by wire or radio. This information may be displayed on oscilloscopes for doctors to analyze. It can also be fed into a computer that ‘watches’ the patient ... Some biosensors, called endoradiosondes, can be implanted in the body. The tiny batteries that power them can be recharged by radio waves.” — *Compton’s Encyclopedia*, Electronic Edition, 1995.

[5] “... the American multinational company ..., which blends radio transmitting material into its liquid cortisone preparation ... [and] it is effective in whatever part of the body the injection is made. It is highly likely that ... [it] is not unique in this way—other medical products are suspect, ...” — International Network against Mind Control (INMC), Open Letter, Stockholm, Sweden, May 1993, page 38.

[6] CIA documents mention “liquid crystals” related to behavior control, e.g.: “The project will support studies ... of solid and liquid crystals ... The materials to be studied will, to a large extent, also be of biological interest. ...

These relate to physical studies which are required to develop effective materials which will influence the human nervous system.” (1 September 1961) ...

“An exploratory study concerned with ... certain ferroelectric crystals. ... There is also some support for structural studies of organic materials which have shown semiconductor activity.” (23 July 1962) — Project MKULTRA, Subproject 99, August 1959 – September 1962, CIA MORI DocID: 17502.

[7] Instrumentation developed includes: “brain radio stimulators, ... and an optoelectric sensor for telemetry ... combining multichannel stimulator and EEG telemetric instrument; transdermal stimoceivers, totally implantable for two-way communication with the brain through the intact skin; and implantable microprocessor for detection of EEG signals which are used to trigger contingent brain stimulation. ... and establishment of artificial neuronal links with the aide of the computer.” — J.M.R. Delgado, M.D., “Instrumentation, Working Hypotheses, and Clinical Aspects of Neurostimulation,” *Applied-Neurophysiology*, 1977-78; 40(2-4): pages 88-110.

[8] “Tracking could also be combined with ESB by broadcasting to and from the brain. Placement of a device inside the skull or in another part of the body is technically more difficult than strapping it to the wrist, but once placed, the device is more secure and can transmit more detailed information.” — Alan Schefflin and Edward Opton, *The Mind Manipulators: A Non-fiction Account*. New York: Paddington Press, 1978, page 349.

KILL SWITCH

[9] “Who is wasting tax money on experiments using devices smaller than needle points that are injected into people’s bodies without consent? These people are then given shocks for ‘improper behavior.’ Radio frequencies are set aside by government for such experiments. ... It is illegal. If the scope of this program and its CLASSIFIED nature does not scare you, think again.” — Citizens for Open and Honest Treatment of the Handicapped, *Announcements*, 1993.

[10] “Early workers in this field used a low-radio frequency, typically 300 to 1500 kHz, ... Since 1960, transistors for operation at 100 MHz have been available, ... implanted systems work very well in the region of 100 MHz. ... placement of a self-contained transmitter totally within the tissue represents a somewhat different situation. The tissue absorbs energy, but it also appears to compensate for this loss by reradiation of energy and effective increase in the size of the transmitting antenna.” — Thomas B. Fryer, *Implantable Biotelemetry Systems: a Report*, Ames Research Center, NASA, 1970, page 65.

[11] “Just what happened to Mr. N’Tumba, he describes himself in a letter to us:

‘Concerning the brain transmitter in my head, it has been performing without my knowledge or consent ... What’s very outrageous is that I am sharing all my vision, thoughts, images, hearings ... etc. with people around me as the security services are engaging in a large scale propaganda drive to smear my character, background, behavior, emotions and motives ... I have no privacy at all ... I am not a spy, I am not a criminal, I am not a terrorist. Being an innocent victim of MI5 ... my persecution started in June 1988.’

What is more, there is no reason to suspect the validity of what he writes; we are overburdened with letters such as this one from the USA, Denmark, Sweden, Germany, New Zealand and our investigations in Sweden reveal a terrifying reality where the mental health services, police authorities and hospitals implant radio-transmitting devices in people’s heads and brains.

This reality is exposed by a vast amount of X-ray material to be a chilling and gloomy vision of the future, stage-managed for decades by the security forces in collaboration with medical and psychiatric institutions who together have created a secret power which transcends law and order and which is beyond intrusive public control.” — INMC, Letter to British Prime Minister John Major, Stockholm, Sweden, October 9, 1992, page 2.

[12] “If the stimulation Delgado plans to administer is electric, the shaft is an exceedingly thin steel-wire electrode coated with insulation except at the tip. Dozens of such needle-like wires may be inserted from one opening and can be attached to the same socket on top of the skull, or eventually inside it. ...

Delgado has pioneered in the remote control of electrical stimulation. He began shaping the behavior of subjects while he was in a nearby room manning a push-button radio device. Now he can do this from thousands of feet away.

At first the sockets he was using to receive radio messages were outside the scalp. Now the equipment, built under a microscope, is the size of a coin and can be planted under the scalp and so is unnoticeable in a free-moving subject. Also, the device not only receives instructions but broadcasts back the subject’s reactions. Delgado calls it a transdermal stimoceiver.

A very recent refinement, still being perfected, is for the information being received back from inside the brain to go to a tiny computer. This computer is being programmed to recognize abnormal brain-wave activity. ...

KILL SWITCH

With humans he and his associates have stimulated several areas involved in motor activity. ... He caused one woman patient in his group, when she was alone in her own room, to turn her head and move her body as if she were looking for something. This was repeated. When she was asked what she was doing, the woman always had a plausible explanation. Apparently, she had no idea she was responding to the electrical stimulation of her brain. ...

Lawrence R. Pinneo, a ... neurophysiologist ... at the Stanford Research Institute, ... has proved that you can think into a computer, and that the instructions you think can cause the computer to activate and move remote-control cameras and other machines. In short, the machines obey your mental instructions.

Pinneo started with the motor theory of thought. This holds that verbal thinking is nothing more than subvocal speech. With a number of subjects he attached electrodes to the area of the scalp near the region where speech originates. On command they were to think of a word, such as 'schoolboy' or 'start' or 'left.' They were to repeat the word in their minds ten times. All this thinking of words was being registered by a computer. It averaged out a recognition pattern for each word. He proceeded to build up a vocabulary of fifteen unspoken English words that the computer could recognize. He trained the computer to recognize actually spoken words (overt speech) as well as think words (covert speech). They came out much alike in the word patterns that the computer stored away. ...

In his preliminary report Pinneo stated: 'We conclude that it is feasible for a human verbally to communicate both overtly and covertly with a computer using biological information [EEG] alone, with a high degree of accuracy and reliability, at least with a small vocabulary.' ...

This is interesting as an exercise in scientific versatility. But what would the practical applications be, assuming that 100 percent accuracy is achieved with a much larger vocabulary of words that were only thought, not spoken? ...

Perhaps the best practical use would be in surreptitious situations." — Vance Packard, *The People Shapers*, Boston: Little, Brown and Company, 1977, pages 42-43, 55, 285-286.

[13] "An essential part of biotelemetry encompasses the transmission of data. This occurs mostly with help from a surgically implanted transmitter. ... The technology has been developed quite extensively in medical research." — P.M. Persson, Swedish Defense Research Institution, FOA, 1965.

[14] *Publishers Weekly's* review of *The Mind Stealers*, by Samuel Chavkin.

[15] "... The situation just described is not our first encounter with the apparent use of medical implant devices in these harassment/mind-control cases. Another of our contacts began receiving auditory input roughly 15 years after she had 4 mm. cochlear implants placed in her ears. The 'voices' claim to be affiliated with the CIA and, among other things, expressed intentions of running this woman as an agent in denied areas by 'piggybacking' their audio transmissions onto standard FM frequencies to avoid detection. ...

[Another] individual ... also appears to have been 'tagged' by some type of implant device. ... During this meeting, she accepted the offer of a drink, blacked out after consuming it, and awoke four hours later, ... to find that the back of her ear had been punctured and was bleeding. ... She has since found two adjacent puncture marks behind her ear, which are not healing properly, and between which she can feel the presence of a 'wire' measuring approximately 1/4" length. ...

KILL SWITCH

In yet another case involving auditory input, the individual has allegedly been informed by her 'voices' that the technologies being used against her were stolen from the CIA by a maverick employee, whose group is now targeting her from a distance of 2,000 miles. ...

One unusually-candid CIA spokesman also allegedly informed this individual that, 'while the CIA does not deny having this equipment,' they 'do not use it in this country.'" — Julianne McKinney, *Microwave Harassment & Mind-Control Experimentation*, Silver Spring, MD: Association of National Security Alumni, 1992, pages 15-16.

[16] "ESB, however, used in conjunction with psycho-surgery and behavior modification, offered unlimited possibilities. After experiments on laboratory animals met with success, human experimentation was enthusiastically undertaken in quest of the most reliable and absolute method of *remote* control of the mind. ...

And, in 1974, the first victim of Parkinson's disease treated by ESB walked gracefully out of a San Francisco hospital under his own power, thanks to portable ESB. He had a 'stimoceiver' implanted in his brain ... The 'stimoceiver' which weighed only a few grams and was small enough to implant under his scalp, permitted both remote stimulation of his brain and the instantaneous telemetric recording of his brain waves. ...

In 1975 a primitive 'mind reading machine' was tested at the Stanford Research Institute. The machine is a computer which can recognize a limited amount of words by monitoring a person's *silent thoughts*. This technique relies upon the discovery that brain wave tracings taken with an electroencephalograph (EEG) show distinctive patterns that correlate with individual words—whether the words are spoken aloud or merely subvocalized (thought of). ...

While Dr. Reed conceded that it was 'conceivable that thoughts could be injected' into a person's mind by the government, he indicated that he did not believe it had already been done. ...

Typically, the scientists have not been vigilant enough, for the cryptocracy already has developed remote-controlled men who can be used for political assassination and other dangerous work, ...

In 1967 a writer named Lincoln Lawrence published a book ... [*Were We Controlled?* presented] a sophisticated technique known as RHIC-EDOM ... Radio Hypnotic Intra-Cerebral Control-Electronic Dissolution of Memory. ...

'Under RHIC, a "sleeper" can be used years later with no realization that the "sleeper" is even being controlled! He can be made to perform acts that he will have no memory of ever having carried out. In a manipulated kind of kamikaze operation where the life of the "sleeper" is dispensable, RHIC processing makes him particularly valuable because if he is detected and caught before he performs the act specified . . . *nothing* he says will implicate the group or government which processed and controlled him.'" — Walter Bowart, *Operation Mind Control*, New York: Dell Publishing Co., 1978, pages 253, 256-262.